CHRISTOPH SCHILLER

MOTION MOUNTAIN

6

CHRISTOPH SCHILLER

MOTION MOUNTAIN

6

THE STRAND MODEL-
A SPECULATION
ON UNIFICATION

PREFACE

This book is for anybody who is intensely curious about motion. Why and how do things, people, animals, images or empty space move? The answer leads o many adventures, and this book presents one of the best of them: the search for a precise, unified and final description of *all* motion.

The aim to describe *all* motion – everyday, quantum and relativistic – implies a large project. This project can be structured using the diagram shown in Figure 1. The previous volumes have covered all points in the diagram – all fields of motion – except the highest one. This remaining point contains the *final* and *unified* description of all motion. The present volume briefly summarizes the history of this old quest and then presents an intriguing, though speculative solution to the riddle.

The search for the final, unified description of motion is a story of many surprises. First, twentieth-century research has shown that there is a smallest measurable distance in nature, the Planck length. It also appeared that matter cannot be distinguished from empty space at those small distances. A last surprise dates from this century: particles and space appear to be made of *strands*, instead of little spheres or points. The present text explains how to reach these surprising conclusions. In particular, quantum field theory, the standard model of particle physics, general relativity and cosmology are shown to follow from strands. The three gauge interactions, the three particle generations and the three dimensions of space turn out to be due to strands. In fact, all the open questions of twentieth-century physics about the foundations of motion, including the origin of colours and of the parameters of the standard model, appear to be answerable in this way.

The strand model, as presented in this text, is an unexpected result from a threefold aim that the author has pursued since 1990, in the five previous volumes of this series: to present the basics of motion in a way that is up to date, captivating and simple. While the previous volumes introduced the *established* parts of physics, this volume presents, in the same captivating and playful way, a *speculation* about unification. Nothing in this volume is established knowledge – yet. The text is the original presentation of the topic. In retrospect, the aim for maximum simplicity has been central in deducing this speculation.

The search for a final theory is one of the great adventures of life: it leads to the limits of thought. The search overthrows several of our thinking habits about nature. This can produce fear, but by overcoming it we gain strength and serenity. Changing thinking habits requires courage, but it produces intense and beautiful emotions. Enjoy them.

Munich, 31 December 2016.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

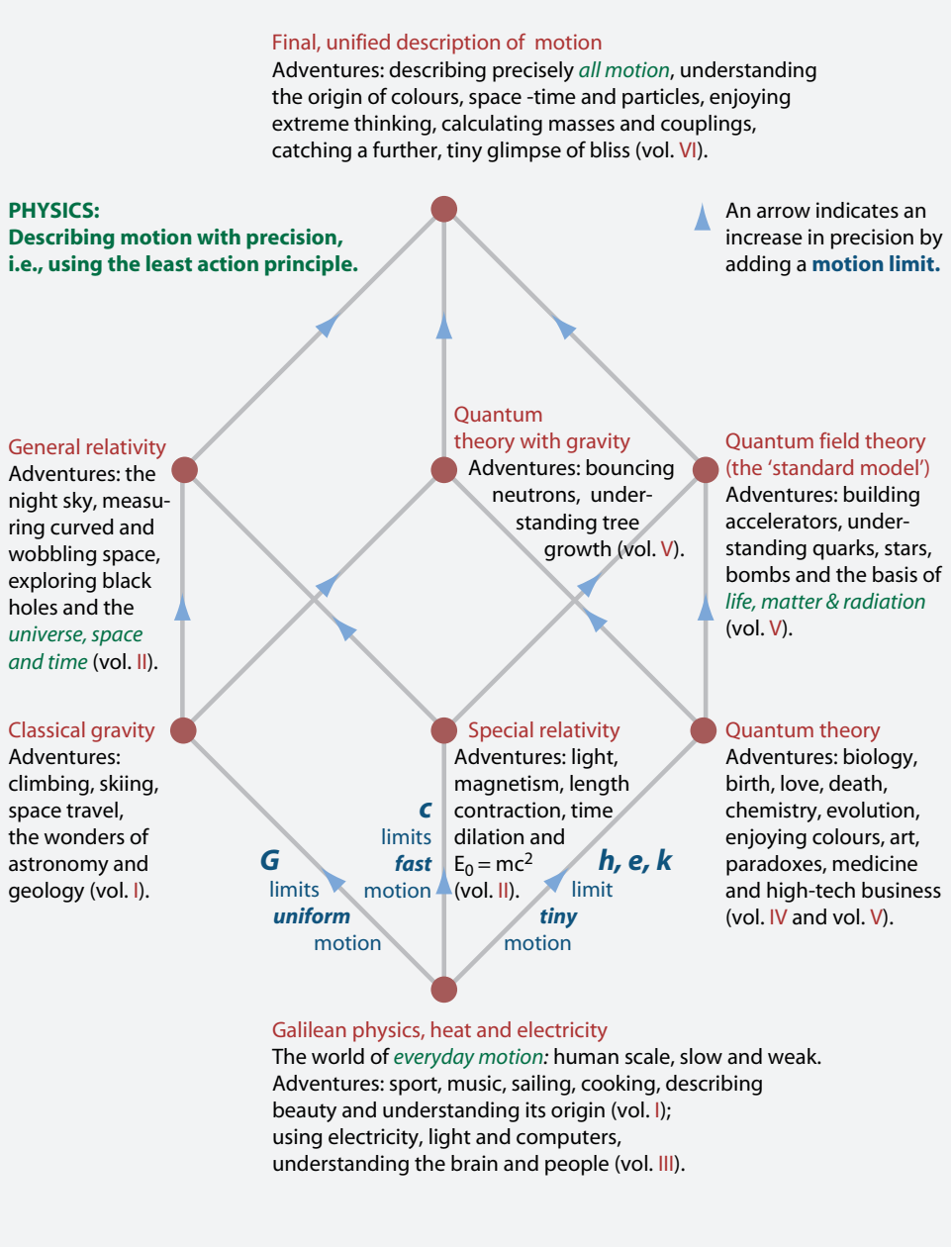

Final, unified description of motion
Adventures: describing precisely all motion, understanding the origin of colours, space -time and particles, enjoying extreme thinking, calculating masses and couplings, catching a further, tiny glimpse of bliss (vol. VI).
PHYSICS:
Describing motion with precision, i.e., using the least action principle.
An arrow indicates an increase in precision by adding a motion limit.
General relativity
Adventures: the night sky, measuring curved and wobbling space, exploring black holes and the universe, space and time (vol. II).
Quantum theory with gravity
Adventures: bouncing neutrons, understanding tree growth (vol. V).
Quantum field theory (the 'standard model')
Adventures: building accelerators, understanding quarks, stars, bombs and the basis of life, matter & radiation (vol. V).
Classical gravity
Adventures: climbing, skiing, space travel, the wonders of astronomy and geology (vol. I).
Special relativity
Adventures: light, magnetism, length contraction, time dilation and $E_0 = mc^2$ (vol. II).
Quantum theory
Adventures: biology, birth, love, death, chemistry, evolution, enjoying colours, art, paradoxes, medicine and high-tech business (vol. IV and vol. V).
G limits uniform motion
c limits fast motion
h, e, k limit tiny motion
Galilean physics, heat and electricity
The world of everyday motion: human scale, slow and weak.
Adventures: sport, music, sailing, cooking, describing beauty and understanding its origin (vol. I);
using electricity, light and computers, understanding the brain and people (vol. III).

FIGURE 1 A complete map of physics, the science of motion. The map, of central importance in the present volume, starts at the bottom with everyday motion, and shows the connections to the fields of modern physics. Each connection increases the precision of the description and is due to a limit to motion that is taken into account. The limits are given for uniform motion by the gravitational constant G, for fast motion by the speed of light c, and for tiny motion by the Planck constant h, the elementary charge e and the Boltzmann constant k.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Using this book

Marginal notes refer to bibliographic references, to other pages or to challenge solutions. In the colour edition, such notes and also the pointers to footnotes and to other websites are typeset in green. Over time, links on the internet tend to disappear. Most links can be recovered via www.archive.org, which keeps a copy of old internet pages. In the free pdf edition of this book, available at www.motionmountain.net, all green pointers and links are clickable. The pdf edition also contains all films; they can be watched directly in Adobe Reader.

Solutions and hints for *challenges* are given in the appendix. Challenges are classified as easy (e), standard student level (s), difficult (d) and research level (r). Challenges for which no solution has yet been included in the book are marked (ny).

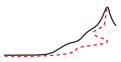
Feedback

Receiving an email from you at fb@motionmountain.net, either on how to improve the text or on a solution for one of the prize challenges mentioned on www.motionmountain.net/prizes.html, would be delightful. All feedback will be used to improve the next edition. For a particularly useful contribution you will be mentioned – if you want – in the acknowledgements, receive a reward, or both.

Support

Your donation to the charitable, tax-exempt non-profit organisation that produces, translates and publishes this book series is welcome. For details, see the web page www.motionmountain.net/donation.html. The German tax office checks the proper use of your donation. If you want, your name will be included in the sponsor list. Thank you in advance for your help, on behalf of all readers across the world.

The paper edition of this book is available, either in colour or in black and white, from www.amazon.com or www.createspace.com. And now, enjoy the reading.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Contents

16 1 From millennium physics to unification

Against a final theory 19 • What went wrong in the past 21 • An encouraging argument 21 • Summary: how to find the final theory of motion 23

25 2 Physics in limit statements

25 **Simplifying physics as much as possible**

Everyday, or Galilean, physics in one statement 25 • Special relativity in one statement 26 • Quantum theory in one statement 27 • Thermodynamics in one statement 29 • General relativity in one statement 29 • Deducing general relativity 31 • Deducing universal gravitation 33 • The size of physical systems in general relativity 34 • A mechanical analogy for the maximum force 34

35 **Planck limits for all physical observables**

Physics, mathematics and simplicity 37 • Limits to space, time and size 37 • Mass and energy limits 38 • Virtual particles – a new definition 38 • Curiosities and fun challenges about Planck limits 39

43 **Cosmological limits for all physical observables**

Size and energy dependence 43 • Angular momentum and action 44 • Speed 44 • Force, power and luminosity 45 • The strange charm of the entropy bound 45 • Curiosities and fun challenges about system-dependent limits to observables 47 • Cosmology in one statement 49 • The cosmological limits to observables 49 • Limits to measurement precision and their challenge to thought 50 • No real numbers 50 • Vacuum and mass: two sides of the same coin 50 • Measurement precision and the existence of sets 51

52 **Summary on limits in nature**

54 3 General relativity versus quantum theory

The contradictions 55 • The origin of the contradictions 56 • The domain of contradictions: Planck scales 57 • Resolving the contradictions 59 • The origin of points 60 • Summary on the clash between the two theories 60

62 4 Does matter differ from vacuum?

Farewell to instants of time 62 • Farewell to points in space 64 • The generalized indeterminacy relation 66 • Farewell to space-time continuity 66 • Farewell to dimensionality 69 • Farewell to the space-time manifold 69 • Farewell to observables, symmetries and measurements 71 • Can space-time be a lattice? 72 • A glimpse of quantum geometry 72 • Farewell to point particles 73 • Farewell to particle properties 74 • A mass limit for elementary particles 75 • Farewell to massive particles – and to massless vacuum 76 • Matter and vacuum are indistinguishable 78 • Curiosities and fun challenges on Planck scales 79 • Common constituents 83 • Experimental predictions 84 • Summary on particles and vacuum 86

87 5 What is the difference between the universe and nothing?

Cosmological scales 87 • Maximum time 88 • Does the universe have a definite age? 88 • How precise can age measurements be? 89 • Does time exist? 90 • What is the error in the measurement of the age of the universe? 91 • Maximum length 95 • Is the universe really a big place? 95 • The boundary of space – is the sky a surface? 97 • Does the universe have initial conditions? 98 • Does the universe contain particles and stars? 98 • Does the universe have mass? 99 • Do

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

symmetries exist in nature? 101 • Does the universe have a boundary? 101 • Is the universe a set? 102 • Curiosities and fun challenges about the universe 104 • Hilbert's sixth problem settled 105 • The perfect physics book 106 • Does the universe make sense? 107 • Abandoning sets and discreteness eliminates contradictions 108 • Extremal scales and open questions in physics 108 • Is extremal identity a principle of nature? 109 • Summary on the universe 110 • A physical aphorism 111

112 6 The shape of points – extension in nature

113 **The size and shape of elementary particles**
Do boxes exist? 113 • Can the Greeks help? – The limitations of knives 113 • Are cross sections finite? 114 • Can we take a photograph of a point? 115 • What is the shape of an electron? 116 • Is the shape of an electron fixed? 117 • Summary of the first argument for extension 118

118 **The shape of points in vacuum**
Measuring the void 120 • What is the maximum number of particles that fit inside a piece of vacuum? 120 • Summary of the second argument for extension 120

121 **The large, the small and their connection**
Is small large? 121 • Unification and total symmetry 122 • Summary of the third argument for extension 123

124 **Does nature have parts?**
Does the universe contain anything? 126 • An amoeba 126 • Summary of the fourth argument for extension 127

127 **The entropy of black holes**
Summary of the fifth argument for extension 129

129 **Exchanging space points or particles at Planck scales**
Summary of the sixth argument for extension 130

131 **The meaning of spin**
Summary of the seventh argument for extension 132

132 **Curiosities and fun challenges about extension**
Gender preferences in physics 133

134 **Checks of extension**
Current research based on extended constituents 135 • Superstrings – extension and a web of dualities 136 • Why superstrings and supermembranes are so appealing 136 • Why the mathematics of superstrings is so difficult 137 • Testing superstrings: couplings and masses 138 • The status of the superstring conjecture 139 • Summary on extension in nature 139

142 7 The basis of the strand model
Requirements for a final theory 143 • Introducing strands 146 • Events, processes, interactions and colours 148 • From strands to modern physics 148 • Vacuum 152 • Observable values and limits 153 • Particles and fields 155 • Curiosities and fun challenges about strands 155 • Do strands unify? – The millennium list of open issues 157 • Are strands final? – On generalizations and modifications 159 • Why strands? – Simplicity 160 • Why strands? – The fundamental circularity of physics 162 • Funnels – an equivalent alternative to strands 164 • Knots and the ends of strands 165 • Summary on the fundamental principle of the strand model – and on continuity 165

167 8 Quantum theory of matter deduced from strands
Strands, vacuum and particles 167 • Rotation, spin 1/2 and the belt trick 169 • The

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

belt trick is not unique 173 • An aside: the belt trick saves lives 174 • Fermions and spin 175 • Bosons and spin 178 • Spin and statistics 179 • Tangle functions: blurred tangles 179 • Details on fluctuations and averages 181 • Tangle functions are wave functions 182 • Deducing the Schrödinger equation from tangles 187 • Mass from tangles 189 • Potentials 191 • Quantum interference from tangles 191 • Deducing the Pauli equation from tangles 193 • Rotating arrows, path integrals and interference 194 • Measurements and wave function collapse 194 • Hidden variables and the Kochen–Specker theorem 197 • Many-particle states and entanglement 197 • Mixed states 201 • The dimensionality of space-time 201 • Operators and the Heisenberg picture 202 • Lagrangians and the principle of least action 202 • Special relativity: the vacuum 204 • Special relativity: the invariant limit speed 205 • Dirac's equation deduced from tangles 207 • Visualizing spinors and Dirac's equation using tangles 210 • Quantum mechanics vs. quantum field theory 212 • A flashback: settling three paradoxes of Galilean physics 213 • Fun challenges about quantum theory 213 • Summary on quantum theory of matter: millennium issues and experimental predictions 214

217 9 Gauge interactions deduced from strands

Interactions and phase change 217 • Tail deformations versus core deformations 219

221 **Electrodynamics and the first Reidemeister move**

Strands and the twist, the first Reidemeister move 221 • Can photons decay, disappear or break up? 223 • Electric charge 223 • Challenge: What knot invariant is electric charge? 224 • Electric and magnetic fields and potentials 225 • The Lagrangian of the electromagnetic field 226 • U(1) gauge invariance induced by twists 227 • U(1) gauge interactions induced by twists 229 • The Lagrangian of QED 229 • Feynman diagrams and renormalization 230 • The anomalous magnetic moment 233 • Maxwell's equations 234 • Curiosities and fun challenges about QED 235 • Summary on QED and experimental predictions 236

237 **The weak nuclear interaction and the second Reidemeister move**

Strands, pokes and SU(2) 238 • Weak charge and parity violation 239 • Weak bosons 241 • The Lagrangian of the unbroken SU(2) gauge interaction 242 • SU(2) breaking 243 • Open issue: are the W and Z tangles correct? 244 • The electroweak Lagrangian 245 • The weak Feynman diagrams 246 • Fun challenges and curiosities about the weak interaction 248 • Summary on the weak interaction and experimental predictions 248

250 **The strong nuclear interaction and the third Reidemeister move**

Strands and the slide, the third Reidemeister move 250 • An introduction to SU(3) 251 • From slides to SU(3) 254 • The strand model for gluons 259 • The gluon Lagrangian 261 • Colour charge 262 • Properties of the strong interaction 264 • The Lagrangian of QCD 264 • Renormalization of the strong interaction 264 • Curiosities and fun challenges about SU(3) 265 • Summary on the strong interaction and experimental predictions 266

267 **Summary on millennium issues about gauge interactions**

Prediction about the number of interactions 267 • Unification of interactions 267 • No divergences 268 • Predictions about grand unification and supersymmetry 268 • No new observable gravity effects in particle physics 269 • The status of our quest 269

271 10 General relativity deduced from strands

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Flat space, special relativity and its limitations 271 • Classical gravitation 272 • Deducing universal gravitation from black hole properties 273 • Summary on universal gravitation from strands 274 • Curved space 275 • The structure of horizons and black holes 276 • Is there something behind a horizon? 277 • Energy of black hole horizons 278 • The nature of black holes 278 • Entropy of vacuum and matter 278 • Entropy of black holes deduced from the strand model 279 • Temperature, radiation and evaporation of black holes 281 • Black hole limits 282 • Curvature around black holes 283 • The shape of non-rotating black holes 283 • The field equations of general relativity 284 • Equations from no equation 285 • The Hilbert action of general relativity 286 • Space-time foam 287 • Gravitons, gravitational waves and their detection 287 • Open challenge: Improve the argument for the graviton tangle 288 • Other defects in vacuum 288 • The gravity of superpositions 289 • Torsion, curiosities and challenges about quantum gravity 290 • Predictions of the strand model about gravity 293

294 **Cosmology**

The finiteness of the universe 295 • The big bang – without inflation 296 • The cosmological constant 297 • The value of the matter density 299 • Open challenge: What is dark matter? 300 • The topology of the universe 300 • Predictions of the strand model about cosmology 300 • Summary on millennium issues about relativity and cosmology 301

303 11 The particle spectrum deduced from strands

Particles and quantum numbers from tangles 303

304 **Particles made of one strand**

Unknotted curves 306 • Gauge bosons – and Reidemeister moves 306 • Open or long knots 308 • Closed tangles: knots 308 • Summary on tangles made of one strand 308

309 **Particles made of two strands**

Quarks 310 • Quark generations 313 • The graviton 314 • Glueballs 314 • The mass gap problem and the Clay Mathematics Institute 315 • A puzzle 315 • Summary on two-stranded tangles 315

316 **Particles made of three strands**

Leptons 317 • Open challenge: Find better arguments for the lepton tangles 318 • The Higgs boson – the mistaken section from 2009 319 • The Higgs boson – the corrected section of 2012 321 • 2012 predictions about the Higgs 323 • Quark-antiquark mesons 323 • Meson form factors 327 • Meson masses, excited mesons and quark confinement 328 • CP violation in mesons 328 • Other three-stranded tangles and glueballs 330 • Spin and three-stranded particles 330 • Summary on three-stranded tangles 330

331 **Tangles of four and more strands**

Baryons 331 • Tetraquarks and exotic mesons 333 • Other tangles made of four or more strands 335 • Summary on tangles made of four or more strands 335

335 **Fun challenges and curiosities about particle tangles**

Motion through the vacuum – and the speed of light 339

342 **Summary on millennium issues about particles and the vacuum**

The omnipresent number 3 342 • Predictions about dark matter, the LHC and the vacuum 343

344 12 Particle properties deduced from strands

344 **The masses of the elementary particles**

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

General properties of particle mass values 345 • Boson masses 346 • W/Z boson mass ratio and mixing angle (in the 2016 knot model) 347 • Higgs/Z boson mass ratio 349 • A first approximation for elementary boson mass values 349 • Quark mass ratios 349 • Lepton mass ratios 352 • Predictions about absolute mass values 353 • Open issues about mass calculations 357 • Fine-tuning and naturalness 358 • Summary on elementary particle masses and millennium issues 359

360 **Mixing angles**

Quark mixing – the experimental data 360 • Quark mixing – explanations 361 • A challenge 362 • CP-violation in quarks 362 • Neutrino mixing 363 • CP-violation in neutrinos 364 • Open challenge: Calculate mixing angles and phases ab initio 364 • Summary on mixing angles and the millennium list 364

366 **Coupling constants and unification**

Strands imply unification 368 • General expectations about coupling constants 368 • First hint: charge quantization and topological writhe 369 • Second hint: the energy dependence of physical quantities 370 • Third hint: the running of the coupling constants at low energy 371 • Fourth hint: predictions at low energy, independent of particle content 372 • The running of the coupling constants near Planck energy 372 • On estimating the fine structure constant from knot shapes 373 • Fifth hint: 3d-writhe 373 • Sixth hint: torsion 375 • Seventh hint: linking number 375 • Eighth hint: estimating coupling constants using random rotations (2013 version) 376 • Ninth hint: estimating the fine structure constant from deformation statistics 377 • Open challenge: Calculate coupling constants ab initio 378 • Electric dipole moments 378 • Summary on coupling constants and millennium issues 378

380 **Final summary about the millennium issues**

381 **Experimental predictions of the strand model**

385 13 The top of Motion Mountain

385 **Our path to the top**

Everyday life: the rule of infinity 386 • Relativity and quantum theory: the absence of infinity 386 • Unification: the absence of finitude 388

389 **New sights**

The beauty of strands 390 • Can the strand model be generalized? 391 • What is nature? 391 • Quantum theory and the nature of matter 392 • Cosmology 392 • Musings about unification and strands 393 • The elimination of induction 397 • What is still hidden? 398

399 **A return path: je rêve, donc je suis**

401 **What is the origin of colours?**

401 **Summary: what is motion?**

403 Postface

404 A Knot geometry

407 Challenge hints and solutions

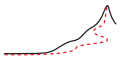
413 Bibliography

436 Credits

Acknowledgments 436 • Film credits 437 • Image credits 437

438 Name index

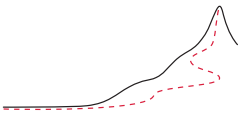
444 Subject index



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The Strand Model – A Speculation on Unification

Where, through the combination of
quantum mechanics and general relativity,
the top of Motion Mountain is reached,
and it is discovered
that vacuum is indistinguishable from matter,
that there is little difference between the large and the small,
that nature can be described by strands,
that particles can be modelled as tangles,
that interactions appear naturally,
that colours are due to strand twisting,
and that a complete description of motion is possible.



Chapter 1

FROM MILLENNIUM PHYSICS TO UNIFICATION

Look at what happens around us. A child who smiles, a nightingale that sings, a ily that opens: all move. Every shadow, even an immobile one, is due to moving ight. Every mountain is kept in place by moving electrons. Every star owes its formation and its shine to motion of matter and radiation. Also the darkness of the night sky* is due to motion: it results from the expansion of space. Finally, human creativity is due to the motion of molecules, ions and electrons in the brain. Is there a common language for these and all other observations of nature?

Is there a *unified* and *precise* way to describe all motion? How? Is everything that moves, from people to planets, from light to empty space, made of the same constituents? What is the origin of motion? Answering these questions is the topic of the present text.

Answering questions about motion with precision defines the subject of *physics*. Over the centuries, researchers collected a huge number of precise observations about motion. We now know how electric signals move in the brain, how insects fly, why colours vary, how the stars formed, how life evolved, and much more. We use our knowledge about motion to look into the human body and heal illnesses; we use our knowledge about motion to build electronics, communicate over large distances, and work for peace; we use our knowledge about motion to secure life against many of nature's dangers, including droughts and storms. Physics, *the science of motion*, has shown time after time that knowledge about motion is both useful and fascinating.

At the end of the last millennium, humans were able to describe *all* observed motion with high precision. This description can be summarized in the following six statements.

1. In nature, motion takes place in three dimensions of space and is described by the least action principle. Action is a physical quantity that describes how much change occurs in a process. The least action principle states: *motion minimizes change*. Among others, the least change principle implies that motion is predictable, that energy is conserved and that growth and evolution are natural processes, as is observed.

Ref. 1, Ref. 3

2. In nature, there is an invariant maximum energy speed, the speed of light c. This invariant maximum implies *special relativity*. Among others, it implies that mass and energy are equivalent, as is observed.

Ref. 2

3. In nature, there is an invariant highest momentum flow, the Planck force $c^4/4G$. This invariant maximum implies *general relativity*, as we will recall below. Among others,

Page 29

* The photograph on page 15 shows an extremely distant, thus extremely young, part of the universe, with its large number of galaxies in front of the black night sky (courtesy NASA).

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

general relativity implies that things fall and that empty space curves and moves, as is observed. Ref. 2

4. The evolution of the universe is described by the cosmological constant Λ. It determines the largest distance and the largest age that can presently be observed. Ref. 2

5. In nature, there is a non-zero, invariant smallest change value, the quantum of action $\hbar$. This invariant value implies *quantum theory*. Among others, it explains what life and death are, why they exist and how we enjoy the world. Ref. 4

6. In nature, matter and radiation consist of quantum particles. Matter consists of *fermions*: six quarks, three charged leptons, three neutrinos and their antiparticles. Radiation consists of *bosons*: the photon, three intermediate weak vector bosons and eight gluons. In addition, the year 2012 brought the discovery of the Higgs boson. Fermions and bosons move and can transform into each other. The transformations are described by the electromagnetic interaction, the weak nuclear interaction and the strong nuclear interaction. Together with the masses, quantum numbers, mixing angles and couplings, these transformation rules form the so-called *standard model of particle physics*. Among others, the standard model explains how lightning forms, why colours vary, and how the atoms in our bodies came to be. Ref. 4

These six statements, the *millennium description of physics*, describe everything known about motion in the year 2000. (Actually, 2012 is a more precise, though less striking date.) These statements describe the motion of people, animals, plants, objects, light, radiation, stars, empty space and the universe. The six statements describe motion so precisely that even today there is *no* difference between calculation and observation, between theory and practice. This is an almost incredible result, the summary of the efforts of tens of thousands of researchers during the past centuries.

However, a small set of observations does not yet follow from the six statements. A famous example is the origin of colours. In nature, colours are consequences of the so-called *fine structure constant*, a mysterious constant of nature whose value is measured to be 1/137.035 999 074(44). If it had another value, all colours would differ. Ref. 5

Another unexplained observation is the nature of dark matter. We do not know yet what dark matter is. A further unexplained process is the way thinking forms in our brain. We do not know yet in detail how thinking follows from the above statements, though we do know that thinking is not in contrast with them. In the case of dark matter this is not so clear: dark matter could even be in contrast with the millennium description of motion.

In other words, even though the millennium description of physics is precise and successful, it is not complete: there are some open issues. Indeed, the sixth statement given above, summarizing the standard model of particle physics, is not as simple as the preceding ones. Why are there *three* interactions, *twelve* elementary fermions, *thirteen* elementary bosons and *three* dimensions? How does the origin of colours and the nature of dark matter fit in? What is the origin of particle masses? How is the standard model related to the five preceding statements? And why is there motion anyway? These open, unexplained issues form the quest for unification, phrased in concrete terms.

The complete list of all the *fundamental* issues about motion that are *unexplained* since the year 2000 make up only a short table. We call them the *millennium issues*.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 1 The millennium list: *everything* the standard model and general relativity *cannot* explain; thus, also the list of the *only* experimental data available to test the final, unified description of motion.

Observable Property unexplained since the year 2000	
Local quantities unexplained by the standard model: particle properties	
$\alpha = 1/137.036(1)$	the low energy value of the electromagnetic coupling constant
α_w or θ_w	the low energy value of the weak coupling constant or the value of the weak mixing angle
α_s	the value of the strong coupling constant at one specific energy value
m_q	the values of the 6 quark masses
m_l	the values of 6 lepton masses
m_W	the value of the mass of the W vector boson
m_H	the value of the mass of the scalar Higgs boson
$\theta_{12}, \theta_{13}, \theta_{23}$	the value of the three quark mixing angles
δ	the value of the CP violating phase for quarks
$\theta^\nu_{12}, \theta^\nu_{13}, \theta^\nu_{23}$	the value of the three neutrino mixing angles
$\delta^\nu, \alpha_1, \alpha_2$	the value of the three CP violating phases for neutrinos
$3 \cdot 4$	the number of fermion generations and of particles in each generation
J, P, C, etc.	the origin of all quantum numbers of each fermion and each boson
Local mathematical structures unexplained by the standard model	
$c, \hbar, k$	the origin of the invariant Planck units of quantum field theory
3 + 1	the number of dimensions of physical space and time
SO(3,1)	the origin of Poincaré symmetry, i.e., of spin, position, energy, momentum
$S(n)$	the origin of particle identity, i.e., of permutation symmetry
Gauge symmetry	the origin of the gauge groups, in particular:
U(1)	the origin of the electromagnetic gauge group, i.e., of the quantization of electric charge, as well as the vanishing of magnetic charge
SU(2)	the origin of weak interaction gauge group, its breaking and P violation
SU(3)	the origin of strong interaction gauge group and its CP conservation
Ren. group	the origin of renormalization properties
$\delta W = 0$	the origin of wave functions and the least action principle in quantum theory
$W = \int L_{SM}\, dt$	the origin of the Lagrangian of the standard model of particle physics
Global quantities unexplained by general relativity and cosmology	
0	the observed flatness, i.e., vanishing curvature, of the universe
$1.2(1) \cdot 10^{26}$ m	the distance of the horizon, i.e., the 'size' of the universe (if it makes sense)
$\rho_{de} = \Lambda c^4/(8\pi G)$ ≈ 0.5 nJ/m^3	the value and nature of the observed vacuum energy density, dark energy or cosmological constant
$(5 \pm 4) \cdot 10^{79}$	the number of baryons in the universe (if it makes sense), i.e., the average visible matter density in the universe

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 1 (Continued) *Everything* the standard model and general relativity *cannot* explain.

Observable Property unexplained since the year 2000	
$f_0(1, ..., c.\ 10^{90})$	the initial conditions for *c.* 10^{90} particle fields in the universe (if or as long as they make sense), including the homogeneity and isotropy of matter distribution, and the density fluctuations at the origin of galaxies
ρ_{dm}	the density and nature of dark matter
Global mathematical structures unexplained by general relativity and cosmology	
c, G	the origin of the invariant Planck units of general relativity
$\delta \int L_{\mathrm{GR}} \mathrm{d}t = 0$	the origin of the least action principle and the Lagrangian of general relativity
$\mathrm{R} \times \mathrm{S}^3$	the observed topology of the universe

The millennium list contains *everything* that particle physics and general relativity *cannot* explain. In other words, the list contains *everything* that was unexplained in the domain of fundamental motion in the year 2000. The list is short, but it is not empty. Therefore, the millennium list asks for an answer to each of these issues. The quest for unification – and the topic of this text – is the quest for these answers. We can thus say that a *final theory of motion* is a theory that eliminates the millennium list of open issues.

Against a final theory

We know that a final theory exists: it is the theory that describes how to calculate the fine structure constant $\alpha = 1/137.036(1)$. The theory does the same for about two dozen other constants, but this is the most famous one. In short, the final theory is the theory that explains all colours in nature.

A fixed list of arguments are repeated regularly against the search for a final, unified theory of motion. Reaching the final theory and enjoying the adventure is only possible if these arguments are known – and then put gently aside.

— It is regularly said that a final theory cannot exist because nature is infinite and mysteries will always remain. But this statement is wrong. First, nature is not infinite. Second, even if it were infinite, knowing and describing everything would still be possible. Third, even if knowing and describing everything would be impossible, and if mysteries would remain, a final theory remains possible. A final theory is *not* useful for *every* issue of everyday life, such as choosing your dish on a menu or your future profession. A final theory is simply a full description of the *foundations* of motion: the final theory just combines and explains particle physics and general relativity.

— It is sometimes argued that a final theory cannot exist due to Gödel's incompleteness theorem or due to computational irreducibility. However, in such arguments, both theorems are applied to domains were they are not valid. The reasoning is thus wrong.

— Some state that it is not clear whether a final theory exists at all. We all know from experience that this is wrong, for a simple reason: *We are able to talk about everything.* In other words, all of us already have a 'theory of everything', or a final theory of nature. Also a physical theory is a way to talk about nature, and for the final theory

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

we only have to search for those concepts that enable us to talk about all of motion with full precision. Because we are looking for a way to talk, we know that the final theory exists. And searching for it is fascinating and exciting, as everybody busy with this adventure will confirm.

— Some claim that the search for a final theory is a reductionist endeavour and cannot lead to success, because reductionism is flawed. This claim is wrong on three counts. First, it is not clear whether the search is a reductionist endeavour, as will become clear later on. Second, there is no evidence that reductionism is flawed. Third, even if it were, no reason not to pursue the quest would follow. The claim in fact invites to search with a larger scope than was done in the past decades – an advice that will turn out to be spot on.

Ref. 6

— Some argue that searching for a final theory makes no sense as long as the measurement problem of quantum theory is not solved, or consciousness is not understood, or the origin of life is not understood. Now, the measurement problem is solved by decoherence, and in order to combine particle physics with general relativity, understanding the details of consciousness or of the origin of life is not required. Neither is understanding or solving child education problems required – though this might help.

Ref. 7

Vol. IV, page 141

— Some people claim that searching for a final theory is a sign of foolishness or a sin of pride. Such small and envious minds should simply be ignored; the nastier specimens might deserve to be ridiculed. After all, the quest is just the search for the solution to a riddle.

— Some believe that understanding the final theory means to read the mind of god, or to think like god, or to be like god. This is false, as any expert on god will confirm. In fact, solving a riddle or reading a physics textbook does not transform people into gods. This is unfortunate, as such an effect would provide excellent advertising.

Ref. 8

— Some fear that knowing the final theory yields immense power that harbours huge dangers of misuse, in short, that knowing the final theory might change people into devils. However, this fear is purely imaginary; it only describes the fantasies of the person that is talking. Indeed, the millennium description of physics is already quite near to the final theory, and nothing to be afraid of has happened. Sadly, another great advertising opportunity is eliminated.

Ref. 9

— Some people object that various researchers in the past have thought to have found the final theory, but were mistaken, and that many great minds tried to find a final theory, but had no success. That is true. Some failed because they lacked the necessary tools for a successful search, others because they lost contact with reality, and still others because they were led astray by prejudices that limited their progress. We just have to avoid these mistakes.

These arguments show us that we can reach the final unified theory – which we symbolically place at the top of Motion Mountain – only if we are not burdened with ideological or emotional baggage. The goal we have set requires *extreme thinking*, i.e., thinking up to the limits. After all, unification is the precise description of *all* motion. Therefore, unification is a riddle. The search for unification is a pastime. Any riddle is best approached with the light-heartedness of playing. Life is short: we should play whenever we can.

Ref. 10

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

What went wrong in the past

The twentieth century was the golden age of physics. Scholars searching for the final theory explored candidates such as grand unified theories, supersymmetry and numerous other options. These candidates will be discussed later on; all were falsified by experiment. In other words, despite a large number of physicists working on the problem, despite the availability of extensive experimental data, and despite several decades of research, no final theory was found. Why?

Vol. V, page 266

During the twentieth century, many successful descriptions of nature were deformed into dogmatic beliefs about unification. Here are the main examples, with some of their best known proponents:

— 'Unification requires generalization of existing theories.'
— 'Unification requires finding higher symmetries.' (Werner Heisenberg)
— 'Unification requires generalizing electroweak mixing to include the strong interaction and gravitation.' (Abdus Salam)
— 'Unification is independent of Planck's natural units.'
— 'Unification requires axiomatization.' (David Hilbert)
— 'Unification requires evolution equations.' (Werner Heisenberg)
— 'Unification requires space to be a manifold.' (Albert Einstein)
— 'Unification requires searching for beauty.' (Paul Dirac)
— 'Unification requires more dimensions of space.' (Theodor Kaluza)
— 'Unification requires topology change.' (John Wheeler)
— 'Unification requires going beyond the standard model of particle physics.' (Steven Weinberg)
— 'Unification requires supersymmetry.' (Steven Weinberg)
— 'Unification requires using complicated mathematics and solving huge conceptual difficulties.' (Edward Witten)
— 'Unification is only for a selected few.'
— 'Unification is extremely useful, important and valuable.'

All these beliefs appeared in the same way: first, some famous scholar – in fact, many more than those mentioned – explained the idea that guided his discovery; then, he and most other researchers started to believe the guiding idea more than the discovery itself. During the twentieth century, this attitude produced all the beliefs just given. The most deleterious has been the belief that unification is complicated and difficult. In fact, this and all the other beliefs can be seen as special cases of the first one. And like the first belief, they are all, as we will discover in the following, wrong.

An encouraging argument

Page 7

Figure 1 shows that physics started from the description of motion in everyday life. At the next level of precision, physics introduced the observed *limits* to motion and added the description of powerful motion (classical gravity), fast motion (special relativity), and tiny motion (quantum theory). At the following level of precision, physics achieved all possible combinations of two of these motion types, by taking care of two motion limits at the same time: fast and powerful motion (general relativity), fast and tiny motion (quantum field theory), and tiny and powerful motion (quantum theory with gravity).

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The only domain left over is the domain where motion is fast, tiny and powerful at the same time. When this last domain is reached, the full description of all motion with full precision is completed.

But Figure 1 suggests even stronger statements. First of all, no domain of motion is left: the figure covers *all* motion. Secondly, the final description appears when general relativity, quantum field theory and quantum theory with gravity are combined. But a third conclusion is especially important. Each of these three fields can be deduced from the unified final theory by eliminating a limitation: either that of tiny motion, that of powerful motion, or that of fast motion. In other words:

- ▷ General relativity follows from the final theory by eliminating the minimum action $\hbar$.
- ▷ Quantum field theory, including quantum electrodynamics, follows from the final theory by eliminating G.
- ▷ Quantum theory with gravity follows from the final theory by eliminating the speed limit c.

Speaking even more bluntly, and against a common conviction of researchers in the field, the figure suggests: *The standard model follows from the final theory by eliminating gravity.* These connections eliminate many candidates for the unified final theory that were proposed in the research literature. But more importantly, the connections leave open a range of possibilities – and interestingly enough, this range is very narrow.

The figure allows stronger statements still. Progress towards the final theory is achieved by taking limitations to motion into account. Whatever path we take from everyday physics to the final theory, we must take into consideration all limits to motion. The order can differ, but *all* limits have to be take into account. Now, if any intermediate steps – due to additional motion limitations – between quantum field theory and the final theory existed, corresponding steps would have to appear also in the *lower* part of the figure, between everyday physics and classical gravity. In the same way, if any intermediate limits between general relativity and the final theory really existed, these limits would also have to appear between everyday motion and quantum theory.

Experiments show that *no* intermediate steps or limits exist between everyday motion and the next level of precision. This means:

- ▷ Intermediate steps do not exist before the final theory.

This is a strong statement. It suggests that no intermediate description of moving physical systems in nature is missing. In other terms, Figure 1 implies that, conceptually, we are already *close* to the final theory.

Moreover, Figure 1 seems to suggest that there is no need for overly elaborate hypotheses or concepts to reach the final theory.

- ▷ We ''just'' have to add G to the standard model or $\hbar$ to general relativity.

The final, unified theory of motion cannot be far.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Summary: how to find the final theory of motion

We have a riddle to solve: we want to describe precisely all motion and discover its origin. In order to achieve this, we need to find a final theory that solves and explains each open issue given in the *millennium list*.

We proceed in steps. We first simplify quantum theory and gravitation as much as possible, we explore what happens when the two are combined, and we deduce the *requirement list* that any final theory must fulfil. Then we deduce the simplest possible model that fulfils the requirements; we check the properties of the model against every experiment performed so far and against every open issue from the millennium list. Discovering that there are no disagreements, no points left open and no possible alternatives, we know that we have found the final theory. We thus end our adventure with a *list of testable predictions* for the proposed model.

In short, three lists structure our quest for a final theory: the millennium list of open issues, the list of requirements for the final theory, and the list of testable predictions. To get from one list to the next, we proceed along the following legs.

1. We first simplify modern physics. Twentieth century physics deduced several *invariant* properties of motion. These invariants, such as the speed of light or the quantum of action, are called *Planck units*. The invariant Planck units allow motion to be measured. Above all, these invariants are also found to be *limit values*, valid for every example of motion.
2. Combining quantum theory and general relativity, we discover that at the Planck limits, the universe, space and particles are *not described by points*. We find that as long as we use points to describe particles and space, and as long as we use sets and elements to describe nature, a unified description of motion is impossible.
3. The combination of quantum theory and general relativity teaches us that space and particles have *common constituents*.
4. By exploring black holes, spin, and the limits of quantum theory and gravity, we discover that the common constituents of space and particles are *extended*, without ends, one-dimensional and fluctuating: the common constituents of space and particles are *fluctuating strands*.
5. We discover that we cannot think or talk without continuity. We need a *background* to describe nature. We conclude that to talk about motion, we have to combine continuity and non-continuity in an appropriate way. This is achieved by imagining that fluctuating strands move in a continuous three-dimensional *background*.

Page 143 At this point, after the first half of our adventure, we have obtained a detailed *requirement list* for the final theory. This list allows us to proceed rapidly to our goal, without being led astray.

6. We discover a simple fundamental principle that explains how the maximum speed c, the minimum action $\hbar$, the maximum force $c^4/4G$ and the cosmological constant Λ follow from strands. We also discover how to deduce quantum theory, relativity and cosmology from strands.
7. We discover that strands naturally yield the existence of three spatial dimensions, flat and curved space, black holes, the cosmological horizon, fermions and bosons.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

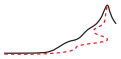
We find that all known physical systems are made from strands. Also the process of measurement and all properties of the background result from strands.

8. We discover that fermions emit and absorb bosons and that they do so with exactly those properties that are observed for the electromagnetic, the weak and the strong nuclear interaction. In short, the *three known gauge interactions* – and their parity conservation or violation – follow from strands. In addition, we discover that other interactions do not exist.
9. We discover that strands naturally yield the known elementary fermions and bosons, grouped in *three generations*, with all the properties that are observed. Other elementary particles do not exist. We thus recover the standard model of elementary particles.
10. We discover that the fundamental principle allows us to solve all the issues in the millennium list, and that all properties deduced from strands agree with experiment. In particular, the strand model allows us to calculate the fine structure constant and the other gauge coupling strengths. An extensive *list of testable predictions* can be given. These predictions will all be tested – by experiment or by calculation – in the coming years.
11. We discover that motion is the observation of crossing switches due to strand fluctuations. Motion is an inescapable consequence of observation: motion is an experience that we make because we are a small, approximate part of a large whole.

Page 382

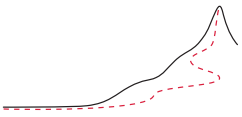
At the end of this path, we will thus have unravelled the mystery of motion. It is a truly special adventure. *But be warned: almost all of the story presented here is still speculative, and thus open to question.* Everything presented in the following agrees with experiment. Nevertheless, with almost every sentence you will find at least one physicist or philosopher who disagrees. That makes the adventure even more fascinating.

> “Es ist fast unmöglich, die Fackel der Wahrheit durch ein Gedränge zu tragen, ohne jemandem den Bart zu sengen.*”
>
> Georg Christoph Lichtenberg



* ‘It is almost impossible to carry the torch of truth through a crowd without scorching somebody’s beard.’ Georg Christoph Lichtenberg (b. 1742 Ober-Ramstadt, d. 1799 Göttingen) was a famous physicist and essayist.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 2

PHYSICS IN LIMIT STATEMENTS

Twentieth century physics deduced several *invariant* properties of motion. hese invariants, such as the speed of light or the quantum of action, define he so-called Planck units. The invariant Planck units are important for two reasons: first, they allow motion to be measured; second, the invariants are *limit values*. In fact, the Planck units provide bounds for all observables.

The main lesson of modern physics is thus the following: When we simplify physics as much as possible, we discover that *nature limits the possibilities of motion*. Such limits lie at the origin of special relativity, of general relativity and of quantum theory. In fact, we will see that nature limits *every* aspect of motion. Exploring the limits of motion will allow us to deduce several astonishing conclusions. These conclusions contradict all that we learned about nature so far.

SIMPLIFYING PHYSICS AS MUCH AS POSSIBLE

At dinner parties, physicists are regularly asked to summarize physics in a few sentences. It is useful to have a few simple statements ready to answer such a request. Such statements are not only useful to make other people think; they are also useful in our quest for the final theory. Here they are.

Everyday, or Galilean, physics in one statement

Everyday motion is described by Galilean physics. It consists of only one statement:

▷ Motion minimizes change.

In nature, *change* is measured by physical action W. More precisely, change is measured by the time-averaged difference between kinetic energy T and potential energy U. In other words, motion obeys the so-called *least action principle*, written as

$$\delta W = 0 \text{ , where } \quad W = \int (T - U)\, \mathrm{d}t \text{ .} \tag{1}$$

This statement determines the effort we need to move or throw stones, and explains why cars need petrol and people need food. In other terms, *nature is as lazy as possible*. The

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Vol. I, page 28 laziness of nature implies that motion is conserved, relative and predictable. The laziness of motion is valid throughout modern physics, for all observations, provided a few limit statements are added.

Special relativity in one statement

The step from everyday, or Galilean, physics to special relativity can be summarized in a Ref. 11 single limit statement on motion. It was popularized by Hendrik Antoon Lorentz:

▷ There is a maximum energy speed value c in nature.

For all physical systems and all observers, the local energy speed v is limited by the speed of light c:

$$v \leqslant c = 3.0 \cdot 10^8 \text{ m/s} \,. \tag{2}$$

All results peculiar to special relativity follow from this principle. A few well-known facts set the framework for the discussion that follows. The speed v is less than or equal to the speed of light c for *all* physical systems;* in particular, this speed limit is valid both for composite systems and for elementary particles. No exception has ever been found. (Try Challenge 1 e it.)

The energy speed limit is an *invariant*: the local energy speed limit is valid for *all* observers. In this context it is essential to note that any observer must be a physical system, Vol. II, page 98 and must be *close* to the moving energy.

The speed limit c is realized by *massless* particles and systems; in particular, it is realized by electromagnetic waves. For matter systems, the speed is always below c.

Only a maximum energy speed ensures that cause and effect can be distinguished in nature, or that sequences of observations can be defined. The opposite hypothesis, that energy speeds greater than c are possible, which implies the existence of (real) tachyons, has been explored and tested in great detail; it leads to numerous conflicts with observations. Tachyons do not exist.

The maximum energy speed forces us to use the concept of *space-time* to describe nature, because the existence of a maximum energy speed implies that space and time Vol. II, page 26 *mix*. It also implies observer-dependent time and space coordinates, length contraction, time dilation, mass–energy equivalence, horizons for accelerated observers, and all the other effects that characterize special relativity. Only a maximum speed leads to the principle of maximum ageing that governs special relativity; and only this principle leads to the principle of least action at low speeds. In addition, only with a finite speed limit is it possible to define a *unit* of speed that is valid at all places and at all times. If there were no global speed limit, there could be no natural measurement standard for speed, independent of all interactions; speed would not then be a measurable quantity.

Special relativity also limits the size of systems – whether composite or elementary. Indeed, the limit speed implies that acceleration a and size l cannot be increased inde-

* A *physical system* is a region of space-time containing mass–energy, the location of which can be followed over time and which interacts incoherently with its environment. The speed of a physical system is thus an *energy speed*. The definition of physical system excludes images, geometrical points or incomplete, entangled situations.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

pendently without bounds, because the two ends of a system must not interpenetrate. The most important case concerns massive systems, for which we have

$$l \leqslant \frac{c^2}{a} \,. \tag{3}$$

This size limit is induced by the speed of light c; it is also valid for the *displacement* d of a system, if the acceleration measured by an external observer is used. Finally, the speed limit implies a relativistic 'indeterminacy relation'

$$\Delta l \, \Delta a \geqslant c^2 \tag{4}$$

for the length and acceleration indeterminacies. You may wish to take a minute to deduce this relation from the time–frequency indeterminacy. All this is standard knowledge. Challenge 2 s

Quantum theory in one statement

The difference between Galilean physics and quantum theory can be summarized in a single statement on motion, due to Niels Bohr: Ref. 12

▷ There is a minimum action value $\hbar$ in nature.

For all physical systems and all observers, the action W obeys Vol. IV, page 14

$$W \geqslant \hbar = 1.1 \cdot 10^{-34} \,\mathrm{Js} \,. \tag{5}$$

The Planck constant $\hbar$ is the smallest observable action value, and the smallest observable change of angular momentum. The action limit is valid for all systems, thus both for composite and elementary systems. No exception has ever been found. (Try it.) The principle contains all of quantum theory. We call it the *principle of non-zero action*, in order to avoid confusion with the principle of least action. Challenge 3 e

The non-zero action limit $\hbar$ is an *invariant*: it is valid with the same numerical value for *all* observers. Again, any such observer must be a physical system.

The action limit is realized by many physical processes, from the absorption of light to the flip of a spin 1/2 particle. More precisely, the action limit is realized by *microscopic* systems where the process involves a single particle.

The non-zero action limit is stated less frequently than the speed limit. It starts from the usual definition of the action, $W = \int (T - U) \, \mathrm{d}t$, and states that between two observations performed at times t and $t + \Delta t$, even if the evolution of a system is not known, the measured action is at least $\hbar$. Since physical action measures the change in the state of a physical system, there is always a minimum change of state between two different observations of a system.* The non-zero action limit expresses the fundamental fuzziness of nature at a microscopic scale.

* For systems that seem constant in time, such as a spinning particle or a system showing the quantum Zeno effect, finding this minimum change is tricky. Enjoy the challenge. Challenge 4 e

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

It can easily be checked that no observation – whether of photons, electrons or macroscopic systems – gives a smaller action than the value $\hbar$. The non-zero action limit has been verified for fermions, bosons, laser beams, matter systems, and for any combination of these. The opposite hypothesis, implying the existence of arbitrary small change, has been explored in detail: Einstein's long discussion with Bohr, for example, can be seen as a repeated attempt by Einstein to find experiments that would make it possible to measure arbitrarily small changes or action values in nature. In every case, Bohr found that this could not be achieved. All subsequent attempts were equally unsuccessful.

Ref. 13 The principle of non-zero action can be used to deduce the indeterminacy relation, the tunnelling effect, entanglement, permutation symmetry, the appearance of probabilities in quantum theory, the information-theoretic formulation of quantum theory, and the existence of elementary particle reactions. Whenever we try to overcome the smallest action value, the experimental outcome is probabilistic. The minimum action value also implies that in quantum theory, the three concepts of state, measurement operation, and measurement result need to be distinguished from each other; this is done by means Ref. 14 of a so-called *Hilbert space*. Finally, the non-zero action limit is also the foundation of Einstein–Brillouin–Keller quantization.

The existence of a non-zero action limit has been known from the very beginning of quantum theory. It is at the basis of – and completely equivalent to – all the usual formulations of quantum theory, including the many-path and the information-theoretic formulations.

We also note that only a non-zero action limit makes it possible to define a *unit* of action. If there were no action limit, there could be no natural measurement standard for action: action would not then be a measurable quantity.

The upper bounds for speed and for action for any physical system, $v \leqslant c$ and $W \leqslant pd \leqslant mcd$, when combined with the quantum of action, imply a limit on the displacement d of a system between any two observations:

$$d \geqslant \frac{\hbar}{mc} \,. \tag{6}$$

In other words, the (reduced) Compton wavelength of quantum theory appears as the lower limit on the displacement of a system, whenever gravity plays no role. Since this quantum displacement limit also applies to elementary systems, it also applies to the *size* of a *composite* system. However, for the same reason, this size limit is *not* valid for the Challenge 5 e sizes of elementary particles.

The limit on action also implies Heisenberg's well-known indeterminacy relation for Vol. IV, page 23 the displacement d and momentum p of physical systems:

$$\Delta d \, \Delta p \geqslant \frac{\hbar}{2} \,. \tag{7}$$

This relation is valid for both massless and massive systems. All this is textbook knowledge.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Thermodynamics in one statement

Thermodynamics can also be summarized in a single statement about motion:

▷ There is a smallest entropy value k in nature.

Written symbolically,

$$S \geqslant k = 1.3 \cdot 10^{-23}\,\mathrm{J/K}\,. \tag{8}$$

Challenge 6 e
Ref. 15

The entropy S is limited by the Boltzmann constant k. No exception has ever been found. (Try it.) This result is almost 100 years old; it was stated most clearly by Leo Szilard. All of thermodynamics can be deduced from this relation, together with the quantum of action.

The entropy limit is an *invariant*: it is valid for *all* observers. Again, any observer must be a physical system.

The entropy limit is realized only by physical systems made of a single particle. In other words, the entropy limit is again realized only by *microscopic* systems. Therefore the entropy limit provides the same length limit for physical systems as the action limit.

Like the other limit statements we have examined, the entropy limit can also be phrased as a indeterminacy relation between temperature T and energy U:

$$\Delta\frac{1}{T}\,\Delta U \geqslant \frac{k}{2}\,. \tag{9}$$

Ref. 16

This relation was first given by Bohr and then discussed by Heisenberg and many others.

General relativity in one statement

This text can be enjoyed most when a compact and unconventional description of general relativity is used; it is presented in the following. However, the conclusions do not depend on this description; the results are also valid if the usual approach to general relativity is used; this will be shown later on.

Page 52

The most compact description summarizes the step from universal gravity to general relativity in a single statement on motion:

▷ There are maximum force and power values in nature.

For all physical systems and all observers, force F and power P are limited by

$$F \leqslant \frac{c^4}{4G} = 3.0 \cdot 10^{43}\,\mathrm{N} \quad \text{and} \quad P \leqslant \frac{c^5}{4G} = 9.1 \cdot 10^{51}\,\mathrm{W}\,. \tag{10}$$

Challenge 7 e

No exception has ever been found. (Try it.) These limit statements contain both the speed of light c and the gravitational constant G; they thus qualify as statements about relativistic gravitation.

Force is change of momentum; power is change of energy. Since momentum and energy are conserved, force and power are the flow of momentum and energy *through a*

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Ref. 17 *surface*. Force and power, like electric current, describe the change in time of conserved quantity. For electric current, the conserved quantity is charge, for force, it is momentum, Vol. I, page 226 for power, it is energy. In other words, like current, also force is a flow across a surface. This is a simple consequence of the continuity equation. As a consequence, every discussion of maximum force implies a clarification of the underlying surface.

Both the force and the power limits state that the flow of momentum or of energy through any *physical surface* (a term defined below) of any size, for any observer, in any coordinate system, never exceeds the limit value. In particular, the force and power limits are realized only at *horizons*. In all other situations, the observed values are strictly smaller than the maximum values.

The force and power limit values are *invariants*: they are valid for *all* observers and for all interactions. Again, any observer must be a physical system and it must be located Vol. II, page 108 on or near the surface used to define the flow of momentum or energy.

The value of the force limit is the energy of a Schwarzschild black hole divided by its diameter; here the 'diameter' is defined as the circumference divided by π. The power limit is realized when such a black hole is radiated away in the time that light takes to travel along a length corresponding to the diameter.

An object of mass m that has the size of its own Schwarzschild radius $2Gm/c^2$ is called a *black hole*, because according to general relativity, no signals and no light from Ref. 18 inside the Schwarzschild radius can reach the outside world. In this text, black holes are usually non-rotating and usually uncharged; in this case, the terms 'black hole' and 'Schwarzschild black hole' are synonymous.

The value of the maximum force, as well as being the mass–energy of a black hole divided by its diameter, is also the surface gravity of a black hole times its mass. Thus the force limit means that no physical system of a given mass can be concentrated in a region of space-time smaller than a (non-rotating) black hole of that mass. In fact, the Challenge 8 e mass–energy concentration limit can easily be transformed algebraically into the force limit: they are equivalent.

It is easily checked that the maximum force limit is valid for all systems observed in nature, whether they are microscopic, macroscopic or astrophysical. Neither the 'gravitational force' (as long as it is operationally defined) nor the electromagnetic or Challenge 9 e nuclear interactions are ever found to exceed this limit.

But is it possible to *imagine* a system that exceeds the force limit? An extensive discus- Vol. II, page 105 sion shows that this is impossible. For example, the force limit cannot be overcome with Lorentz boosts. One might think that a boost can be chosen in such a way that a 3-force value F in one frame is transformed into any desired value F' in another, boosted frame. This thought turns out to be wrong. In relativity, 3-force cannot be increased beyond all Vol. II, page 82 bounds using boosts. In all reference frames, the measured 3-force can never exceed the proper force, i.e., the 3-force value measured in the comoving frame.

Also changing to an accelerated frame does not help to overcome the force limit, because for high accelerations a, horizons appear at distance a/c^2, and a mass m has a minimum diameter given by $l \geqslant 4Gm/c^2$.

In fact, the force and power limits cannot be exceeded in any thought experiment, Vol. II, page 105 as long as the sizes of observers or of test masses are taken into account. All apparent exceptions or paradoxes assume the existence of point particles or point-like observers; these, however, are not physical: they do not exist in general relativity.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Fortunately for us, nearby black holes or horizons are rare. Unfortunately, this means that neither the force limit nor the power limit are realized in any physical system at hand, neither at everyday length scales, nor in the microscopic world, nor in astrophysical systems. Even though the force and power limits have never been exceeded, a direct experimental confirmation of the limits will take some time.

The formulation of general relativity as a consequence of a maximum force is not
Ref. 19 common; in fact, it seems that it was only discovered 80 years after the theory of general relativity had first been proposed.

Deducing general relativity*

In order to elevate the force or power limit to a principle of nature, we have to show that, just as special relativity follows from the maximum speed, so general relativity follows from the maximum force.

Ref. 20 The maximum force and the maximum power are only realized at horizons. Horizons are regions of space-time where the curvature is so high that it limits the possibility of observation. The name 'horizon' is due to an analogy with the usual horizon of everyday life, which also limits the distance to which one can see. However, in general relativity horizons are *surfaces*, not lines. In fact, we can *define* the concept of horizon in general relativity as a region of maximum force; it is then easy to prove that a horizon is always a two-dimensional surface, and that it is essentially black (except for quantum effects).

The connection between horizons and the maximum force or power allows us to deduce the field equations in a simple way. First, there is always a flow of energy at a horizon. Horizons cannot be planes, since an infinitely extended plane would imply an infinite energy flow. To characterize the finite extension of a given horizon, we use its radius R and its total area A.

The energy flow across a horizon is characterized by an energy E and a proper length L of the energy pulse. When such an energy pulse flows perpendicularly across a horizon, the momentum change $\mathrm{d}p/\mathrm{d}t = F$ is given by

$$F = \frac{E}{L} \,. \tag{11}$$

Since we are at a horizon, we need to insert the maximum possible values. In terms of the horizon area A and radius R, we can rewrite the limit case as

$$\frac{c^4}{4G} = \frac{E}{A} 4\pi R^2 \frac{1}{L} \tag{12}$$

where we have introduced the maximum force and the maximum possible area $4\pi R^2$ of a horizon of (maximum local) radius R. The ratio E/A is the energy per unit area flowing across the horizon.

Horizons are often characterized by the so-called *surface gravity* a instead of the radius

* This section can be skipped at first reading.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

R. In the limit case, two are related by $a = c^2/2R$. This leads to

$$E = \frac{1}{4\pi G}\, a^2\, A\, L\,. \tag{13}$$

Ref. 21 Special relativity shows that at horizons the product aL of proper length and acceleration is limited by the value $c^2/2$. This leads to the central relation for the energy flow at horizons:

$$E = \frac{c^2}{8\pi G}\, a\, A\,. \tag{14}$$

This *horizon relation* makes three points. First, the energy flowing across a horizon is limited. Secondly, this energy is proportional to the area of the horizon. Thirdly, the energy flow is proportional to the surface gravity. These three points are fundamental, and characteristic, statements of general relativity. (We also note that due to the limit property of horizons, the energy flow *towards* the horizon just outside it, the energy flow *across* a horizon, and the energy *inside* a horizon are all the same.)

Taking differentials, the horizon relation can be rewritten as

$$\delta E = \frac{c^2}{8\pi G}\, a\, \delta A\,. \tag{15}$$

In this form, the relation between energy and area can be applied to general horizons, in particular those that are irregularly curved or time-dependent.*

Ref. 22 In a well-known paper, Jacobson has given a beautiful proof of a simple connection: if energy flow is proportional to horizon area for all observers and all horizons, and if the proportionality constant is the correct one, then general relativity follows. To see the connection to general relativity, we generalize the horizon relation (15) to general coordinate systems and general directions of energy flow.

The proof uses tensor notation. We introduce the general surface element $\mathrm{d}\Sigma$ and the local boost Killing vector field k that generates the horizon (with suitable norm). We then rewrite the left-hand side of relation (15) as

$$\delta E = \int T_{ab} k^a \,\mathrm{d}\Sigma^b\,, \tag{16}$$

where T_{ab} is the energy–momentum tensor. This is valid in arbitrary coordinate systems and for arbitrary energy flow directions. Jacobson's main result is that the right-hand side of the horizon relation (15) can be rewritten, using the (purely geometric)

* The horizon relation (15) is well known, though with different names for the observables. Since no communication is possible across a horizon, the detailed fate of energy flowing across a horizon is also unknown. Energy whose detailed fate is unknown is often called *heat*, and abbreviated Q. The horizon relation (15) therefore states that the heat flowing through a horizon is proportional to the horizon area. When quantum theory is introduced into the discussion, the area of a horizon can be called 'entropy' S and its surface gravity can be called 'temperature' T; relation (15) can then be rewritten as $\delta Q = T\delta S$. However, this translation of relation (15), which requires the quantum of action, is unnecessary here. We only cite it to show the relation between horizon behaviour and quantum gravity.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Raychaudhuri equation, as

$$a\,\delta A = c^2 \int R_{ab} k^a \,\mathrm{d}\Sigma^b \,, \tag{17}$$

where R_{ab} is the Ricci tensor describing space-time curvature.

Combining these two steps, we find that the energy–area horizon relation (15) can be rewritten as

$$\int T_{ab} k^a \,\mathrm{d}\Sigma^b = \frac{c^4}{8\pi G} \int R_{ab} k^a \,\mathrm{d}\Sigma^b \,. \tag{18}$$

Jacobson shows that this equation, together with local conservation of energy (i.e., vanishing divergence of the energy–momentum tensor), can only be satisfied if

$$T_{ab} = \frac{c^4}{8\pi G} \left(R_{ab} - \left(\frac{1}{2} R + \Lambda \right) g_{ab} \right) \,, \tag{19}$$

where Λ is a constant of integration whose value is not determined by the problem. These are the full field equations of general relativity, including the cosmological constant Λ. This value of this constant remains undetermined, though.

The field equations are thus shown to be valid at horizons. Since it is possible, by choosing a suitable coordinate transformation, to position a horizon at any desired space-time event, the field equations must be valid over the whole of space-time.

Since it is possible to have a horizon at every event in space-time, there is the same maximum possible force (or power) at every event in nature. This maximum force (or power) is thus a constant of nature.

In other words, the field equations of general relativity are a direct consequence of the limited energy flow at horizons, which in turn is due to the existence of a maximum force or power. We can thus speak of the maximum force *principle*. Conversely, the field equations imply maximum force. Maximum force and general relativity are thus equivalent.

By the way, modern scholars often state that general relativity and gravity follow from the existence of a minimum measurable length. The connection was already stated by Ref. 29 Sakharov in 1969. This connection is correct, but unnecessarily restrictive. The maximum force, which is implicit in the minimal length, is sufficient to imply gravity. Quantum theory – or $\hbar$ – is (obviously) not necessary to deduce gravity.

Deducing universal gravitation

Universal gravitation follows from the force limit in the case where both forces and speeds are much smaller than the maximum values. The first condition implies Challenge 10 e $\sqrt{4GMa} \ll c^2$, the second $v \ll c$ and $al \ll c^2$. Let us apply this to a specific case. Consider a satellite circling a central mass M at distance R with acceleration a. This system, with length $l = 2R$, has only one characteristic speed. Whenever this speed v is much smaller than c, v^2 must be proportional both to the squared speed calculated by $al = 2aR$ and to the squared speed calculated from $\sqrt{4GMa}$. Taken together, these two Challenge 11 e conditions imply that $a = fGM/R^2$, where f is a numerical factor. A quick check, for example using the observed escape velocity values, shows that $f = 1$.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Forces and speeds much smaller than the limit values thus imply that gravity changes with the inverse square of distance. In other words, nature's limit on force implies universal gravitation. Other deductions of universal gravity from limit quantities are given below.
Page 273

The size of physical systems in general relativity

General relativity, like the other theories of modern physics, implies a limit on the *size* l of systems. There is a limit to the amount of matter that can be concentrated into a small volume:

$$l \geqslant \frac{4Gm}{c^2} \,. \tag{20}$$

The size limit is only realized for *black holes*, those well-known systems which swallow everything that is thrown into them. It is fully equivalent to the force limit. All *composite* systems in nature comply with the lower size limit. Whether elementary particles fulfil or even match this limit remains open at this point. More about this issue below.
Page 291

General relativity also implies an 'indeterminacy relation' for the measurement errors of size l and energy E of systems:
Ref. 23

$$\frac{\Delta E}{\Delta l} \leqslant \frac{c^4}{4G} \,. \tag{21}$$

Experimental data are available only for composite systems; all known systems comply with it. For example, the latest measurements for the Sun give $GM_\odot/c^3 = 4.925\,490\,947(1)\,\mu s$; the error in E is thus much smaller than the (scaled) error in its radius, which is known with much smaller precision. The 'indeterminacy relation' (21) is not as well known as that from quantum theory. In fact, tests of it – for example with binary pulsars – may distinguish general relativity from competing theories. We cannot yet say whether this inequality also holds for elementary particles.
Ref. 24

A mechanical analogy for the maximum force

The maximum force is central to the theory of general relativity. Indeed, its value (adorned with a factor 2π) appears in the field equations. The importance of the maximum force becomes clearer when we return to our old image of space-time as a deformable mattress. Like any material body, a mattress is described by a material constant that relates the deformation values to the values of applied energy. Similarly, a mattress, like any material, is described by the maximum stress it can bear before it breaks. These two values describe all materials, from crystals to mattresses. In fact, for perfect crystals (without dislocations), these two material constants are the same.

Empty space somehow behaves like a perfect crystal, or a perfect mattress: it has a deformation-energy constant that is equal to the maximum force that can be applied to it. The maximum force describes the elasticity of space-time. The high value of the maximum force tells us that it is difficult to bend space.

Now, materials are not homogeneous: crystals are made up of atoms, and mattresses are made up of foam bubbles. What is the corresponding structure of space-time? This is a central question in the rest of our adventure. One thing is sure: unlike crystals, vacuum

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

has no preferred directions. We now take a first step towards answering the question of the structure of space-time and particles by putting together all the limits found so far.

PLANCK LIMITS FOR ALL PHYSICAL OBSERVABLES

The existence of a maximum force in nature is equivalent to general relativity. As a result, a large part of modern physics can be summarized in four simple and fundamental limit statements on motion:

$$\begin{aligned}
&\text{Quantum theory follows from the action limit:} && W \geqslant \hbar \\
&\text{Thermodynamics follows from the entropy limit:} && S \geqslant k \\
&\text{Special relativity follows from the speed limit:} && v \leqslant c \\
&\text{General relativity follows from the force limit:} && F \leqslant \frac{c^4}{4G} \,. \qquad (22)
\end{aligned}$$

These *Planck limits* are valid for all physical systems, whether composite or elementary, and for all observers. Note that the limit quantities of quantum theory, thermodynamics, special and general relativity can also be seen as the right-hand sides of the respective indeterminacy relations. Indeed, the set (4, 7, 9, 21) of indeterminacy relations is fully equivalent to the four limit statements (22).

Challenge 12 e

By combining the fundamental limits, we can obtain limits on a number of physical observables. The following limits are valid generally, for both composite and elementary systems:

$$\begin{aligned}
&\text{time interval:} && t \geqslant \sqrt{\frac{4G\hbar}{c^5}} && = && 1.1 \cdot 10^{-43}\,\text{s} && (23) \\
&\text{time-distance product:} && td \geqslant \frac{4G\hbar}{c^4} && = && 3.5 \cdot 10^{-78}\,\text{ms} && (24) \\
&\text{acceleration:} && a \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{c^7}{4G\hbar}} && = && 2.8 \cdot 10^{51}\,\text{m/s}^2 && (25) \\
&\text{angular frequency:} && \omega \leqslant 2\pi\sqrt{\frac{c^5}{2G\hbar}} && = && 5.8 \cdot 10^{43}\,\text{/s} \,. && (26)
\end{aligned}$$

Adding the knowledge that space and time can mix, we get

$$\begin{aligned}
&\text{distance:} && d \geqslant \sqrt{\frac{4G\hbar}{c^3}} && = && 3.2 \cdot 10^{-35}\,\text{m} && (27) \\
&\text{area:} && A \geqslant \frac{4G\hbar}{c^3} && = && 1.0 \cdot 10^{-69}\,\text{m}^2 && (28) \\
&\text{volume:} && V \geqslant \left(\frac{4G\hbar}{c^3}\right)^{3/2} && = && 3.4 \cdot 10^{-104}\,\text{m}^3 && (29)
\end{aligned}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

$$\text{curvature:} \qquad K \leqslant \frac{c^3}{4G\hbar} = 1.0 \cdot 10^{69}\,/\mathrm{m}^2 \tag{30}$$

$$\text{mass density:} \qquad \rho \leqslant \frac{c^5}{16G^2\hbar} = 3.2 \cdot 10^{95}\,\mathrm{kg/m}^3\,. \tag{31}$$

Of course, speed, action, angular momentum, entropy, power and force are also limited, as already stated. Up to a numerical factor, the limit for every physical observable corresponds to the Planck value. (The limit values are deduced from the commonly used Planck values simply by substituting $4G$ for G.) These limit values are the true *natural units* of nature. In fact, the ideal case would be to redefine the usual Planck values for all observables to these extremal values, by absorbing the numerical factor 4 into the respective definitions. In the following, we call the limit values the *corrected Planck units* and assume that the numerical factor 4 has been properly included. In other words, *every natural unit or (corrected) Planck unit is the limit value of the corresponding physical observable.*

Page 56

Most of these limit statements are found scattered throughout the research literature, though the numerical factors often differ. Each limit has attracted a string of publications.

Ref. 25

The existence of a smallest measurable distance and time interval of the order of the Planck values is discussed in all approaches to quantum gravity. The maximum curvature

Ref. 26

has been studied in quantum gravity; it has important consequences for the 'beginning' of the universe, where it excludes any infinitely large or small observable. The maximum mass density appears regularly in discussions on the energy of the vacuum.

In the following, we often call the collection of Planck limits the *Planck scales*. We will discover shortly that at Planck scales, nature differs in many ways from what we are used to at everyday scales.

Note that the different dimensions of the four fundamental limits (22) in nature mean that the four limits are *independent*. For example, quantum effects cannot be used to overcome the force limit; similarly, the power limit cannot be used to overcome the speed limit. There are thus four independent limits on motion in nature.

> Die Frage über die Gültigkeit der Voraussetzungen der Geometrie im Unendlichkleinen hängt zusammen mit der Frage nach dem innern Grunde der Massverhältnisse des Raumes. Bei dieser Frage, welche wohl noch zur Lehre vom Raume gerechnet werden darf, kommt die obige Bemerkung zur Anwendung, dass bei einer discreten Mannigfaltigkeit das Princip der Massverhältnisse schon in dem Begriffe dieser Mannigfaltigkeit enthalten ist, bei einer stetigen aber anders woher hinzukommen muss. Es muss also entweder das dem Raume zu Grunde liegende Wirkliche eine discrete Mannigfaltigkeit bilden, oder der Grund der Massverhältnisse ausserhalb, in darauf wirkenden bindenden Kräften, gesucht werden.*
>
> Bernhard Riemann, 1854, *Über die Hypothesen, welche der Geometrie zu Grunde liegen.*

* 'The question of the validity of the hypotheses of geometry in the infinitely small is connected to the question of the foundation of the metric relations of space. To this question, which may still be regarded as belonging to the study of space, applies the remark made above; that in a discrete manifold the principles of its metric relations are given in the notion of this manifold, while in a continuous manifold, they must come from outside. Either therefore the reality which underlies space must form a discrete manifold, or the principles of its metric relations must be sought outside it, in binding forces which act upon it.'

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Physics, mathematics and simplicity

The four limits of nature of equation (22) – on action, entropy, speed and force – are astonishing. Above all, the four limits are simple. For many decades, a silent assumption has guided many physicists: physics requires *difficult* mathematics, and unification requires even more difficult mathematics.

For example, for over thirty years, Albert Einstein searched with his legendary intensity for the final theory by exploring more and more complex equations. He did so even on his deathbed!* Also most theoretical physicists in the year 2000 held the prejudice that unification requires difficult mathematics. This prejudice is a consequence of over a century of flawed teaching of physics. Flawed teaching is thus one of the reasons that the search for a final theory was not successful for so long.

The summary of physics with limit statements shows that nature and physics are *simple*. In fact, the essence of the important physical theories is *extremely* simple: special relativity, general relativity, thermodynamics and quantum theory are each based on a simple inequality.

The summary of a large part of physics with inequalities is suggestive. The summary makes us dream that the description of the remaining parts of physics – gauge fields, elementary particles and the final theory – might be equally simple. This dream thus contrasts with the silent assumption that unification requires difficult mathematics. Let us continue to explore where the dream of simplicity leads us to.

Limits to space, time and size

> “Those are my principles, and if you don’t like them ... well, I have others.”
>
> Groucho Marx**

The four fundamental limits of nature (22) result in a minimum distance and a minimum time interval. As the expressions for the limits shows, these minimum intervals arise directly from the *unification* of quantum theory and relativity: they do not appear if the theories are kept separate. In short, unification implies that there is a smallest length in nature. This result is important: the formulation of physics as a set of limit statements shows that *the continuum model of space and time is not completely correct*. Continuity and manifolds are only approximations, valid for large actions, low speeds and small forces. Formulating general relativity and quantum theory with limit statements makes this especially clear.

The existence of a force limit in nature implies that no physical system can be smaller than a Schwarzschild black hole of the same mass. In particular, *point particles do not exist*. The density limit makes the same point. In addition, elementary particles are predicted to be larger than the corrected Planck length. So far, this prediction has not been tested by observations, as the scales in question are so small that they are beyond ex-

Bernhard Riemann is one of the most important mathematicians. 45 years after this statement, Max Planck confirmed that natural units are due to gravitation, and thus to ‘binding forces’.

* Interestingly, he also regularly wrote the opposite, as shown on page 83.

** Groucho Marx (b. 1890 New York City, d. 1977 Los Angeles), well-known comedian.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

perimental reach. Detecting the sizes of elementary particles – for example, with electric dipole measurements – would make it possible to check all limits directly.

Page 56

Mass and energy limits

Mass plays a special role in all these arguments. The four limits (22) do not make it possible to extract a limit statement on the mass of physical systems. To find one, we have to restrict our aim somewhat.

The Planck limits mentioned so far apply to *all* physical systems, whether composite or elementary. Other limits apply only to elementary systems. In quantum theory, the distance limit is a size limit only for *composite* systems. A particle is *elementary* if its size l is smaller than any measurable dimension. In particular, it must be smaller than the reduced Compton wavelength:

$$\text{for elementary particles:} \quad l \leqslant \frac{\hbar}{mc} \,. \tag{32}$$

Using this limit, we find the well-known mass, energy and momentum limits that are valid only for elementary particles:

$$\begin{aligned}
&\text{for elementary particles:} \quad m \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{\hbar c}{4G}} = 1.1 \cdot 10^{-8}\,\text{kg} = 0.60 \cdot 10^{19}\,\text{GeV/c}^2 \\
&\text{for elementary particles:} \quad E \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{\hbar c^5}{4G}} = 9.8 \cdot 10^{8}\,\text{J} = 0.60 \cdot 10^{19}\,\text{GeV} \\
&\text{for elementary particles:} \quad p \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{\hbar c^3}{4G}} = 3.2\,\text{kg m/s} = 0.60 \cdot 10^{19}\,\text{GeV/c} \,.
\end{aligned} \tag{33}$$

These elementary-particle limits are the (corrected) *Planck mass*, *Planck energy* and *Planck momentum*. They were discussed in 1968 by Andrei Sakharov, though with different numerical factors. They are regularly cited in elementary particle theory. All known measurements comply with them.

Ref. 27

Virtual particles – a new definition

In fact, there are elementary particles that exceed all three limits that we have encountered so far. Nature does have particles which move faster than light, which show actions below the quantum of action, and which experience forces larger than the force limit.

We know from special relativity that the virtual particles exchanged in collisions move faster than light. We know from quantum theory that the exchange of a virtual particle implies actions below the minimum action. Virtual particles also imply an instantaneous change of momentum; they thus exceed the force limit.

Vol. II, page 71

Vol. IV, page 191

In short, *virtual particles* exceed all the limits that hold for *real* elementary particles.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Curiosities and fun challenges about Planck limits*

The (corrected) Planck limits are statements about properties of nature. There is no way to measure values exceeding these limits, with any kind of experiment. Naturally, such a claim provokes the search for counter-examples and leads to many paradoxes.

* *

The minimum action may come as a surprise at first, because angular momentum and spin have the same unit as action; and nature contains particles with spin 0 or with spin $1/2\,\hbar$. A minimum action indeed implies a minimum angular momentum. However, the angular momentum in question is *total* angular momentum, including the orbital part with respect to the observer. The measured total angular momentum of a particle is never smaller than $\hbar$, even if the spin is smaller.

* *

In terms of mass flows, the power limit implies that flow of water through a tube is limited in throughput. The resulting limit $\mathrm{d}m/\mathrm{d}t \leqslant c^3/4G$ for the change of mass with time seems to be unrecorded in the research literature of the twentieth century.

* *

A further way to deduce the minimum length using the limit statements which structure this adventure is the following. General relativity is based on a maximum force in nature, or alternatively, on a maximum mass change per time, whose value is given by $\mathrm{d}m/\mathrm{d}t = c^3/4G$. Vol. II, page 105 Quantum theory is based on a minimum action W in nature, given by $\hbar$. Since a distance d can be expressed as

$$d^2 = \frac{W}{\mathrm{d}m/\mathrm{d}t}\,, \tag{34}$$

one sees directly that a minimum action and a maximum rate of change of mass imply a minimum distance. In other words, quantum theory and general relativity force us to conclude that *in nature there is a minimum distance.* In other words, *at Planck scales the term 'point in space' has no theoretical or experimental basis.*

* *

With the single-particle limits, the entropy limit leads to an upper limit for temperature:

$$T \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{\hbar c^5}{4Gk^2}} = 0.71 \cdot 10^{32}\,\mathrm{K}\,. \tag{35}$$

This corresponds to the temperature at which the energy per degree of freedom is given by the (corrected) Planck energy $\sqrt{\hbar c^5/4G}$. A more realistic value would have to take account of the number of degrees of freedom of a particle at Planck energy. This would change the numerical factor. However, no system that is even near this temperature value has been studied yet. Only Planck-size horizons are expected to realize the temperature

* Sections called 'Curiosities' can be skipped at first reading.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

limit, but nobody has managed to explore them experimentally, so far.

* *

How can the maximum force be determined by gravity alone, which is the weakest interaction? It turns out that in situations near the maximum force, the other interactions are usually negligible. This is the reason why gravity must be included in a unified description of nature.

* *

At first sight, it seems that electric charge can be used in such a way that the acceleration of a charged body towards a charged black hole is increased to a value, when multiplied with the mass, that exceeds the force limit. However, the changes in the horizon for charged black holes prevent this.

Challenge 13 e

* *

The gravitational attraction between two masses never yields force values high enough to exceed the force limit. Why? First of all, masses m and M cannot come closer together than the sum of their horizon radii. Using $F = GmM/r^2$ with the distance r given by the (naive) sum of the two black hole radii as $r = 2G(M + m)/c^2$, we get

$$F \leqslant \frac{c^4}{4G} \frac{Mm}{(M+m)^2} \,, \tag{36}$$

which is never larger than the force limit. Thus even two attracting black holes cannot exceed the force limit – in the inverse-square approximation of universal gravity. In short, the minimum size of masses means that the maximum force cannot be exceeded.

* *

It is well known that gravity bends space. Therefore, if they are to be fully convincing, our calculation for two attracting black holes needs to be repeated taking into account the curvature of space. The simplest way is to study the force generated by a black hole on a test mass hanging from a wire that is lowered towards a black hole horizon. For an *unrealistic point mass*, the force would diverge at the horizon. Indeed, for a point mass m lowered towards a black hole of mass M at (conventionally defined radial) distance d, the force would be

Ref. 28

$$F = \frac{GMm}{d^2 \sqrt{1 - \frac{2GM}{dc^2}}} \,. \tag{37}$$

This diverges at $d = 0$, the location of the horizon. However, even a test mass cannot be smaller than its own gravitational radius. If we want to reach the horizon with a *realistic* test mass, we need to choose a small test mass m: only a small mass can get near the horizon. For vanishingly small masses, however, the resulting force tends to zero. Indeed, letting the distance tend to the smallest possible value by letting $d = 2G(m + M)/c^2 \to 2GM/c^2$ requires $m \to 0$, which makes the force $F(m, d)$ vanish. If on the other hand, we remain away from the horizon and look for the maximum force by using a mass as

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

large as can possibly fit into the available distance (the calculation is straightforward), then again the force limit is never exceeded. In other words, for *realistic* test masses, expression (37) is *never* larger than $c^4/4G$. Taking into account the minimal size of test masses, we thus see that the maximum force is never exceeded in gravitational systems.

* *

An absolute power limit implies a limit on the energy that can be transported per unit time through any imaginable physical surface. At first sight, it may seem that the combined power emitted by two radiation sources that each emit 3/4 of the maximum value should give 3/2 times the maximum value. However, the combination forms a black hole, or at least prevents part of the radiation from being emitted by swallowing it between the two sources.

Challenge 14 e

* *

One possible system that actually achieves the Planck power limit is the final stage of black hole evaporation. But even in this case, the power limit is not exceeded.

Challenge 15 e

* *

The maximum force limit states that the stress-energy tensor, when integrated over any physical surface, does not exceed the limit value. No such integral, over any physical surface, of any tensor component in any coordinate system, can exceed the force limit, provided that it is measured by a realistic observer, in particular, by an observer with a realistic proper size. The maximum force limit thus applies to any component of any force vector, as well as to its magnitude. It applies to gravitational, electromagnetic, and nuclear forces; and it applies to all realistic observers. It is not important whether the forces are real or fictitious; nor whether we are discussing the 3-forces of Galilean physics or the 4-forces of special relativity. Indeed, the force limit applied to the zeroth component of the 4-force is the power limit.

Ref. 19

* *

The power limit is of interest if applied to the universe as a whole. Indeed, it can be used to partly explain Olbers' paradox: the sky is dark at night because the combined luminosity of all light sources in the universe cannot be brighter than the maximum value.

* *

The force limit and its solid state analogy might be seen to suggest that the appearance of matter might be nature's way of preventing space from ripping apart. Does this analogy make sense?

Page 34

Challenge 16 s

* *

In fact, the connection between minimum length and gravity is not new. Already in 1967, Andrei Sakharov pointed out that a minimum length implies gravity. He showed that regularizing quantum field theory on curved space with a cut-off at small distances will induce counter-terms that include to lowest order the cosmological constant and then the Einstein–Hilbert action of general relativity.

Ref. 29

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

The existence of a smallest length – and a corresponding shortest time interval – implies that no surface is *physical* if any part of it requires a localization in space-time to scales below the minimum length. (In addition, a physical surface must not cross any horizon.) Only by insisting on this condition can we eliminate unphysical examples that contravene the force and power limits. For example, this condition was overlooked in Bousso's
Ref. 30 early discussion of Bekenstein's entropy bound – though not in his more recent ones.

* *

Our discussion of limits can be extended to include electromagnetism. Using the (low-energy) electromagnetic coupling constant α, the fine structure constant, we get the following limits for physical systems interacting electromagnetically:

$$\text{electric charge:} \quad q \geqslant \sqrt{4\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha c \hbar} = e = 0.16\,\text{aC} \tag{38}$$

$$\text{electric field:} \quad E \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{c^7}{64\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha \hbar G^2}} = \frac{c^4}{4Ge} = 1.9 \cdot 10^{62}\,\text{V/m} \tag{39}$$

$$\text{magnetic field:} \quad B \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{c^5}{64\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha \hbar G^2}} = \frac{c^3}{4Ge} = 6.3 \cdot 10^{53}\,\text{T} \tag{40}$$

$$\text{voltage:} \quad U \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{c^4}{16\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha G}} = \frac{1}{e}\sqrt{\frac{\hbar c^5}{4G}} = 6.1 \cdot 10^{27}\,\text{V} \tag{41}$$

$$\text{inductance:} \quad L \geqslant \frac{1}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha}\sqrt{\frac{4G\hbar}{c^7}} = \frac{1}{e^2}\sqrt{\frac{4G\hbar^3}{c^5}} = 4.4 \cdot 10^{-40}\,\text{H}\,. \tag{42}$$

With the additional assumption that in nature at most one particle can occupy one Planck volume, we get

$$\text{charge density:} \quad \rho_e \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha}{16G^3}}\,\frac{c^5}{\hbar} = e\sqrt{\frac{c^9}{64G^3\hbar^3}} = 4.7 \cdot 10^{84}\,\text{C/m}^3 \tag{43}$$

$$\text{capacitance:} \quad C \geqslant 4\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha \sqrt{\frac{4G\hbar}{c^3}} = e^2\sqrt{\frac{4G}{c^5\hbar}} = 2.6 \cdot 10^{-47}\,\text{F}\,. \tag{44}$$

For the case of a single conduction channel, we get

$$\text{electric resistance:} \quad R \geqslant \frac{1}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha c} = \frac{\hbar}{e^2} = 4.1\,\text{k}\Omega \tag{45}$$

$$\text{electric conductivity:} \quad G \leqslant 4\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha c = \frac{e^2}{\hbar} = 0.24\,\text{mS} \tag{46}$$

$$\text{electric current:} \quad I \leqslant \sqrt{\frac{\pi\varepsilon_0 \alpha c^6}{G}} = e\sqrt{\frac{c^5}{4\hbar G}} = 1.5 \cdot 10^{24}\,\text{A}\,. \tag{47}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The magnetic field limit is significant in the study of extreme stars and black holes. The
Ref. 31 maximum electric field plays a role in the theory of gamma-ray bursters. For current, conductivity and resistance in single channels, the limits and their effects were studied
Ref. 32 extensively in the 1980s and 1990s.

The observation of quarks and of collective excitations in semiconductors with charge $e/3$ does not necessarily invalidate the charge limit for physical systems. In neither case is there is a physical system – defined as localized mass–energy interacting incoherently with the environment – with charge $e/3$.

* *

The general relation that to every limit value in nature there is a corresponding indeterminacy relation is valid also for electricity. Indeed, there is an indeterminacy relation for capacitors, of the form

$$\Delta C \, \Delta U \geqslant e \tag{48}$$

where e is the positron charge, C capacity and U potential difference. There is also an indeterminacy relation between electric current I and time t

$$\Delta I \, \Delta t \geqslant e \, . \tag{49}$$

Ref. 33 Both these relations may be found in the research literature.

COSMOLOGICAL LIMITS FOR ALL PHYSICAL OBSERVABLES

In our quest to understand motion, we have focused our attention on the four fundamental limitations to which motion is subject. Special relativity posits a limit to speed, namely the speed of light c. General relativity limits force and power respectively by
Vol. II, page 105 $c^4/4G$ and $c^5/4G$, and quantum theory introduces a smallest value $\hbar$ for action. Nature imposes the lower limit k on entropy. If we include the limit e on electric charge changes, these limits induce extremal values for *all* physical observables, given by the corresponding (corrected) Planck values.

A question arises: does nature also impose limits on physical observables at the opposite end of the measurement scale? For example, there is a highest force and a highest power in nature. Is there also a lowest force and a lowest power? Is there also a lowest speed?

We will show that there are indeed such limits, for all observables. We give the general method to generate such bounds, and explore several examples. This exploration will take us on an interesting survey of modern physics; we start by deducing system-dependent limits and then go on to the cosmological limits.

Size and energy dependence

While looking for additional limits in nature, we note a fundamental fact. Any upper limit for angular momentum, and any lower limit for power, must be *system-dependent*. Such limits will not be absolute, but will depend on properties of the system. Now, a

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

physical system is a part of nature characterized by a boundary and its content.* Thus the simplest properties shared by all systems are their size (characterized in the following by the diameter) L and their energy E. With these characteristics we can deduce system-dependent limits for every physical observable. The general method is straightforward: we take the known inequalities for speed, action, power, charge and entropy, and then extract a limit for any observable, by inserting the length and energy as required. We then have to select the strictest of the limits we find.

Angular momentum and action

It only takes a moment to check that the ratio of angular momentum D to energy E times length L has the dimensions of inverse speed. Since speeds are limited by the speed of light, we get

Challenge 17 e

$$D_{\text{system}} \leqslant \frac{1}{c} LE \,. \tag{50}$$

Indeed, in nature there do not seem to be any exceptions to this limit on angular momentum. In no known system, from atoms to molecules, from ice skaters to galaxies, does the angular momentum exceed this value. Even the most violently rotating objects, the so-called extremal black holes, are limited in angular momentum by $D \leqslant LE/c$. (Actually, this limit is correct for black holes only if the energy is taken as the irreducible mass times c^2; if the usual mass is used, the limit is too large by a factor of 4.) The limit deduced from general relativity, given by $D \leqslant L^2c^3/4G$, is not stricter than the one just given. By the way, no system-dependent lower limit for angular momentum can be deduced.

Ref. 34

The maximum value for angular momentum is also interesting when it is seen as an action limit. Action is the time integral of the difference between kinetic and potential energy. Though nature always seeks to minimize the action W, systems, of size L, that *maximize* action are also interesting. You might check for yourself that the action limit

$$W \leqslant LE/c \tag{51}$$

is not exceeded in any physical process.

Challenge 18 e

Speed

Speed times mass times length is an action. Since action values in nature are limited from below by $\hbar$, we get a limit for the speed of a system:

$$v_{\text{system}} \geqslant \hbar c^2 \frac{1}{LE} \,. \tag{52}$$

This is not a new result; it is just a form of the indeterminacy relation of quantum theory. It gives a minimum speed for any system of energy E and diameter L. Even the extremely slow radius change of a black hole by evaporation just realizes this minimal speed.

Challenge 19 e

* Quantum theory refines this definition: a physical system is a part of nature that in addition interacts *incoherently* with its environment. In the following discussion we will assume that this condition is satisfied.

Vol. IV, page 149

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Continuing with the same method, we also find that the limit deduced from general relativity, $v \leqslant (c^2/4G)(L/E)$, gives no new information. Therefore, no *system-dependent* upper speed limit exists – just the global limit c.

Challenge 20 e

Incidentally, the limits are not unique. Other limits can be found in a systematic way. Upper limits can be multiplied, for example, by factors of $(L/E)(c^4/4G)$ or $(LE)(2/\hbar c)$, yielding less strict upper limits. A similar rule can be given for lower limits.*

Force, power and luminosity

We have seen that force and power are central to general relativity. The force exerted by a system is the flow of momentum out of the system; emitted power is the flow of energy out of the system. Thanks to the connection $W = FLT$ between action W, force F, distance L and time T, we can deduce

$$F_{\text{system}} \geqslant \frac{\hbar}{2c}\,\frac{1}{T^2}\,. \tag{53}$$

Experiments do not reach this limit. The smallest forces measured in nature are those in atomic force microscopes, where values as small as 1 aN are observed. But even these values are above the lower force limit.

The power P emitted by a system of size L and mass M is limited by

$$c^3\,\frac{M}{L} \geqslant P_{\text{system}} \geqslant 2\hbar G\,\frac{M}{L^3}\,. \tag{54}$$

The limit on the left is the upper limit for any engine or lamp, as deduced from relativity; not even the universe exceeds it. The limit on the right is the minimum power emitted by any system through quantum gravity effects. Indeed, no physical system is completely tight. Even black holes, the systems with the best ability to keep components inside their enclosure, radiate. The power radiated by black holes should just meet this limit, provided the length L is taken to be the circumference of the black hole. Thus the claim of the quantum gravity limit is that the power emitted by a black hole is the smallest power that is emitted by any composite system of the same surface gravity. (However, the numerical factors in the black hole power appearing in the research literature are not yet consistent.)

The strange charm of the entropy bound

Ref. 35

In 1973, Bekenstein discovered a famous limit that connects the entropy S of a physical system with its size and mass. No system has a larger entropy than one bounded by a horizon. The larger the horizon surface, the larger the entropy. We write

$$\frac{S}{S_{\text{limit}}} \leqslant \frac{A}{A_{\text{limit}}} \tag{55}$$

* The strictest upper limits are those with the smallest exponent for length, and the strictest lower limits are those with the largest exponent of length.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

which gives

$$S \leqslant \frac{kc^3}{4G\hbar}\, A\,, \tag{56}$$

where A is the surface of the system. Equality is realized only for black holes. The old question of the origin of the factor 4 in the entropy of black holes is thus answered here: it is due to the factor 4 in the force or power bound in nature. Time will tell whether this explanation will be generally accepted.

We can also derive a more general relation by using a mysterious assumption, which we will discuss afterwards. We assume that the limits for vacuum are opposite to those for matter. We can then write $c^2/4G \leqslant M/L$ for the vacuum. Using

$$\frac{S}{S_{\text{c.Planck}}} \leqslant \frac{M}{M_{\text{c.Planck}}} \frac{A}{A_{\text{c.Planck}}} \frac{L_{\text{c.Planck}}}{L} \tag{57}$$

we get

$$S \leqslant \frac{\pi kc}{\hbar}\, ML = \frac{2\pi kc}{\hbar}\, MR\,. \tag{58}$$

This is called *Bekenstein's entropy bound*. No exception has ever been found or constructed, despite many attempts. Again, the limit value itself is only realized for black holes.

Ref. 30

We need to explain the strange assumption used above. We are investigating the entropy of a horizon. Horizons are not matter, but limits to empty space. The entropy of horizons is due to the large number of virtual particles found at them. In order to deduce the maximum entropy of expression (57) one therefore has to use the properties of the vacuum. In other words, *either* we use a mass-to-length ratio for vacuum *above* the Planck limit, *or* we use the Planck entropy as the *maximum* value for vacuum.

Other, equivalent limits for entropy can be found if other variables are introduced. For example, since the ratio of the shear viscosity η to the volume density of entropy (times k) has the dimensions of action, we can directly write

Ref. 36

$$S \leqslant \frac{k}{\hbar}\, \eta V\,. \tag{59}$$

Again, equality is only attained in the case of black holes. In time, no doubt, the list of similar bounds will grow longer.

Is there also a smallest, system-dependent entropy? So far, there does not seem to be a system-dependent minimum value for entropy: the present approach gives no expression that is larger than k.

Challenge 21 e

The establishment of the entropy limit is an important step towards making our description of motion consistent. If space-time can move, as general relativity maintains, it also has an entropy. How could entropy be limited if space-time were continuous? Clearly, because of the existence of a minimum distance and minimum time in nature, space-time cannot be continuous, but must have a finite number of degrees of freedom, and thus a finite entropy.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Curiosities and fun challenges about system-dependent limits to observables

Also the system-dependent limit values for all physical observables, like the Planck values, yield a plethora of interesting questions. We study a few examples.

* *

The content of a system is characterized not only by its mass and charge, but also by its strangeness, isospin, colour charge, charge and parity. Can you deduce the limits for these quantities? Challenge 22 r

* *

In our discussion of black hole limits, we silently assumed that they interact, like any thermal system, in an incoherent way with the environment. Which of the results of this section change when this condition is dropped, and how? Which limits can be overcome? Challenge 23 s

* *

Can you find a general method to deduce all limits of observables? Challenge 24 e

* *

Bekenstein's entropy bound leads to some interesting speculations. Let us speculate that the universe itself, being surrounded by a horizon, meets the Bekenstein bound. The entropy bound gives a bound to all degrees of freedom inside a system: it tells us that the number $N_{\text{d.o.f.}}$ of degrees of freedom in the universe is roughly Challenge 25 e

$$N_{\text{d.o.f.}} \approx 10^{132} \,. \tag{60}$$

Compare this with the number $N_{\text{Pl. vol.}}$ of Planck volumes in the universe

$$N_{\text{Pl. vol.}} \approx 10^{183} \tag{61}$$

and with the number $N_{\text{part.}}$ of particles in the universe

$$N_{\text{part.}} \approx 10^{91} \,. \tag{62}$$

We see that particles are only a tiny fraction of what moves around. Most motion must be movement of space-time. At the same time, space-time moves far less than might be naively expected. To find out how all this happens is the challenge of the unified description of motion.

* *

A lower limit for the temperature of a thermal system can be found using the idea that the number of degrees of freedom of a system is limited by its surface, or more precisely,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

by the ratio between the surface and the Planck surface. We get the limit

$$T \geqslant \frac{4G\hbar}{\pi kc}\,\frac{M}{L^2}\,. \tag{63}$$

Alternatively, using the method given above, we can use the limit on the thermal energy $kT/2 \geqslant \hbar c/2\pi L$ (the thermal wavelength must be smaller than the size of the system) together with the limit on mass $c^2/4G \geqslant M/L$, and deduce the same result.

We have met the temperature limit already: when the system is a black hole, the limit yields the temperature of the emitted radiation. In other words, the temperature of black holes is the lower limit for all physical systems for which a temperature can be defined, provided they share the *same boundary gravity*. The latter condition makes sense: boundary gravity is accessible from the outside and describes the full physical system, since it depends on both its boundary and its content. So far, no exception to this claim is known. All systems from everyday life comply with it, as do all stars. Even the coldest known systems in the universe, namely Bose–Einstein condensates and other cold matter produced in laboratories, are much hotter than the limit, and thus much hotter than black holes of the same surface gravity. (We saw earlier that a consistent Lorentz transformation for temperature is not possible; so the minimum temperature limit is only valid for an observer at the same gravitational potential as the system under consideration and stationary relative to it.)

Challenge 26 s
Vol. II, page 61

There seems to be no consistent way to define an upper limit for a size-dependent temperature. Limits for other thermodynamic quantities can be found, but we will not discuss them here.

Challenge 27 ny

* *

When electromagnetism plays a role in a system, the system also needs to be characterized by a charge Q. Our method then gives the following lower limit for the electric field E:

$$E \geqslant 4Ge\,\frac{M^2}{Q^2L^2}\,. \tag{64}$$

We write the field limit in terms of the elementary charge e, though it might be more appropriate to write it using the fine structure constant via $e = \sqrt{4\pi\varepsilon_0\alpha\hbar c}$. In observations, the electric field limit has never been exceeded.

For the magnetic field we get

$$B \geqslant \frac{4Ge}{c}\,\frac{M^2}{Q^2L^2}\,. \tag{65}$$

Again, this limit is satisfied by all known systems in nature.

Similar limits can be found for the other electromagnetic observables. In fact, several of the limits given earlier are modified when electric charge is included. Does the size limit change when electric charge is taken into account? In fact, an entire research field is dedicated to deducing and testing the most general limits valid in nature.

Challenge 28 s

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

Many cosmological limits have not been discussed here nor anywhere else. The following could all be worth a publication: What is the limit for momentum? Energy? Pressure? Acceleration? Mass change? Lifetime?

Cosmology in one statement

We now continue our exploration of limits to the largest systems possible. In order to do that, we have a simple look at cosmology.

Cosmology results from the equations of general relativity when the cosmological constant is included. Cosmology can thus be summarized by any sufficiently general statement that includes the cosmological constant Λ. The simplest statement can be deduced from the observation that the present distance R_0 of the night sky horizon is about $R_0 \approx 1/\sqrt{\Lambda}$. From this we can summarize cosmology by the inequality

$$l \lesssim \frac{1}{\sqrt{\Lambda}} \,. \tag{66}$$

This statement contains all of cosmology; at present, the precise numerical factor is not of importance. This statement must be added as a fifth statement on physics to the four fundamental Planck limits.

Challenge 29 s By the way, can you show that the cosmological constant is observer-invariant?

The cosmological limits to observables

From the system-dependent limits for speed, action, force and entropy we can deduce system-dependent limits for all other physical observables. In addition, we note that the system-dependent limits can (usually) be applied to the universe as a whole; we only need to insert the size and energy content of the universe. Usually, we can do this through a limit process, even though the universe itself is not a physical system. In this way, we get an absolute limit for every physical observable that contains the cosmological constant Λ and that is on the opposite end of the Planck limit for that observable. We can call these limits the *cosmological limits*.

The simplest cosmological limit is the upper limit to length in the universe. Since the cosmological length limit also implies a maximum possible Compton wavelength, we get a minimum particle mass and energy. We also get an cosmological lower limit on luminosity, etc.

For *single particles*, we find the absolute lower speed limit, the cosmological speed limit, given by

$$v_{\text{particle}} \geqslant \frac{\sqrt{4G\hbar/c}}{L_{\text{universe}}} = L_{\text{corr. Planck}} \sqrt{\Lambda}\, c \approx 7 \cdot 10^{-53}\,\text{m/s} \,. \tag{67}$$

It has never been reached or approached by any observation.

The negative energy volume density $-\Lambda c^4/4\pi G$ introduced by the positive cosmological constant Λ corresponds to a negative pressure (both quantities have the same

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

dimensions). When multiplied by the minimum area it yields a force value

$$F = \frac{\Lambda\hbar c}{2\pi} = 4.8 \cdot 10^{-79}\,\mathrm{N}\,. \tag{68}$$

Apart from the numerical factor, this is the *cosmological force limit*, the smallest possible force in nature. This is also the gravitational force between two corrected Planck masses located at the cosmological distance $\sqrt{\pi/4\Lambda}$.

As a note, we are led the fascinating conjecture that the full theory of general relativity, including the cosmological constant, is defined by the combination of a maximum and a minimum force in nature.

Another note concerns the importance of black hole limits for the universe itself. The observed average mass density of the universe is not far from the corresponding black hole limit. The black hole lifetime limit might thus provide an upper limit for the full lifetime of the universe. However, the age of the universe is far from that limit by a large factor. In fact, since the universe's size and age are increasing, the lifetime limit is pushed further into the future with every second that passes. The universe evolves so as to escape its own decay.

Challenge 30 e

In summary, *nature provides two limits for each observable: a Planck limit and a cosmological limit.* The existence of two limits for each observable, a lower and an upper one, has important consequences that we will explore now.

Limits to measurement precision and their challenge to thought

We now know that in nature, every physical measurement has a lower and an upper bound. One of the bounds is cosmological, the other is given by the (corrected) Planck unit. As a consequence, for every observable, the smallest relative measurement error that is possible in nature is the ratio between the Planck limit and the cosmological limit. In particular, we have to conclude that *all measurements are limited in precision.*

All limits, those to observables and those to measurement precision, only appear when quantum theory and gravity are brought together. But the existence of these limits, and in particular the existence of limits to measurement precision, forces us to abandon some cherished assumptions.

No real numbers

Because of the fundamental limits to measurement precision, *the measured values of physical observables do not require the full set of real numbers.* In fact, limited precision implies that observables cannot be described by the real numbers! This staggering result appears whenever quantum theory and gravity are brought together. But there is more.

Vacuum and mass: two sides of the same coin

There is a limit to the precision of length measurements in nature. This limit is valid both for length measurements of empty space and for length measurements of matter (or radiation). Now let us recall what we do when we measure the length of a table with a ruler. To find the ends of the table, we must be able to distinguish the table from the surround-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

ing air. In more precise terms, we must be able to distinguish matter from vacuum.

Whenever we want high measurement precision, we need to approach Planck scales. But at Planck scales, the measurement values and the measurement errors are of the same size. In short, at Planck scales, the intrinsic measurement limitations of nature imply that we cannot say whether we are measuring vacuum or matter. We will check this Page 56 conclusion in detail later on.

In fact, we can pick any other observable that distinguishes vacuum from matter – for example, colour, mass, size, charge, speed or angular momentum – and we have the same problem: at Planck scales, the limits to observables lead to limits to measurement precision, and therefore, at Planck scales it is impossible to distinguish between matter and vacuum. At Planck scales, we cannot tell whether a box is full or empty.

To state the conclusion in the sharpest possible terms: *vacuum and matter do not differ at Planck scales*. This counter-intuitive result is one of the charms of the search for a final, unified theory. It has inspired many researchers in the field and some have written best-sellers about it. Brian Greene was particularly successful in presenting this side of Ref. 37 quantum geometry to the wider public.

Limited measurement precision also implies that at the Planck energy it is impossible to speak about points, instants, events or dimensionality. Similarly, at the Planck length it is impossible to distinguish between positive and negative time values: so particles and antiparticles are not clearly distinguished at Planck scales. All these conclusions are so Page 78 far-reaching that we must check them in more detail. We will do this shortly.

Measurement precision and the existence of sets

In physics, it is generally assumed that nature is a *set* of components. These components, called *elements* by mathematicians, are assumed to be *separable* from each other. This tacit assumption is introduced in three main situations: it is assumed that matter consists of separable particles, that space-time consists of separable events or points, and that the set of states consists of separable initial conditions. Until the year 2000, physics has built the whole of its description of nature on the concept of a set.

A fundamental limit to measurement precision implies that nature is *not* a set of such Page 56 separable elements. Precision limits imply that physical entities can be distinguished only *approximately*. The approximate distinction is only possible at energies much lower than the Planck energy $\sqrt{\hbar c^5/4G}$. As humans, we do live at such small energies, and we can safely make the approximation. Indeed, the approximation is excellent in practice; we do not notice any error. But at Planck energy, distinction and separation is impossible in principle. In particular, at the cosmic horizon, at the big bang, and at Planck scales, any precise distinction between two events, two points or two particles becomes impossible.

Another way to reach this result is the following. Separation of two entities requires *different measurement results* – for example, different positions, different masses or different velocities. Whatever observable is chosen, at the Planck energy the distinction becomes impossible because of the large measurements errors. Only at everyday energies is a distinction approximately possible. Any distinction between two physical systems – for example, between a toothpick and a mountain – is possible only *approximately*: at Page 56 Planck scales, a boundary cannot be drawn.

A third argument is the following. In order to *count* any entities in nature – a set of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

particles, a discrete set of points, or any other discrete set of physical observables – the entities have to be separable. But the inevitable measurement errors contradict separability. Thus at the Planck energy it is impossible to count physical objects with precision. *Nature has no parts.*

Page 56

In summary, at Planck scales, perfect separation is impossible in principle. We cannot distinguish observations. *At Planck scales it is impossible to split nature into separate entities.* In nature, elements of sets cannot be defined. Neither discrete nor continuous sets can be constructed. *Nature does not contain sets or elements.*

Page 56

Since sets and elements are only approximations, the concept of a 'set', which assumes separable elements, is too specialized to describe nature. Nature cannot be described at Planck scales – i.e., with full precision – if any of the concepts used for its description presupposes sets. However, all concepts used in the past 25 centuries to describe nature – space, time, particles, phase space, observables, wave functions, Hilbert space, Fock space, Riemannian space, particle space, loop space or moduli space – are based on sets. They must all be abandoned at Planck energy.

In short, nature is one and has no parts. *No correct mathematical model of nature can be based on sets.* But none of the approaches used in the twentieth century in theoretical physics has abandoned sets. This requirement is thus very powerful; indeed, it will guide us in the search for the unification of relativity and quantum theory. The requirement will even solve Hilbert's sixth problem.

Page 105

SUMMARY ON LIMITS IN NATURE

If we exclude gauge interactions, we can summarize the rest of physics in a few limit statements.

— The speed limit is equivalent to special relativity.
— The force limit is equivalent to general relativity.
— The action limit is equivalent to quantum theory.
— The entropy limit is equivalent to thermodynamics.
— The distance limit is equivalent to cosmology.

All these limits are observer-invariant. The invariance of the limits suggests interesting thought experiments, none of which leads to their violation.

The invariant limits imply that in nature every physical observable is bound on one end by the corresponding (corrected) Planck unit and on the other end by a cosmological limit. Every observable in nature has an upper and lower limit value.

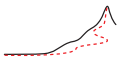
The existence of lower and upper limit values to all observables implies that measurement precision is limited. As a consequence, matter and vacuum are indistinguishable, the description of space-time as a continuous manifold of points is not correct, and nature can be described by sets only approximately.

Since the most precise physical theories known, quantum theory and general relativity, can be reduced to limit statements, there is a good chance that the final, unified theory of physics will require an equally simple description. Nature's limits thus suggest that the mathematics of the final, unified theory might be simple. In addition, nature's limits

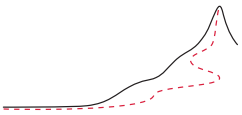
Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

imply that Planck units are the key to the final theory.

At this point of our adventure, many questions are still open. Answering any of the
Page 18 open issues of the millennium list still seems out of reach. But this impression is too pessimistic. Our discussion implies that we only need to find a description of nature that is simple and *without sets*. And a natural way to avoid the use of sets is a description of empty space, radiation and matter as being made of *common* constituents. But before we explore this option, we check the conclusions of this chapter in another way. In particular, as a help to more conservative physicists, we check all conclusions we found so far *without* making use of the maximum force principle.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 3

GENERAL RELATIVITY VERSUS QUANTUM THEORY

> Man muß die Denkgewohnheiten durch Denknotwendigkeiten ersetzen.*
>
> Albert Einstein

The two accurate descriptions of motion available in the year 2000, namely that of general relativity and that of the standard model, are both useful and thoroughly beautiful. This millennium description of motion is *useful* because its consequences are confirmed by all experiments, to the full measurement precision. We are able to describe and understand all examples of motion that have ever been encountered. We can use this understanding to save lives, provide food and enjoy life. We have thus reached a considerable height in our mountain ascent. Our quest for the full description of motion is not far from completion.

The results of twentieth century physics are also *beautiful*. By this, physicists just mean that they can be phrased in *simple* terms. (This is a poor definition of beauty, but physicists are rarely experts on beauty. Nevertheless, if a physicist has some other concept of beauty in physics, avoid him, because in that case he is really talking nonsense.) The simplicity of twentieth-century physics is well-known: all motion observed in nature minimizes action. Since in physics, action is a measure of change, we can say that all motion observed in nature *minimizes change*. In particular, every example of motion due to general relativity or to the standard model of particle physics minimizes action; both theories can thus be described concisely with the help of a Lagrangian.

Vol. I, page 243

On the other hand, some important aspects of any type of motion, the masses of the involved elementary particles and the strength of their coupling, are unexplained by general relativity and by the standard model of particle physics. The same applies to the origin of all the particles in the universe, their initial conditions, and the dimensionality of space-time. Obviously, the millennium description of physics is not yet complete.

The remaining part of our adventure will be the most demanding. In the ascent of any high mountain, the head gets dizzy because of the lack of oxygen. The finite amount of energy at our disposal requires that we leave behind all unnecessary baggage and everything that slows us down. In order to determine what is unnecessary, we need to focus on what we want to achieve. Our aim is the precise description of motion. But even though general relativity and quantum theory are extremely precise, useful and simple, we do carry a burden: the two theories and their concepts *contradict* each other.

* 'One needs to replace habits of thought by necessities of thought.'

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The contradictions

In classical physics and in general relativity, the vacuum, or empty space, is a region with no mass, no energy and no momentum. If particles or gravitational fields are present, the energy density is not zero, space is curved and there is no complete vacuum.

In everyday life, vacuum has an energy density that cannot be distinguished from zero. However, general relativity proposes a way to check this with high precision: we
Ref. 38 measure the average curvature of the universe. Nowadays, cosmological measurements performed with dedicated satellites reveal an average energy density E/V of the inter-
Vol. II, page 241 galactic 'vacuum' with the value of

$$\frac{E}{V} \approx 0.5\,\mathrm{nJ/m^3}\,. \tag{69}$$

In short, cosmological data show that the energy density of intergalactic space is not exactly zero; nevertheless, the measured value is extremely small and can be neglected in all laboratory experiments.

Ref. 39 On the other hand, quantum field theory tells a different story on vacuum energy density. A vacuum is a region with zero-point fluctuations. The energy content of a vacuum is the sum of the zero-point energies of all the fields it contains. Indeed, the Casimir
Vol. V, page 120 effect 'proves' the reality of these zero-point energies. Following quantum field theory,
Vol. V, page 126 their energy density is given, within one order of magnitude, by

$$\frac{E}{V} \approx \frac{4\pi h}{c^3}\int_0^{\nu_{\max}} \nu^3 \mathrm{d}\nu = \frac{\pi h}{c^3}\nu_{\max}^4\,. \tag{70}$$

The approximation is valid for the case in which the cut-off frequency $\nu_{\max}$ is much larger than the rest mass m of the particles corresponding to the field under consideration. The
Page 38 limit considerations given above imply that the cut-off energy has to be of the order of the Planck energy $\sqrt{\hbar c^5/4G}$, about $0.6 \cdot 10^{19}$ GeV= 1.0 GJ. That would give a vacuum energy density of

$$\frac{E}{V} \approx 10^{111}\,\mathrm{J/m^3}\,, \tag{71}$$

which is about 10^{120} times higher than the experimental measurement. In other words, something is slightly wrong in the calculation due to quantum field theory.*

General relativity and quantum theory contradict each other in other ways. Gravity
Ref. 41 is curved space-time. Extensive research has shown that quantum field theory, which describes electrodynamics and nuclear forces, fails for situations with strongly curved space-time. In these cases the concept of 'particle' is not precisely defined. Quantum field theory cannot be extended to include gravity consistently, and thus to include general relativity. Without the concept of the particle as a discrete entity, we also lose the ability to perform perturbation calculations – and these are the only calculations pos-

* It is worthwhile to stress that the 'slight' mistake lies in the domain of quantum field theory. There is no mistake and no mystery, despite the many claims to the contrary found in newspapers and in bad research
Ref. 40 articles, in general relativity. This well-known point is made especially clear by Bianchi and Rovelli.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

sible in quantum field theory. In short, quantum theory only works because it assumes that gravity does not exist. Indeed, the gravitational constant G does not appear in any consistent quantum field theory.

On the other hand, general relativity neglects the commutation rules between physical quantities discovered in experiments on a microscopic scale. General relativity assumes that the classical notions of position and momentum of material objects are meaningful. It thus ignores Planck's constant $\hbar$, and only works by neglecting quantum effects.

The concept of *measurement* also differs. In general relativity, as in classical physics, Vol. V, page 286 it is assumed that arbitrary precision of measurement is possible – for example, by using finer and finer ruler marks. In quantum mechanics, on the other hand, the precision of measurement is limited. The indeterminacy relation yields limits that follow from the Vol. V, page 43 mass M of the measurement apparatus.

The contradictions also concern the concept of *time*. According to relativity and classical physics, time is what is read from clocks. But quantum theory says that precise clocks do not exist, especially if gravitation is taken into account. What does 'waiting 10 minutes' mean, if the clock goes into a quantum-mechanical superposition as a result of Page 62 its coupling to space-time geometry? It means nothing.

Similarly, general relativity implies that space and time cannot be distinguished, whereas quantum theory implies that matter does make a distinction between them. A related difference is the following. Quantum theory is a theory of – admittedly weird – Vol. II, page 282 local observables. In general relativity, there are no local observables, as Einstein's hole argument shows.

The contradiction between the two theories is shown most dramatically by the failure of general relativity to describe the pair creation of particles with spin 1/2, a typical and Ref. 42, Ref. 43 essential quantum process. John Wheeler* and others have argued that, in such a case, the Ref. 44, Ref. 45 topology of space necessarily has to *change*; in general relativity, however, the topology of space is fixed. Equivalently, quantum theory says that matter is made of *fermions*, but fermions cannot be incorporated into general relativity.**

Ref. 46 Another striking contradiction was pointed out by Jürgen Ehlers. Quantum theory is built on point particles, and point particles move on *time-like* world lines. But following general relativity, point particles have a singularity inside their black hole horizon; and singularities always move on *space-like* world lines. The two theories thus contradict each other at smallest distances.

No description of nature that contains contradictions can lead to a unified description or to a completely correct description. To eliminate the contradictions, we need to understand their origin.

The origin of the contradictions

Ref. 47 *All* contradictions between general relativity and quantum mechanics have the same origin. In 20th-century physics, motion is described in terms of objects, made up of

* John Archibald Wheeler (1911–2008), was a physicist and influential teacher who worked on general relativity.

** As we will see below, the strand model provides a way to incorporate fermions into an extremely accurate approximation of general relativity, without requiring any topology change. This effectively invalidates Wheeler's argument.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

particles, and space-time, made up of *events*. Let us see how these two concepts are defined.

A *particle* – and in general any object – is defined as a conserved entity that has a position and that can move. In fact, the etymology of the word *object* is connected to the latter property. In other words, a particle is a small entity with conserved mass, charge, spin and so on, whose position can vary with time.

Ref. 48 An *event* is a point in space and time. In every physics text, *time* is defined with the help of moving objects, usually called 'clocks', or moving particles, such as those emitted by light sources. Similarly, *length* is defined in terms of objects, either with an old-fashioned ruler or in terms of the motion of light, which is itself motion of particles.

Modern physics has sharpened our definitions of particles and space-time. Quantum mechanics assumes that space-time is given (as a symmetry of the Hamiltonian), and studies the properties of particles and their motion, both for matter and for radiation. Quantum theory has deduced the full list of properties that define a particle. General relativity, and especially cosmology, takes the opposite approach: it assumes that the properties of matter and radiation are given (for example, via their equations of state), and describes in detail the space-time that follows from them, in particular its curvature.

However, one fact remains unchanged throughout all these advances: in the millennium description of nature, *the two concepts of particle and of space-time are each defined with the help of the other*. To eliminate the contradictions between quantum mechanics and general relativity, and to formulate a complete theory, we must eliminate this circular definition.

The domain of contradictions: Planck scales

Despite their contradictions and the underlying circular definition, both general relativity and quantum theory are successful theories for the description of nature: they agree with all data. How can this be?

Each theory of modern physics provides a criterion for determining when it is necessary and when classical Galilean physics is no longer applicable. These criteria are the basis for many arguments in the following chapters.

General relativity shows that it is *necessary* to take into account the curvature of empty space* and space-time whenever we approach an object of mass m to within a distance of the order of the Schwarzschild radius r_S, given by

$$r_S = 2Gm/c^2 \,. \tag{72}$$

The gravitational constant G and the speed of light c act as conversion constants. Indeed, as the Schwarzschild radius of an object is approached, the difference between general relativity and the classical $1/r^2$ description of gravity becomes larger and larger. For example, the barely measurable gravitational deflection of light by the Sun is due to the Ref. 42, Ref. 49 light approaching the Sun to within $2.4 \cdot 10^5$ times its Schwarzschild radius. Usually, we are forced to stay away from objects at a distance that is an even larger multiple of the Schwarzschild radius, as shown in Table 2. Only for this reason is general relativity unne-

* In the following, we use the terms 'vacuum' and 'empty space' interchangeably.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 2 The size, Schwarzschild radius and Compton wavelength of some objects appearing in nature. The lengths in quotation marks make no physical sense, as explained in the text.

OBJECT	DIAMETER d	MASS m	SCHWARZSCHILD RADIUS r_S	RATIO d/r_S	COMPTON WAVELENGTH λ_C (red.)	RATIO d/λ_C
galaxy	≈ 1 Zm	$\approx 5 \cdot 10^{40}$ kg	≈ 70 Tm	$\approx 10^{7}$	'$\approx 10^{-83}$ m'	$\approx 10^{104}$
neutron star	10 km	$2.8 \cdot 10^{30}$ kg	4.2 km	2.4	'$1.3 \cdot 10^{-73}$ m'	$8.0 \cdot 10^{76}$
Sun	1.4 Gm	$2.0 \cdot 10^{30}$ kg	3.0 km	$4.8 \cdot 10^{5}$	'$1.0 \cdot 10^{-73}$ m'	$8.0 \cdot 10^{81}$
Earth	13 Mm	$6.0 \cdot 10^{24}$ kg	8.9 mm	$1.4 \cdot 10^{9}$	'$5.8 \cdot 10^{-68}$ m'	$2.2 \cdot 10^{74}$
human	1.8 m	75 kg	0.11 ym	$1.6 \cdot 10^{25}$	'$4.7 \cdot 10^{-45}$ m'	$3.8 \cdot 10^{44}$
molecule	10 nm	0.57 zg	'$8.5 \cdot 10^{-52}$ m'	$1.2 \cdot 10^{43}$	$6.2 \cdot 10^{-19}$ m	$1.6 \cdot 10^{10}$
atom (^{12}C)	0.6 nm	20 yg	'$3.0 \cdot 10^{-53}$ m'	$2.0 \cdot 10^{43}$	$1.8 \cdot 10^{-17}$ m	$3.2 \cdot 10^{7}$
proton p	2 fm	1.7 yg	'$2.5 \cdot 10^{-54}$ m'	$8.0 \cdot 10^{38}$	$2.0 \cdot 10^{-16}$ m	9.6
pion π	2 fm	0.24 yg	'$3.6 \cdot 10^{-55}$ m'	$5.6 \cdot 10^{39}$	$1.5 \cdot 10^{-15}$ m	1.4
up-quark u	< 0.1 fm	$5 \cdot 10^{-30}$ kg	'$7 \cdot 10^{-57}$ m'	$< 1 \cdot 10^{40}$	$7 \cdot 10^{-14}$ m	< 0.001
electron e	< 4 am	$9.1 \cdot 10^{-31}$ kg	'$1.4 \cdot 10^{-57}$ m'	$< 3 \cdot 10^{39}$	$3.9 \cdot 10^{-13}$ m	$< 1 \cdot 10^{-5}$
neutrino ν_e	< 4 am	$< 3 \cdot 10^{-36}$ kg	'$< 5 \cdot 10^{-63}$ m'	n.a.	$> 1 \cdot 10^{-7}$ m	$< 3 \cdot 10^{-11}$

cessary in everyday life. We recall that objects whose size is given by their Schwarzschild radius are black holes; smaller objects cannot exist. Challenge 31 e

Similarly, quantum mechanics shows that Galilean physics must be abandoned and quantum effects *must* be taken into account whenever an object is approached to within distances of the order of the (reduced) Compton wavelength λ_C, given by

$$\lambda\!\!\!^{-}_C = \frac{\hbar}{mc} \,. \tag{73}$$

In this case, Planck's constant $\hbar$ and the speed of light c act as conversion factors to transform the mass m into a length scale. Of course, this length is only relevant if the object is smaller than its own Compton wavelength. At these scales we get relativistic quantum effects, such as particle–antiparticle pair creation or annihilation. Table 2 shows that the approach distance is near to or smaller than the Compton wavelength only in the microscopic world, so that such effects are not observed in everyday life. Only for this reason we do not need quantum field theory to describe common observations.

Combining concepts of quantum field theory and general relativity is required in situations where both conditions are satisfied simultaneously. The necessary approach distance for such situations is calculated by setting $r_S = 2\lambda_C$ (the factor 2 is introduced for simplicity). We find that this is the case when lengths or times are – within a factor of order 1 – of the order of

$$\begin{aligned} l_{Pl} = \sqrt{\hbar G/c^3} &= 1.6 \cdot 10^{-35}\,\text{m, the } \textit{Planck length}, \\ t_{Pl} = \sqrt{\hbar G/c^5} &= 5.4 \cdot 10^{-44}\,\text{s, the } \textit{Planck time}. \end{aligned} \tag{74}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Whenever we approach objects at these scales, both general relativity and quantum mechanics play a role, and effects of *quantum gravity* appear. Because the values of the Planck dimensions are extremely small, this level of sophistication is unnecessary in everyday life, in astronomy and even in particle physics.

In the millennium description of nature, all the contradictions and also the circular definition just mentioned are effective only at Planck scales. You can check this yourself. Challenge 32 e This is the reason that general relativity and quantum theory work so well in practice.

However, to answer the questions posed at the beginning – why do we live in three dimensions, why are there three interactions, and why is the proton 1836.15 times heavier than the electron? – we require a precise and complete description of nature. To answer these questions, we must understand physics at Planck scales.

In summary, general relativity and quantum theory do contradict each other. However, the domains where these contradictions play a role, the Planck scales, are not accessible by experiment. As a consequence, the contradictions and our lack of knowledge of how nature behaves at the Planck scales have only one effect: we do not see the solutions to the millennium issues.

We note that some people argue that the Planck scales specify only one of several domains of nature where quantum mechanics and general relativity apply simultaneously. They mention horizons and the big bang as separate domains. However, it is more appropriate to argue that horizons and the big bang are situations where Planck scales are essential.

Resolving the contradictions

The contradictions between general relativity and quantum theory have little practical consequences. Therefore, for a long time, the contradictions were accommodated by keeping the two theories separate. One often hears the statement that quantum mechanics is valid at small scales and general relativity is valid at large scales. This attitude is acceptable as long as we remain far from the Planck length. However, this accommodating attitude also prevents us from resolving the circular definition, the contradictions and therefore, the millennium issues.

The situation resembles the well-known drawing, Figure 2, by Maurits Escher (b. 1898 Leeuwarden, d. 1972 Hilversum) in which two hands, each holding a pencil, seem to be drawing each other. If one hand is taken as a symbol of vacuum and the other as a symbol of particles, with the act of drawing taken as the act of defining, the picture gives a description of twentieth-century physics. The apparent circular definition is solved by recognizing that the two concepts (the two hands) both originate from a third, hidden concept. In the picture, this third entity is the hand of the artist. In physics, the third concept is the common origin of vacuum and particles.

We thus conclude that the contradictions in physics and the circular definition are solved by *common constituents* for vacuum and matter. In order to find out what these common constituents are and what they are not, we must explore the behaviour of nature at the Planck scales.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

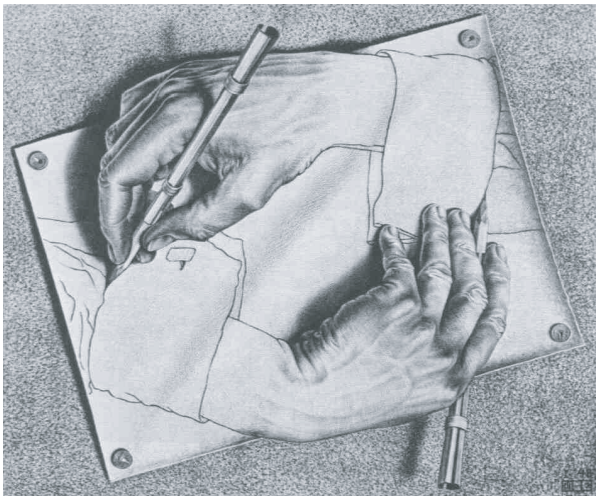


FIGURE 2 'Tekenen' by Maurits Escher, 1948 – a metaphor for the way in which 'particles' and 'space-time' are usually defined: each with the help of the other (© M.C. Escher Heirs).

The origin of points

General relativity is built on the *assumption* that space is a continuum of points. Already at school we learn that lines, surfaces and areas are made of points. We take this as granted, because we imagine that finer and finer measurements are always possible. And all experiments so far agree with the assumption. Fact is: in this reasoning, we first idealized measurement rulers – which are made of matter – and then 'deduced' that points in space exist.

Quantum theory is built on the *assumption* that elementary particles are point-like. We take this as granted, because we imagine that collisions at higher and higher energy are possible that allow elementary particles to get as close as possible. And all experiments so far agree with the assumption. Fact is: in this reasoning, we first imagined infinite energy and momentum values – which is a statement on time and space properties – and then 'deduce' that point particles exist.

In short, only the circular definition of space and matter allows us to define points and point particles! This puts us in a strange situation. On the one hand, experiment tells us that describing nature with space points and with point particles works. On the other hand, reason tells us that this is a fallacy and cannot be correct at Planck scales. We need a solution.

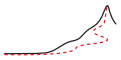
Summary on the clash between the two theories

General relativity and quantum theory contradict each other. In practice however, this happens only at Planck scales. The reason for the contradiction is the insistence on a circular definition of space and particles. Only such a circular definition allows us to define points and point particles.

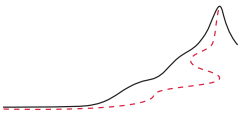
In order to solve the contradictions and to understand nature at Planck scales, we must introduce *common* constituents for space and particles. But common constituents have an important consequence: common constituents force us to stop using points to

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

describe nature. We now explore this connection.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 4

DOES MATTER DIFFER FROM VACUUM?

Vol. II, page 23

The appearance of the quantum of action in the description of motion leads to limitations for all measurements: Heisenberg's indeterminacy relations. The indeterminacy relations, when combined with the effects of gravitation, imply an almost unbelievable series of consequences for the behaviour of nature at Planck scales. The most important consequences are the necessity to abandon points, instants and events, and the equivalence of vacuum and matter. These surprising and important conclusions follow from simple arguments based on the indeterminacy relations, the Compton wavelength and the Schwarzschild radius.

Farewell to instants of time

> "Time is composed of time atoms ... which in fact are indivisible."
>
> Maimonides*

Measurement limits appear most clearly when we investigate the properties of clocks and metre rules. Is it possible to construct a clock that is able to measure time intervals shorter than the Planck time? Surprisingly, the answer is no, even though the time–energy indeterminacy relation $\Delta E \Delta t \geqslant \hbar$ seems to indicate that by making ΔE large enough, we can make Δt arbitrary small.

Ref. 50, Ref. 51

Every clock is a device with some moving parts. Parts can be mechanical wheels, particles of matter in motion, changing electrodynamic fields (i.e., photons), or decaying radioactive particles. For each moving component of a clock the indeterminacy relation applies. As explained most clearly by Michael Raymer, the indeterminacy relation for two non-commuting variables describes two different, but related, situations: it makes a statement about standard *deviations* of *separate* measurements on *many* identical systems; and it describes the measurement *precision* for a *joint* measurement on a *single* system. In what follows, we will consider only the second situation.

Ref. 52, Ref. 53 Ref. 54

For a clock to be useful, we need to know both the time and the energy of each hand. Otherwise it would not be a recording device. More generally, a clock must be a classical system. We need the combined knowledge of the non-commuting variables for each moving component of the clock. Let us focus on the component with the largest time indeterminacy Δt. It is evident that the smallest time interval δt that can be measured by

* Moses Maimonides (b. 1135 Cordoba, d. 1204 Egypt) was a physician, philosopher and influential theologian.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

a clock is always larger than the quantum limit, i.e., larger than the time indeterminacy Δt for the most 'uncertain' component. Thus we have

$$\delta t \geqslant \Delta t \geqslant \frac{\hbar}{\Delta E} , \tag{75}$$

where ΔE is the energy indeterminacy of the moving component, and ΔE must be smaller than the total energy $E = c^2 m$ of the component itself.* Furthermore, a clock provides information, so signals have to be able to leave it. Therefore the clock must not be a black hole: its mass m must be smaller than a black hole of its size, i.e., $m \leqslant c^2 l/G$, where l is the size of the clock (neglecting factors of order unity). Finally, for a sensible measurement of the time interval δt, the size l of the clock must be smaller than $c\,\delta t$, because otherwise different parts of the clock could not work together to produce the same time display.** If we combine all these conditions, we get

$$\delta t \geqslant \frac{\hbar G}{c^5 \delta t} \tag{76}$$

or

$$\delta t \geqslant \sqrt{\frac{\hbar G}{c^5}} = t_{\mathrm{Pl}} . \tag{77}$$

In summary, from three simple properties of any clock – namely, that it is only a single clock, that we can read its dial, and that it gives sensible read-outs – we conclude that *clocks cannot measure time intervals shorter than the Planck time*. Note that this argument is independent of the nature of the clock mechanism. Whether the clock operates by gravitational, electrical, mechanical or even nuclear means, the limit still applies.***

Ref. 59 The same conclusion can be reached in other ways. For example, any clock small enough to measure small time intervals necessarily has a certain energy indeterminacy due to the indeterminacy relation. Meanwhile, on the basis of general relativity, any energy density induces a deformation of space-time, and signals from the deformed region
Vol. II, page 161 arrive with a certain delay due to that deformation. The energy indeterminacy of the source leads to an indeterminacy in the deformation, and thus in the delay. The expres-
Ref. 49 sion from general relativity for the deformation of the time part of the line element due to a mass m is $\delta t = mG/lc^3$. From the mass–energy relation, we see that an energy spread

* Physically, this condition means being sure that there is only *one* clock: if $\Delta E > E$, it would be impossible to distinguish between a single clock and a clock–anticlock pair created from the vacuum, or a component together with two such pairs, and so on.

** It is amusing to explore how a clock larger than $c\,\delta t$ would stop working, as a result of the loss of rigidity
Challenge 33 s in its components.

*** Gravitation is essential here. The present argument differs from the well-known study on the limitations
Ref. 55, Ref. 56 of clocks due to their mass and their measuring time which was published by Salecker and Wigner and summarized in pedagogical form by Zimmerman. In our case, both quantum mechanics and gravity are included, and therefore a different, lower, and more fundamental limit is found. Also the discovery of black
Ref. 57, Ref. 58 hole radiation does not change the argument: black hole radiation notwithstanding, measurement devices cannot exist inside black holes.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

ΔE produces an indeterminacy Δt in the delay:

$$\Delta t = \frac{\Delta E\, G}{l\, c^5} \,. \tag{78}$$

This determines the precision of the clock. Furthermore, the energy indeterminacy of the clock is fixed by the indeterminacy relation for time and energy $\Delta E \geqslant \hbar/\Delta t$, which is in turn fixed by the precision of the clock. Combining all this, we again find the relation $\delta t \geqslant t_{\mathrm{Pl}}$ for the minimum measurable time.

We are forced to conclude that *in nature there is a minimum time interval.* In other words, *at Planck scales the term 'instant of time' has no theoretical or experimental basis.*

But let us go on. Special relativity, quantum mechanics and general relativity all rely on the idea that time can be defined for all points of a given reference frame. However, two clocks a distance l apart cannot be synchronized with arbitrary precision. Since the distance between two clocks cannot be measured with an error smaller than the Planck length l_{Pl}, and transmission of signals is necessary for synchronization, it is not possible to synchronize two clocks with a better precision than $l_{\mathrm{Pl}}/c = t_{\mathrm{Pl}}$, the Planck time. So use of a single *time coordinate* for a whole reference frame is only an approximation. *Reference frames do not have a single time coordinate at Planck scales.*

Moreover, since the time difference between events can only be measured within a Planck time, for two events distant in time by this order of magnitude, it is not possible
Ref. 60 to say with complete certainty which of the two precedes the other. But if events cannot be ordered, then the very concept of time, which was introduced into physics to describe sequences, makes no sense at Planck scales. In other words, after dropping the idea of a common time coordinate for a complete frame of reference, we are forced to drop the idea of time at a single 'point' as well. *The concept of 'proper time' loses its meaning at Planck scales.*

Farewell to points in space

> "Our greatest pretenses are built up not to hide the evil and the ugly in us, but our emptiness. The hardest thing to hide is something that is not there."
>
> Eric Hoffer,* *The Passionate State of Mind*

In a similar way, we can deduce that it is impossible to make a metre rule, or any other
Ref. 23 length-measuring device, that is able to measure lengths shorter than the Planck length. Obviously, we can already deduce this from $l_{\mathrm{Pl}} = c\, t_{\mathrm{Pl}}$, but an independent proof is also possible.

For any length measurement, joint measurements of position and momentum are necessary. The most straightforward way to measure the distance between two points is to put an object at rest at each position. Now, the minimal length δl that can be measured must be larger than the position indeterminacy of the two objects. From the indeterminacy relation we know that neither object's position can be determined with a precision Δl better than that given by $\Delta l\, \Delta p = \hbar$, where Δp is the momentum indeterminacy. The

* Eric Hoffer (b. 1902 New York City, d. 1983 San Francisco), philosopher.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

requirement that there be only one object at each end (avoiding pair production from the vacuum) means that $\Delta p < mc$: together, these requirements give

$$\delta l \geqslant \Delta l \geqslant \frac{\hbar}{mc} \,. \tag{79}$$

Furthermore, the measurement cannot be performed if signals cannot leave the objects; thus, they cannot be black holes. Therefore their masses must be small enough for their Schwarzschild radius $r_S = 2Gm/c^2$ to be less than the distance δl separating them. Again omitting the factor of 2, we get

$$\delta l \geqslant \sqrt{\frac{\hbar G}{c^3}} = l_{\text{Pl}} \,. \tag{80}$$

Length measurements are limited by the Planck length.

Another way to deduce this limit reverses the roles of general relativity and quantum theory. To measure the distance between two objects, we have to localize the first object with respect to the other within a certain interval Δx. The corresponding energy indeterminacy obeys $\Delta E = c(c^2m^2 + (\Delta p)^2)^{1/2} \geqslant c\hbar/\Delta x$. However, general relativity shows Ref. 42, Ref. 49 that a small volume filled with energy changes the curvature of space-time, and thus Ref. 23 changes the metric of the surrounding space. For the resulting distance change Δl, com- Ref. 61 pared with empty space, we find the expression $\Delta l \approx G\Delta E/c^4$. In short, if we localize the first particle in space with a precision Δx, the distance to a second particle is known Ref. 62, Ref. 63 only with precision Δl. The minimum length δl that can be measured is obviously larger Ref. 25 than either of these quantities; inserting the expression for ΔE, we find again that the minimum measurable length δl is given by the Planck length.

We note that every length measurement requires a joint measurement of position and momentum. This is particularly obvious if we approach a metre ruler to an object, but it is equally true for any other length measurement.

We note that, since the Planck length is the shortest possible length, there can be no observations of quantum-mechanical effects for a situation where the corresponding de Broglie or Compton wavelength is smaller than the Planck length. In proton–proton collisions we observe both pair production and interference effects. In contrast, the Planck limit implies that in everyday, macroscopic situations, such as car–car collisions, we cannot observe embryo–antiembryo pair production and quantum interference effects.

Another way to convince oneself that points have no meaning is to observe that a point is an entity with vanishing volume; however, the minimum volume possible in nature is the Planck volume $V_{\text{Pl}} = l_{\text{Pl}}^3$.

We conclude that the Planck units not only provide *natural* units; they also provide – within a factor of order one – the *limit* values of space and time intervals.

In summary, from two simple properties common to all length-measuring devices, namely that they are discrete and that they can be read, we arrive at the conclusion that *lengths smaller than the Planck length cannot be measured*. Whatever method is used, be it a metre rule or time-of-flight measurement, we cannot overcome this fundamental limit. It follows that *the concept of a 'point in space' has no experimental basis*.

The limitations on length measurements imply that we cannot speak of continuous

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

space, except in an approximate sense. As a result of the lack of measurement precision at Planck scales, the concepts of spatial order, of translation invariance, of isotropy of the vacuum and of global coordinate systems have no experimental basis.

The generalized indeterminacy relation

Ref. 23 The limit values for length and time measurements are often expressed by the so-called *generalized indeterminacy relation*

$$\Delta p \Delta x \geqslant \hbar/2 + f\frac{G}{c^3}(\Delta p)^2 \tag{81}$$

or

$$\Delta p \Delta x \geqslant \hbar/2 + f\frac{l_{\mathrm{Pl}}^2}{\hbar}(\Delta p)^2 \,, \tag{82}$$

where f is a numerical factor of order unity. A similar expression holds for the time–energy indeterminacy relation. The first term on the right-hand side is the usual quantum-mechanical indeterminacy. The second term is negligible for everyday energies, and is significant only near Planck energies; it is due to the changes in space-time induced by gravity at these high energies. You should be able to show that the generalized principle (81) implies that Δx can never be smaller than $f^{1/2} l_{\mathrm{Pl}}$.

Challenge 34 e

The generalized indeterminacy relation is derived in exactly the same way in which Heisenberg derived the original indeterminacy relation $\Delta p \Delta x \geqslant \hbar/2$, namely by studying the scattering of light by an object under a microscope. A careful re-evaluation of the process, this time including gravity, yields equation (81). For this reason, *all* descriptions that unify quantum mechanics and gravity must yield this relation, and indeed all known approaches do so.

Ref. 23
Ref. 64, Ref. 65
Ref. 66, Ref. 67
Ref. 68

Farewell to space-time continuity

> Ich betrachte es als durchaus möglich, dass die Physik nicht auf dem Feldbegriff begründet werden kann, d.h. auf kontinuierlichen Gebilden. Dann bleibt von meinem ganzen Luftschloss inklusive Gravitationstheorie nichts bestehen.*
>
> Albert Einstein, 1954, in a letter to Michele Besso.

We remember that quantum mechanics begins with the realization that the classical concept of action makes no sense below the value of $\hbar/2$; similarly, unified theories begin with the realization that the classical concepts of time and length make no sense below Planck scales. However, the 20th-century description of nature does contain such small values: it involves intervals smaller than the smallest measurable one. Therefore, *the continuum description of space-time has to be abandoned* in favour of a more appropriate description.

The minimum length distance, the minimum time interval, and equivalently, the new, generalized indeterminacy relation appearing at Planck scales show that space, time and in particular, space-time, are not well described as a continuum. Inserting $c\Delta p \geqslant \Delta E \geqslant$

Ref. 69

* 'I consider it as quite possible that physics cannot be based on the field concept, i.e., on continuous structures. In that case, nothing remains of my castle in the air, gravitation theory included.'

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

$\hbar/\Delta t$ into equation (81), we get

$$\Delta x \Delta t \geqslant \hbar G/c^4 = t_{\mathrm{Pl}} l_{\mathrm{Pl}} \,, \tag{83}$$

which of course has no counterpart in standard quantum mechanics. This shows that also space-time *events do not exist*. The concept of an 'event', being a combination of a 'point in space' and an 'instant of time', loses its meaning for the description of nature at Planck scales.

Interestingly, the view that continuity must be abandoned is almost one hundred years old. Already in 1917, Albert Einstein wrote in a letter to Werner Dällenbach:

Ref. 70

> Wenn die molekulare Auffassung der Materie die richtige (zweckmässige) ist, d.h. wenn ein Teil Welt durch eine endliche Zahl bewegter Punkte darzustellen ist, so enthält das Kontinuum der heutigen Theorie *zu viel* Mannigfaltigkeit der Möglichkeiten. Auch ich glaube, dass dieses zu viel daran schuld ist, dass unsere heutige Mittel der Beschreibung an der Quantentheorie scheitern. Die Frage scheint mir, wie man über ein Diskontinuum Aussagen formulieren kann, ohne ein Kontinuum (Raum-Zeit) zu Hilfe zu nehmen; letzteres wäre als eine im Wesen des Problems nicht gerechtfertigte zusätzliche Konstruktion, der nichts "Reales" entspricht, aus der Theorie zu verbannen. Dazu fehlt uns aber leider noch die mathematische Form. Wie viel habe ich mich in diesem Sinne schon geplagt!
>
> Allerdings sehe ich auch hier prinzipielle Schwierigkeiten. Die Elektronen (als Punkte) wären in einem solchen System letzte Gegebenheiten (Bausteine). Gibt es überhaupt letzte Bausteine? Warum sind diese alle von gleicher Grösse? Ist es befriedigend zu sagen: Gott hat sie in seiner Weisheit alle gleich gross gemacht, jedes wie jedes andere, weil er so wollte; er hätte sie auch, wenn es ihm gepasst hätte, verschieden machen können. Da ist man bei der Kontinuum-Auffassung besser dran, weil man nicht von Anfang an die Elementar-Bausteine angeben muss. Ferner die alte Frage vom Vakuum! Aber diese Bedenken müssen verblassen hinter der blendenden Tatsache: Das Kontinuum ist ausführlicher als die zu beschreibenden Dinge...
>
> Lieber Dällenbach! Was hilft alles Argumentieren, wenn man nicht bis zu einer befriedigenden Auffassung durchdringt; das aber ist verteufelt schwer. Es wird einen schweren Kampf kosten, bis man diesen Schritt, der uns da vorschwebt, wirklich gemacht haben wird. Also strengen Sie Ihr Gehirn an, vielleicht zwingen Sie es.*

* 'If the molecular conception of matter is the right (appropriate) one, i.e., if a part of the world is to be represented by a finite number of moving points, then the continuum of the present theory contains *too great* a manifold of possibilities. I also believe that this 'too great' is responsible for our present means of description failing for quantum theory. The questions seems to me how one can formulate statements about a discontinuum without using a continuum (space-time) as an aid; the latter should be banned from the theory as a supplementary construction not justified by the essence of the problem, which corresponds to nothing "real". But unfortunately we still lack the mathematical form. How much have I already plagued myself in this direction!

Yet I also see difficulties of principle. In such a system the electrons (as points) would be the ultimate

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The second half of this text will propose a way to rise to the challenge. At this point however, we first complete the exploration of the limitations of continuum physics.

In 20th century physics, space-time points are idealizations of events – but this idealization is inadequate. The use of the concept of 'point' is similar to the use of the concept of 'aether' a century ago: it is impossible to measure or detect.

▷ Like the 'aether', also 'points' lead reason astray.

All paradoxes resulting from the infinite divisibility of space and time, such as Zeno's argument on the impossibility of distinguishing motion from rest, or the Banach–Tarski paradox, are now avoided. We can dismiss them straight away because of their incorrect premises concerning the nature of space and time.

The consequences of the Planck limits for measurements of time and space can be expressed in other ways. It is often said that given any two points in space or any two instants of time, there is always a third in between. Physicists sloppily call this property continuity, while mathematicians call it denseness. However, at Planck scales this property cannot hold, since there are no intervals smaller than the Planck time. Thus points and instants are not dense, and

▷ Between two points there is not always a third.

This results again means that *space and time are not continuous*. Of course, at large scales they are – approximately – continuous, in the same way that a piece of rubber or a liquid seems continuous at everyday scales, even though it is not at a small scale. But in nature, space, time and space-time are not continuous entities.

But there is more to come. The very existence of a minimum length contradicts the theory of special relativity, in which it is shown that lengths undergo Lorentz contraction when the frame of reference is changed. There is only one conclusion: special relativity (and general relativity) cannot be correct at very small distances. Thus,

▷ Space-time is not Lorentz-invariant (nor diffeomorphism-invariant) at Planck scales.

All the symmetries that are at the basis of special and general relativity are only approximately valid at Planck scales.

The imprecision of measurement implies that most familiar concepts used to describe spatial relations become useless. For example, the concept of a *metric* loses its usefulness

entities (building blocks). Do ultimate building blocks really exist? Why are they all of equal size? Is it satisfactory to say: God in his wisdom made them all equally big, each like every other one, because he wanted it that way; he could also have made them, if he had wanted, all different. With the continuum viewpoint one is better off, because one doesn't have to prescribe elementary building blocks from the outset. Furthermore, the old question of the vacuum! But these considerations must pale beside the dazzling fact: The continuum is more ample than the things to be described...

Dear Dällenbach! All arguing does not help if one does not achieve a satisfying conception; but this is devilishly difficult. It will cost a difficult fight until the step that we are thinking of will be realized. Thus, squeeze your brain, maybe you can force it.'

Page 83 Compare this letter to what Einstein wrote almost twenty and almost forty years later.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

at Planck scales, since distances cannot be measured with precision. So it is impossible to say whether space is flat or curved. The impossibility of measuring lengths exactly is equivalent to fluctuations of the curvature, and thus of gravity. Ref. 23, Ref. 71

In short, space and space-time are not smooth at Planck scales. This conclusion has important implications. For example, the conclusion implies that certain mathematical solutions found in books on general relativity, such as the Eddington–Finkelstein coordinates and the Kruskal–Szekeres coordinates do *not* describe nature! Indeed, these coordinate systems, which claim to show that space-time goes on *behind* the horizon of a black hole, are based on the idea that space-time is smooth everywhere. However, quantum physics shows that space-time is not smooth at the horizon, but fluctuates wildly there. In short, quantum physics confirms what common sense already knew: behind a horizon, nothing can be observed, and thus there is nothing there.

Farewell to dimensionality

Even the number of spatial dimensions makes no sense at Planck scales. Let us remind ourselves how to determine this number experimentally. One possible way is to determine how many points we can choose in space such that all the distances between them are equal. If we can find at most n such points, the space has $n - 1$ dimensions. But if reliable length measurement at Planck scales is not possible, there is no way to determine reliably the number of dimensions of space with this method.

Another way to check for three spatial dimensions is to make a knot in a shoe string and glue the ends together: since it stays knotted, we know that space has three dimensions, because there is a mathematical theorem that in spaces with greater or fewer than three dimensions, knots do not exist. Again, at Planck scales, we cannot say whether a string is knotted or not, because measurement limits at crossings make it impossible to say which strand lies above the other.

There are many other methods for determining the dimensionality of space.* In all cases, the definition of dimensionality is based on a precise definition of the concept of neighbourhood. At Planck scales, however, length measurements do not allow us to say whether a given point is inside or outside a given region. In short, whatever method we use, the lack of precise length measurements means that *at Planck scales, the dimensionality of physical space is not defined.*

Farewell to the space-time manifold

The reasons for the problems with space-time become most evident when we remember Euclid's well-known definition: 'A point is that which has no part.' As Euclid clearly understood, a *physical* point, as an idealization of position, cannot be defined without some measurement method. *Mathematical* points, however, can be defined without reference Ref. 72

* For example, we can determine the dimension using only the topological properties of space. If we draw a so-called *covering* of a topological space with open sets, there are always points that are elements of several sets of the covering. Let p be the maximal number of sets of which a point can be an element in a given covering. The minimum value of p over all possible coverings, minus one, gives the dimension of the space.

In fact, if physical space is not a manifold, the various methods for determining the dimensionality may give different answers. Indeed, for linear spaces without norm, the dimensionality cannot be defined in a unique way. Different definitions (fractal dimension, Lyapunov dimension, etc.) are possible.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

to a metric. They are just elements of a set, usually called a 'space'. (A 'measurable' or 'metric' space is a set of points equipped with a measure or a metric.)

In the case of physical space-time, the concepts of measure and of metric are more fundamental than that of a point. Confusion between physical and mathematical space and points arises from the failure to distinguish a mathematical metric from a physical length measurement.*

Vol. I, page 56
Ref. 73

Perhaps the most beautiful way to make this point is the Banach–Tarski theorem, which clearly shows the limits of the concept of *volume*. The theorem states that a sphere made up of *mathematical points* can be cut into five pieces in such a way that the pieces can be put together to form two spheres, each of the same volume as the original one. However, the necessary 'cuts' are infinitely curved and detailed: the pieces are wildly disconnected. For physical matter such as gold, unfortunately – or fortunately – the existence of a minimum length, namely the atomic distance, makes it impossible to perform such a cut. For vacuum, the puzzle reappears. For example, the energy of zero-point fluctuations is given by the density times the volume; following the Banach–Tarski theorem, the zero-point energy content of a single sphere should be equal to the zero-point energy of two similar spheres each of the same volume as the original one. The paradox is resolved by the Planck length, which provides a fundamental length scale even for vacuum, thus making infinitely complex cuts impossible. Therefore, the concept of volume is only well defined at Planck scales if a minimum length is introduced.

To sum up:

▷ Physical space-time cannot be a set of mathematical points.

But there are more surprises. At Planck scales, since both temporal and spatial order break down, there is no way to say if the distance between two nearby space-time regions is space-like or time-like.

▷ At Planck scales, time and space cannot be distinguished from each other.

In addition, we cannot state that the topology of space-time is fixed, as general relativity implies. The topology changes, mentioned above, that are required for particle reactions do become possible. In this way another of the contradictions between general relativity and quantum theory is resolved.

In summary, space-time at Planck scales is not continuous, not ordered, not endowed with a metric, not four-dimensional, and not made up of points. It satisfies none of the defining properties of a manifold.** We conclude that *the concept of a space-time mani-*

* Where does the incorrect idea of continuous space-time have its roots? In everyday life, as well as in physics, space-time is a book-keeping device introduced to describe observations. Its properties are extracted from the properties of observables. Since observables can be added and multiplied, like numbers, we infer that they can take continuous values, and, in particular, arbitrarily small values. It is then possible to define points and sets of points. A special field of mathematics, topology, shows how to start from a set of points and construct, with the help of neighbourhood relations and separation properties, first a *topological space*, then, with the help of a metric, a *metric space*. With the appropriate compactness and connectedness relations, a *manifold*, characterized by its dimension, metric and topology, can be constructed.

Vol. V, page 357

** A manifold is what looks *locally* like a Euclidean space. The exact definition can be found in the previous

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

fold has no justification at Planck scales. This is a strong result. Even though both general relativity and quantum mechanics use continuous space-time, the combined theory does not.

Farewell to observables, symmetries and measurements

If space and time are not continuous, no quantities defined as derivatives with respect to space or time are precisely defined. Velocity, acceleration, momentum, energy and so on are only well defined under the assumption of continuity. That important tool, the evolution equation, is based on derivatives and can thus no longer be used. Therefore the Schrödinger and Dirac equations lose their basis. Concepts such as 'derivative', 'divergence-free' and 'source free' lose their meaning at Planck scales.

All physical observables are defined using length and time measurements. Each physical unit is a product of powers of length and time (and mass) units. (In the SI system, electrical quantities have a separate base quantity, the ampere, but the argument still holds: the ampere is itself defined in terms of a force, which is measured using the three base units of length, time and mass.) Since time and length are not continuous, *at Planck scales, observables cannot be described by real numbers.*

In addition, if time and space are not continuous, the usual expression for an observable field, $A(t, x)$, does not make sense: we have to find a more appropriate description. *Physical fields cannot exist at Planck scales.* Quantum mechanics also relies on the possibility to add wave functions; this is sometimes called the *superposition principle*. Without fields and superpositions, all of quantum mechanics comes crumbling down.

The lack of real numbers has severe consequences. It makes no sense to define multiplication of observables by real numbers, but only by a discrete set of numbers. Among other implications, this means that observables do not form a linear algebra. *Observables are not described by operators at Planck scales.* In particular, the most important observables are the gauge potentials. Since they do not form an algebra, *gauge symmetry is not valid at Planck scales*. Even innocuous-looking expressions such as $[x_i, x_j] = 0$ for $x_i \neq x_j$, which are at the root of quantum field theory, become meaningless at Planck scales. Since at those scales superpositions cannot be backed up by experiment, even the famous Wheeler–DeWitt equation, often assumed to describe quantum gravity, cannot be valid.

Similarly, permutation symmetry is based on the premise that we can distinguish two points by their coordinates, and then exchange particles between those locations. As we have just seen, this is not possible if the distance between the two particles is very small. We conclude that *permutation symmetry has no experimental basis at Planck scales*.

Even discrete symmetries, like charge conjugation, space inversion and time reversal, cannot be correct in this domain, because there is no way to verify them exactly by measurement. *CPT symmetry is not valid at Planck scales.*

Finally we note that all types of scaling relations break down at small scales, because of the existence of a smallest length. As a result, the *renormalization group breaks down at Planck scales.*

In summary, due to the impossibility of accurate measurements, all symmetries break down at Planck scales. (For example, supersymmetry cannot be valid at Planck scale.) All

volume.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

these results are consistent: if there are no symmetries at Planck scales, there are also no observables, since physical observables are representations of symmetry groups. In fact, the limitations on time and length measurements imply that *the concept of measurement has no significance at Planck scales*.

Can space-time be a lattice?

Let us take a breath. Can a space-time lattice be an alternative to continuity?

Ref. 74 Ref. 75 Ref. 76 Ref. 77 Discrete models of space-time have been studied since the 1940s. Recently, the idea that space-time could be described as a lattice – like a crystal – has been explored most notably by David Finkelstein and by Gerard 't Hooft. The idea of space-time as a lattice is based on the idea that, if there is a minimum distance, then all distances are multiples of this minimum.

Ref. 78 In order to get an isotropic and homogeneous situation for large, everyday scales, the structure of space-time cannot be periodic, but must be *random*. But not only must it be random in space, it must also be *fluctuating in time*. In fact, any fixed structure for space-time would violate the result that there are no lengths smaller than the Planck length: as a result of the Lorentz contraction, any moving observer would find lattice distances smaller than the Planck value. Worse still, the fixed lattice idea conflicts with general relativity, in particular with the diffeomorphism-invariance of the vacuum.

Thus, *space-time cannot be a lattice*. A minimum distance does exist in nature; however, we cannot hope that all other distances are simple multiples of it. We will discover more evidence for this negative conclusion later on.

But in fact, many discrete models of space and time have a much bigger limitation. Any such model has to answer a simple question: Where is a particle *during* the jump from one lattice point to the next? This simple question eliminates most naive space-time models.

A glimpse of quantum geometry

Given that space-time is not a set of points or events, it must be something else. We have three hints at this stage. The first is that in order to improve our description of motion we must abandon 'points', and with them, abandon the *local* description of nature. Both quantum mechanics and general relativity assume that the phrase 'observable at a point' has a precise meaning. Because it is impossible to describe space as a manifold, this expression is no longer useful. The unification of general relativity and quantum physics forces the adoption of a *non-local* description of nature at Planck scales. This is the first hint.

The existence of a minimum length implies that there is no way to physically distinguish between locations that are even closer together. We are tempted to conclude that *no* pair of locations can be distinguished, even if they are one metre apart, since on any path joining two points, no two locations that are close together can be distinguished. The problem is similar to the question about the size of a cloud or of an atom. If we measure water density or electron density, we find non-vanishing values at any distance from the centre of the cloud or the atom; however, an effective size can still be defined, because it is very unlikely that the effects of the presence of a cloud or of an atom can be seen at distances much larger than this effective size. Similarly, we can guess that two

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

points in space-time at a macroscopic distance from each other can be distinguished because the probability that they will be confused drops rapidly with increasing distance. In short, we are thus led to a *probabilistic* description of space-time. This is the second hint. Space-time becomes a macroscopic observable, a *statistical* or *thermodynamic limit* of some microscopic entities. This is our second hint.

We note that a fluctuating structure for space-time also avoids the problems of fixed structures with Lorentz invariance. In summary, the experimental observations of special relativity – Lorentz invariance, isotropy and homogeneity – together with the notion of a minimum distance, point towards a description of space-time as *fluctuating*. This is the third hint.

Ref. 26 Several independent research efforts in quantum gravity have independently confirmed that a *non-local* and *fluctuating* description of space-time at Planck scales resolves the contradictions between general relativity and quantum theory. These are our first results on quantum geometry. To clarify the issue, we turn to the concept of the particle.

Farewell to point particles

In every example of motion, some object is involved. One of the important discoveries of the natural sciences was that all objects are composed of small constituents, called *elementary particles*. Quantum theory shows that all *composite*, non-elementary objects have a finite, non-vanishing size. The naive statement is: a particle is elementary if it behaves like a point particle. At present, only the leptons (electron, muon, tau and the neutrinos), the quarks, the radiation quanta of the electromagnetic, weak and strong nuclear interactions (the photon, the W and Z bosons, and the gluons) and the Higgs boson have
Vol. V, page 259 been found to be elementary. Protons, atoms, molecules, cheese, people, galaxies and so
Page 58 on are all composite, as shown in Table 2.

Although the naive definition of 'elementary particle' as point particle is all we need in the following argument, the definition is not precise. It seems to leave open the possibility that future experiments could show that electrons or quarks are not elementary. This is not so! In fact, the precise definition is the following: any particle is elementary if it is
Vol. IV, page 105 *smaller than its own Compton wavelength*. If such a small particle were composite, there would be a lighter particle inside it, which would have a larger Compton wavelength than the composite particle. This is impossible, since the size of a composite particle must be larger than the Compton wavelength of its components. (The alternative possibility that all components are heavier than the composite does not lead to satisfying physical
Ref. 79 properties: for example, it leads to intrinsically unstable components.)

The *size* of an object, such as those given in Table 2, is defined as the length at which differences from point-like behaviour are observed. The size d of an object is determined by measuring how it scatters a beam of probe particles. For example, the radius of the atomic nucleus was determined for the first time in Rutherford's experiment using alpha particle scattering. In daily life as well, when we look at objects, we make use of scattered photons. In general, in order for scattering to be useful, the effective wavelength $\lambda = \hbar/mv$ of the probe must be smaller than the object size d to be determined. We thus need $d > \lambda = \hbar/mv \geqslant \hbar/mc$. In addition, in order for a scattering experiment to be possible, the object must not be a black hole, since, if it were, it would simply swallow the approaching particle. This means that its mass m must be smaller than that of a

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

black hole of the same size; in other words, from equation (72) we must have $m < dc^2/G$. Combining this with the previous condition we get, for the size d of an object, the relation

$$d > \sqrt{\frac{\hbar G}{c^3}} = l_{\mathrm{Pl}} \,. \tag{84}$$

In other words, there is no way to observe that an object is smaller than the Planck length. Thus, in principle *there is thus no way to deduce from observations that a particle is point-like*. The term 'point particle' makes no sense at all.

Of course, there is a relation between the existence of a minimum length for empty space and the existence of a minimum length for objects. If the term 'point of space' is meaningless, then the term 'point particle' is also meaningless. And again, the lower limit on particle size results from the combination of quantum theory and general relativity.*

The minimum size for particles can be tested. A property connected with the size is the electric dipole moment. This describes the deviation of its charge distribution from spherical. Some *predictions* from the standard model of elementary particles give as an
Ref. 80 upper limit for the electron dipole moment d_e a value of

$$\frac{|d_e|}{e} < 10^{-39}\,\mathrm{m}\,, \tag{85}$$

where e is the charge of the electron. This predicted value is ten thousand times smaller than the Planck length l_{Pl}. Since the Planck length is the smallest possible length, we
Ref. 81 seem to have a contradiction here. However, a more careful and recent prediction from the standard model only states

$$\frac{|d_e|}{e} < 3 \cdot 10^{-23}\,\mathrm{m}\,, \tag{86}$$

Ref. 82 which is not in contradiction with the minimal length. The experimental limit in 2013 is

$$\frac{|d_e|}{e} < 8.7 \cdot 10^{-31}\,\mathrm{m}\,. \tag{87}$$

In the coming years, the experimental limit value will approach the Planck length. In summary, no point particle and no particle smaller than the Planck length is known.

Farewell to particle properties

Planck scales have other strange consequences. In quantum field theory, the difference between a virtual particle and a real particle is that a real particle is 'on shell', obeying $E^2 = m^2c^4 + p^2c^2$, whereas a virtual particle is 'off shell'. Because of the fundamental limits of measurement precision, *at Planck scales we cannot determine whether a particle*

* We note that the existence of a minimum size for a particle has nothing to do with the impossibility, in quantum theory, of localizing a particle to within less than its Compton wavelength.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

FIGURE 3 Andrei Sakharov (1921–1989).

is real or virtual.

That is not all. Antimatter can be described as matter moving backwards in time. Since the difference between backwards and forwards cannot be determined at Planck scales, *matter and antimatter cannot be distinguished at Planck scales.*

Every particle is characterized by its spin. Spin describes two properties of a particle: its behaviour under rotations (and thus, if the particle is charged, its behaviour in magnetic fields) and its behaviour under particle exchange. The wave function of a particle with spin 1 remains invariant under a rotation of 2π, whereas that of a particle with spin 1/2 changes sign. Similarly, the combined wave function of two particles with spin 1 does not change sign under exchange of particles, whereas for two particles with spin 1/2 it does.

We see directly that both transformations are impossible to study at Planck scales. Given the limit on position measurements, the position of a rotation axis cannot be well defined, and rotations become impossible to distinguish from translations. Similarly, positional imprecision makes it impossible to determine precise separate positions for exchange experiments; at Planck scales it is impossible to say whether particle exchange has taken place or not, and whether the wave function has changed sign or not. In short, *at Planck scales, spin cannot be defined or measured, and neither fermion nor boson behaviour can be defined or measured.* In particular, this implies that supersymmetry cannot be valid at Planck scales.

Challenge 35 e

Due to measurement limitations, also spatial parity cannot be defined or measured at Planck scales.

We have thus shown that at Planck scales, particles do not interact locally, are not point-like, cannot be distinguished from antiparticles, cannot be distinguished from virtual particles, have no definite spin and have no definite spatial parity. We deduce that *particles do not exist at Planck scales.* Let us explore the remaining concept: particle mass.

A MASS LIMIT FOR ELEMENTARY PARTICLES

The size d of any elementary particle must by definition be smaller than its own (reduced) Compton wavelength $\hbar/mc$. Moreover, the size of a particle is always larger than the Planck length: $d > l_{\mathrm{Pl}}$. Combining these two requirements and eliminating the size d,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

we get a constraint on the mass m of any elementary particle, namely

$$m < \frac{\hbar}{c\, l_{\mathrm{Pl}}} = \sqrt{\frac{\hbar c}{G}} = m_{\mathrm{Pl}} = 2.2 \cdot 10^{-8}\,\mathrm{kg} = 1.2 \cdot 10^{19}\,\mathrm{GeV/c^2}\ . \tag{88}$$

The limit m_{Pl}, the so-called *Planck mass*, corresponds roughly to the mass of a human embryo that is ten days old, or equivalently, to that of a small flea. In short, *the mass of any elementary particle must be smaller than the Planck mass.* This fact was already noted as 'well known' by Andrei Sakharov* in 1968; he explains that these hypothetical particles are sometimes called 'maximons'. And indeed, the known elementary particles all have masses well below the Planck mass. (In fact, the question why their masses are so very much smaller than the Planck mass is one of the most important questions of high-energy physics. We will come back to it.)

Ref. 27

There are many other ways to arrive at the mass limit for particles. For example, in order to measure mass by scattering – and that is the only way for very small objects – the Compton wavelength of the scatterer must be larger than the Schwarzschild radius; otherwise the probe will be swallowed. Inserting the definitions of the two quantities and neglecting the factor 2, we again get the limit $m < m_{\mathrm{Pl}}$. In fact it is a general property of descriptions of nature that a minimum space-time interval leads to an upper limit for masses of elementary particles.

Ref. 83

Farewell to massive particles – and to massless vacuum

The Planck mass divided by the Planck volume, i.e., the Planck density, is given by

$$\rho_{\mathrm{Pl}} = \frac{c^5}{G^2\hbar} = 5.2 \cdot 10^{96}\,\mathrm{kg/m^3} \tag{89}$$

and is a useful concept in the following. One way to measure the (gravitational) mass M enclosed in a sphere of size R, and thus (roughly) of volume R^3, is to put a test particle in orbit around it at that same distance R. Universal gravitation then gives for the mass M the expression $M = Rv^2/G$, where v is the speed of the orbiting test particle. From $v < c$, we deduce that $M < c^2R/G$; since the minimum value for R is the Planck distance, we get (again neglecting factors of order unity) a limit for the mass density ρ, namely

Challenge 36 e

$$\rho < \rho_{\mathrm{Pl}}\ . \tag{90}$$

In other words, *the Planck density is the maximum possible value for mass density*.

Interesting things happen when we try to determine the error ΔM of a mass measurement in a Planck volume. Let us return to the mass measurement by an orbiting probe. From the relation $GM = rv^2$ we deduce by differentiation that $G\Delta M = v^2\Delta r + 2vr\Delta v >$

* Andrei Dmitrievich Sakharov, Soviet nuclear physicist (b. 1921 Moscow, d. 1989 Moscow). One of the keenest thinkers in physics, Sakharov, among others, invented the Tokamak, directed the construction of nuclear bombs, and explained the matter–antimatter asymmetry of nature. Like many others, he later campaigned against nuclear weapons, a cause for which he was put into jail and exile, together with his wife, Yelena Bonner. He received the Nobel Peace Prize in 1975.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

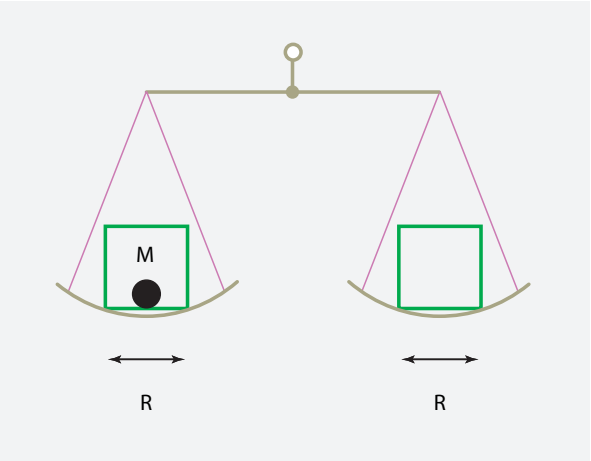


FIGURE 4 A thought experiment showing that at Planck scales, matter and vacuum cannot be distinguished when the size of the enclosing box is too small.

$2vr\Delta v = 2GM\Delta v/v$. For the error Δv in the velocity measurement we have the indeterminacy relation $\Delta v \geqslant \hbar/m\Delta r + \hbar/MR \geqslant \hbar/MR$. Inserting this in the previous inequality, and again forgetting the factor of 2, we find that the mass measurement error ΔM of a mass M enclosed in a volume of size R is subject to the condition

$$\Delta M \geqslant \frac{\hbar}{cR} \quad . \tag{91}$$

Note that for everyday situations, this error is extremely small, and other errors, such as the technical limits of the balance, are much larger.

To check this result, we can explore another situation. We even use relativistic expressions, in order to show that the result does not depend on the details of the situation or the approximations. Imagine having a mass M in a box of size R, and weighing the box with a scale. (It is assumed that either the box is massless or that its mass is subtracted by the scale.) The mass error is given by $\Delta M = \Delta E/c^2$, where ΔE is due to the indeterminacy in the kinetic energy of the mass inside the box. Using the expression $E^2 = m^2c^4 + p^2c^2$, we get that $\Delta M \geqslant \Delta p/c$, which again reduces to equation (91). Now that we are sure of the result, let us continue.

From equation (91) we deduce that for a box of Planck dimensions, the mass measurement *error* is given by the Planck mass. But from above we also know that the mass that can be put inside such a box must not be larger than the Planck mass. Therefore, for a box of Planck dimensions, the mass measurement *error* is larger than (or at best equal to) the mass contained in it: $\Delta M \geqslant M_{\text{Pl}}$. In other words, if we build a balance with two boxes of Planck size, one empty and the other full, as shown in Figure 4, nature cannot decide which way the balance should hang! Note that even a repeated or a continuous measurement will not resolve the situation: the balance will change inclination at random, staying horizontal on average.

The argument can be rephrased as follows. The largest mass that we can put in a box of size R is a black hole with a Schwarzschild radius of the same value; the smallest mass

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

present in such a box – corresponding to what we call a vacuum – is due to the indeterminacy relation and is given by the mass with a Compton wavelength that matches the size of the box. In other words, inside any box of size R we have a mass m, the limits of which are given by:

$$\underset{\text{(full box)}}{\frac{c^2 R}{G}} \geqslant m \geqslant \underset{\text{(empty box)}}{\frac{\hbar}{cR}} . \tag{92}$$

We see directly that for sizes R of the order of the Planck scales, the two limits coincide; in other words, we cannot distinguish a full box from an empty box in that case.

To be sure of this strange result, we check whether it also occurs if, instead of measuring the gravitational mass, as we have just done, we measure the inertial mass. The inertial mass for a small object is determined by touching it: physically speaking, by performing a scattering experiment. To determine the inertial mass inside a region of size R, a probe must have a wavelength smaller than R, and a correspondingly high energy. A high energy means that the probe also attracts the particle through gravity. (We thus find the intermediate result that *at Planck scales, inertial and gravitational mass cannot be distinguished.* Even the balance experiment shown in Figure 4 illustrates this: at Planck scales, the two types of mass are always inextricably linked.) Now, in any scattering experiment, for example in a Compton-type experiment, the mass measurement is performed by measuring the wavelength change $\delta\lambda$ of the probe before and after the scattering. The mass indeterminacy is given by

$$\frac{\Delta M}{M} = \frac{\Delta\delta\lambda}{\delta\lambda} . \tag{93}$$

In order to determine the mass in a Planck volume, the probe has to have a wavelength of the Planck length. But we know from above that there is always a minimum wavelength indeterminacy, given by the Planck length l_{Pl}. In other words, for a Planck volume the wavelength error – and thus the mass error – is always as large as the Planck mass itself: $\Delta M \geqslant M_{\text{Pl}}$. Again, this limit is a direct consequence of the limit on length and space measurements.

This result has an astonishing consequence. In these examples, the measurement error is independent of the mass of the scatterer: it is the same whether or not we start with a situation in which there is a particle in the original volume. We thus find that in a volume of Planck size, it is impossible to say whether or not there is something there when we probe it with a beam!

Matter and vacuum are indistinguishable

We can put these results in another way. On the one hand, if we measure the mass of a piece of vacuum of size R, the result is always at least $\hbar/cR$: there is no possible way to find a perfect vacuum in an experiment. On the other hand, if we measure the mass of a particle, we find that the result is size-dependent: at Planck scales it approaches the Planck mass for every type of particle, be it matter or radiation.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

To use another image, when two particles approach each other to a separation of the order of the Planck length, the indeterminacy in the length measurements makes it impossible to say whether there is something or nothing between the two objects. In short, *matter and vacuum are interchangeable at Planck scales.* This is an important result: since mass and empty space cannot be differentiated, we have confirmed that they are made of the same 'fabric', of the same constituents. This idea, already suggested above, is now common to all attempts to find a unified description of nature.

This approach is corroborated by attempts to apply quantum mechanics in highly curved space-time, where a clear distinction between vacuum and particles is impossible, as shown by the Fulling–Davies–Unruh effect. Any accelerated observer, and any observer in a gravitational field, detects particles hitting him, even if he is in a vacuum. The effect shows that for curved space-time the idea of vacuum as particle-free space does not work. Since at Planck scales it is impossible to say whether or not space is flat, it is impossible to say whether it contains particles or not.

Ref. 84
Vol. V, page 126

In short, all arguments lead to the same conclusion: *vacuum, i.e., empty space-time, cannot be distinguished from matter at Planck scales.* Another common way to express this state of affairs is to say that when a particle of Planck energy travels through space it will be scattered by the fluctuations of space-time itself, as well as by matter, and the two cases are indistinguishable. These surprising results rely on a simple fact: whatever definition of mass we use, it is always measured via combined length and time measurements. (This is even the case for normal weighing scales: mass is measured by the displacement of some part of the machine.) *Mass measurement is impossible at Planck scales.* The error in such mass measurements makes it *impossible to distinguish vacuum from matter.* In particular, *the concept of particle is not applicable at Planck scale.*

Curiosities and fun challenges on Planck scales

> "There is nothing in the world but matter in motion, and matter in motion cannot move otherwise than in space and time."
>
> Lenin, *Materialism and empirio-criticism.*

As usual, Lenin was wrong. And this is not so much because the world contains moving matter, moving radiation, moving vacuum and moving horizons, which is not exactly what Lenin claimed. Above all, at Planck scales, there is no matter, no radiation, no horizon, no space and no time. These concepts only appear at low energy. The rest of our adventure clarifies how.

* *

Observers are made of matter. Observers are not made of radiation. Observers are not made of vacuum. Observers are thus biased, because they take a specific standpoint. But at Planck scales, vacuum, radiation and matter cannot be distinguished. Two consequences follow: first, only at Planck scales would a description be free of any bias in favour of matter. Secondly, on the other hand, observers do not exist at all at Planck energy. Physics is thus only possible below Planck energy.

* *

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

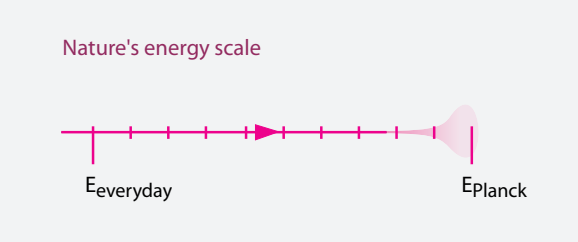


FIGURE 5 Planck effects make the energy axis an approximation.

If measurements become impossible near Planck energy, we cannot even draw a diagram with an energy axis reaching that value. A way out is shown Figure 5. The energy of elementary particles cannot reach the Planck energy.

* *

By the standards of particle physics, the Planck energy is rather large. Suppose we wanted to impart this amount of energy to protons using a particle accelerator. How large would
Challenge 37 s a *Planck accelerator* have to be?

* *

By the standards of everyday life, the Planck energy is rather small. Measured in litres of
Challenge 38 s gasoline, how much fuel does it correspond to?

* *

The usual concepts of matter and of radiation are not applicable at Planck scales. Usually, it is assumed that matter and radiation are made up of interacting elementary particles. The concept of an elementary particle implies an entity that is discrete, point-like, real and not virtual, has a definite mass and a definite spin, is distinct from its antiparticle, and, most of all, is distinct from vacuum, which is assumed to have zero mass. All these properties are lost at Planck scales. *At Planck scales, the concepts of 'mass', 'vacuum', 'elementary particle', 'radiation' and 'matter' do not make sense.*

* *

Do the large errors in mass measurements imply that mass can be negative at Planck
Challenge 39 s energy?

* *

We now have a new answer to the old question: why is there something rather than nothing? At Planck scales, there is *no difference* between something and nothing. We can now honestly say about ourselves that we are made of nothing.

* *

Special relativity implies that no length or energy can be invariant. Since we have come to the conclusion that the Planck energy and the Planck length are invariant, it appears that there must be deviations from Lorentz invariance at high energy. What effects would

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Challenge 40 r follow? What kind of experiment could measure them? If you have a suggestion, publish it! Several attempts are being explored. We will settle the issue later on, with some interesting insights.

Ref. 85
Page 271

* *

Quantum mechanics alone gives, via the Heisenberg indeterminacy relation, a lower limit to the *spread* of measurements, but, strangely enough, not on their *precision*, i.e., not on the number of significant digits. Wolfgang Jauch gives an example: atomic lattice constants are known to a much higher precision than the positional indeterminacy of single atoms inside the crystal.

Ref. 86
Ref. 67

It is sometimes claimed that measurement indeterminacies smaller than the Planck values are possible for large enough numbers of particles. Can you show why this is incorrect, at least for space and time?

Challenge 41 s

* *

Of course, the idea that vacuum is not empty is not new. More than two thousand years ago, Aristotle argued for a filled vacuum, although his arguments were incorrect as seen from today's perspective. Also in the fourteenth century there was much discussion on whether empty space was composed of indivisible entities, but the debate died down again.

* *

A Planck-energy particle falling in a gravitational field would gain energy. But the Planck energy is the highest energy in nature. What does this apparent contradiction imply?

Challenge 42 s

* *

One way to generalize the results presented here is to assume that, at Planck energy, nature is *event-symmetric*, i.e., symmetric under exchange of any two events. This idea, developed by Phil Gibbs, provides an additional formulation of the strange behaviour of nature at extreme scales.

Ref. 59

* *

Because there is a minimum length in nature, so-called *singularities* do not exist. The issue, hotly debated for decades in the twentieth century, thus becomes uninteresting.

Vol. II, page 272

* *

Since mass and energy density are limited, any object of finite volume has only a finite number of degrees of freedom. Calculation of the entropy of black holes has already shown us that entropy values are always finite. This implies that perfect *baths* do not exist. Baths play an important role in thermodynamics (which must therefore be viewed as only an approximation), and also in recording and measuring devices: when a device measures, it switches from a neutral state to a state in which it shows the result of the measurement. In order not to return to the neutral state, the device must be coupled to a bath. Without a bath, a reliable measuring device cannot exist. In short, perfect clocks and length-measuring devices do not exist, because nature puts a limit on their storage ability.

Vol. V, page 143
Ref. 87

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

If vacuum and matter cannot be distinguished, we cannot distinguish between objects and their environment. However, this was one of the starting points of our journey. Some interesting adventures still await us!

Vol. I, page 25

* *

We have seen earlier that characterizing nature as made up of particles and vacuum creates problems when interactions are included. On the one hand interactions are the difference between the parts and the whole, while on the other hand, according to quantum theory, interactions are exchanges of particles. This apparent contradiction can be used to show that something is counted twice in the usual characterization of nature. However, when matter and space-time are both made of the same constituents the contradiction is resolved.

Vol. III, page 314

* *

Is there a smallest possible momentum? And a smallest momentum error?

Challenge 43 d

* *

Given that time becomes an approximation at Planck scales, can we still ask whether nature is *deterministic*?

Let us go back to the basics. We can define time, because in nature change is not random, but gradual. What is the situation now that we know that time is only approximate? Is non-gradual change possible? Is energy conserved? In other words, are surprises possible in nature?

It is correct to say that time is not defined at Planck scales, and that therefore that determinism is an undefinable concept, but it is not a satisfying answer. What happens at 'everyday' scales? One answer is that at our everyday scales, the probability of surprises is so small that the world indeed is effectively deterministic. In other words, nature is not really deterministic, but the departure from determinism is not measurable, since every measurement and observation, by definition, *implies* a deterministic world. The lack of surprises would be due to the limitations of our human nature – more precisely, of our senses and brain.

Can you imagine any other possibility? In truth, it is not possible to prove these answers at this point, even though the rest of our adventure will do so. We need to keep any possible alternative in mind, so that we remain able to check the answers.

Challenge 44 s
Page 396

* *

If matter and vacuum cannot be distinguished, then each has the properties of the other. For example, since space-time is an extended entity, matter and radiation are also extended entities. Furthermore, as space-time is an entity that reaches the borders of the system under scrutiny, particles must also do so. This is our first hint at the *extension of matter*; we will examine this argument in more detail shortly.

Page 112

* *

The impossibility of distinguishing matter and vacuum implies a lack of information at Planck scales. In turn, this implies an intrinsic basic entropy associated with any part of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the universe at Planck scales. We will come back to this topic shortly, when we discuss the entropy of black holes.

Page 279

* *

Challenge 45 s When *can* matter and vacuum be distinguished? At what energy? This issue might be compared to the following question: Can we distinguish between a liquid and a gas by looking at a single atom? No, only by looking at many. Similarly, we cannot distinguish between matter and vacuum by looking at one point, but only by looking at many. We must always *average*. However, even averaging is not completely successful. Distinguishing matter from vacuum is like distinguishing clouds from the clear sky: like clouds, matter has no precise boundary.

* *

If the dimensionality of space is undefined at Planck scales, what does this mean for superstrings?

Challenge 46 e

* *

Since vacuum, particles and fields are indistinguishable at Planck scales, at those scales we also lose the distinction between states and permanent, intrinsic properties of physical systems. This is a strong statement: the distinction was the starting point of our exploration of motion; the distinction allowed us to distinguish systems from their environment.

Vol. I, page 26

In other words, at Planck scales we cannot talk about motion. This is a strong statement. But it is not unexpected. We are searching for the origin of motion, and we are prepared to encounter such difficulties.

Common constituents

> Es ist allerdings darauf hingewiesen worden, dass bereits die Einführung eines raum-zeitlichen Kontinuums angesichts der molekularen Struktur allen Geschehens im Kleinen möglicherweise als naturwidrig anzusehen sei. Vielleicht weise der Erfolg von Heisenbergs Methode auf eine rein algebraische Methode der Naturbeschreibung, auf die Ausschaltung kontinuierlicher Funktionen aus der Physik hin. Dann aber muss auch auf die Verwendung des Raum-Zeit-Kontinuums prinzipiell verzichtet werden. Es ist nicht undenkbar, dass der menschliche Scharfsinn einst Methoden finden wird, welche die Beschreitung dieses Weges möglich machen. Einstweilen aber erscheint dieses Projekt ähnlich dem Versuch, in einem luftleeren Raum zu atmen.*
>
> Albert Einstein, 1936, in *Physik und Realität*.

* 'Yet it has been suggested that the introduction of a space-time continuum, in view of the molecular structure of all events in the small, may possibly be considered as contrary to nature. Perhaps the success of Heisenberg's method may point to a purely algebraic method of description of nature, to the elimination of continuous functions from physics. Then, however, one must also give up, in principle, the use of the space-time continuum. It is not inconceivable that human ingenuity will some day find methods that will make it possible to proceed along this path. Meanwhile, however, this project resembles the attempt to breathe in an airless space.'

Page 67

See also what Einstein thought twenty years before. The new point is that he believes that an algebraic description is necessary. He repeats the point in the next quote.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

> One can give good reasons why reality cannot at all be represented by a continuous field. From the quantum phenomena it appears to follow with certainty that a finite system of finite energy can be completely described by a finite set of numbers (quantum numbers). This does not seem to be in accordance with a continuum theory, and must lead to an attempt to find a purely algebraic theory for the description of reality. But nobody knows how to obtain the basis of such a theory.
>
> Albert Einstein, 1955, the last sentences of *The Meaning of Relativity – Including the Relativistic Theory of the Non-Symmetric Field*, fifth edition. These were also his last published words.

In this rapid journey, we have destroyed all the experimental pillars of quantum theory: the superposition of wave functions, space-time symmetry, gauge symmetry, renormalization symmetry and permutation symmetry. We also have destroyed the foundations of special and general relativity, namely the concepts of the space-time manifold, fields, particles and mass. We have even seen that matter and vacuum cannot be distinguished.

It seems that we have lost every concept used for the description of motion, and thus made its description impossible. It seems that we have completely destroyed our two 'castles in the air', general relativity and quantum theory. And it seems that we are trying to breathe in airless space. Is this pessimistic view correct, or can we save the situation?

Page 66

First of all, since matter and radiation are not distinguishable from vacuum, the quest for unification in the description of elementary particles is correct and necessary. There is no alternative to tearing down the castles and to continuing to breathe.

Secondly, after tearing down the castles, the invariant Planck limits c, $\hbar$ and $c^4/4G$ still remain as a foundation.

Thirdly, after tearing down the castles, one important result appears. Since the concepts of 'mass', 'time' and 'space' cannot be distinguished from each other, a new, *single* entity or concept is necessary to define both particles and space-time. In short, vacuum and particles must be made of *common constituents*. In other words, we are not in airless space, and we uncovered the foundation that remains after we tore down the castles. Before we go on exploring these common constituents, we check what we have deduced so far against experiment.

Experimental predictions

A race is going on both in experimental and in theoretical physics: to be the first to suggest and to be the first to perform an experiment that detects a quantum gravity effect. Here are some proposals.

Challenge 47 r

At Planck scales, space fluctuates. We might think that the fluctuations of space could blur the images of faraway galaxies, or destroy the phase relation between the photons. However, no blurring is observed, and the first tests show that light from extremely distant galaxies still interferes. The precise prediction of the phase washing effect is still being worked out; whatever the exact outcome, the effect is too small to be measured.

Ref. 88

Another idea is to measure the speed of light at different frequencies from faraway light flashes. There are natural flashes, called gamma-ray bursts, which have an extremely broad spectrum, from 100 GeV down to visible light at about 1 eV. These flashes often originate at cosmological distances d. Using *short* gamma-ray bursts, it is thus possible to test precisely whether the quantum nature of space-time influences the dispersion of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Ref. 92, Ref. 91 light signals when they travel across the universe. Planck-scale quantum gravity effects *might* produce a dispersion. Detecting a dispersion would confirm that Lorentz symmetry breaks down at Planck scales.

The difference in arrival time Δt between two photon energies E_1 and E_2 defines a characteristic energy by

$$E_{\text{char}} = \frac{(E_1 - E_2)\, d}{c\, \Delta t} \,. \tag{94}$$

This energy value is between $1.4 \cdot 10^{19}$ GeV and over 10^{22} GeV for the best measurement Ref. 89, Ref. 90 to date. This is between just above the Planck energy and over one thousand times the Ref. 90 Planck energy. However, despite this high characteristic energy, *no dispersion* has been found: even after a trip of ten thousand million years, all light arrives within one or two seconds.

Another candidate experiment is the direct detection of distance fluctuations between Ref. 92, Ref. 93 bodies. Gravitational wave detectors are sensitive to extremely small noise signals in length measurements. There should be a noise signal due to the distance fluctuations induced near Planck energy. The indeterminacy in measurement of a length l is pre- Ref. 94 dicted to be

$$\frac{\delta l}{l} \geqslant \left(\frac{l_{\text{Pl}}}{l}\right)^{2/3} \,. \tag{95}$$

This expression is deduced simply by combining the measurement limit of a ruler, from Page 64 quantum theory, with the requirement that the ruler not be a black hole. The sensitivity of the detectors to noise might reach the required level later in the twenty-first century. The Ref. 95 noise induced by quantum gravity effects has also been predicted to lead to detectable quantum decoherence and vacuum fluctuations. However, no such effect has been found yet.

A further candidate experiment for measuring quantum gravity effects is the detection of the loss of CPT symmetry at high energies. Especially in the case of the decay of Ref. 92 certain elementary particles, such as neutral kaons, the precision of experimental measurement is approaching the detection of Planck-scale effects. However, no such effect has been found yet.

Another possibility is that quantum gravity effects may change the threshold energy at Ref. 96 which certain particle reactions become possible. It may be that extremely high-energy photons or cosmic rays will make it possible to prove that Lorentz invariance is indeed broken at Planck scales. However, no such effect has been found yet.

In the domain of atomic physics, it has also been predicted that quantum gravity effects will induce a gravitational Stark effect and a gravitational Lamb shift in atomic Ref. 95 transitions. However, no such effect has been found yet.

Other proposals start from the recognition that the bound on the measurability of observables also puts a bound on the measurement *precision* for each observable. This bound is of no importance in everyday life, but it is important at Planck energy. One proposal is to search for a minimal noise in length measurements, e.g., in gravitational wave detectors. But no such noise has been found yet.

In summary, the experimental detection of quantum gravity effects *might* be possible, despite their weakness, at some time during the twenty-first century. The successful pre-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

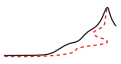
diction and detection of such an effect would be one of the highlights of physics, as it would challenge the usual description of space and time even more than general relativ-
Ref. 97 ity did. On the other hand, most unified models of physics predict the *absence* of any measurable quantum gravity effect.

Summary on particles and vacuum

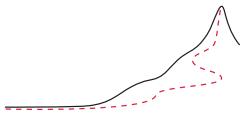
Combining quantum theory and general relativity leads us to several important results on the description of nature:

- *Vacuum and particles mix* at Planck scales, because there is no conceivable way to distinguish whether a Planck-sized region is part of a particle or of empty space. Matter, radiation and vacuum cannot be distinguished at Planck scales. Equivalently, empty
Ref. 98 space and particles are made of *fluctuating common constituents*.
- The constituents of vacuum and particles *cannot be points*. There is no conceivable way to prove that points exist, because the smallest measurable distance in nature is the Planck length.
- Particles, vacuum and continuous space *do not exist* at Planck scales. They disappear in a yet unclear Planck scale mixture.
- The three independent Planck limits c, $\hbar$ and $c^4/4G$ *remain valid* also in domains where quantum theory and general relativity are combined.

All these results must be part of the final theory that we are looking for. Generally speak-
Page 52 ing, we found the same conclusions that we found already in the chapter on limit statements. We thus continue along the same path that we took back then: we explore the universe as a whole.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 5

WHAT IS THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN THE UNIVERSE AND NOTHING?

> Die Grenze ist der eigentlich fruchtbare Ort der Erkenntnis.*
>
> Paul Tillich, *Auf der Grenze.*

This strange question is the topic of the current leg of our mountain ascent. In the last section we explored nature in the vicinity of Planck scales. In fact, the other limit, namely the description of motion at large, cosmological scales, is equally fascinating. As we proceed, many incredible results will appear, and at the end we will discover a surprising answer to the question in the title.

Cosmological scales

> Hic sunt leones.**
>
> Antiquity

The description of motion requires the application of general relativity whenever the scale d of the situation is of the order of the Schwarzschild radius, i.e., whenever

$$d \approx r_S = 2Gm/c^2 \,. \tag{96}$$

Challenge 48 s

It is straightforward to confirm that, with the usually quoted mass m and size d of everything visible in the universe, this condition is indeed fulfilled. We do need general relativity, and thus curved space-time, when talking about the whole of nature.

Similarly, quantum theory is required for the description of the motion of an object whenever we approach it within a distance d of the order of the (reduced) Compton wavelength $\lambda\!\!\!^{-}_C$, i.e., whenever

$$d \approx \lambda\!\!\!^{-}_C = \frac{\hbar}{mc} \,. \tag{97}$$

Obviously, for the total mass of the universe this condition is not fulfilled. However, we are not interested in the motion of the universe itself; we are interested in the motion of its components. In the description of these components, quantum theory is required whenever pair production and annihilation play a role. This is the case in the early his-

* 'The frontier is the really productive place of understanding.' Paul Tillich (b. 1886 Starzeddel, d. 1965 Chicago), theologian, socialist and philosopher.

** 'Here are lions.' This was written across unknown and dangerous regions on ancient maps.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

tory of the universe and near the horizon, i.e., for the most distant events that we can observe in space and time. We are thus obliged to include quantum theory in any precise description of the universe.

Since at cosmological scales we need both quantum theory and general relativity, we start our investigation with the study of time, space and mass, by asking at large scales the same questions that we asked above at Planck scales.

Maximum time

Is it possible to measure time intervals of any imaginable size? General relativity shows that in nature there is a maximum time interval, with a value of about fourteen thousand million years, or 430 Ps, providing an upper limit to the measurement of time. It is called the *age of the universe*, and has been deduced from two sets of measurements: the expansion of space-time and the age of matter.

We are all familiar with clocks that have been ticking for a long time: the hydrogen atoms in our body. All hydrogen atoms were formed just after the big bang. We can almost say that the electrons in these atoms have been orbiting their nuclei since the dawn of time. In fact, the quarks inside the protons in these atoms have been moving a few hundred thousand years longer than the electrons.

We thus have an upper time limit for any clock made of atoms. Even 'clocks' made of radiation (can you describe one?) yield a similar maximum time. The study of the spatial expansion of the universe leads to the *same* maximum age. No clock or measurement device was ticking *longer ago* than this maximum time, and no clock could provide a record of having done so.

Challenge 49 s

In summary, it is not possible to measure time intervals greater than the maximum one, either by using the history of space-time or by using the history of matter or radiation.* The maximum time is thus rightly called the *age* of the universe. Of course, this is not a new idea; but looking at the age issue in more detail does reveal some surprises.

Does the universe have a definite age?

> One should never trust a woman who tells one her real age. A woman who would tell one that, would tell one anything.
>
> Oscar Wilde**

In light of all measurements, it may seem silly to question the age of the universe. The age value is found in many books and tables and its precise determination is one of the most important quests in modern astrophysics. But is this quest reasonable?

Vol. II, page 306

In order to measure the duration of a movement or the age of a system, we need a clock that is *independent* of that movement or system, and thus *outside* the system. However, there are no clocks outside the universe, and no clock inside it can be independent. In fact we have just seen that no clock inside the universe can run throughout its full history, in particular, through its earliest history.

* This implies that so-called 'oscillating universe' models, in which it is claimed that 'before' the big bang there were other phenomena, cannot be justified on the basis of nature or observations. They are based on beliefs.

** Oscar Wilde, (b. 1854 Dublin, d. 1900 Paris), poet and playwright, equally famous for his wit.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Time can be defined only if it is possible to distinguish between matter and space. Given this distinction, we can talk either about the age of *space*, by assuming that matter provides suitable and independent clocks – as is done in general relativity – or about the age of *matter*, such as stars or galaxies, by assuming that the extension of space-time, or possibly some other matter, provides a good clock. Both possibilities are being explored experimentally in modern astrophysics – and both give the same result, of about fourteen thousand million years, which was mentioned above. Despite this correspondence, for the universe as a *whole*, an age *cannot* be defined, because there is no clock outside it.

The issue of the starting point of time makes this difficulty even more apparent. We may imagine that going back in time leads to only two possibilities: either the starting instant $t = 0$ is part of time or it is not. (Mathematically, this means that the segment representing time is either closed or open.) Both these possibilities imply that it is possible to measure arbitrarily small times; but we know from the combination of general relativity and quantum theory that this is *not* the case. In other words, neither possibility is correct: the beginning cannot *be* part of time, nor can it *not be* part of it. There is only one solution to this contradiction: there was no beginning at all.

Indeed, a minimum length, or equivalently, a minimum action, both imply that there is a maximum curvature for space-time. Curvature can be measured in several ways: for example, surface curvature is an inverse area. Within a factor of order one, we find

$$K < \frac{c^3}{G\hbar} = 0.39 \cdot 10^{70}\,\mathrm{m}^{-2} \tag{98}$$

as a limit for the surface curvature K in nature. In other words, the universe has never been a point, never had zero age, never had infinite density, and never had infinite curvature. It is not difficult to get a similar limit for temperature or any other physical quantity near the big bang. In short, since events do not exist, the big bang cannot have been an event. There never was an initial singularity or a beginning of the universe.

Challenge 50 s

In summary, the situation is consistently muddled. Neither the age of the universe nor its origin makes sense. What is going wrong? Or rather, *how* are things going wrong? What happens if instead of jumping directly to the big bang, we *approach* it as closely as possible? The best way to clarify the issue is to ask about the measurement *error* in our statement that the universe is fourteen thousand million years old. This turns out to be a fascinating topic.

How precise can age measurements be?

> No woman should ever be quite accurate about her age. It looks so calculating.
>
> Oscar Wilde

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The first way to measure the age of the universe* is to look at clocks in the usual sense of the word, namely at clocks made of *matter*. As explained in the part on quantum theory, Ref. 55, Ref. 56 Salecker and Wigner showed that a clock built to measure a total time T with a precision Δt has a minimum mass m given by

$$m > \frac{\hbar}{c^2}\frac{T}{(\Delta t)^2} \,. \tag{99}$$

A simple way to incorporate general relativity into this result was suggested by Ng and Ref. 94 van Dam. Any clock of mass m has a minimum resolution Δt due to the curvature of space that it introduces, given by

$$\Delta t > \frac{Gm}{c^3} \,. \tag{100}$$

If m is eliminated, these two results imply that a clock with a precision Δt can only measure times T up to a certain maximum value, namely

$$T < \frac{(\Delta t)^3}{t_{\mathrm{Pl}}^2} \,, \tag{101}$$

where $t_{\mathrm{Pl}} = \sqrt{\hbar G/c^5} = 5.4 \cdot 10^{-44}$ s is the Planck time. (As usual, we have omitted factors of order one in this and in all the following results of this chapter.) In other words, the higher the accuracy of a clock, the shorter the time during which it works dependably. The precision of a clock is limited not only by the expense of building it, but also by nature itself. Nevertheless, it is easy to check that for clocks used in daily life, this limit Challenge 51 e is not even remotely approached. For example, you may wish to calculate how precisely your own age can be specified.

As a consequence of the inequality (101), a clock trying to achieve an accuracy of one Planck time can do so for at most one Planck time! *A real clock cannot achieve Planck-time accuracy.* If we try to go beyond the limit (101), fluctuations of space-time hinder the working of the clock and prevent higher precision. With every Planck time that passes, the clock accumulates a measurement error of at least one Planck time. Thus, the total measurement error is at least as large as the measurement itself. This conclusion is also valid for clocks based on radiation.

In short, measuring age with a clock always involves errors. Whenever we try to reduce these errors to the smallest possible level, the Planck level, the clock becomes so imprecise over large times that age measurements become impossible.

Does time exist?

> “Time is waste of money.”
>
> Oscar Wilde

* Note that the age t_0 is not the same as the Hubble time $T = 1/H_0$. The Hubble time is only a computed quantity and (almost) always larger than the age; the relation between the two depends on the values of the cosmological constant, the density and other properties of the universe. For example, for the standard ‘hot big bang’ scenario, i.e., for the matter-dominated Einstein–de Sitter model, we have the simple relation Ref. 99 $T = (3/2)\, t_0$.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Ever since people began to study physics, the concept of 'time' has designated what is measured by a clock. But the inequality (101) for a maximum clock time implies that perfect clocks do not exist, and thus that time is only an approximate concept: perfect time does not exist. Thus, in nature there is no 'idea' of time, in the Platonic sense. In fact, the discussion so far can be seen as proof that combining quantum theory and general relativity, because of the resulting measurement errors, prevents the existence of perfect or 'ideal' examples of any classical observable or any everyday concept.

Vol. I, page 39

Time does not exist. Yet it is obviously a useful concept in everyday life. The key to understanding this is *measurement energy*. Any clock – in fact, any system of nature – is characterized by a simple number, namely the highest ratio of its kinetic energy to the rest energy of its components. In daily life, this ratio is about $1\,\mathrm{eV}/10\,\mathrm{GeV} = 10^{-10}$. Such *low-energy* systems are well suited for building clocks. The more precisely the motion of the main moving part – the pointer of the clock – can be kept constant and monitored, the higher the precision of the clock. To achieve very high precision, the pointer must have very high mass. Indeed, in any clock, both the position and the speed of the pointer must be measured, and the two measurement errors are related by the quantum-mechanical indeterminacy relation $\Delta v\,\Delta x > \hbar/m$. High mass implies low intrinsic fluctuation. Furthermore, in order to screen the pointer from outside influences, even more mass is needed. This connection between mass and accuracy explains why more accurate clocks are usually more expensive.

Challenge 52 e

The standard indeterminacy relation $m\Delta v\,\Delta x > \hbar$ is valid only at everyday energies. However, we cannot achieve ever higher precision simply by increasing the mass without limit, because general relativity changes the indeterminacy relation to $\Delta v\,\Delta x > \hbar/m + G(\Delta v)^2 m/c^3$. The additional term on the right-hand side, negligible at everyday scales, is proportional to energy. Increasing it by a large amount limits the achievable precision of the clock. The smallest measurable time interval turns out to be the Planck time.

Page 56
Page 66
Challenge 53 e

In summary, time exists, as a good approximation, only for *low-energy* systems. Any increase in precision beyond a certain limit requires an increase in the energy of the components; at Planck energy, this increase will prevent an increase in precision.

What is the error in the measurement of the age of the universe?

It is now straightforward to apply our discussion about the measurement of time to the age of the universe. The inequality (101) implies that the highest precision possible for a clock is about 10^{-23} s, or about the time light takes to move across a proton. The finite age of the universe also yields a maximum *relative* measurement precision. Inequality (101) can be written as

Challenge 54 e

$$\frac{\Delta t}{T} > \left(\frac{t_{\mathrm{Pl}}}{T}\right)^{2/3} . \tag{102}$$

Inserting the age of the universe for T, we find that no time interval can be measured with a precision of more than about 40 decimals.

To clarify the issue, we can calculate the error in measurement as a function of the observation energy E_{meas}, the energy of the measurement probe. There are two limit

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

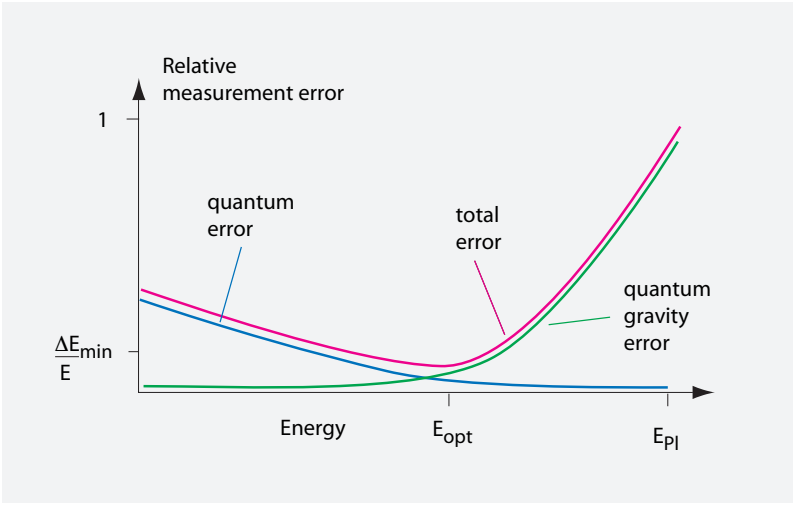


FIGURE 6 Measurement errors as a function of measurement energy.

cases. For *low* energies, the error is due to quantum effects and is given by

$$\frac{\Delta t}{T} \sim \frac{1}{E_{\text{meas}}} \tag{103}$$

which decreases with increasing measurement energy. For *high* energies, however, the error is due to gravitational effects and is given by

$$\frac{\Delta t}{T} \sim \frac{E_{\text{meas}}}{E_{\text{Pl}}} \tag{104}$$

so that the total error varies as shown in Figure 6. In particular, very high energies do not reduce measurement errors: any attempt to reduce the measurement error for the age of the universe below 10^{-23} s would require energies so high that the limits of space-time would be reached, making the measurement itself impossible. We reached this conclusion through an argument based on clocks made of particles. We will see below that trying to determine the age of the universe from its expansion leads to the same limitation.

Imagine observing a tree which, as a result of some storm or strong wind, has fallen towards second tree, touching it at the very top, as shown in Figure 7. It is possible to determine the heights of both trees by measuring their separation and the angles at the base. The *error* in the heights will depend on the errors in measurement of the separation and angles.

Similarly, the age of the universe can be calculated from the present distance and speed of objects – such as galaxies – observed in the night sky. The present distance d corresponds to separation of the trees at ground level, and the speed v to the angle between the two trees. The Hubble time T of the universe (which is usually assumed to be larger than the age of the universe) then corresponds to the height at which the two

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

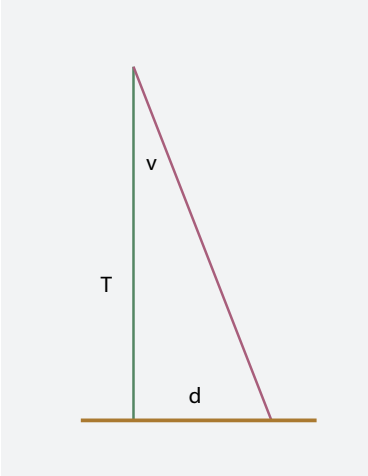


FIGURE 7 Trees and galaxies.

trees meet. This age – in a naive sense, the time since the galaxies 'separated' – is given, within a factor of order one, by

$$T = \frac{d}{v} \,. \tag{105}$$

In simple terms, this is the method used to determine the age of the universe from the expansion of space-time, for galaxies with red-shifts below unity.* The (positive) measurement error ΔT becomes

$$\frac{\Delta T}{T} = \frac{\Delta d}{d} + \frac{\Delta v}{v} \,. \tag{106}$$

It is worthwhile to explore this in more detail. For any measurement of T, we have to choose the object, i.e., a distance d, as well as an observation time Δt, or, equivalently, an observation energy $\Delta E = 2\pi\hbar/\Delta t$. We will now investigate the consequences of these choices for equation (106), always taking into account both quantum theory and general relativity.

At everyday energies, the result of the determination of the age of the universe t_0 is about $(13.8 \pm 0.1) \cdot 10^9$ Ga. This value is deduced by measuring red-shifts, i.e., velocities, and distances, using stars and galaxies in distance ranges, from some hundred thousand light years up to a red-shift of about 1. Measuring red-shifts does not produce large velocity errors. The main source of experimental error is the difficulty in determining the distances of galaxies.

What is the smallest possible error in distance? Obviously, inequality (102) implies

$$\frac{\Delta d}{T} > \left(\frac{l_{\mathrm{Pl}}}{d}\right)^{2/3} \tag{107}$$

* At higher red-shifts, the speed of light, as well as the details of the expansion, come into play. To continue with the analogy of the trees, we find that the trees are not straight all the way up to the top and that they grow on a slope, as suggested by Figure 8.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

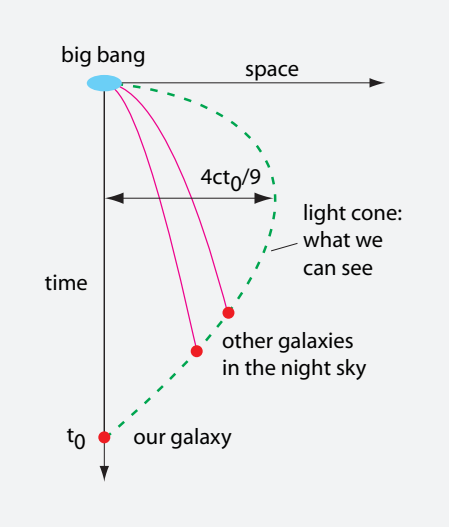


FIGURE 8 The speed and distance of remote galaxies.

thus giving the same indeterminacy in the age of the universe as the one we found above in the case of material clocks. Challenge 55 e

We can try to reduce the age error in two ways: by choosing objects at either small or large distances. Let us start with small distances. In order to get high precision at small distances, we need high observation energies. Challenge 56 e It is fairly obvious that at observation energies near the Planck value, $\Delta T/T$ approaches unity. In fact, both terms on the right-hand side of equation (106) become of order one. At these energies, Δv approaches c and the maximum value for d approaches the Planck length, for the same reason that at Planck energy the maximum measurable time is the Planck time. In short, *at Planck scales it is impossible to say whether the universe is old or young*.

Let us consider the other extreme, namely objects extremely far away, say with a red-shift of $z \gg 1$. Relativistic cosmology requires the diagram of Figure 7 to be replaced by the more realistic diagram of Figure 8. The 'light onion' replaces the familiar light cone of special relativity: light converges near the big bang. Ref. 99 In this case the measurement error for the age of the universe also depends on the distance and velocity errors. At the largest possible distances, the signals an object sends out must be of high energy, because the emitted wavelength must be smaller than the universe itself. Thus, inevitably, we reach Planck energy. However, we have seen that in such high-energy situations, both the emitted radiation and the object itself are indistinguishable from the space-time background. In other words, the red-shifted signal we would observe today would have a wavelength as large as the size of the universe, with a correspondingly small frequency.

There is another way to describe the situation. At Planck energy or near the horizon, the original signal has an error of the same size as the signal itself. When measured at the present time, the red-shifted signal still has an error of the same size as the signal. As a result, the error in the horizon distance becomes as large as the value to be measured.

In short, even if space-time expansion and large scales are used, the instant of the so-called beginning of the universe cannot be determined with an error smaller than the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

age of the universe itself: a result we also found at Planck distances. If we aim for perfect precision, we just find that the universe is 13.8 ± 13.8 thousand million years old! In other words, *in both extremal situations, it is impossible to say whether the universe has a non-vanishing age*.

We have to conclude that the anthropocentric concept of 'age' does not make any sense for the universe as a whole. The usual textbook value is useful only for ranges of time, space and energy in which matter and space-time are clearly distinguished, namely at everyday, human-scale energies; the value has no more general meaning.

Challenge 57 ny You may like to examine the issue of the *fate* of the universe using the same arguments. But we will now continue on the path outlined at the start of this chapter; the next topic on this path is the measurement of length.

Maximum length

General relativity shows that the *horizon distance*, i.e., the distance of objects with infinite red-shift, is finite. In the usual cosmological model, for hyperbolic (open) and parabolic (marginal) evolutions of the universe, the *size* of the universe is assumed infinite.* For elliptical evolution, the total size is finite and depends on the curvature. However, in this Vol. II, page 241 case also the present measurement limit yields a minimum size for the universe many times larger than the horizon distance.

Quantum field theory, on the other hand, is based on flat and infinite space-time. Let us see what happens when the two theories are combined. What can we say about measurements of length in this case? For example, would it be possible to construct and use a metre rule to measure lengths larger than the distance to the horizon?

Admittedly, we would have no time to push the metre rule out up to the horizon, Ref. 99 because in the standard big bang model the horizon moves away from us faster than the speed of light. (We should have started using the metre rule right at the big bang.) But just for fun, let us assume that we have actually managed to do this. How far away can we read off distances? In fact, since the universe was smaller in the past, and since every observation of the sky is an observation of the past, Figure 8 shows that the maximum Ref. 99 *spatial distance* away from us at which an object can be seen is only $4ct_0/9$. Obviously, for space-time intervals, the maximum remains ct_0.

Thus, in all cases it turns out to be impossible to measure lengths larger than the horizon distance, even though general relativity sometimes predicts such larger distances. This result is unsurprising, and in obvious agreement with the existence of a limit for measurements of time intervals. The real surprises come next.

Is the universe really a big place?

Ref. 100 Astronomers and Hollywood films answer this question in the affirmative. Indeed, the Vol. II, page 306 distance to the horizon of the universe is often included in tables. Cosmological models specify that the scale factor R, which fixes the distance to the horizon, grows with

* In cosmology, we need to distinguish between the scale factor R, the Hubble radius $c/H = cR/\dot{R}$, the horizon distance h and the size d of the universe. The Hubble radius is a computed quantity giving the distance at which objects move away with the speed of light. The Hubble radius is always *smaller* than the horizon distance, at which in the standard Einstein–de Sitter model, for example, objects move away with Ref. 99 *twice* the speed of light. However, the horizon itself moves away with *three* times the speed of light.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

time t; for the case of the standard mass-dominated Einstein–de Sitter model, i.e., for a vanishing cosmological constant and flat space, we have

$$R(t) = C\, t^{2/3} \,, \tag{108}$$

where the numerical constant C relates the commonly accepted horizon distance to the commonly accepted age. Indeed, observation shows that the universe is large, and is getting larger. But let us investigate what happens if we add some quantum theory to this result from general relativity. Is it really possible to measure the distance to the horizon?

We look first at the situation at high (probe) energies. We saw above that space-time and matter are not distinguishable at Planck scales. Therefore, at Planck energy we cannot state whether or not objects are *localized*. At Planck scales, the distinction between matter and vacuum – so basic to our thinking – disappears.

Another way to say this is that we cannot claim that space-time is *extended* at Planck scales. Our concept of extension derives from the possibility of measuring distances and time intervals, and from observations such as the ability to align several objects behind one another. Such observations are not possible at Planck scales and energies, because of the inability of probes to yield useful results. In fact, all of the everyday observations from which we deduce that space is extended are impossible at Planck scales, where *the basic distinction between vacuum and matter, namely between extension and localization, disappears*. As a consequence, at Planck energy the size of the universe cannot be measured. It cannot even be called larger than a matchbox.

The problems encountered with probes of high probe energies have drastic consequences for the size measurement of the universe. All the arguments given above for
Challenge 58 e the errors in measurement of the age can be repeated for the distance to the horizon. To reduce size measurement errors, a measurement probe needs to have high energy. But at high energy, measurement errors approach the value of the measurement results. At the largest distances and at Planck energy, the measurement errors are of the same magnitude as the measured values. If we try to determine the size of the universe with high precision, we get no precision at all.

The inability to get precise values for the size of the universe should not come unexpected. For a reliable measurement, the standard must be different, independent, and outside the system to be measured. For the universe this is impossible.

Studying the size of the big bang also produces strange results. The universe is said to have been much smaller near the big bang because, on average, all matter is moving away from all other matter. But if we try to follow the path of matter into the past with high precision, using Planck energy probes, we get into trouble: since measurement errors are as large as measurement data, we cannot claim that the universe was smaller near the big bang than it is today: there is no way to reliably distinguish size values.

There are other confirmations too. If we had a metre rule spanning the whole universe, even beyond the horizon, with zero at the place where we live, what measurement *error*
Challenge 59 e would it produce for the horizon? It does not take long to work out that the expansion of space-time, from Planck scales to the present size, implies an expansion in the error from Planck size to a length of the order of the present distance to the horizon. Again, the error is as large as the measurement result. And again, the size of the universe turns

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

out not to be a meaningful property.

Since this reasoning also applies if we try to measure the diameter of the universe instead of its radius, it is impossible to say whether the antipodes in the sky really are distant from each other!

We can summarize the situation by noting that anything said about the size of the universe is as limited as anything said about its age. *The height of the sky depends on the observation energy.* If we start measuring the sky at standard observation energies, and try to increase the precision of measurement of the distance to the horizon, the measurement error increases beyond all bounds. At Planck energy, the volume of the universe is indistinguishable from the Planck volume – and vice versa.

The boundary of space – is the sky a surface?

The horizon of the universe – essentially, the black part of the night sky – is a fascinating entity. Everybody interested in cosmology wants to know what happens there. In newspapers the horizon is sometimes called the *boundary of space*. Some surprising insights – which have not yet made it to the newspapers – appear when we combine general relativity and quantum mechanics.

We have seen that the errors in measuring the distance of the horizon are substantial. They imply that we cannot pretend that all points of the sky are equally far away from us. Thus we cannot say that the sky is a surface; it could be a volume. In fact, there is no way to determine the dimensionality of the horizon, nor the dimensionality of space-time near the horizon.*

Thus measurements do not allow us to determine whether the boundary is a point, a surface, or a line. It may be a very complex shape, even knotted. In fact, quantum theory tells us that it must be all of these from time to time: that *the sky fluctuates in height and shape*.

In short, measurement errors prevent the determination of the topology of the sky. In fact, this is not a new result. As is well known, general relativity is unable to describe particle–antiparticle pair creation particles with spin 1/2. The reason for this inability is the change in space-time topology required by such processes. The universe is full of these and many other quantum processes; they imply that it is impossible to determine or define the microscopic topology for the universe and, in particular, for the horizon. Challenge 61 s Can you find at least two other arguments to confirm this conclusion?

Worse still, quantum theory shows that space-time is not continuous at a horizon: this can easily be deduced using the Planck-scale arguments from the previous section. Page 56 Time and space are not defined at horizons.

Finally, there is no way to decide by measurement whether the various points on the horizon are *different* from each other. On the horizon, measurement errors are of the same order as the size of the horizon. The distance between two points in the night sky is thus undefined. Therefore it is unclear what the *diameter* of the horizon is.

* The measurement errors also imply that we cannot say anything about translational symmetry at cosmological scales. Challenge 60 ny Can you confirm this? In addition, at the horizon it is impossible to distinguish between space-like and time-like distances. Even worse, concepts such as 'mass' or 'momentum' become muddled at the horizon. This means that, as at Planck energy, we are unable to distinguish between object and background, Page 83 and between state and intrinsic properties. We thus confirm the point made above.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In summary, the horizon has no specific distance or shape. The horizon, and thus the universe, cannot be shown to be manifolds. This unexpected result leads us to a further question.

Does the universe have initial conditions?

Ref. 101 One often reads about the quest for the initial conditions of the universe. But before joining this search, we should ask *whether* and *when* such initial conditions make any sense.

Obviously, our everyday description of motion requires knowledge of initial conditions, which describe the *state* of a system, i.e., all those aspects that differentiate it from a system with the same intrinsic properties. Initial conditions – like the state – are attributed to a system by an *outside* observer.

Quantum theory tells us that initial conditions, or the state of a system, can only be defined by an outside observer with respect to an environment. It is already difficult to be outside the universe – but even inside the universe, a state can only be defined if matter can be distinguished from vacuum. This is impossible at Planck energy, near the big bang, or at the horizon. Thus the universe has no state. This means also that it has *no wave function*.

Page 56 The limits imposed by the Planck values confirm this conclusion in other ways. First of all, they show that the big bang was not a singularity with infinite curvature, density or temperature, because infinitely large values do not exist in nature. Secondly, since instants of time do not exist, it is impossible to define the state of any system at a given time. Thirdly, as instants of time do not exist, neither do events, and so the big bang was not an event, and neither an initial state nor an initial wave function can be ascribed to the universe. (Note that this also means that the universe cannot have been created.)

Page 296 In short, *there are no initial conditions for the universe*. Initial conditions make sense only for subsystems, and only far from Planck scales. Thus, for initial conditions to exist, the system must be far from the horizon and it must have evolved for some time 'after' the big bang. Only when these two requirements are fulfilled can objects *move* in space. Of course, this is always the case in everyday life. The lack of initial conditions means
Page 18 that we have solved the first issue from the millennium list.

At this point in our mountain ascent, where neither time nor length is clearly defined at cosmological scales, it should come as no surprise that there are similar difficulties concerning the concept of mass.

Does the universe contain particles and stars?

The total number of stars in the universe, about $10^{23\pm1}$, is included in every book on
Vol. II, page 306 cosmology. A smaller number can be counted on clear nights. But how dependable is the statement?

We can ask the same question about particles instead of stars. The commonly quoted numbers are $10^{80\pm1}$ baryons and $10^{89\pm1}$ photons. However, the issue is not simple. Neither quantum theory nor general relativity alone make predictions about the number of particles, either inside or outside the horizon. What happens if we combine the two theories?

In order to define the number of particles in a region, quantum theory first of all re-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Vol. IV, page 113 quires a vacuum state to be defined. The number of particles is defined by comparing the system with the vacuum. If we neglect or omit general relativity by assuming flat space-time, this procedure poses no problem. However, if we include general relativity, and thus a curved space-time, especially one with a strangely behaved horizon, the answer is simple: there is *no* vacuum state with which we can compare the universe, for two reasons. First, nobody can explain what an empty universe would look like. Secondly, and more importantly, there is no way to define a state of the universe. The number of particles in the universe thus becomes undefinable. Only at everyday energies and for finite dimensions are we able to speak of an approximate number of particles.

In the case of the universe, a comparison with the vacuum is also impossible for purely practical reasons. The particle counter would have to be outside the system. (Can you Challenge 62 e confirm this?) In addition, it is impossible to remove particles from the universe.

The impossibility of defining a vacuum state, and thus the number of particles in the universe, is not surprising. It is an interesting exercise to investigate the measurement errors that appear when we try to determine the number of particles despite this fundamental impossibility. Challenge 63 s

Can we count the stars? In principle, the same conclusion applies as for particles. However, at everyday energies the stars can be counted *classically*, i.e., without taking them out of the volume in which they are enclosed. For example, this is possible if the stars are differentiated by mass, colour or any other individual property. Only near Planck energy or near the horizon are these methods inapplicable. In short, the number of stars is only defined as long as the observation energy is low, i.e., as long as we stay away from Planck energy and from the horizon.

So, despite appearances on human scales, *there is no definite number of particles in the universe*. The universe cannot be distinguished from vacuum by counting particles. Even though particles are necessary for our own existence and functioning, a complete count of them cannot be made.

This conclusion is so strange that we should try to resist it. Let us try another method of determining the content of matter in the universe: instead of counting particles in the universe, let us weigh the universe.

Does the universe have mass?

Mass distinguishes objects from the vacuum. The average mass density of the universe, Vol. II, page 306 about $10^{-26}\,\mathrm{kg/m^3}$, is often cited in texts. Is it different from a vacuum? Quantum theory shows that, as a result of the indeterminacy relation, even an empty volume of size R has a mass. For a zero-energy photon inside such a vacuum, we have $E/c = \Delta p > \hbar/\Delta x$, so that in a volume of size R, we have a minimum mass of at least $m_{\min}(R) = h/cR$. For a spherical volume of radius R there is thus a minimal mass density given approximately by

$$\rho_{\min} \approx \frac{m_{\min}(R)}{R^3} = \frac{\hbar}{cR^4} \,. \tag{109}$$

For the universe, if the standard horizon distance R_0 of 13 800 million light years is inserted, the value becomes about $10^{-142}\,\mathrm{kg/m^3}$. This describes the density of the vacuum. In other words, the universe, with a textbook density of about $10^{-26}\,\mathrm{kg/m^3}$, seems to be

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

clearly different from vacuum. But are we sure?

We have just deduced that the radius of the horizon is undefined: depending on the observation energy, it can be as small as the Planck length. This implies that the density of the universe lies somewhere between the lowest possible value, given by the density of vacuum ρ_{min} just mentioned, and the highest possible one, namely the Planck density.* In short, the total mass of the universe depends on the energy of the observer.

Vol. I, page 98
Vol. II, page 64
Another way to measure the mass of the universe would be to apply the original definition of mass, as given in classical physics and as modified by special relativity. Thus, let us try to collide a standard kilogram with the universe. It is not hard to see that whatever we do, using either low or high energies for the standard kilogram, the mass of the universe cannot be constrained by this method. We would need to produce or to measure a velocity change Δv for the rest of the universe after the collision. To hit all the mass in the universe at the same time, we need high energy; but then we are hindered by Planck energy effects. In addition, a properly performed collision measurement would require a mass outside the universe, which is rather difficult to achieve.

Challenge 65 e

Yet another way to measure the mass would be to determine the gravitational mass of the universe through straightforward weighing. But the lack of balances outside the universe makes this an impractical solution, to say the least.

Another way out might be to use the most precise definition of mass provided by general relativity, the so-called *ADM mass*. However, the definition of this requires a specified behaviour at infinity, i.e., a background, which the universe lacks.

We are then left with the other general-relativistic method: determining the mass of the universe by measuring its average curvature. Let us take the defining expressions for average curvature κ for a region of size R, namely

Vol. II, page 187

$$\kappa = \frac{1}{r^2_{\text{curvature}}} = \frac{3}{4\pi}\,\frac{4\pi R^2 - S}{R^4} = \frac{15}{4\pi}\,\frac{4\pi R^3/3 - V}{R^5} \,. \tag{111}$$

We have to insert the horizon radius R_0 and either its surface area S_0 or its volume V_0. However, given the error margins on the radius and the volume, especially at Planck energy, we again find no *reliable* result for the radius of curvature.

Challenge 66 e

Ref. 102
An equivalent method starts with the usual expression provided by Rosenfeld for the indeterminacy $\Delta\kappa$ in the scalar curvature for a region of size R, namely

$$\Delta\kappa > \frac{16\pi l^2_{\text{Pl}}}{R^4} \,. \tag{112}$$

However, this expression also shows that the error in the radius of curvature behaves like the error in the distance to the horizon.

---

* In fact, at everyday energies the density of the universe lies midway between the two values, yielding the strange relation

Challenge 64 e

$$m_0^2/R_0^2 \approx m_{\text{Pl}}^2/R_{\text{Pl}}^2 = c^4/G^2 \,. \tag{110}$$

Vol. V, page 142
But this fascinating relation is not new. The approximate equality can be deduced from equation 16.4.3 (p. 620) of STEVEN WEINBERG, *Gravitation and Cosmology*, Wiley, 1972, namely $Gn_b m_p = 1/t_0^2$. The relation is required by several cosmological models.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

We find that *at Planck energy, the average radius of curvature of nature lies between infinity and the Planck length*. This implies that the mass density of the universe lies between the minimum value and the Planck value. There is thus no method to determine the mass of the universe at Planck energy. (Can you find one?) Challenge 67 s

In summary, mass measurements of the universe vary with the energy scale. Both at the lowest and at the highest energies, a precise mass value cannot be determined. The concept of mass cannot be applied to the universe as a whole: *the universe has no mass*.

Do symmetries exist in nature?

We have already seen that at the horizon, space-time translation symmetry breaks down. Let us have a quick look at the other symmetries.

What happens to permutation symmetry? Permutation is an operation on objects in space-time. It thus necessarily requires a distinction between matter, space and time. If we cannot distinguish positions, we cannot talk about exchange of particles. Therefore, at the horizon, general relativity and quantum theory together make it impossible to define permutation symmetry.

Let us explore CPT symmetry. As a result of measurement errors or of limiting maximum or minimum values, it is impossible to distinguish between the original and the transformed situations. Therefore we cannot claim that CPT is a symmetry of nature at horizon scales. In other words, matter and antimatter cannot be distinguished at the horizon.

Also gauge symmetry is not valid at horizon scale, as you may wish to check in detail yourself. For its definition, the concept of gauge field requires a distinction between time, space and mass; at the horizon this is impossible. We therefore also deduce that at the horizon, concepts such as algebras of observables cannot be used to describe nature. Renormalization breaks down too. Challenge 68 e

All symmetries of nature break down at the horizon. None of the vocabulary we use to talk about observations – including terms such as such as 'magnetic field', 'electric field', 'potential', 'spin', 'charge', or 'speed' – can be used at the horizon.

Does the universe have a boundary?

It is common to take 'boundary' and 'horizon' as synonyms in the case of the universe, because they are the same for all practical purposes. Knowledge of mathematics does not help us here: the properties of mathematical boundaries – for example, that they themselves have no boundary – are not applicable to the universe, since space-time is not continuous. We need other, physical arguments.

The boundary of the universe is supposed to represent the boundary between *something* and *nothing*. There are three possible interpretations of 'nothing':

— 'Nothing' could mean 'no matter'. But we have just seen that this distinction cannot be made at Planck scales. So either the boundary will not exist at all or it will encompass the horizon *as well as* the whole universe.
— 'Nothing' could mean 'no space-time'. We then have to look for those domains where space and time cease to exist. These occur at Planck scales and at the horizon. Again, either the boundary will not exist or it will encompass the whole universe.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— 'Nothing' could mean 'neither space-time nor matter'. The only possibility is a boundary that encloses domains *beyond* the Planck scales and *beyond* the horizon; but again, such a boundary would also encompass all of nature.

This is puzzling. When combining quantum theory and relativity, we do not seem to be able to find a conceptual definition of the horizon that distinguishes it from what it includes. A distinction *is* possible in general relativity alone, and in quantum theory alone; but as soon as we combine the two, the boundary becomes indistinguishable from its content. *The interior of the universe cannot be distinguished from its horizon*. There is *no* boundary of the universe.

Challenge 69 s

The difficulty in distinguishing the horizon from its contents suggests that nature may be *symmetric* under transformations that exchange interiors and boundaries. This idea is called *holography*, because it vaguely recalls the working of credit-card holograms. It is a busy research field in high-energy physics.

Ref. 103

We note that if the interior and the boundary of the universe cannot be distinguished, the constituents of nature can neither be points nor tiny objects of any kind. The constituents of nature must be *extended*. But before we explore this topic, we continue with our search for differences between the universe and nothing. The search leads us to our next question.

Is the universe a set?

> "Domina omnium et regina ratio."*
>
> Cicero

We are used to thinking of the universe the sum of all matter and all space-time. In doing so, we imply that the universe is a set of mutually distinct components. This idea has been assumed in three situations: in claiming that matter consists of particles; that space-time consists of events (or points); and that different states consist of different initial conditions. However, our discussion shows that the universe is *not* a set of such distinguishable elements. We have encountered several proofs: at the horizon, at the big bang and at Planck scales, it becomes impossible to distinguish between events, between particles, between observables, and between space-time and matter. In those domains, distinctions of any kind become impossible. We have found that distinguishing between two entities – for example, between a toothpick and a mountain – is only *approximately* possible. It is approximately possible because we live at energies well below the Planck energy. The approximation is so good that we do not notice the error when we distinguish cars from people and from toothpicks. Nevertheless, our discussion of the situation at Planck energy shows that a perfect distinction is impossible in principle. *It is impossible to split the universe into separate parts.*

Another way to reach this result is the following. Distinguishing between two entities requires different measurement results: for example, different positions, masses or sizes. Whatever quantity we choose, at Planck energy the distinction becomes impossible. Only at everyday energies is it approximately possible.

* 'The mistress and queen of all things is reason.' *Tusculanae Disputationes*, 2.21.47. Marcus Tullius Cicero (106–43 BCE), was an influential lawyer, orator and politician at the end of the Roman republic.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In short, since the universe contains no distinguishable parts, there are *no elements* in nature. Simply put: *the universe is not a set*. We envisaged this possibility earlier on; now it is confirmed. The concepts of 'element' and 'set' are already too specialized to describe the universe. *The universe must be described by a mathematical concept that does not contain any set.* The new concept must be more general than that of a set.

Vol. III, page 319

This is a powerful result: a precise description of the universe cannot use any concept that presupposes the existence of sets. But all the concepts we have used so far to describe nature, such as space-time, metric, phase space, Hilbert space and its generalizations, are based on elements and sets. They must all be abandoned at Planck energies, and in any precise description.

Elements and sets must be abandoned. Note that this radical conclusion is deduced from only two statements: the necessity of using quantum theory whenever the dimensions are of the order of the Compton wavelength, and of using general relativity whenever the dimensions are of the order of the Schwarzschild radius. Together, they mean that no precise description of nature can contain elements and sets. The difficulties in complying with this result explain why the unification of the two theories has not so far been successful. Not only does unification require that we stop using space, time and mass for the description of nature; it also requires that all distinctions, of any kind, should be only approximate. But all physicists have been educated on the basis of exactly the opposite creed!

Many past speculations about the final unified description of nature depend on sets. In particular, all studies of quantum fluctuations, mathematical categories, posets, involved mathematical spaces, computer programs, Turing machines, Gödel's incompleteness theorem, creation of any sort, space-time lattices, quantum lattices and Bohm's unbroken wholeness *presuppose sets.* In addition, all speculations by cosmologists about the origin of the universe presuppose sets. But since these speculations presuppose sets, they are wrong. You may also wish to check the religious explanations you know against this criterion. In fact, no approach used by theoretical physicists up to the year 2000 satisfied the requirement that elements and sets must be abandoned.

Ref. 104

Challenge 70 e

The task of abandoning sets is not easy. This is shown with a simple test: do you know of a single concept not based on elements or sets?

Challenge 71 s

In summary, the universe is not a set. In particular, *the universe is not a physical system.* Specifically, it has no state, no intrinsic properties, no wave function, no initial conditions, no density, no mass, no entropy and no cosmological constant. The universe is thus neither thermodynamically closed nor open; and it contains no information. All thermodynamic quantities, such as entropy, temperature and free energy, are defined using *ensembles.* Ensembles are limits of systems which are thermodynamically either open or closed. As the universe is neither open nor closed, no thermodynamic quantity can be defined for it.* All physical properties are defined only for parts of nature which are approximated or idealized as sets, and thus are physical systems.

* Some people knew this long before physicists. For example, the belief that the universe is or contains information was ridiculed most thoroughly in the popular science-fiction parody by Douglas Adams, *The Hitchhiker's Guide to the Galaxy*, 1979, and its sequels.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Curiosities and fun challenges about the universe

> Insofern sich die Sätze der Mathematik auf die Wirklichkeit beziehen, sind sie nicht sicher, und sofern sie sicher sind, beziehen sie sich nicht auf die Wirklichkeit.*
>
> Albert Einstein

> Die ganzen Zahlen hat der liebe Gott gemacht, alles andere ist Menschenwerk.**
>
> Leopold Kronecker

In mathematics, $2 + 2 = 4$. This statement is an idealization of statements such as 'two apples plus two apples makes four apples.' However, we now know that at Planck energy, the statement about apples is not a correct statement about nature. At Planck energy, objects cannot be counted or even defined, because separation of objects is not possible at that scale. We can count objects only because we live at energies much lower than the Planck energy.

The statement by Kronecker must thus be amended. Since all integers are low-energy approximations, and since we always use low-energy approximations when talking or thinking, we conclude: man also makes the integers.

* *

If vacuum cannot be distinguished from matter or radiation, and if the universe cannot be distinguished from nothing, then it is incorrect to claim that "the universe appeared from nothing." The naive idea of creation is a logical impossibility. "Creation" results from a lack of imagination.

* *

In 2002, Seth Lloyd estimated how much information the universe can contain, and how many calculations it has performed since the big bang. This estimate is based on two ideas: that the number of particles in the universe is a well-defined quantity, and that the universe is a computer, i.e., a physical system. We now know that neither assumption is correct. *The universe contains no information.* Conclusions such as this one show the power of the criteria that we have deduced for any precise or complete description of motion.

Ref. 105

* *

Astronomers regularly take pictures of the cosmic background radiation and its variations. Is it possible that these photographs will show that the spots in one direction of the sky are exactly the same as those in the diametrically opposite direction?

Challenge 72 s

* *

* 'In so far as mathematical statements describe reality, they are not certain, and as far as they are certain, they are not a description of reality.'

** 'God made the integers, all else is the work of man.' Leopold Kronecker (b. 1823 Liegnitz, d. 1891 Berlin) was a well-known mathematician. Among others, the Kronecker delta and the Kronecker product are named for him.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In 1714, the famous scientist and thinker Leibniz (b. 1646 Leipzig, d. 1716 Hannover) published his *Monadologie*. In it he explores what he calls a 'simple substance', which he defined to be a substance that has no parts. He called it a *monad* and describes some of its properties. However, mainly thanks to his incorrect deductions, the term has not been generally adopted. What is the physical concept most closely related to that of a monad?

Ref. 106

Challenge 73 s

* *

We usually speak of *the* universe, implying that there is only one of them. Yet there is a simple case to be made that 'universe' is an observer-dependent concept, since the idea of 'all' is observer-dependent. Does this mean that there are many universes, or a 'multiverse'?

Challenge 74 s

* *

Challenge 75 e Is the 'radius' of the universe observer-invariant?

* *

Challenge 76 e Is the cosmological constant Λ observer-invariant?

* *

If all particles were removed (assuming one knew where to put them), there wouldn't be much of a universe left. True?

Challenge 77 s

* *

Can you show that the distinction between matter and antimatter is not possible at the cosmic horizon? And the distinction between real and virtual particles?

Challenge 78 e

* *

At Planck energy, interactions cannot be defined. Therefore, 'existence' cannot be defined. In short, at Planck energy we cannot say whether particles exist. True?

Challenge 79 s

Hilbert's sixth problem settled

In the year 1900, David Hilbert* gave a famous lecture in which he listed 23 of the great challenges facing mathematics in the twentieth century. Most of these provided challenges to many mathematicians for decades afterwards. A few are still unsolved, among them the sixth, which challenged mathematicians and physicists to find an *axiomatic* treatment of physics. The problem has remained in the minds of many physicists since that time.

Vol. III, page 273

Ref. 107

When we combine quantum theory and general relativity, we must abandon the concept of point particle, of space point and of event. Mathematically speaking, when we combine quantum theory and general relativity, we find that nature does not contain sets, and that the universe is not a set. However, *all* mathematical systems – be they algebraic systems, order systems, topological systems or a mixture of these – are based on

* David Hilbert (b. 1862 Königsberg, d. 1943 Göttingen) was the greatest mathematician of his time. His textbooks are still in print.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

elements and sets. Mathematics does not have axiomatic systems without elements or sets. The reason for this is simple: every (mathematical) *concept* contains at least one element and one set. However, nature is different. And since nature does not contain sets, an axiomatic description of nature is *impossible*.

All concepts used in physics before the year 2000 depend on elements and sets. For humans, it is difficult even to *think* without first defining a set of possibilities. Yet nature does not contain sets. There is no axiomatic description of nature. And since an axiomatic formulation of physics is impossible, we conclude that the final, unified theory cannot be based on axioms. This is surprising at first, because separate axiomatic treatments of quantum theory and general relativity *are* possible. However, *axiomatic systems in physics are always approximate.* The need to abandon axioms is one of the reasons why reaching a unified description of nature is a challenge.

The impossibility of an axiomatic system for physics is also confirmed in another way. Physics starts with a *circular* definition: space-time and vacuum are defined with the help of objects and objects are defined with the help of space-time and vacuum. In fact, physics has *never* been axiomatic! Physicists have always had to live with circular definitions.

Vol. I, page 429

The situation is similar to a child's description of the sky as 'made of air and clouds'. Looking closely, we discover that clouds are made up of water droplets. We find that there is air inside clouds, and that there is also water vapour away from clouds. When clouds and air are viewed through a microscope, there is no clear boundary between the two. We cannot define either of the terms 'cloud' and 'air' without the other.

Like clouds and air, also objects and vacuum are indistinguishable. Virtual particles are found in vacuum, and vacuum is found inside objects. At Planck scales there is no clear boundary between the two; we cannot define either of the terms 'particle' and 'vacuum' without the other. But despite the lack of a clean definition, and despite the logical problems that can ensue, in both cases the description works well at large, everyday scales.

In summary, an axiomatic description of nature is impossible. In particular, the final, unified theory must contain circular definitions. We will find out how to realize the requirement later on.

Page 213

The perfect physics book

A *perfect* physics book describes *all* of nature with *full precision*. In particular, a perfect physics book describes itself, its own production, its own author, its own readers and its own contents. Can such a book exist?

Since the universe is not a set, a perfect physics book *can* exist, as it does not contradict any property of the universe. Since the universe is not a set and since it contains no information, the paradox of the perfect physics book disappears. Indeed, any existing physics book attempts to be perfect. But now a further question arises.

Vol. I, page 428

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 3 Statements about the universe when explored at highest precision, i.e., at Planck scales

The universe has no age.	The universe has no beginning.
The universe has no size.	The universe has no volume.
The universe has no shape.	The universe's particle number is undefined.
The universe has no mass.	The universe has no energy.
The universe has no density.	The universe contains no matter.
The universe has no cosmological constant.	The universe has no initial conditions.
The universe has no state.	The universe has no wave function.
The universe is not a physical system.	The universe contains no information.
The universe is not isolated.	The universe is not open.
The universe has no boundaries.	The universe does not interact.
The universe cannot be measured.	The universe cannot be said to exist.
The universe cannot be distinguished from nothing.	The universe cannot be distinguished from a single event.
The universe contains no moments.	The universe is not composite.
The universe is not a set.	The universe is not a concept.
The universe cannot be described.	There is no plural for 'universe'.
The universe cannot be distinguished from vacuum.	The universe was not created.

Does the universe make sense?

> "Drum hab ich mich der Magie ergeben,
> [...]
> Daß ich erkenne, was die Welt
> Im Innersten zusammenhält.*"
>
> Goethe, *Faust*.

Is the universe really the sum of matter–energy and space-time? Or of particles and vacuum? We have heard these statements so often that we may forget to check them. We do not need magic, as Faust thought: we only need to list what we have found so far, especially in this section, in the section on Planck scales, and in the chapter on brain and language. Table 3 shows the result.

Vol. III, page 244

Not only are we unable to state that the universe is made of space-time and matter; we are unable to say anything about the universe at all! It is not even possible to say that it exists, since it is impossible to interact with it. The term 'universe' does not allow us to make a single sensible statement. (Can you find one?) We are only able to list properties it does *not* have. We are unable to find any property that the universe *does* have. Thus, the universe has no properties! We cannot even say whether the universe is something or nothing. *The universe isn't anything in particular.* The term universe has *no* content.

Challenge 80 r

By the way, there is another well-known, non-physical concept about which nothing can be said. Many scholars have explored it in detail. What is it?

Challenge 81 s

* 'Thus I have devoted myself to magic, [...] that I understand how the innermost world is held together.' Goethe was a German poet.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In short, the term 'universe' is not at all useful for the description of motion. We
Vol. III, page 275 can obtain a confirmation of this strange conclusion from an earlier chapter. There we found that any concept needs defined content, defined limits and a defined domain of application. In this section, we have found that the term 'universe' has none of these; there is thus no such concept. If somebody asks why the universe exists, the answer is: not only does the use of the word 'why' wrongly suggest that something may exist outside the universe, providing a reason for it and thus contradicting the definition of the term 'universe' itself; but more importantly, the universe does not exist, because there is no such concept as a 'universe'.

In summary, any sentence containing the word 'universe' is meaningless. The word only *seems* to express something, but it doesn't.* This conclusion may be interesting, even strangely beautiful, but does it help us to understand motion more precisely? Yes, it does.

Abandoning sets and discreteness eliminates contradictions

Our discussion of the term 'universe' shows that the term cannot include any element or set. And the same applies to the term 'nature'. Nature cannot be made of atoms. Nature cannot be made of space-time points. Nature cannot be made of separate, distinct and discrete entities.

The difficulties in giving a sharp definition of 'universe' also show that the fashionable term 'multiverse' makes no sense. There is no way to define such a term, since there is no empirical way and also no logical way to distinguish 'one' universe from 'another': the universe has no boundary.

By taking into account the limits on length, time, mass and all the other quantities we have encountered, we have reached a number of almost painful conclusions about nature. However, we have also received something in exchange: all the contradictions between general relativity and quantum theory that we mentioned at the beginning of this chapter
Challenge 82 e are now resolved. *We changed the contradictions to circular definitions.* Although we have had to leave many cherished habits behind us, in exchange we have the promise of a description of nature without contradictions. But we get even more.

Extremal scales and open questions in physics

Page 18 At the beginning of this volume, we listed all the fundamental properties of nature that are unexplained either by general relativity or by quantum theory. We called it the millennium list. The results of this chapter provide us with surprising statements on many of the items. In fact, many of the statements are not new at all, but are surprisingly familiar. Let us compare systematically the statements from this chapter, on the universe, with those of the previous chapter, on Planck scales. The comparison is given in Table 4.

* Of course, the term 'universe' still makes sense if it is defined more restrictively: for example, as everything interacting with a particular human or animal observer in everyday life. But such a definition, equating 'universe' and 'environment', is not useful for our quest, as it lacks the precision required for a description of motion.

By the way, since the term 'universe' has no content, the term 'multiverse' has even less. The latter term has been created only to trick the media and various funding agencies.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 4 Properties of nature at maximal, everyday and minimal scales

Physical property of nature	At horizon scale	At everyday scale	At Planck scales
requires quantum theory *and* relativity	true	false	true
intervals can be measured precisely	false	true	false
length and time intervals appear	limited	unlimited	limited
space-time is not continuous	true	false	true
points and events cannot be distinguished	true	false	true
space-time is not a manifold	true	false	true
space is 3-dimensional	false	true	false
space and time are indistinguishable	true	false	true
initial conditions make sense	false	true	false
space-time fluctuates	true	false	true
Lorentz and Poincaré symmetry	do not apply	apply	do not apply
CPT symmetry	does not apply	applies	does not apply
renormalization	does not apply	applies	does not apply
permutation symmetry	does not apply	applies	does not apply
interactions and gauge symmetries	do not exist	exist	do not exist
number of particles	undefined	defined	undefined
algebras of observables	undefined	defined	undefined
matter indistinguishable from vacuum	true	false	true
boundaries exist	false	true	false
nature is a set	false	true	false

First, Table 4 shows that *each* unexplained property listed there is unexplained at *both* limits of nature, the small and the large limit. Worse, many of these unexplained general properties do not even *make sense* at the two limits of nature!

Secondly, and more importantly, nature behaves in the *same way* at the cosmological horizon scale and at the Planck scale. In fact, we have not found any difference between the two cases. (Can you discover one?) We are thus led to the hypothesis that nature does not distinguish between the large and the small. Nature seems to be characterized by *extremal identity*.

Challenge 83 r

Is extremal identity a principle of nature?

The idea of extremal identity incorporates some rather general points:

— All open questions about nature appear at both size extremes.
— Any description of nature requires both general relativity and quantum theory.
— Nature, or the universe, is not a set.
— Initial conditions and evolution equations make no sense at nature's limits.
— There is a relation between local and global issues in nature.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— The concept of 'universe' has no content.

Extremal identity thus looks like a useful hypothesis in the search for a unified description of nature. To be a bit more provocative, it seems that extremal identity may be the *only* hypothesis incorporating the idea that the universe is not a set. Therefore, extremal identity seems to be essential in the quest for unification.

Extremal identity is beautiful in its simplicity, in its unexpectedness and in the richness of its consequences. You might enjoy exploring it by yourself. In fact, the exploration of extremal identity is currently the subject of much activity in theoretical physics, although often under different names.

Challenge 84 e

Ref. 108

The simplest approach to extremal identity – in fact, one that is too simple to be correct – is *inversion*. Indeed, extremal identity seems to imply a connection such as

$$r \leftrightarrow \frac{l_{\mathrm{Pl}}^2}{r} \quad \text{or} \quad x_\mu \leftrightarrow \frac{l_{\mathrm{Pl}}^2 \, x_\mu}{x_\mu \, x^\mu} \tag{113}$$

relating distances r or coordinates x_μ with their inverse values using the Planck length l_{Pl}. Can this mapping be a symmetry of nature? At every point of space? For example, if the horizon distance is inserted, the relation (113) implies that lengths smaller than $l_{\mathrm{Pl}}/10^{61} \approx 10^{-96}$ m never appear in physics. Is this the case? What would inversion imply for the big bang?

Challenge 85 s

More involved approaches to extremal identity come under the name of *space-time duality* and *holography*. They are subject of intense research. Numerous fascinating questions are contained in extremal identity; there is a lot of fun ahead of us.

Ref. 103

Above all, we need to find the correct version of the inversion relation (113). Inversion is neither sufficient nor correct. It is not sufficient because it does not explain *any* of the millennium issues left open by general relativity and quantum theory. It only *relates* some of them, but it does not *solve* any of them. (You may wish to check this for yourself.) In other words, we need to find the precise description of quantum geometry and of elementary particles.

Challenge 86 e

However, inversion is also simply wrong. Inversion is not the correct description of extremal identity because it does not realize a central result discovered above: it does not connect *states* and *intrinsic properties*, but keeps them distinct. In particular, inversion does not take *interactions* into account. And most open issues at this point of our mountain ascent concern the properties and the appearance of interactions.

Page 83

Summary on the universe

The exploration of the universe allows us to formulate several additional requirements for the final theory that we are looking for:

— Whenever we combine general relativity and quantum theory, the universe teaches us that *it is not a set of parts*. For this reason, any sentence or expression containing the term 'universe' is meaningless whenever *full precision* is required.
— We learned that a description of nature without sets *solves the contradictions* between general relativity and quantum theory.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— We found, again, that despite the contradictions between quantum theory and general relativity, the Planck limits c, $\hbar$ and $c^4/4G$ *remain valid*.
— We then found an intriguing relation between Planck scales and cosmological scales: they seem to pose the same challenges to their description. There is a close relationship between large and small scales in nature.

We can now answer the question in the chapter title: there seems to be little difference – if any at all – between the universe and nothing. The confusion and tension are increasing. But in fact we are getting close to our goal, and it is worth continuing.

A physical aphorism

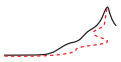
Here is a humorous 'proof' that we really are near the top of Motion Mountain. Salecker and Wigner, and then Zimmerman, formulated the fundamental limit for the measurement precision τ attainable by a clock of mass M. It is given by $\tau = \sqrt{\hbar T/c^2 M}$, where T is the time to be measured. We can then ask what time T can be measured with a precision of a Planck time t_{Pl}, given a clock of the mass of the whole universe. We get a maximum time of

Ref. 55, Ref. 56

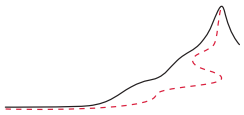
$$T = \frac{t_{\text{Pl}}^2 c^2}{\hbar} M \,. \tag{114}$$

Inserting numbers, we find rather precisely that the time T is the present age of the universe. With the right dose of humour we can see this result as a sign that time is now ripe, after so much waiting, for us to understand the universe down to the Planck scales. We are thus getting nearer to the top of Motion Mountain. Be prepared for a lot of fun.

Challenge 87 s



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 6

THE SHAPE OF POINTS – EXTENSION IN NATURE

> Nil tam difficile est, quin quaerendo investigari possiet.*
>
> Terence

The usual expressions for the reduced Compton wavelength $\lambda\!\!\!^{-} = \hbar/mc$ and for he Schwarzschild radius $r_s = 2Gm/c^2$, taken together, imply the conclusion hat at Planck energies, what we call 'space points' and 'point particles' must actually be described by *extended* constituents that are infinite and fluctuating in size. We will show this result with the following arguments:

1. Any experiment trying to measure the size or the shape of an elementary particle with high precision inevitably leads to the result that at least one dimension of the particle is of macroscopic size.
2. There is no evidence that empty space is continuous, but plenty of evidence that it is not. In particular, in order to build up an entity, such as the vacuum, that is extended in three dimensions, the constituents must be extended.
3. The existence of minimum measurable distances and time intervals implies the existence of space-time duality: a symmetry between very large and very small distances. Space-time duality in turn implies that the fundamental constituents that make up vacuum and matter are extended.
4. The constituents of the universe, and thus of vacuum, matter and radiation, cannot form a (mathematical) set. But any precise description of nature without sets must use extended constituents.
5. The Bekenstein–Hawking expression for the entropy of black holes – in particular its surface dependence – confirms that both vacuum and particles are composed of extended constituents.
6. The attempt to extend statistical properties to Planck scales shows that both particles and space points behave as extended constituents at high energies, namely as braids or tangles.
7. The belt trick provides a model for fermions that matches observations and again suggests extended constituents in matter.

* 'Nothing is so difficult that it could not be investigated.' Terence is Publius Terentius Afer (b. *c.* 190 Carthago, d. 159 BCE Greece), important Roman poet. He writes this in his play *Heauton Timorumenos*, verse 675.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

We finish with some experimental and theoretical checks of extension and an overview of present research efforts.

> Also, die Aufgabe ist nicht zu sehen, was noch nie jemand gesehen hat, sondern über dasjenige was jeder schon gesehen hat zu denken was noch nie jemand gedacht hat.*
>
> Erwin Schrödinger

THE SIZE AND SHAPE OF ELEMENTARY PARTICLES

Size is the length of vacuum taken by an object. This definition comes naturally in everyday life, quantum theory and relativity. To measure the size of an object as small as an elementary particle, we need high energy. The higher the energy, the higher the precision with which we can measure the size.

Page 86

However, near the Planck energy, vacuum and matter cannot be distinguished: it is impossible to define the boundary between the two, and thus it is impossible to define the size of an object. As a consequence, every object, and in particular every elementary particle, becomes as extended as the vacuum! There is no measurement precision at all at Planck scales. Can we save the situation? Let us take a step back. Do measurements at least allow us to say whether particles can be contained inside small spheres?

Do boxes exist?

The first and simplest way to determine the size of a compact particle such as a sphere, or to find at least an upper limit, is to measure the size of a *box* it fits in. To be sure that the particle is inside, we must first be sure that the box is *tight*: that is, whether anything (such as matter or radiation) can leave the box.

But there is no way to ensure that a box has no holes! We know from quantum physics that any wall is a *finite* potential hill, and that tunnelling is always possible. In short, there is no way to make a completely tight box.

Let us cross-check this result. In everyday life, we call particles 'small' when they can be enclosed. Enclosure is possible in daily life because walls are impenetrable. But walls are only impenetrable for matter particles up to about 10 MeV and for photons up to about 10 keV. In fact, boxes do not even exist at medium energies. So we certainly cannot extend the idea of 'box' to Planck energy.

Since we cannot conclude that particles are of compact size by using boxes, we need to try other methods.

Can the Greeks help? – The limitations of knives

The Greeks deduced the existence of atoms by noting that matter cannot be divided indefinitely. There must be *uncuttable* particles, which they called *atoms*. Twenty-five cen-

* 'Our task is not to see what nobody has ever seen, but to think what nobody has ever thought about that which everybody has seen already.' Erwin Schrödinger (b. 1887 Vienna, d. 1961 Vienna) discovered the equation that brought him international fame and the Nobel Prize in Physics.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

turies later, experiments in the field of quantum physics confirmed the conclusion, but modified it: nowadays, the elementary particles are the 'atoms' of matter and radiation.

Despite the huge success of the concept of elementary particle, at Planck energy, we have a different situation. The use of a knife, like any other cutting process, is the insertion of a wall. Walls and knives are potential hills. All potential hills are of finite height, and allow tunnelling. Therefore a wall is never perfect, and thus neither is a knife. In short, any attempt to divide matter fails to work when we approach Planck scales. At Planck energy, any subdivision is impossible.

The limitations of knives and walls imply that at Planck energy, an attempted cut does not necessarily lead to two separate parts. At Planck energy, we can never state that the two parts have been really, completely separated: the possibility of a thin connection between the two parts to the right and left of the blade can never be excluded. In short, at Planck scales we cannot prove compactness by cutting objects.

Are cross sections finite?

To sum up: despite all attempts, we cannot show that elementary particles are point-like. Are they, at least, of finite size?

To determine the size of a particle, we can try to determine its departure from point-likeness. Detecting this departure requires scattering. For example, we can suspend the particle in a trap and then shoot a probe at it. What happens in a scattering experiment at highest energies? This question has been studied by Leonard Susskind and his colleagues. When shooting at the particle with a high-energy probe, the scattering process is characterized by an interaction time. Extremely short interaction times imply sensitivity to size and shape fluctuations, due to the quantum of action. An extremely short interaction time also provides a cut-off for high-energy shape and size fluctuations, and thus determines the measured size. As a result, the size measured for any microscopic, but extended, object *increases* when the probe energy is increased towards the Planck value.

Ref. 109

In summary, even though at experimentally achievable energies the size of an elementary particle is always smaller than the measurement limit, when we approach the Planck energy, the particle size increases beyond all bounds. So at high energies we cannot give an upper limit to the size of a particle – except the universe itself. In other words, since particles are not point-like at everyday energies, at Planck energy they are enormous:

▷ Quantum particles are extended.

That is quite a statement. Are particles really not of finite, bounded size? Right at the start of our mountain ascent, we distinguished objects from their environment. Objects are by definition localized, bounded and compact. All objects have a *boundary*, i.e., a surface which does not itself have a boundary. Objects are also bounded in abstract ways: also the set of symmetries of an object, such as its geometric symmetry group or its gauge group, is bounded. In contrast, the environment is not localized, but extended and unbounded. But all these basic assumptions fail us at Planck scales. At Planck energy, it is impossible to determine whether something is bounded or compact. Compactness and locality are only approximate properties; they are not applicable at high energies.

Vol. I, page 24

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 5 Effects of various camera shutter times on photographs

Duration	Blur	Observation possibilities and effects
1 h	high	Ability to see faint quasars at night if motion is compensated
1 s	high	Everyday motion completely blurred
20 ms	lower	Interruption by eyelids; small changes impossible to see
10 ms	lower	Effective eye/brain shutter time; tennis ball impossible to see while hitting it
0.25 ms	lower	Shortest commercial photographic camera shutter time; ability to photograph fast cars
1 µs	very low	Ability to photograph flying bullets; strong flashlight required
c. 10 ps	lowest	Study of molecular processes; ability to photograph flying light pulses; laser light required to get sufficient illumination
10 fs	higher	Light photography impossible because of wave effects
100 zs	high	X-ray photography impossible; only γ-ray imaging left over
shorter times	very high	Photographs get darker as illumination decreases; gravitational effects significant
10^{-43} s	highest	Imaging impossible

In particular, the idea of a point particle is an approximate concept, valid only at low energies.

We conclude that particles at Planck scales are as extended as the vacuum. Let us perform another check.

Can we take a photograph of a point?

> "Καιρὸν γνῶθι.*"
>
> Pittacus

Humans – or any other types of observers – can only observe the world with finite resolution in time and in space. In this respect, humans resemble a film camera. Every camera has a resolution limit: it can only distinguish two events if they are a certain minimum distance apart and separated by a certain minimum time. What is the best resolution possible? The value was (almost) discovered in 1899: the Planck time and the Planck length. No human, no film camera and no apparatus can measure space or time intervals smaller than the Planck values. But what would happen if we took photographs with shutter times that *approach* the Planck time?

Ref. 110

Ref. 47, Ref. 23

Imagine that you have the world's best shutter and that you are taking photographs at shorter and shorter times. Table 5 gives a rough overview of the possibilities. When shutter times are shortened, photographs get darker and sharper. When the shutter time reaches the oscillation time of light, strange things happen: light has no chance to pass undisturbed; signal and noise become indistinguishable; and the moving shutter will

* 'Recognize the right moment.' Also rendered as: 'Recognize thy opportunity.' Pittacus (Πιττακος) of Mytilene (*c.* 650–570 BCE), was a Lesbian tyrant and lawmaker; he was also one of the 'Seven Sages' of ancient Greece.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

produce colour shifts. In contrast to our everyday experience, the photograph would get more *blurred* and *incorrect* at extremely short shutter times. Photography is impossible not only at long but also at short shutter times.

The difficulty of taking photographs is independent of the wavelength used. The limits move, but do not disappear. With a shutter time of τ, photons of energy lower than $\hbar/\tau$ cannot pass the shutter undisturbed.

In short, the blur decreases when shutter times usual in everyday life are shortened, but *increases* when shutter times are shortened further towards Planck times. As a result, there is no way to detect or confirm the existence of point objects by taking pictures. Points in space, as well as instants of time, are *imagined* concepts: they do not belong in a precise description of nature.

At Planck shutter times, only signals with Planck energy can pass through the shutter. Since at these energies matter cannot be distinguished from radiation or from empty space, all objects, light and vacuum look the same. It is impossible to say what nature looks like at very short times.

But the situation is worse than this: a Planck shutter cannot exist at all, as it would need to be as small as a Planck length. A camera using it could not be built, as lenses do not work at this energy. Not even a camera obscura – without any lens – would work, as diffraction effects would make image production impossible. In other words, the idea that at short shutter times a photograph of nature shows a frozen image of everyday life, like a stopped film, is completely wrong. In fact, a shutter does not exist even at medium energy: shutters, like walls, stop existing at around 10 MeV. At a single instant of time, nature is not frozen at all. Zeno criticized this idea in his discussions of motion, though not as clearly as we can do now. At short times, nature is blurred. In particular, point particles do not exist.

In summary, whatever the intrinsic shape of what we call a 'point' might be, we know that, being always blurred, it is first of all a cloud. Whatever method is used to photograph an elementary particle, the picture is always extended. Therefore we need to study its shape in more detail.

What is the shape of an electron?

Since particles are not point-like, they have a shape. How can we determine it? We determine the shape of an everyday object by *touching* it from all sides. This works with plants, people or machines. It even works with molecules, such as water molecules. We can put them (almost) at rest, for example in ice, and then scatter small particles off them. Scattering is just a higher-energy version of touching. However, scattering cannot determine shapes of objects smaller than the wavelength of the probes used. To determine the shape of an object as small as an electron, we need the highest energies available. But we already know what happens when approaching Planck scales: the shape of a particle becomes the shape of all the space surrounding it. In short, the shape of an electron cannot be determined in this way.

Another way to determine the shape is to build a tight box around the system under investigation and fill it with molten wax. We then let the wax cool and observe the hollow part. However, near Planck energy, boxes do not exist. We are unable to determine the shape in this way.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

A third way to measure the shape of an object is to cut it into pieces and then study the pieces. As is well known, the term 'atom' just means 'uncuttable' or 'indivisible'. However, neither atoms nor indivisible particles can exist. Indeed, *cutting* is just a low-energy version of a scattering process. And the process does not work at high energies. Therefore, there is no way to prove that an object is indivisible at Planck scales. Our everyday intuition leads us completely astray at Planck energy.

We could try to distinguish transverse and longitudinal shape, with respect to the direction of motion. However, for transverse shape we get the same issues as for scattering; transverse shape diverges for high energy. And to determine longitudinal shape, we need at least two infinitely high potential walls. We already know that this is impossible.

A further, indirect way of measuring shapes is to measure the moment of inertia. A finite moment of inertia means a compact, finite shape. But when the measurement energy is increased towards Planck scales, rotation, linear motion and exchange become mixed up. We do not get meaningful results. Ref. 47

Yet another way to determine shapes is to measure the *entropy* of a collection of particles we want to study. This allows us to determine the dimensionality and the number of internal degrees of freedom. But at high energies, a collection of electrons would become a black hole. We will study this issue separately below, but again we find no new information.

Are these arguments watertight? We assumed three dimensions at all scales, and that the shape of the particle itself is fixed. Maybe these assumptions are not valid at Planck scales? Let us check the alternatives. We have already shown that because of the fundamental measurement limits, the dimensionality of space-time cannot be determined at Planck scales. Even if we could build perfect three-dimensional boxes, holes could remain in other dimensions. It does not take long to see that all the arguments against compactness work even if space-time has additional dimensions. Ref. 47 Challenge 88 e

Is the shape of an electron fixed?

Only an object composed of localized constituents, such as a house or a molecule, can have a fixed shape. The smaller the system, the more quantum fluctuations play a role. No small entity of finite size – in particular, no elementary particle – can have a fixed shape. In every thought experiment involving a finite shape, the shape itself fluctuates. But we can say more.

The distinction between particles and environment rests on the idea that particles have *intrinsic* properties. In fact, all intrinsic properties, such as spin, mass, charge, and parity, are localized. But we have seen that no intrinsic property is measurable or definable at Planck scales. Thus it is impossible to distinguish particles from the environment. In addition, at Planck energy particles have all the properties that the environment has. In particular, particles are extended. Page 83

In short, we cannot prove by experiments that at Planck energy elementary particles are finite in size in all directions. In fact, all experiments we can think of are compatible with extended particles, with 'infinite' size. More precisely, a particle always reaches the borders of the region of space-time under exploration. In simple words, we can also say that particles have *tails*.

Not only are particles extended, but their shape cannot be determined by the methods

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

just explored. The only remaining possibility is that suggested by quantum theory: *the shape of a particle fluctuates*.

We reach the same conclusions for radiation particles. The box argument shows that radiation particles are also extended and fluctuating.

Incidentally, we have also settled an important question about *elementary* particles. We have already seen that any particle that is smaller than its own Compton wavelength must be elementary. If it were composite, there would be a lighter component inside it; this lighter particle would have a larger Compton wavelength than the composite particle. This is impossible, since the size of a composite particle must be larger than the Compton wavelength of its components.*

Vol. IV, page 106

However, an elementary particle *can* have constituents, provided that they are not compact. The difficulties of compact constituents were described by Andrei Sakharov in the 1960s. If the constituents are extended, the previous argument does not apply, as extended constituents have no localized mass. As a result, if a flying arrow – Zeno's famous example – is made of extended constituents, it cannot be said to be at a given position at a given time. Shortening the observation time towards the Planck time makes an arrow disappear in the cloud that makes up space-time.**

Ref. 27

Summary of the first argument for extension

In summary, point particles do not exist at Planck scales. At Planck scales, all thought experiments suggest that matter and radiation are made of *extended and fluctuating constituents of infinite size*.

We note directly that for extended constituents the requirement of a non-local description is satisfied; in addition, for fluctuating constituents the requirement of a statistical description of the vacuum is satisfied. The argument forbidding composition of elementary particles is circumvented, as extended constituents have no mass. Thus the concept of Compton wavelength cannot be defined or applied to extended constituents, and elementary particles can have constituents if these constituents are extended. But if the constituents are infinitely extended, how can compact, point-like particles be formed from them? We will look at a few options shortly.

Ref. 47

Challenge 89 e

THE SHAPE OF POINTS IN VACUUM

> "Thus, since there is an impossibility that [finite] quantities are built from contacts and points, it is necessary that there be indivisible material elements and [finite] quantities."
>
> Aristotle,*** *Of Generation and Corruption*.

Ref. 112

* Examples are the neutron, positronium, or the atoms. Note that the argument does not change when the elementary particle itself is unstable, like the muon. The possibility that all components are heavier than the composite, which would avoid this argument, does not seem to lead to satisfying physical properties: for example, it leads to intrinsically unstable composites.

Ref. 111

** Thus at Planck scales there is no quantum Zeno effect.

*** Aristotle (b. 384/3 Stageira, d. 322 BCE Chalkis), Greek philosopher and scientist.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

We are used to the idea that empty space is made of spatial points. However, at Planck scales, no measurement can give zero length, zero mass, zero area or zero volume. There is no way to state that something in nature is a point without contradicting experimental results.

Furthermore, the idea of a point is an extrapolation of what is found in small empty boxes getting smaller and smaller. But we have just seen that at high energies small boxes cannot be said to be empty. In fact, boxes do not exist at all, as they can never have impenetrable walls at high energies.

Also, the idea of a point as a limiting subdivision of empty space is untenable. At small distances, space cannot be subdivided, as division requires some sort of dividing wall, which is impossible.

Even the idea of repeatedly putting a point between two others cannot be applied. At high energy, it is impossible to say whether a point is exactly on the line connecting the outer two points; and near Planck energy, there is no way to find a point between them at all. In fact, the term 'in between' makes no sense at Planck scales.

We thus find that space points do not exist, just as point particles do not exist. But there are other reasons why space cannot be made of points. In order to form space. points need to be kept *apart* somehow. Indeed, mathematicians have a strong argument for why physical space cannot be made of mathematical points: the properties of mathRef. 47 ematical spaces described by the Banach–Tarski paradox are quite different from those of the physical vacuum. The Banach–Tarski paradox states that a sphere made of mathematical points can be cut into five pieces which can be reassembled into two spheres each of the same volume as the original sphere. Mathematically, there are sets of points for which the concept of volume makes no sense. Physically speaking, we conclude that the concept of volume does not exist for continuous space; it is only definable if an *intrinsic length* exists. And in nature, an intrinsic length exists for matter and for vacuum: the Planck length. And any concept with an intrinsic length must be described by one or several extended constituents.* In summary, in order to build up space, we need *extended* constituents.

Also the number of space dimensions is problematic. Mathematically, it is impossible to define the dimension of a set of points on the basis of the set structure alone. Any compact one-dimensional set has as many points as any compact three-dimensional set – indeed, as any compact set of any dimensionality greater than zero. To build up the *physical* three-dimensional vacuum, we need constituents that *organize* their neighbourhood. The fundamental constituents must possess some sort of ability to form bonds, which will construct or fill precisely three dimensions. Bonds require extended constituents. A collection of tangled constituents extending to the maximum scale of the region under consideration would work perfectly. Of course, the precise shape of the fundamental constituents is not yet known. In any case, we again find that any constituents of physical three-dimensional space must be *extended*.

In summary, we need extension to define dimensionality and to define volume. This result is not surprising. We deduced above that the constituents of particles are extended.

* Imagining the vacuum as a collection of compact constituents, such as spheres, with Planck size in all Ref. 113 directions would avoid the Banach–Tarski paradox, but would not allow us to deduce the number of diChallenge 90 s mensions of space and time. It would also contradict all the other results of this section. Therefore we do not explore it further.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Since vacuum is not distinguishable from matter, we would expect the constituents of vacuum to be extended as well. Stated simply, if elementary particles are not point-like, then points in the vacuum cannot be either.

Measuring the void

To check whether the constituents of the vacuum are extended, let us perform a few additional thought experiments. First, let us measure the size of a point in space. The clearest definition of size is in terms of the cross section. How can we determine the cross section of a point? We can determine the cross section of a piece of vacuum and then determine the number of points inside it. However, at Planck energy, we get a simple result: the cross section of a volume of empty space is independent of depth. At Planck energy, vacuum has a surface, but no depth. In other words, at Planck energy we can only state that a Planck layer covers the surface of a region. We cannot say anything about its interior. One way to picture this result is to say that what we call 'space points' are in fact long tubes.

Another way to determine the size of a point is to count the points found in a given volume of space-time. One approach is to count the possible positions of a point particle in a volume. However, at Planck energy point particles are extended and indistinguishable from vacuum. At Planck energy, the number of points is given by the surface area of the volume divided by the Planck area. Again, the surface dependence suggests that particles and the constituents of space are long tubes.

What is the maximum number of particles that fit inside a piece of vacuum?

Another approach to counting the number of points in a volume is to fill a piece of vacuum with point particles.

The maximum mass that fits into a piece of vacuum is a black hole. But in this case too, the maximum mass depends only on the *surface* of the given region of vacuum. The maximum mass increases less rapidly than the volume. In other words, the number of physical points inside a region of space is only proportional to the surface area of the region. We are forced to conclude that vacuum must be made of extended constituents crossing the whole region, independently of its shape.

Summary of the second argument for extension

In summary, Planck scales imply that *space is made of extended constituents of infinite size*. Space is not made of points, but of a web.

Vol. I, page 333
Ref. 114

More than two thousand years ago, the Greeks argued that matter must be made of particles because salt can be dissolved in water and because fish can swim through water. Now that we know more about Planck scales, we have to reconsider this argument. Like fish swimming through water, particles can move through vacuum; but since vacuum has no bounds and cannot be distinguished from matter, vacuum cannot be made of localised particles. However, another possibility allows for motion of particles through a vacuum: both vacuum and particles might be made of a web of extended constituents. Let us study this possibility in more detail.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

THE LARGE, THE SMALL AND THEIR CONNECTION

> I could be bounded in a nutshell and count myself a king of infinite space, were it not that I have bad dreams.
>
> William Shakespeare,* *Hamlet*.

If two observables cannot be distinguished, there is a symmetry transformation connecting them. For example, by a change of observation frame, an electric field may (partially) change into a magnetic one. A symmetry transformation means that we can change the viewpoint (i.e., the frame of observation) in such a way that the same observation is described by one quantity from one viewpoint and by the corresponding quantity from the other viewpoint.

When measuring a length at Planck scales it is impossible to say whether we are measuring the length of a piece of vacuum, the Compton wavelength of a body, or the Schwarzschild diameter of a body. For example, the maximum size for an elementary object is its Compton wavelength. The minimum size for an elementary object is its Schwarzschild radius. The actual size of an elementary object is somewhere in between. If we want to measure the size precisely, we have to go to Planck energy; but then all these quantities are the same. In other words, at Planck scales, there is a symmetry transformation between Compton wavelength and Schwarzschild radius. In short, *at Planck scales there is a symmetry between mass and inverse mass.*

As a further consequence, at Planck scales there is a symmetry between size and inverse size. Matter–vacuum indistinguishability means that there is a symmetry between length and inverse length at Planck energy. This symmetry is called *space-time duality* or *T-duality* in the research literature of superstrings.** Space-time duality is a symmetry between situations at scale $n\,l_{\mathrm{Pl}}$ and at scale $f l_{\mathrm{Pl}}/n$, or, in other words, between R and $(f l_{\mathrm{Pl}})^2/R$, where the number f is usually conjectured to have a value somewhere between 1 and 1000.

Ref. 115

Duality is a genuine non-perturbative effect. It does not exist at low energy, since duality automatically also relates energies E and $E_{\mathrm{Pl}}^2/E = \hbar c^3/GE$, i.e., it relates energies below and above Planck scale. Duality is not evident in everyday life. It is a quantum symmetry, as it includes Planck's constant in its definition. It is also a general-relativistic effect, as it includes the gravitational constant and the speed of light. Let us study duality in more detail.

Is small large?

> [Zeno of Elea maintained:] If the existing are many, it is necessary that they are at the same time small and large, so small to have no size, and so large to be without limits.
>
> Simplicius***

Ref. 116

* William Shakespeare (1564 Stratford upon Avon–1616 Stratford upon Avon) wrote theatre plays that are treasures of world literature.

** There is also an *S-duality*, which connects large and small coupling constants, and a *U-duality*, which is the combination of S- and T-duality.

*** Simplicius of Cilicia (*c.* 499 – 560), neoplatonist philosopher.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

To explore the consequences of duality, we can compare it to rotational symmetry in everyday life. Every object in daily life is symmetrical under a full rotation of 2π. For the rotation of an observer, angles make sense only as long as they are smaller than 2π. If a rotating observer were to insist on distinguishing angles of $0, 2\pi, 4\pi$ etc., he would get a new copy of the universe at each full turn.

Similarly, in nature, scales R and l_{Pl}^2/R cannot be distinguished. Lengths make no sense when they are smaller than l_{Pl}. If, however, we insist on using even smaller values and on distinguishing them from large ones, we get a new copy of the universe at those small scales. Such an insistence is part of the standard continuum description of motion, where it is assumed that space and time are described by the real numbers, which are defined over arbitrarily small intervals. Whenever the (approximate) continuum description with infinite extension is used, the $R \leftrightarrow l_{\mathrm{Pl}}^2/R$ symmetry pops up.

Duality implies that diffeomorphism invariance is only valid at medium scales, not at extremal ones. At extremal scales, quantum theory has to be taken into account in the proper manner. We do not yet know how to do this.

Space-time duality means that introducing lengths smaller than the Planck length (as when one defines space points, which have size zero) means at the same time introducing things with very large ('infinite') value. Space-time duality means that for every small enough sphere the inside equals the outside.

Duality means that if a system has a small dimension, it also has a large one, and vice versa. There are thus no small objects in nature. So space-time duality is consistent with the idea that the basic constituents are extended.

Unification and total symmetry

So far, we have shown that at Planck energy, time and length cannot be distinguished, and that vacuum and matter cannot be distinguished. Duality shows that mass and inverse mass cannot be distinguished. As a consequence, we deduce that length, time, and mass cannot be distinguished from each other at *all* energies and scales! And since every observable is a combination of length, mass and time, *space-time duality means that there is a symmetry between all observables*. We call it the *total symmetry*.*

Total symmetry implies that there are many specific types of duality, one for each pair of quantities under investigation. Indeed, the number of duality types discovered is increasing every year. It includes, among others, the famous electric–magnetic duality we first encountered in electrodynamics, coupling constant duality, surface–volume duality, space-time duality, and many more. All this confirms that there is an enormous amount of symmetry at Planck scales. In fact, similar symmetries have been known right from the beginning of research in quantum gravity.

Vol. III, page 88
Ref. 117
Ref. 115

Most importantly, total symmetry implies that gravity can be seen as equivalent to all other forces. Space-time duality thus shows that unification is possible. Physicists have

* A symmetry between size and Schwarzschild radius, i.e., a symmetry between length and mass, leads to general relativity. Additionally, at Planck energy there is a symmetry between size and Compton wavelength. In other words, there is a symmetry between length and inverse mass. This implies a symmetry between coordinates and wave functions, i.e., a symmetry between states and observables. It leads to quantum theory.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

always dreamt about unification. Duality tells us that this dream can indeed be realized.

It may seem that total symmetry completely contradicts what was said in the previous section, where we argued that all symmetries are lost at Planck scales. Which result is correct? Obviously, both of them are.

At Planck scales, all low-energy symmetries are indeed lost. In fact, all symmetries that imply a *fixed* energy are lost. However, duality and its generalizations combine both small and large dimensions, or large and small energies. Most of the standard symmetries of physics, such as gauge, permutation and space-time symmetries, are valid at each fixed energy separately. But nature is not made this way. The precise description of nature requires us to take into consideration large and small energies at the same time. In everyday life, we do not do that. The physics of everyday life is an approximation to nature valid at low and fixed energies. For most of the twentieth century, physicists tried to reach higher and higher energies. We believed that precision increases with increasing energy. But when we combine quantum theory and gravity we are forced to change this approach. To achieve high precision, we must take high and low energy into account at the same time.*

The great differences between the phenomena that occur at low and high energies are the main reason why unification is so difficult. We are used to dividing nature along a scale of energies: high-energy physics, atomic physics, chemistry, biology, and so on. But we are not allowed to think in this way any more. We have to take all energies into account at the same time. That is not easy, but we do not have to despair. Important conceptual progress was made in the last decade of the twentieth century. In particular, we now know that we need only *one constituent* for all things that can be measured.

Since there is only one constituent, total symmetry is automatically satisfied. And since there is only one constituent, there are many ways to study it. We can start from any (low-energy) concept in physics and explore how it looks and behaves when we approach Planck scales. In the present section, we are looking at the concept of 'point'. Obviously, the conclusions must be the same whatever concept we start with, be it electric field, spin, or any other. Such studies thus provide a check for the results in this section.

Challenge 91 d

Summary of the third argument for extension

Unification implies thinking in terms of duality and the concepts that follow from it. The large and the small are connected. Duality points to one single type of extended constituents that defines all physical observables.

We still need to understand exactly what happens to duality when we restrict ourselves to low energies, as we do in everyday life. We explore this now.

Challenge 92 e

* Renormalization energy does connect different energies, but not in the correct way; in particular, it does not include duality.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

DOES NATURE HAVE PARTS?

> Pluralitas non est ponenda sine necessitate.*
> William of Occam

Another argument, independent of those given so far, points towards a model of nature based on extended constituents. We know that any concept for which we can distinguish parts is described by a set. We usually describe nature as a set of objects, positions, instants and so on. The most famous set-theoretic description of nature is the oldest known, given by Democritus: Ref. 118

> The world is made of indivisible particles and void.

This description was extremely successful in the past: there are no discrepancies with observations. However, after 2500 years, the conceptual difficulties of this approach are obvious.

We know that Democritus was wrong, first of all, because vacuum and matter cannot be distinguished at Planck scales. Thus the word 'and' in his sentence is already a mistake. Secondly, because of the existence of minimal scales, the void cannot be made of 'points', as we usually assume. Thirdly, the description fails because particles are not compact objects. Finally, total symmetry implies that we cannot distinguish parts in nature. Nothing can be distinguished from anything else with complete precision, and thus the particles or points in space that make up the naive model of the world cannot exist.

In summary, quantum theory and general relativity together show that in nature, *all partitions and all differences are only approximate*. Nothing can really be distinguished from anything else with complete precision. In other words, there is no way to define a 'part' of nature, whether for matter, space, time, or radiation. *Nature cannot be a set.*

The conclusion that nature is not a set does not come as a surprise. We have already encountered another reason to doubt that nature is a set. Whatever definition we use for the term 'particle', Democritus cannot be correct for a purely logical reason. The description he provided is *not complete*. Every description of nature that defines nature as a set of parts fails to explain the *number* of these parts. In particular, the number of particles and the number of dimensions of space-time must be specified if we describe nature as made from particles and vacuum. For example, we saw that it is rather dangerous to make fun of the famous statement by Arthur Eddington Vol. III, page 319

> I believe there are 15,747,724,136,275,002,577,605,653,961,181,555,468,044, 717,914,527,116,709,366,231,425,076,185,631,031,296 protons in the universe and the same number of electrons. Ref. 119

* 'Multitude should not be introduced without necessity.' This famous principle is commonly called *Occam's razor*. William of Ockham (b. 1285/1295 Ockham, d. 1349/50 Munich), or Occam in the common Latin spelling, was one of the great thinkers of his time. In his famous statement he expresses that only those concepts which are strictly necessary should be introduced to explain observations. It can be seen as the requirement to abandon *beliefs* when talking about nature. But at this stage of our mountain ascent it has an even more direct interpretation: the existence of *any* multitude in nature is questionable.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In fact, practically all physicists share this belief, although they usually either pretend to favour some other number, or worse, keep the number unspecified.

In modern physics, many specialized sets are used to describe nature. We have used vector spaces, linear spaces, topological spaces and Hilbert spaces. But so far, we consistently refrained, like all physicists, from asking about the origin of their sizes (mathematically speaking, of their dimensionality or cardinality). In fact, it is just as unsatisfying to say that the universe contains some specific number of atoms as it is to say that space-time is made of point-like events arranged in 3+1 dimensions. Both are statements about set sizes, in the widest sense. In a complete, unified description of nature the number of smallest particles and the number of space-time points must not be fixed beforehand, but must *result* from the description.

Any part of nature is by definition smaller than the whole of nature, and different from other parts. As a result, no description of nature by a set can possibly yield the number of particles or the dimensionality of space-time. As long as we insist on using space-time or Hilbert spaces for the description of nature, we *cannot* understand the number of dimensions or the number of particles.

That is not too bad, as we know already that nature is *not* made of parts. We know that parts are only approximate concepts. In short, if nature were made of parts, it could not be a unity, or a 'one.' On the other hand, if nature is a unity, it cannot have parts.* Nature cannot be separable exactly. It cannot be made of particles.

To sum up, nature cannot be a set. Sets are lists of distinguishable elements. When general relativity and quantum theory are unified, nature shows no elements: *nature stops being a set at Planck scales*. This result clarifies a discussion we started earlier in relation to classical physics. There we discovered that matter objects were defined using space and time, and that space and time were defined using objects. Along with the results of quantum theory, this implies that in modern physics particles are defined in terms of the vacuum and the vacuum in terms of particles. Circularity is not a good idea, but we can live with it – at low energy. But at Planck energy, vacuum and particles are indistinguishable from each other. Particles and vacuum – thus everything – are the same. We have to abandon the circular definition. This is a satisfactory outcome; however, it also implies that nature is not a set.

Also space-time duality implies that space is not a set. Space-time duality implies that events cannot be distinguished from each other, and thus do not form elements of some space. Phil Gibbs has given the name *event symmetry* to this property of nature. This thought-provoking term, although still containing the term 'event', emphasizes the impossibility to use a set to describe space-time.

Ref. 121

In short, *nature cannot be made of vacuum and particles.* This is a bizarre result. Atomists, from Democritus to Galileo, have been persecuted throughout history. Were their battles all in vain? Let us continue to clarify our thoughts.

* As a curiosity, practically the same discussion can already be found in Plato's *Parmenides*, written in the fourth century BCE. There, Plato musically ponders different arguments on whether nature is or can be a *unity* or a *multiplicity*, i.e., a set. It seems that the text is based on the real visit to Athens by Parmenides and Zeno. (Their home city, Elea, was near Naples.) Plato does not reach a conclusion. Modern physics, however, does.

Ref. 120

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Does the universe contain anything?

To state that the universe contains something implies that we are able to distinguish the universe from its contents. However, we now know that precise distinctions are impossible. If nature is not made of parts, it is wrong to say that the universe *contains* something.

Let us go further. We need a description of nature that allows us to state that at Planck energy nothing can be distinguished from anything else. For example, it must be impossible to distinguish particles from each other or from the vacuum. There is only one solution: everything – or at least, what we call 'everything' in everyday life – must be made of the same single constituent. All particles are made of one 'piece'. Every point in space, every event, every particle and every instant of time must be made of the same single constituent.

An amoeba

> "A theory of everything describing nothing is not better than a theory of nothing describing everything."
>
> Anonymous

We have found that parts are approximate concepts. The parts of nature are not strictly smaller than nature itself. As a result, any 'part' must be extended. Let us try to extract some more information about the constituents of nature.

In any unified theory, all the concepts that appear must be only *approximately* parts of the whole. Thus we need an entity Ω, describing nature, which is not a set but which can be approximated by one. This is strange. We are all convinced very early in our lives that we are a *part* of nature. Our senses provide us with this information. We are not used to thinking otherwise. But now we have to.

Let us straight away eliminate a few options for Ω. One concept without parts is the empty set. Perhaps we need to construct a description of nature from the empty set? We could be inspired by the usual construction of the natural numbers from the empty set. However, the empty set makes only sense as the opposite of some full set. So the empty set is not a candidate for Ω.

Vol. III, page 282

Another possible way to define approximate parts is to construct them from multiple copies of Ω. But in this way we would introduce a new set through the back door. Furthermore, new concepts defined in this way would not be approximate.

We need to be more imaginative. How can we describe a whole which has no parts, but which has parts approximately? Let us recapitulate. The world must be described by a single entity, sharing all properties of the world, but which can be approximated as a set of parts. For example, the approximation should yield a set of space points and a set of particles. But also, whenever we look at any 'part' of nature, without any approximation, we should not be able to distinguish it from the whole world. Composite objects are not always larger than their constituents. On the other hand, composed objects must usually *appear* to be larger than their constituents. For example, space 'points' or 'point' particles are tiny, even though they are only approximations. Which concept without boundaries can be at their origin? Using usual concepts, the world is everywhere at

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the same time; if nature is to be described by a single constituent, this entity must be extended.

The entity has to be a single one, but it must *seem* to be multiple: it has to be multiple approximately, as nature shows multiple aspects. The entity must be something folded. It must be possible to count the folds, but only approximately. (An analogy is the question of how many grooves there are on an LP or a CD: depending on the point of view, local or global, one gets different answers.) Counting folds would correspond to a length measurement.

The simplest model would be a single entity which is extended and fluctuating, reaches spatial infinity, allows approximate localization, and thus allows approximate definition of parts and points.* In more vivid imagery, nature could be described by some deformable, folded and tangled entity: a giant, knotted amoeba. An amoeba slides between the fingers whenever one tries to grab a part of it. A perfect amoeba flows around any knife trying to cut it. The only way to hold it would be to grab it in its entirety. However, for someone himself made of amoeba strands, this is impossible. He can only grab it approximately, by catching part of it and approximately blocking it, for example using a small hole, so that the escape takes a long time.

Summary of the fourth argument for extension

The lack of particles and of sets in nature leads to describing nature by a single constituent. Nature is thus modelled by an entity which is *one single 'object'* (to eliminate distinguishability), which is *extended* (to eliminate localizability) and which is *fluctuating* (to ensure approximate continuity). Nature is a far-reaching, fluctuating fold. Nature is similar to an amoeba. The tangled branches of the amoeba allow a definition of length via counting of the folds. In this way, *discreteness* of space, time, and particles could also be realized; the quantization of space-time, matter and radiation thus follows. Any flexible and deformable entity is also a perfect candidate for the realization of diffeomorphism invariance, as required by general relativity.

A simple candidate for the extended fold is the image of a fluctuating, flexible *tube* of Planck diameter. Counting tubes implies determining distances or areas. The minimum possible count (one) gives the minimum distance, from which quantum theory is derived. In fact, at this point we can use as a model any flexible object with a small dimension, such as a tube, a thin sheet, a ball chain or a woven collection of rings. We will explore these options below.

Page 142

THE ENTROPY OF BLACK HOLES

We are still collecting arguments to determining the shape of fundamental constituents. Another approach is to study situations where particles appear in large numbers. Systems composed of many particles behave differently depending on whether the particles are point-like or extended. In particular, their entropy is different. Studying large-number entropy thus allows us to determine the shape of components. The most revealing situations are those in which large numbers of particles are crammed in a small volume.

Challenge 93 r * This is the simplest model; but is it the only way to describe nature?

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Therefore we are led to study the entropy of black holes. Indeed, black holes tell us a lot about the fundamental constituents of nature.

A black hole is a body whose gravity is so strong that even light cannot escape. It is easily deduced from general relativity that any body whose mass m fits inside the so-called Schwarzschild radius

$$r_S = 2Gm/c^2 \tag{115}$$

is a black hole. A black hole can be formed when a whole star collapses under its own weight. Such a black hole is a macroscopic body, with a large number of constituents. Therefore it has an entropy. The entropy S of a macroscopic black hole was determined
Ref. 57, Ref. 58 by Bekenstein and Hawking, and is given by

$$S = \frac{k}{4l_{Pl}^2}A = \frac{kc^3}{4\hbar G}A \quad \text{or} \quad S = k\frac{4\pi G m^2}{\hbar c} \tag{116}$$

where k is the Boltzmann constant and $A = 4\pi r_S^2$ is the surface of the black hole horizon.
Ref. 122 This important result has been derived in many different ways. The various derivations confirm that space-time and matter are equivalent: they show that the entropy value can be interpreted as an entropy either of matter or of space-time. In the present context, the two main points of interest are that the entropy is *finite*, and that it is *proportional to the area* of the black hole horizon.

In view of the existence of minimum lengths and times, the finiteness of the entropy is not surprising: it confirms the idea that matter is made of a finite number of discrete constituents per given volume (or area). It also shows that these constituents behave statistically: they fluctuate. In fact, quantum gravity implies a finite entropy for any object,
Ref. 35 not only for black holes. Jacob Bekenstein has shown that the entropy of an object is always smaller than the entropy of a (certain type of) black hole of the same mass.

The entropy of a black hole is proportional to its horizon area. Why? This question
Ref. 123 has been the topic of a stream of publications.* A simple way to understand the entropy–surface proportionality is to look for other systems in nature whose entropy is proportional to system surface instead of system volume. In general, the entropy of a collection
Ref. 125 of flexible one-dimensional objects, such as polymer chains, shares this property. Indeed, the entropy of a polymer chain made of N monomers, each of length a, whose ends are
Ref. 126 kept a distance r apart, is given by

$$S(r) = k\frac{3r^2}{2Na^2} \quad \text{for} \quad Na \gg \sqrt{Na} \gg r\,. \tag{117}$$

This formula can be derived in a few lines from the properties of a random walk on a lattice, using only two assumptions: the chains are extended; and they have a characteristic internal length a given by the smallest straight segment. Expression (117) is only valid if the polymers are effectively infinite: in other words, if the length Na of the chain and the *elongation* $a\sqrt{N}$, are much larger than the radius r of the region of interest. If the chain

Ref. 124 * The result can be derived from quantum statistics alone. However, this derivation does not yield the proportionality coefficient.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

length is comparable to or smaller than the region of interest, one gets the usual extensive entropy, satisfying $S \sim r^3$. Thus *only flexible extended constituents yield an* $S \sim r^2$ *dependence.*

However, there is a difficulty. From the expression for the entropy of a black hole we deduce that the elongation $a\sqrt{N}$ is given by $a\sqrt{N} \approx l_{\text{Pl}}$; thus it is much smaller than the radius of a general macroscopic black hole, which can have a diameter of several kilometres. On the other hand, the formula for long constituents is only valid when the chains are longer than the distance r between the end points.

This difficulty disappears when we remember that space near a black hole is strongly curved. All lengths have to be measured in the same coordinate system. It is well known that for an outside observer, any object of finite size falling into a black hole seems to cover the complete horizon for long times (whereas for an observer attached to the object it falls into the hole in its original size). In short, an extended constituent can have a proper length of Planck size but still, when seen by an outside observer, be as long as the horizon of the black hole. We thus find that black holes are made of extended constituents.

Ref. 109

Another viewpoint can confirm this result. Entropy is (proportional to) the number of yes-or-no questions needed to know the exact state of the system. But if a system is defined by its surface, as a black hole is, its components must be extended.

Finally, imagining black holes as made of extended constituents is also consistent with the so-called *no-hair theorem*: black holes' properties do not depend on what falls into them – as long as all matter and radiation particles are made of the same extended components. The final state of a black hole only depends on the number of extended constituents.

Summary of the fifth argument for extension

Black hole entropy is best understood as resulting from extended constituents that tangle and fluctuate. Black hole entropy also confirms that vacuum and particles are made of common constituents.

Page 279

EXCHANGING SPACE POINTS OR PARTICLES AT PLANCK SCALES

Let us now focus on the exchange behaviour of fundamental constituents in nature. We saw above that 'points' in space have to be abandoned in favour of continuous, fluctuating constituents common to space, time and matter. Is such a constituent a boson or a fermion? If we exchange two points of empty space, in everyday life, nothing happens. Indeed, at the basis of quantum field theory is the relation

$$[x, y] = xy - yx = 0 \tag{118}$$

between any two points with coordinates x and y, making them bosons. But at Planck scales, because of the existence of minimal distances and areas, this relation must at least

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

be changed to

$$[x, y] = l_{\mathrm{Pl}}^2 + \dots \,. \tag{119}$$

This means that 'points' are neither bosons nor fermions.* 'Points' have more complex exchange properties. In fact, the term on the right-hand side will be energy-dependent, to an increasing extent as we approach Planck scales. In particular, as we have seen, gravity implies that a double exchange does not lead back to the original situation at Planck scales.

Ref. 47

Constituents obeying this or similar relations have been studied in mathematics for many decades: they are called *braids*. Thus space is not made of points at Planck scales, but of braids or their generalizations, namely tangles. We find again that quantum theory and general relativity taken together imply that the vacuum must be made of extended constituents.

Ref. 127

We now turn to particles. All particles in nature behave in a similar way: we know that at low, everyday energies, particles of the same type are *identical*. Experiments sensitive to quantum effects show that there is no way to distinguish them: any system of several identical particles has permutation symmetry. On the other hand, we know that at Planck energy all low-energy symmetries disappear. We also know that at Planck energy permutation cannot be carried out, as it implies exchanging positions of two particles. At Planck energy, nothing can be distinguished from vacuum; thus no two entities can be shown to have identical properties. Indeed, no two particles can be shown to be indistinguishable, as they cannot even be shown to be separate.

What happens when we slowly approach Planck energy? At everyday energies, permutation symmetry is defined by commutation or anticommutation relations between particle creation operators

$$a^\dagger b^\dagger \pm b^\dagger a^\dagger = 0 \,. \tag{120}$$

At Planck energy this cannot be correct. Quantum gravity effects modify the right-hand side: they add an energy-dependent term, which is negligible at experimentally accessible energies but which becomes important at Planck energy. We know from our experience with Planck scales that, in contrast to everyday life, exchanging particles twice cannot lead back to the original situation. A double exchange at Planck energy cannot have no effect, because at Planck energy such statements are impossible. The simplest extension of the commutation relation (120) for which the right-hand side does not vanish is *braid symmetry*. This again suggests that particles are made of extended constituents.

Ref. 47

Ref. 127

Summary of the sixth argument for extension

Extrapolating both point and particle indistinguishability to Planck scales suggests extended, braided or tangled constituents.

* The same reasoning applies to the so-called fermionic or Grassmann coordinates used in supersymmetry. They cannot exist at Planck energy.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

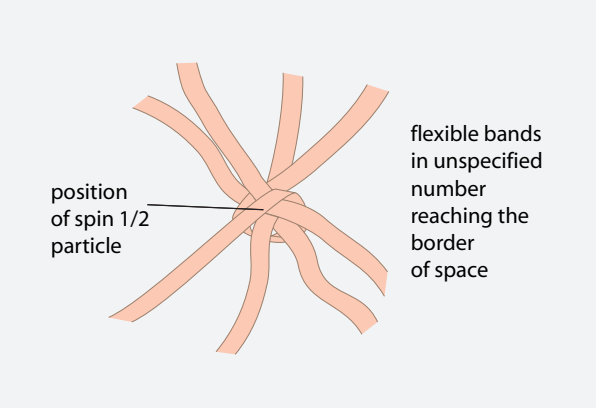


FIGURE 9 A possible model for a spin 1/2 particle.

THE MEANING OF SPIN

As last argument we will now show that the extension of particles makes sense even at everyday energy. Any particle is a part of the universe. A part is something that is different from anything else. Being 'different' means that exchange has some effect. *Distinction means possibility of exchange.* In other words, any part of the universe is also described by its *exchange behaviour*.

In nature, exchange is composed of rotations. In other words, parts of nature are described by their *rotation behaviour*. This is why, for microscopic particles, exchange behaviour is specified by spin. *Spin distinguishes particles from vacuum.**

We note that volume does not distinguish vacuum from particles; neither does rest mass or charge: nature provides particles without measurable volume, rest mass or charge, such as photons. The only observables that distinguish particles from vacuum are spin and momentum. In fact, linear momentum is only a limiting case of angular momentum. We thus find again that rotation behaviour is the basic aspect distinguishing particles from vacuum.

If spin is the central property that distinguishes particles from vacuum, finding a model for spin is of central importance. But we do not have to search for long. A model for spin 1/2 is part of physics folklore since almost a century. Any belt provides an example, as we discussed in detail when exploring permutation symmetry. Any localized structure with any number of tails attached to it – tails that reach the border of the region of space under consideration – has the same properties as a spin 1/2 particle. The only condition is that the tails themselves are *unobservable*. It is a famous exercise to show that such a model, shown in Figure 9, is indeed invariant under 4π rotations but not under 2π rotations, and that two such particles get entangled when exchanged, but get untangled when exchanged twice. Such a *tail model* has all the properties of spin

Vol. IV, page 110

* With a flat (or other) background, it is possible to define a *local* energy–momentum tensor. Thus particles can be defined. Without a background, this is not possible, and only global quantities can be defined. Without a background, even particles cannot be defined. Therefore, in this section we assume that we have a slowly varying space-time background.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

1/2 particles, independently of the precise structure of the central region, which is not important at this point. The tail model even has the same problems with highly curved space as real spin 1/2 particles have. We will explore the issues in more detail shortly.

Page 167

The tail model thus confirms that rotation is partial exchange. More interestingly, it shows that rotation implies connection with the border of space. Extended particles can be rotating. Particles can have spin 1/2 provided that they have tails going to the border of space. If the tails do not reach the border, the model does not work. Spin 1/2 thus even seems to *require* extension.

Ref. 128

Challenge 94 e It is not hard to extend this idea to include spin 1 particles. In short, both bosons and fermions can be modelled with extended constituents.

Summary of the seventh argument for extension

Exploring the properties of particle spin suggests extended constituents in elementary fermions. We note that gravitation is not used explicitly in the argument. It is used implicitly, however, in the definition of the locally flat space-time and of the asymptotic space to where the tails are reaching.

CURIOSITIES AND FUN CHALLENGES ABOUT EXTENSION

> No problem is so big or complicated that it can't be run away from.
>
> Charles Schulz

In case that this section has not provided enough food for thought, here is some more.

* *

Challenge 95 s Quantum theory implies that even if tight walls exist, the lid of a box made of them could never be tightly shut. Can you provide the argument?

* *

Challenge 96 e Can you provide an argument against the idea of extended constituents in nature? If so, publish it!

* *

Challenge 97 s Does duality imply that the cosmic background fluctuations (at the origin of galaxies and clusters) are the same as vacuum fluctuations?

* *

Challenge 98 s Does duality imply that a system with two small masses colliding is equivalent to a system with two large masses gravitating?

* *

Challenge 99 d It seems that in all arguments so far we have assumed that time is continuous, even though we know it is not. Does this change the conclusions?

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

Duality also implies that in some sense large and small masses are equivalent. A mass m in a radius r is equivalent to a mass m_{Pl}^2/m in a radius l_{Pl}^2/r. In other words, duality transforms mass density from ρ to ρ_{Pl}^2/ρ. Vacuum and maximum density are equivalent! Vacuum is thus dual to black holes.

* *

Total symmetry and space-time duality together imply that there is a symmetry between all values an observable can take. Do you agree? Challenge 100 s

* *

Any description is a mapping from nature to mathematics, i.e., from observed differences (and relations) to thought differences (and relations). How can we do this accurately, if differences are only approximate? Is this the end of physics? Challenge 101 s

* *

Duality implies that the notion of initial conditions for the big bang makes no sense, as we saw earlier by considering the minimal distance. As duality implies a symmetry between large and small energies, the big bang itself becomes a vague concept. What else do extended constituents imply for the big bang? Challenge 102 d

* *

Can you show that going to high energies or selecting a Planck-size region of space-time is equivalent to visiting the big bang? Challenge 103 d

* *

In 2002, the Andrea Gregori made a surprising prediction for any model using extended constituents that reach the border of the universe: if particles are extended in this way, their mass should depend on the size of the universe. Thus particle masses should change with time, especially around the big bang. Is this conclusion unavoidable? Ref. 129 Challenge 104 s

* *

What is wrong with the following argument? We need lines to determine areas, and we need areas to determine lines. This implies that at Planck scales, one cannot distinguish areas from lengths at Planck scales. Challenge 105 e

* *

We need a description for the expansion of the universe in terms of extended constituents. Various approaches are being explored. Can you speculate about the solution? Ref. 129, Ref. 130 Challenge 106 s

Gender preferences in physics

Why has extension appeared so late in the history of physics? Here is a *not too serious* answer. When we discussed the description of nature as made of tiny balls moving in a void, we called this as a typically male idea. This implies that the female part is missing. Which part would that be? Vol. I, page 333

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

From a general point of view, the female part of physics might be the quantum description of the vacuum, the container of all things. We can speculate that if women had developed physics, the order of its discoveries might have been different. Instead of studying matter first, as men did, women might have studied the vacuum first. And women might not have needed 2500 years to understand that nature is not made of a void and little balls, but that everything in nature is made of extended constituents. It is strange that (male) physics took so long for this discovery.

CHECKS OF EXTENSION

The idea that nature is described by extended constituents is taken for granted in all current research approaches to unification. How can we be sure that extension is correct? The arguments presented so far provide several possible checks. We start with some options for *theoretical* falsification.

— Any explanation of black hole entropy *without* extended constituents would invalidate the need for extended constituents.
— A single thought experiment *invalidating* extended constituents would prove extension wrong. Challenge 107 e
— Extended constituents must appear if we start from *any* physical (low-energy) concept – not only from length measurements – and study how the concept behaves at Planck scales.
— Invalidating the requirement of extremal identity, or duality, would invalidate the need for extended constituents. As Edward Witten likes to say, any unified model of nature must include duality. Page 108
— If the measurement of length could be shown to be *unrelated* to the counting of folds of extended constituents, extension would become unnecessary.
— Finding any property of nature that *contradicts* extended constituents would spell the end of extension.

Any of these options would signal the end for almost all current unification attempts. Fortunately, theoretical falsification has not yet occurred. But physics is an experimental science. What kind of *data* could falsify the idea of extended constituents?

— Observing a single particle in cosmic rays with energy above the corrected Planck energy would invalidate the invariant limits and thus also extension. However, the present particle energy record, about 0.35 ZeV, is a million times lower than the Planck energy. Ref. 131
— Paul Mende has proposed a number of checks on the motion of extended objects in space-time. He argues that an extended object and a mass point move differently; the differences could be noticeable in scattering or dispersion of light near masses. Ref. 132

Experimental falsification of extension has not yet occurred. In fact, experimental falsification is rather difficult. It seems easier and more productive to *confirm* extension. Confirmation is a well-defined project: it implies to deduce all those aspects of nature that are given in the millennium list of unexplained properties. Among others, confirm- Page 18

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

ation requires to find a concrete model, based on extended constituents, for the electron, the muon, the tau, the neutrinos and the quarks. Confirmation also requires using extended constituents to realize an old dream of particle physics: to deduce the values of the coupling constants and particle masses. Before we attempt this deduction, we have a look at some other attempts.

Current research based on extended constituents

> To understand is to perceive patterns.
>
> Isaiah Berlin*

The Greeks deduced the existence of atoms from the observation that fish can swim through water. They argued that only if water is made of atoms could a fish make its way through it, by pushing the atoms aside. We can ask a similar question of a particle flying through a vacuum: why is it able to do so? A vacuum cannot be a fluid or a solid composed of small constituents, as its dimensionality would not then be fixed. Only one possibility remains: both vacuum and particles are made of a web of extended constituents.

Ref. 114

The idea of describing matter as composed of extended constituents dates from the 1960s. That of describing nature as composed of 'infinitely' extended constituents dates from the 1980s. In addition to the arguments presented so far, current research provides several other approaches that arrive at the same conclusion.

* *

Bosonization, the construction of fermions using an infinite number of bosons, is a central aspect of modern unification attempts. It also implies coupling duality, and thus the extension of fundamental constituents.

Ref. 133

* *

Research into quantum gravity – in particular the study of spin networks, spin foams and loop quantum gravity – has shown that the vacuum can be thought of as a collection of extended constituents.

Ref. 134, Ref. 135

* *

In the 1990s, Dirk Kreimer showed that high-order QED Feynman diagrams are related to knot theory. He thus proved that extension arrives by the back door even when electromagnetism is described in terms of point particles.

Ref. 136

* *

A popular topic in particle physics, 'holography', relates the surface and the volume of physical systems at high energy. It implies extended constituents of nature.

Ref. 137

* *

It is long known that wave function collapse can be seen as the result of extended constituents. We will explore the details below.

Vol. IV, page 155

* Isaiah Berlin (b. 1909 Riga, d. 1997 Oxford) was an influential political philosopher and historian of ideas.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

Ref. 138, Ref. 139 Ref. 140, Ref. 141 Ref. 142, Ref. 143 Page 337 At the start of the twenty-first century, a number of new approaches to describe elementary particles appeared, such as models based on string nets, models based on bands, models based on ribbons, and models based on knots. All these attempts make use of extended constituents. Several of them are discussed in more detail below.

Despite the use of extension, none of these attempts solved a single problem from the millennium list. One approach – especially popular between the years 1984 and 2010 – merits a closer look.

Superstrings – extension and a web of dualities

> "Throw physic to the dogs; I'll none of it."
> William Shakespeare, *Macbeth*.

Superstrings and *supermembranes* – often simply called *strings* and *membranes* – are extended constituents in the most investigated physics conjecture ever. The approach contains a maximum speed, a minimum action and a maximum force (or tension). The approach thus incorporates special relativity, quantum theory and general relativity. This attempt to achieve the final description of nature uses four ideas that go beyond standard general relativity and quantum theory:

Ref. 144

1. Particles are conjectured to be *extended*. Originally, particles were conjectured to be one-dimensional *oscillating superstrings*. In a subsequent generalization, particles are conjectured to be fluctuating higher-dimensional *supermembranes*.
2. The conjecture uses *higher dimensions* to unify interactions. A number of space-time dimensions much higher than 3+1, typically 10 or 11, is necessary for a mathematically consistent description of superstrings and membranes.
3. The conjecture is based on *supersymmetry*. Supersymmetry is a symmetry that relates matter to radiation, or equivalently, fermions to bosons. Supersymmetry is the most general local interaction symmetry that can be constructed mathematically. Supersymmetry is the reason for the terms 'superstring' and 'supermembrane'.
4. Ref. 145 The conjecture makes heavy use of *dualities*. In the context of high-energy physics, dualities are symmetries between large and small values of physical observables. Important examples are space-time duality and coupling constant duality. Dualities are global interaction and space-time symmetries. They are essential for the inclusion of gauge interaction and gravitation in the quantum description of nature. Dualities also express a fundamental equivalence between space-time and matter–radiation. Dualities also imply and contain *holography*, the idea that physical systems are completely fixed by the states on their bounding surface.

By incorporating these four ideas, the *superstring conjecture* – named so by Brian Greene, Ref. 146 one of its most important researchers – acquires a number of appealing characteristics.

Why superstrings and supermembranes are so appealing

First of all, the superstring conjecture is unique: the Lagrangian is unique and has no adjustable parameters. Furthermore, as we would expect from a description involving extended constituents, the conjecture includes gravity. In addition, the conjecture de-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

scribes interactions: it describes gauge fields. The conjecture thus expands quantum field theory, while retaining all its essential points. In this way, the conjecture fulfils most of the requirements for a unified description of motion that we have deduced so far. For example, particles are not point-like, there are minimal length and time intervals, and all other limit quantities appear. (Though the requirement of the lack of sets seems not fulfilled.)

The superstring conjecture has many large symmetries, which arise from its many dualities. These symmetries connect many situations that seem intuitively to be radically different: this makes the conjecture extremely fascinating, but also difficult to picture.

The conjecture shows special cancellations of anomalies and of other inconsistencies. Historically, the first example was the Green–Schwarz anomaly cancellation; superstrings also solve other anomalies and certain inconsistencies of quantum field theory.

Edward Witten, the central figure of the field, likes to say that quantum theory cures the infinities that appear in e^2/r when the distance r goes to zero; in the same way, superstrings cure the infinities that appear in m^2/r when the distance r goes to zero.*

Also following Witten, in the superstring conjecture, the interactions follow from the particle definitions: interactions do not have to be added. That is why the superstring conjecture predicts gravity, gauge theory, supersymmetry and supergravity.

About gravity, one of the pretty results of the superstring conjecture is that superRef. 147 strings and black holes are complementary to each other. This was argued by Polchinsky, Horowitz and Susskind. As expected, superstrings explain the entropy of black holes.
Ref. 122 Strominger and Vafa showed this important result in 1996.

The superstring conjecture naturally includes *holography*, the idea that the degrees of freedom of a physical system are determined by its boundary. In particular, holography provides for a deep duality between gauge theory and gravity. More precisely, there is a correspondence between quantum field theory in flat space and the superstring conjecture in certain higher-dimensional spaces that contain anti-de Sitter space.

In short, the superstring conjecture implies fascinating mathematics. Conformal invariance enters the Lagrangian. Concepts such as the Virasoro algebra, conformal field theory, topological field theory and many related ideas provide vast and fascinating generalizations of quantum field theory.

Why the mathematics of superstrings is so difficult

The superstring conjecture, like all modern descriptions of physics, is described by a Lagrangian. The Lagrangian is constructed starting from the Lagrangian for the motion of a classical superstring of matter. Then the Lagrangian for the corresponding quantum superstring fields is constructed, and then higher dimensions, supersymmetry, dualities and membranes are incorporated. This formulation of the superstring conjecture takes for granted the existence of a space-time background.

The Lagrangian of the superstring conjecture is extremely complex, much too complex to write it down here. It is not as simple as the Lagrangian of the standard model of particle physics or the Lagrangian of general relativity. But the complexity of the Lagrangian is not the only reason why the studying the superstring conjecture is difficult.

* This argument is questionable, because general relativity already cures that divergence.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

It turns out that exploring how the known 4 dimensions of space-time are embedded in the 10 or 11 dimensions of the superstring conjecture is extremely involved. The topology and the size of the additional dimensions is unclear. There are only few people who are able to study these options.

Indeed, a few years ago a physicist and a mathematician listened to a talk on superstrings, full of processes occurring in eleven dimensions. The mathematician listened intensely and obviously enjoyed the talk. The physicist did not understand anything and got more and more annoyed. At the end, the physicist had a terrible headache, whereas the mathematician was full of praise. 'But how can you even understand this stuff?', asked the physicist. 'I simply picture it in my head!' 'But *how* exactly do you imagine things in eleven dimensions?' 'Easy! I first imagine them in N dimensions and then let N go to 11.'

Testing superstrings: couplings and masses

One of the main results of quantum chromodynamics or QCD, the theory of strong interactions, is the explanation of mass relations such as

Ref. 148

$$m_{\text{proton}} \sim \mathrm{e}^{-k/\alpha_{\text{Pl}}}\, m_{\text{Pl}} \quad \text{and} \quad k = 11/2\pi\,,\ \alpha_{\text{Pl}} \approx 1/25\,. \tag{121}$$

Here, the value of the strong coupling constant α_{Pl} is taken at the Planck energy. In other words, a general understanding of masses of bound states of the strong interaction, such as the proton, requires little more than a knowledge of the Planck energy and the coupling constant at that energy. The approximate value $\alpha_{\text{Pl}} \approx 1/25$ is an empirical value based on experimental data.

Page 366

Any unified theory must allow us to calculate the three gauge coupling constants as a function of energy, thus including the value α_{Pl} at Planck energy. At present, most researchers regard the search for the vacuum state – the precise embedding of four dimensions in the total ten – as the main difficulty facing the superstring conjecture. Without knowledge of the vacuum state, no calculations of coupling constants or masses are possible.

The vacuum state of the superstring conjecture is expected to be one of an rather involved set of topologically distinct manifolds. It is estimated that there are around 10^{500} candidate vacuum states. The universe contains 10^{80} atoms; it thus seems easier to find a particular atom in the universe that to find the correct vacuum state. The advantages that are due to a unique Lagrangian are thus lost.

Ref. 149

We can also describe the problems with the calculation of particle masses in the following way. The superstring conjecture predicts states with Planck mass and with zero mass. The zero-mass particles are then thought to get their actual mass, which is tiny compared with the Planck mass, from the Higgs mechanism. However, the Higgs mechanism and its numerical properties have not yet been deduced from superstrings.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The status of the superstring conjecture

> Es ist nichts Großes ohne Leidenschaft vollbracht worden, noch kann es ohne solche vollbracht werden.*
>
> Friedrich Hegel, *Enzyklopädie*.

It is estimated that, from 1984 to 2010, over 10 000 man-years have been invested in the exploration of the superstring conjecture: compare this with about a dozen man-years for electrodynamics, a dozen man-years for general relativity, and a dozen man-years for the foundation of quantum theory.

In fact, it is fair to say that nowadays, superstring researchers are stuck. Despite the huge collective effort, not a single calculation of an *experimentally measurable* value has been made. For example, the superstring conjecture has not predicted the masses of any elementary particle, nor the value of any coupling constant, nor the number of gauge interactions. In fact, *none* of the open issues in physics that are listed the millennium list has been solved by the superstring conjecture. This disappointing situation is the reason that many scholars, including several Nobel Prize winners, dismiss the superstring conjecture altogether.

Page 18
Ref. 150

What are the reasons that the superstring conjecture, like several other approaches based on extended constituents, was unsuccessful? Superstrings and supermembranes are *complex*: superstrings and supermembranes move in many dimensions, carry mass, have tension and carry (supersymmetric) fields. In fact, the precise mathematical definition of a superstring or a supermembrane and their features is so complex that already understanding the definition is beyond the capabilities of most physicists. But a high complexity always nourishes the doubt that some of the underlying assumptions do not apply to nature.

Superstrings are not simple entities. And no researcher tried to make them simple. Put in different terms, the superstring conjecture was not successful because its *basic principles* have never been clarified. This lack of clear foundations is regularly underlined even by supporters of the superstring conjecture, such as Murray Gell-Mann. And despite this gap, *no* research papers on the basic principles exist to this day.

Summary on extension in nature

> Wir müssen wissen, wir werden wissen.**
>
> David Hilbert

We have explored nature at her limits: we have studied the Planck limits, explored three-dimensionality, curvature, particle shape, renormalization, spin and bosonization; we have investigated the cosmological constant problem and searched for a 'background-free' description of nature. As a result, we have found that at Planck scales, all these explorations lead to the same conclusions:

Ref. 151

— Points and sets do not describe nature correctly.

* 'Nothing great has been achieved without passion, nor can it be achieved without it.' Hegel, an influential philospher, writes this towards the end of the third and last part of his *Enzyklopädie der philosophischen Wissenschaften im Grundrisse*, §474, 296.

** 'We must know, we will know.' This was Hilbert's famous personal credo.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— Matter and vacuum are two sides of the same medal.
— What we usually call space-time points and point particles are in fact made up of common and, above all, *extended* constituents.

We can reach the conclusions in an even simpler way. What do quantum theory and black holes have in common? They both suggest that nature is made of extended entities. We will confirm below that both the Dirac equation and black hole entropy imply that particles, space and horizons are built from extended constituents.

Despite using extension as fundamental aspect, and despite many interesting results, *all* the attempts from the twentieth century – including the superstring conjecture and all quantum gravity models, but even supersymmetry and supergravity – have *not been successful* in understanding or in describing nature at the Planck scale. The reasons for this lack of success were the unclear relation to the Planck scale, the lack of clear principles, the use of wrong assumptions, and, above all, the unclear connection to experiment.* To be successful, we need a different approach to calculations with extended constituents. We need an approach that is built on Planck units, is based on clear principles, has few but correct assumptions, and stands up against experimental tests.

In our quest for a final theory of physics, one way to advance is by raising the following issue. The basis for the most explored approach in the late twentieth century, the superstring conjecture, is formed by four assumptions: extension, duality, higher dimensions and supersymmetry. Can we dispense with any of them? Now, duality is closely related to extension, for which enough theoretical and experimental evidence exists, as we have argued above. On the other hand, the expressions for the Schwarzschild radius and for the Compton wavelength imply, as we found out earlier on, that the dimensionality of space and the statistics of particles are *undefined* at Planck scales. In other words, nature does not have higher dimensions nor supersymmetry at Planck scales. And all known experiments confirm this conclusion. In our quest for a final theory of motion, we therefore drop the two incorrect assumptions and continue our adventure.

Page 69, page 75
Page 71, page 75

We can phrase the remaining quest in the following way:

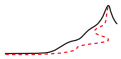
▷ How are the three gauge interactions related to the fundamental constants c, $\hbar$, k and G, i.e., to the Planck scale?

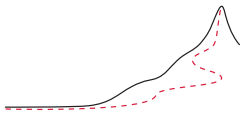
Challenge 108 e

This question is rarely asked. Attempts to answer it are even rarer. (Can you find one?) Finding the Planck origin of gauge interactions means finding the final theory. To be successful in this quest, we need two tools: extension and simplicity.

* Starting 2014, during the Strings conference, it became clear that the string research community has quietly given up its quest to achieve a unified theory with the help of superstrings or supermembranes. Researchers are now looking for other microscopic models of nature.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net





Chapter 7

THE BASIS OF THE STRAND MODEL

> We haven't got the money, so we have to think.
> Ernest Rutherford*

The two extremely precise descriptions of motion that were discovered in the twentieth century – quantum field theory and general relativity – are the low-energy approximations of how nature behaves at Planck scales. So far, the Planck-scale behaviour is not clear. In order to understand nature at Planck scales, and thus to find the unified and final description of motion, we follow the method that has been the most effective during the history of physics: we search for the *simplest* possible description. Simplicity was used successfully, for example, in the discovery of special relativity, in the discovery of quantum theory, and in the discovery of general relativity. We therefore use the guidance provided by simplicity to deduce a promising speculation for the unified and final theory of motion.

The central requirement for any *unified* description is that it leads from Planck scales, and thus from Planck units, to quantum field theory, to the standard model of elementary particles and to general relativity. In simple terms, as discussed below, the unified description must be valid for *all observations* and provide *complete precision*.

Page 157

From the preceding chapters, we know already quite a bit about the unified description. In particular, any unified description of general relativity and quantum theory must use *extended* constituents. We discovered a number of reasons that are central for this conclusion. All these reasons appear only when quantum theory and general relativity are combined. First, only constituents that are extended allow us to deduce black hole entropy. Secondly, only extended constituents allow us to model that elementary particles are not point-like or that physical space is not made of points. Thirdly, only extended constituents allow us to model a smallest measurable space and time interval. Fourthly, only extended constituents allow us to model spin 1/2 in locally flat space-time.

But we are not only looking for a unified theory; we are also looking for the *final* theory. This implies a second requirement: the final theory must be *unmodifiable*. As we will show later on, if a candidate for a final theory can be modified, or generalized, or reduced to special cases, or varied in any other way, it is not final.

Page 159

* Ernest Rutherford (b. 1871 Brightwater, d. 1937 Cambridge) was an important physicist and researcher; he won the Nobel Prize in Chemistry for his work on atoms and radioactivity.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

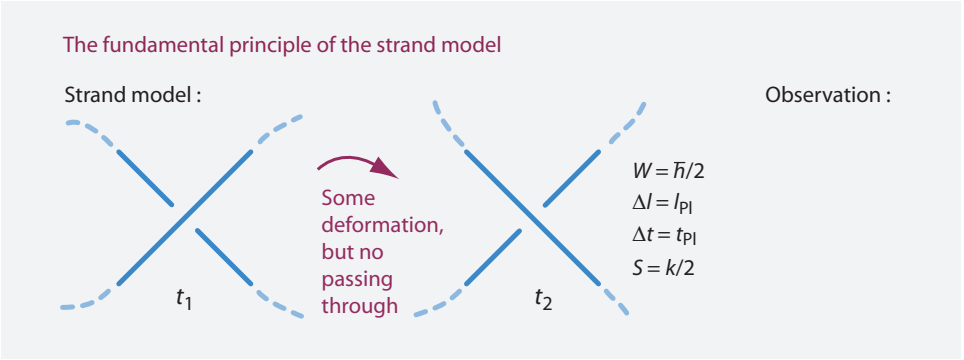


FIGURE 10 The fundamental principle of the strand model: the simplest observation in nature, a ''point-like'' fundamental event, is defined by a crossing switch in three spatial dimensions. The crossing switch defines the action $\hbar/2$, the Planck length, the Planck time and the Boltzmann constant.

Requirements for a final theory

In the preceding chapters of our quest for the final, unified theory, we have already deduced many requirements that such a theory must realize. All the requirements that we deduced are listed in Table 6. Certain requirements follow from the property that the description must be final, others from the property that it must be unified, and still others from the property that it must describe nature with quantum theory and general relativity. More specifically, every requirement appears when the expressions for the Compton wavelength and for the Schwarzschild radius are combined. So far, the table is not found elsewhere in the research literature.

Challenge 109 e

TABLE 6 General requirements for a final and unified description of nature and of motion.

Aspect	Requirements for the final and unified description
Precision	must be *complete*; the unified description must precisely describe all motion – everyday, quantum and relativistic – and explain all open issues from the millennium list, given (again) in Table 8 on page 157, including the fine structure constant.
Modification	must be *impossible*, as explained on page 159.
Fundamental principles	must be *clear*. (Otherwise the unified description is not falsifiable.)
Vacuum and particles	*must not differ* at Planck scales because of limits of measurement precision; vacuum and particles therefore must be described by *common* fundamental constituents.
Fundamental constituents	must determine all observables.
Fundamental constituents	must be as *simple* as possible, to satisfy Occam's razor.
Fundamental constituents	must be *extended* and *fluctuating*, to explain black hole entropy, spin, minimum measurement intervals, space-time homogeneity and isotropy of space.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 6 (Continued) General requirements for a final and unified description of nature and of motion.

ASPECT	REQUIREMENTS FOR THE FINAL AND UNIFIED DESCRIPTION
Fundamental constituents	must be the *only unobservable* entities. (If they were observable, the theory would not be final, because the properties of the entities would need explanation; if additional unobservable entities would exist, the theory would be fiction, not science.)
Non-locality	must be part of the description; non-locality must be negligible at everyday scales, but important at Planck scales.
Physical points and sets	must *not exist*, due to limits of measurement precision; points and sets only exist approximately, at everyday scales.
Evolution equations	must *not exist* at Planck scales, due to the lack of points and sets.
Physical systems	must not exist at Planck scales, due to limits of measurement precision; systems only exist approximately at everyday scales.
Universe	must not be a system, due to limits of measurement precision.
Big bang	must not be an event, and thus not be a beginning, as this would contradict the non-existence of points and sets in nature.
Singularities	must not exist, due to the limits of measurements.
Planck's natural units	must be *limit values* for each observable (within a factor of order one); infinitely large or small measurement values must not exist.
Planck scale description	must imply quantum field theory, the standard model of particle physics, general relativity and cosmology.
Quantum field theory and QED	must follow from the final unified theory by eliminating G.
General relativity	must follow from the final unified theory by eliminating $\hbar$.
Planck's natural units	must define all observables, including coupling constants.
Relation to experiment	must be as simple as possible, to satisfy Occam's razor.
Background dependence	is required, as background independence is logically impossible.
Background space-time	must be *equal* to physical space-time at everyday scale, but must *differ* globally and at Planck scales.
Circularity of definitions	of physical concepts must be part of the final, unified description, as a consequence of being 'precise talk about nature'.
Axiomatic description	must be impossible, as nature is not described by sets; Hilbert's sixth problem must have no solution.
Dimensionality of space	must be *undefined* at Planck scales, as space is undefined there.
Symmetries	must be *undefined* at Planck scales, due to the limits to measurement precision.
Large and small scales	must be *similar*, due to the limits to measurement precision.

The requirement list given in Table 6 can be considerably shortened. Shortening the list of requirements is possible because the various requirements are *consistent* with each other. In fact, shortening is possible because a detailed check confirms a suspicion that arose during the last chapters: extension alone is sufficient to explain all those requirements that seem particularly surprising or unusual, such as the lack of points or the lack

Challenge 110 e

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of axioms. Such a shortened list also satisfies our drive for simplicity. After shortening, two requirements for a final theory remain:

- ▷ *The final theory must describe nature* at and below the Planck scale* *as made of extended constituents fluctuating in a background.* Extended constituents must explain particles, space and horizons.
- ▷ In the final theory, the *fluctuations* of the extended constituents *must explain all motion.* The Planck-scale fluctuations must describe all observed examples of everyday, quantum and relativistic motion with complete precision, imply all concepts of physics and explain all fundamental constants.

This requirement summary is a result of our adventure so far. It forms the starting point for the final leg of our adventure. If you do not agree with these two requirements, take a rest and explore your disagreement in all its details. Challenge 111 s

Looking at the table of requirements for the final theory – both the full one and the shortened one – we note something astonishing. Even though all requirements appear when quantum physics and general relativity are combined, each of these requirements *contradicts* both quantum physics and general relativity. The final theory thus *differs* from both pillars of modern physics. A final theory cannot be found if we remain prisoners of either quantum theory or general relativity. To put it bluntly, each requirement for the final theory contradicts every result of twentieth century physics! This unexpected conclusion is the main reason that past attempts failed to discover the final theory. In fact, most attempts do not fulfil the requirements because various scholars explicitly disagree with one or several of them.

The requirement of the *extension* of the fundamental constituents is the main result about the properties of a final theory. A final theory must make a statement about these constituents. The fundamental constituents, also called *fundamental degrees of freedom*, must explain everything we observe and know about nature. In particular, the constituents must explain the curvature of space, the entropy of black holes and the spectrum, mass and other properties of all elementary particles. And these constituents must be extended. Extension is the reason that the final theory contradicts both general relativity and quantum theory – but still allows these theories as excellent approximations. In short, extension is the key to finding the final theory.

The requirement summary implying fluctuating extended constituents resulted from our drive for extreme simplicity. With this summary, the search for a candidate final theory does not take long. Of the few candidates that satisfy the requirements for a final theory, it seems that the *simplest* is the one based on *fluctuating featureless strands*. In this approach, *strands*,** not points, are assumed to be the fundamental constituents of vacuum, horizons, matter and radiation. Ref. 152 Page 160

* The final theory must not describe nature *beyond* the Planck scales. A more relaxed requirement is that the predictions of the theory must be *independent* of any fantasies of what might occur *beyond* Planck scales.
** In Dutch: draden, in French: fils, in German: Fäden, in Italian: fili.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Introducing strands

The strand model starts with a simple idea:

▷ Nature is made of unobservable, fluctuating, featureless strands.

We will discover that everything observed in nature – vacuum, fermions, bosons and horizons – is made of strands. Strands are the common and extended constituents of everything. Even though strands are unobservable and featureless, all observations are due to strands.

▷ All observations, all change and all events are composed of the fundamental event, the crossing switch.

To describe all observations with precision, the strand model uses only one *fundamental principle*:

▷ ***Planck units*** are defined through **crossing switches** of strands.

Page 143 The definition of the Planck units with the crossing switch is illustrated in Figure 10. All measurements are consequence of this definition. All observations and everything that happens are composed of fundamental events. The fundamental principle thus specifies why and how Planck units are the *natural units* of nature. In particular, the four basic Planck units are associated in the following way:

▷ ***Planck's quantum of action*** $\hbar/2$ appears as the action value associated to a crossing switch. The action $\hbar$ corresponds to a double crossing switch, or full turn of one strand segment around another.*

▷ The (corrected) ***Planck length*** $l_{\mathrm{Pl}} = \sqrt{4G\hbar/c^3}$ appears as the effective diameter of strands. Since the Planck length is a limit that cannot be achieved by measurements, strands with such a diameter remain unobservable.*

▷ The ***Planck entropy***, i.e., the Boltzmann constant k, is the natural unit associated to the counting and statistics of crossings.*

▷ The (corrected) ***Planck time*** $t_{\mathrm{Pl}} = \sqrt{4G\hbar/c^5}$ appears as the shortest possible duration of a crossing switch.*

Crossing switches that are faster than the Planck time do not play a role, as they are unobservable and unmeasurable. Let us see why.

How can we imagine a minimum time interval in nature? A crossing switch could be arbitrarily fast, couldn't it? So how does the Planck time arise? To answer, we must recall the role of the observer. The observer is a physical system, also made of strands. The

* In other words, the strand model sets $\hbar = l_{\mathrm{Pl}} = t_{\mathrm{Pl}} = k = 1$. The strange numbers that these constants have in the SI, the international system of units, then follow automatically from the definitions of the metre, second, kilogram and kelvin.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

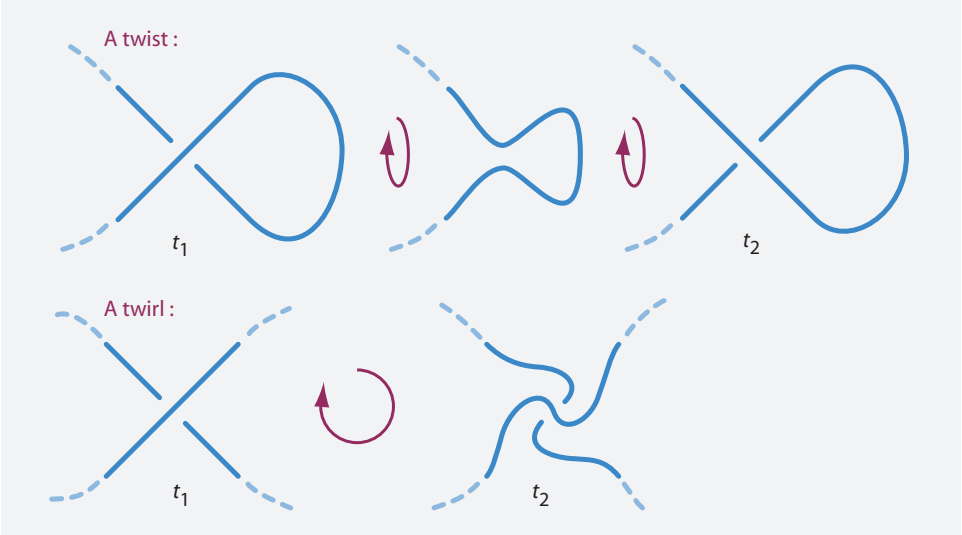


FIGURE 11 An example of strand deformation leading to a crossing switch (above) and one that does *not* lead to a crossing switch (below).

observer cannot define a really continuous background space-time; careful consideration tells us that the space-time defined by the observer is somewhat fuzzy: it is effectively *shivering*. The average shivering amplitude is, in the best possible case, of the order of a Planck time and length. Therefore, crossing switches faster than the Planck time are not observable by an observer made of strands.**

Strands are *impenetrable*; the switch of a crossing thus always requires the motion of strand segments *around* each other. The simplest example of a deformation leading to a crossing switch is shown in Figure 11.

Can you deduce the strand processes for the Planck momentum, the Planck force and the Planck energy? Challenge 113 s

Challenge 114 e

Exploring strand processes we find: the fundamental principle implies that every Planck unit is an observer-invariant *limit value*. Therefore, the fundamental principle naturally contains special and general relativity, quantum theory and thermodynamics (though not elementary particle physics!). In theory, this argument is sufficient to show that the fundamental principle contains all these parts of twentieth century physics. In practice, however, physicists do not change their thinking habits that quickly; thus we need to show this result in more detail.

Page 35

** The issue of time remains subtle also in the strand model. The requirement of consistency with macroscopic experience, realized with shivering space or space-time, allows us to side-step the issue. An alternative approach might be to picture a crossing switch and its fluctuations in 4 space-time dimensions, thus visualizing how the minimum time interval is related to minimum distance. This might be worth exploring. But also in this approach, the fuzziness due to shivering is at the basis of minimum time. Challenge 112 r

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

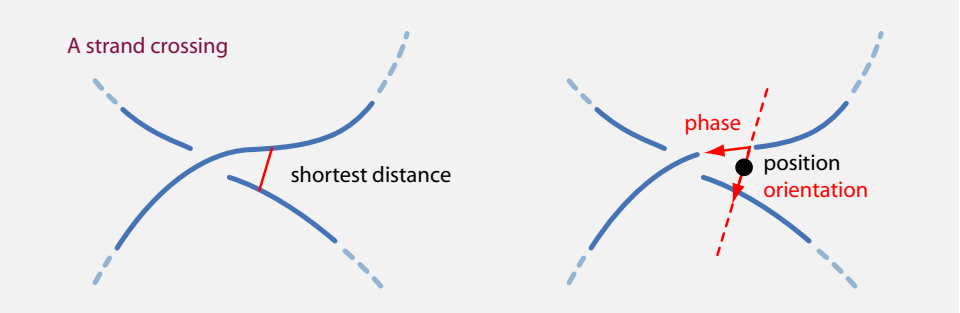


FIGURE 12 The definition of a crossing, its position, its orientation and its phase.

Events, processes, interactions and colours

In the strand model, every physical process is described as a sequence of crossing switches. But every physical process is also a sequence of events. We thus deduce that events are processes:

▷ Any ***event***, any observation, any measurement and any interaction is composed of switches of crossings between two strand segments.

The crossing switch is the fundamental process in nature. We will show that describing events and interactions with the help of crossing switches leads, without alternative, to the *complete* standard model of particle physics, with all its known gauge interactions and all its known particle spectrum.

In particular, we will show:

▷ Particle masses, the ***elementary electric charge*** e and the ***fine structure constant*** $\alpha = 137.036(1)$ are due to crossing switches.

The value of the fine structure constant and the standard model are *not evident* consequences of the fundamental principle; nevertheless, they are *natural* consequences – as we will find out.

From strands to modern physics

Every observation and every process is a sequence of crossing switches of unobservable strands. In turn, crossing switches are automatic consequences of the shape fluctuations of strands. We will show below that all the continuous quantities we are used to – physical space, physical time, gauge fields and wave functions – result from *averaging* crossing switches over the background space. The main conceptual tools necessary in the following are:

▷ A ***crossing*** of strands is a local minimum of strand distance. The position, orientation and phase of a crossing are defined by the space vector corresponding to the local minimum of distance, as shown in Figure 12.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Page 167 The position, orientation and phase of crossings will lead, as shown later on, to the position, orientation and phase of wave functions. The sign of the orientation is defined by arbitrarily selecting one strand as the starting strand. The even larger arbitrariness in the definition of the phase will be of great importance later on: it implies the existence of the three known gauge groups.

▷ A ***crossing switch*** is the rotation of the crossing orientation by an angle π *at a specific position*. More precisely, a crossing switch is the *inversion* of the orientation at a specific position.

We note that the definitions make use of all *three* dimensions of space; therefore the number of crossings and of crossing switches is *independent* of the direction of observation. This contrasts with the definition of crossing used in two-dimensional knot diagrams; in such two-dimensional projections, the number of crossings does depend on the direction of the projection.

We note that strand fluctuations do not conserve the number of crossings; due to fluctuations, crossings disappear and appear and disappear over time. This appearance and disappearance will turn out to be related to virtual particles.

The fundamental principle declares that events are not points on manifolds; instead,

▷ ***Events*** are (one or several) observable crossing switches of unobservable strands.

Since all observations are events, all experimental observations should follow from the Page 342 strand definition of an event. We will confirm this in the rest of this text. The strands are featureless: they have no mass, no tension, no stiffness, no branches, no fixed length, no ends, and they cannot be pulled, cut or pushed through each other. Strands have no measurable property at all: strands are unobservable. Only crossing switches are observable. Featureless strands are thus among the simplest possible extended constituents. Page 160 How simple are they? We will discuss this issue shortly.

▷ ***Strands*** are one-dimensional curves in three-dimensional space that reach the border of space.

In practice, the *border of space* has one of two possible meanings. Whenever space is assumed to be flat, the border of space is spatial infinity. Whenever we take into account the properties of the universe as a whole, the border of space is the cosmic horizon.

Imagining the strands as having Planck diameter does not make them observable, as this measurement result cannot be realized. (We recall that the Planck length is the lower bound on any length measurement.) In low energy situations, a vanishing strand diameter is an excellent approximation.

▷ In a purist definition, featureless strands have no diameter – neither the Planck length nor zero. They are better thought as *long thin clouds*.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

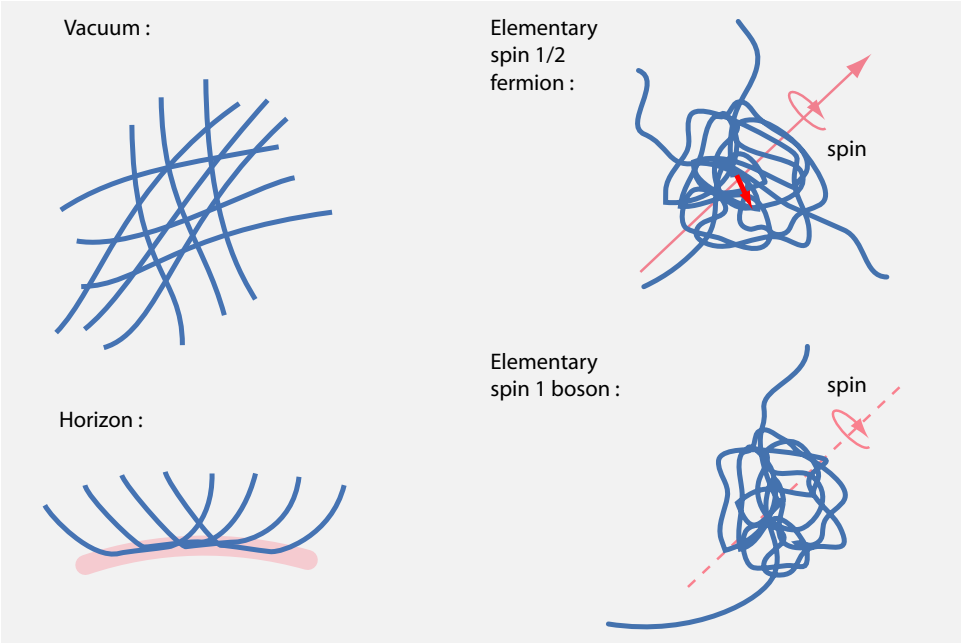


FIGURE 13 A first illustration of the basic physical systems found in nature; they will be explored in detail below.

Strands are unobservable and featureless, and thus have no diameter. Due to shape fluctuations, or equivalently, due to the shivering of space-time, the strands can be thought as having an effective diameter, akin to the diameter of a long thin cloud; this effective diameter is just a guide to our thinking. Since it is due to the shivering of the background space-time, the strand diameter is invariant under boosts. Funnels, mentioned
Page 164 below, might be a better visualization of the purist definition of strand. To keep this introduction as intuitive as possible, however, we stick with the idea of strands having an effective, invariant Planck diameter.

The strand model distinguishes *physical space* from *background space*. We will show
Page 162 shortly why both concepts are required. With this distinction, the strand model asserts that matter and radiation, vacuum and horizons, are all built from *fluctuating strands* in a *continuous background*. We first clarify the two basic space concepts.

- ▷ ***Physical space***, or vacuum, is a physical system made of tangles that has size, curvature and other measurable properties.
- ▷ ***Continuous background space*** is introduced by the observer only to be able to describe observations. Every observer introduces his own background. It does not need to coincide with physical space, and it does not do so at the location of matter or black holes. But every observer's background is continuous and has three spatial and one temporal dimension.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 7 Correspondences between all known physical systems and mathematical tangles.

Physical system	Strand content	Tangle type
Vacuum and dark energy	many unknotted and untangled infinite strands	unlinked, trivial tangle
Graviton	two infinite twisted strands	rational tangle
Gravity wave	many infinite twisted strands	many rational tangles
Horizon	many woven infinite strands	woven, web-like tangle
Elementary vector boson (radiation)	one infinite curved strand	any one from a family of tangled curves
Classical electromagnetic wave (radiation)	many infinite curved strands	many helically deformed/tangled curves
Elementary quark (matter)	two infinite linked strands	rational tangle
Elementary lepton (matter)	three infinite linked strands	braided tangle

Page 201

At this point of the discussion, we simply *assume* background space. Later on we will see why background space appears and why it *needs* to be three-dimensional. The *size* of the background space is assumed to be large; larger than any physical scale under discussion. In most situations of everyday life, when space is flat, background space and physical space coincide. However, they differ in situations with curvature and at Planck energy.

▷ ***Fluctuations*** change the position, shape and length of strands; fluctuations thus change position, orientation and phase of strand crossings. However, fluctuations never allow one strand to pass through another.

All strand fluctuations are possible, as long as strands do not interpenetrate. For example, there is no speed limit for strands. Whenever strand fluctuations lead to a crossing switch, they lead to an observable effect – be it a vacuum fluctuation, a particle reaction or a horizon fluctuation.

▷ Fluctuations are a consequence of the embedding of strands in a continuous background.

In the strand model, even isolated physical systems are surrounded by a bath of fluctuating vacuum strands. The properties of fluctuations, such as their spectrum, their density etc., are fixed once and for all by the embedding. Fluctuations are necessary for the self-consistency of the strand model.

Due to the impenetrability of strands – which itself is a consequence of the embedding in a continuous background – any disturbance of the vacuum strands at one location *propagates*. We will see below what disturbances exist and how they differ from fluctuations.

Fluctuating strands that lead to crossing switches explain everything that *does* happen, and explain everything that does *not* happen. Our main aim in the following is to classify

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

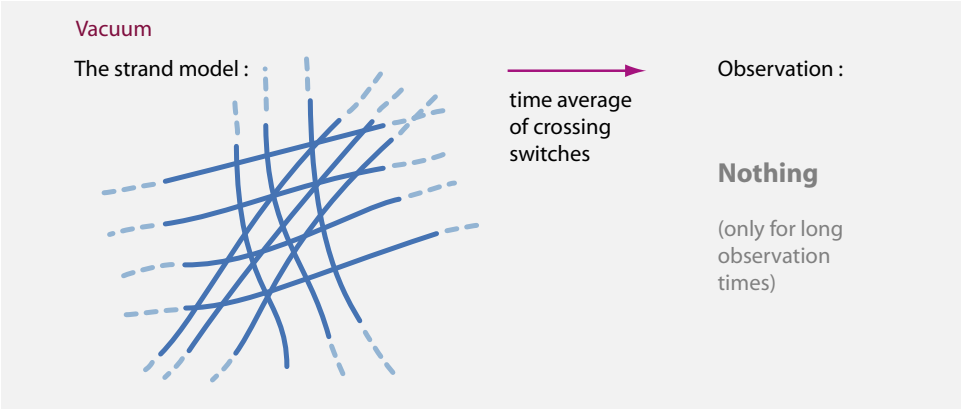


FIGURE 14 A illustration of the strand model for the vacuum.

all possible strand fluctuations and all possible strand configurations, in particular, all states that differ from flat vacuum states. By doing so, we will be able to classify every process and every system that we observe in nature.

We will discover that *all physical systems* can be constructed from strands. Table 7 gives a first overview of how vacuum, particles and horizons result from strand *tangles*.

▷ A ***tangle*** is a configuration of one or more strands that are *linked* or *knotted*. Tangles are characterized by their topology, i.e., by the precise way that they are linked or knotted.

Page 150 Some examples of important tangles are given in Figure 13. They will be discussed in detail in the following. Among others, we will discover that knots and knotted tangles do not play a role in the strand model.

We observe that vacuum, matter and radiation are all made of the *same* fundamental Page 303 constituents, as required for a final theory. We will discover below that classifying localized tangles naturally leads to the elementary particles that make up the standard model of particle physics – and to no other elementary particle.

We will also discover that strand fluctuations and the induced crossing switches in every physical system lead to the evolution equations and the Lagrangians of quantum field theory and of general relativity. In this way, strands describe *every* physical process observed in nature, including *all known interactions* and every type of motion.

Page 146 The fundamental principle relates crossing switches and observations. The fundamental principle was discovered because it appears to be the only simple definition of Planck units that on the one hand yields space-time, with its continuity, local isotropy and curvature, and on the other hand realizes the known connection between the quantum of action, spin and rotation.

Vacuum

We now construct, step by step, all important physical systems, concepts and processes from tangles. We start with the most important.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

▷ ***Vacuum***, or ***physical space***, is formed by the time average of many unknotted fluctuating strands.

Figure 14 visualizes the definition. In the following, vacuum and physical space are always taken to be synonyms; the exploration will show that this is the most sensible use of the two concepts.* However, as mentioned, the strand model distinguishes *physical* space from *background* space. In particular, since matter and vacuum are made of the same constituents, it is impossible to speak of physical space at the location of matter. At the location of matter, it is only possible to use the concept of background space.

When the strand fluctuations in flat vacuum are averaged over time, there are no crossing switches. Equivalently, if we use concepts to be introduced shortly, flat vacuum shows, averaged over time, no knots and no tangles, so that it is observed to be empty of matter and radiation. Temporary tangles that appear for a short time through vacuum fluctuations will be shown later to represent virtual particles.

Page 231

We note that the (flat) physical vacuum state, which appears after averaging the strand crossings, is *continuous*, *Lorentz invariant* and *unique*. These are important points for the consistency of the model. Later we will also discover that curvature and horizons have a natural description in terms of strands; exploring them will yield the field equations of general relativity. The strand model thus replaces what used to be called 'space-time foam' or 'quantum foam'.

Page 271

We also note that Figure 14 implies, despite appearances, that vacuum is *isotropic*. To see this, we need to recall that the observables are the crossing switches, not the strands, and that the observed vacuum isotropy results from the isotropy of the time-averaged strand fluctuations.

▷ We do not make any statement on the numerical density of strands in vacuum, or, equivalently, on their average spacing. Since strands are not observable, such a statement is not sensible. In particular, strands in vacuum are *not* tightly packed.

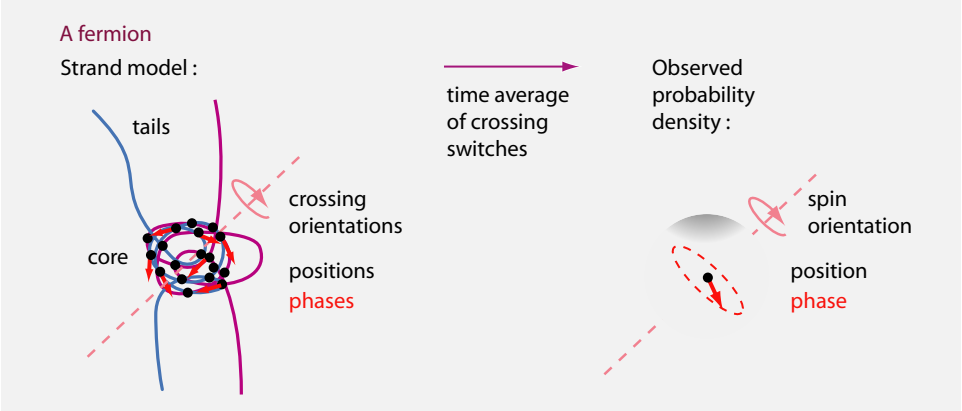
With the definition of the vacuum as a time average, the strand model yields a minimum length and a continuous vacuum at the same time. In this way, many issues about the alleged contradiction between continuity and minimum length are put to rest. In particular, physical space is *not* fundamentally discrete: a minimum length appears, though only in domains where physical space is undefined. On the other hand, the continuity of physical space results from an averaging process. Therefore, physical space is *not* fundamentally continuous: the strand model describes physical space as a homogeneous distribution of crossing switches. This is the strand version of Wheeler's idea space-time foam.

Observable values and limits

The fundamental principle implies the following definitions of the basic observables:

* We recall that since over a century, the concept of aether is superfluous, because it is indistinguishable from the concept of vacuum.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Page 167 FIGURE 15 The tangle model of a spin 1/2 particle. More details will be given below.

- ▷ The ***distance*** between two particles is the maximum number of crossing switches that can be measured between them. Length measurement is thus defined as counting Planck lengths.
- ▷ The ***time interval*** between two events is the maximum number of crossing switches that can be measured between them. Time measurement is thus defined as counting Planck times.
- ▷ The physical ***action*** of a physical system evolving from an initial to a final state is the number of crossing switches that can be measured. Action measurement is thus defined as counting crossing switches. Physical action is thus a measure for the *change* that a system undergoes.
- ▷ The ***entropy*** of any physical system is related to the logarithm of the number of possible measurable crossing switches. Entropy measurement is thus defined through the counting of crossing switches. The strand model thus states that *any large physical system* – be it made of matter, radiation, empty space or horizons – has entropy.

It is well-known that all other physical observables are defined using these four basic ones. In other words, *all* physical observables are defined with crossing switches. We also note that even though counting always yields an integer, the result of a physical measurement is often an *average* of many counting processes. As a result of averaging and fluctuations, measured values can be non-integer multiples of Planck units. Therefore, space, time, action, entropy and all other observables are effectively real numbers, and thus continuous. Continuity is thus reconciled with the existence of a minimum measurable length and time interval.

Finally, we note that defining observables with the help of crossing switches automatically makes the Planck units c, $\hbar$, $c^4/4G$, k and all their combinations both *observer-invariant* and *limit* values. All these conclusions agree with the corresponding requirements for a final theory of nature.

Page 143

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Particles and fields

Strands also define particles, as illustrated in Figure 15:

▷ A ***quantum particle*** is a *tangle* of fluctuating strands. The tangle *core*, the region where the strands are linked or knotted, defines position, speed, phase and spin of the particle. The tangle *tails* reach up to the border of space.

Page 169 As shown in more detail soon, this definition of quantum particles yields, depending on the tangle details, either fermion or boson behaviour, and reproduces the spin–statistics theorem.

Boson tangles will allow us to model field intensities. In particular, boson tangles allow us to deduce the electromagnetic and the two nuclear fields, as well as the corresponding gauge symmetries of the standard model of particle physics.

Page 217

Page 207 Modelling fermions as tangles will allow us to deduce Dirac's equation for relativistic quantum particles (and the Schrödinger equation for non-relativistic particles). Still later, by classifying all possible tangles, we will discover that only a *finite* number of possible elementary particles exist, and that the *topological type* of tangle determines the mass, mixings, quantum numbers, charges and couplings of each elementary particle. We could also speak of a *tangle model*.

Page 304

In the 1960s, John Wheeler stated that a unified description of nature must explain 'mass without mass, charge without charge, field without field'. The strand model realizes this aim, as we will find out.

Before we deduce modern physics, we first take a break and explore some general issues of the strand model.

Curiosities and fun challenges about strands

Why do crossing switches have such a central role in the strand model? An intuitive explanation follows from their role in the definition of observables. All measurements – be they measurements of position, speed, mass or any other observable – are electromagnetic. In other words, all measurements in nature are, in the end, detection of photons. And the strand model shows that photon absorption and detection are intimately related to the crossing switch, as we will find out below.

Page 221

* *

Is there a limit to the fluctuations of strands? Yes and no. On the one hand, the 'speed' of fluctuations is unlimited. On the other hand, fluctuations with a 'curvature radius' smaller than a Planck length do not lead to observable effects. Note that the terms 'speed' and 'radius' are between quotation marks because they are unobservable. Care is needed when talking about strands and their fluctuations.

* *

What are strands made of? This question tests whether we are really able to maintain the fundamental circularity of the unified description. Strands are featureless. They have no measurable properties: they have no branches, carry no fields and, in particular, they cannot be divided into parts. The 'substance' that strands are made of has no properties.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Thus strands are not made of anything. This may seem surprising at first. Strands are extended, and we naturally imagine them as sequence of points. But this is a fallacy. Given the way that observations and events are defined, there is no way to observe, to label or to distinguish points on strands. Crossing switches do not allow doing so, as is Challenge 115 e easily checked: the mathematical points we imagine on a strand are not physical points. 'Points' on strands are unobservable: they simply do not exist.

But strands must be made of something, we might insist. Later we will find out that Page 294 in the strand model, the universe is made of a single strand folded in a complicated way. Nature is one strand. Therefore, strands are not made of something, they are made of everything. The substance of strands is nature itself.

* *

What are particles? In the strand model, elementary particles are (families of) *tangles* of strands. In other words, elementary particles are not the basic building blocks of matter – strands are. If particles could *really* be elementary, it would be impossible to understand their properties.

In the strand model, particles are not really elementary, but neither are they, in the usual sense, composed. Particles are tangles of unobservable strands. In this way, the strand model retains the useful aspects of the idea of elementary particle but gets rid of its limitations. In a sense, the strand model can be seen as eliminating the concepts of elementariness and of particle. This confirms and realizes another requirement that we Page 74 had deduced earlier on.

* *

Challenge 116 e Can macroscopic determinism arise at all from randomly fluctuating strands?

* *

Challenge 117 e Do parallel strands form a crossing?

* *

Challenge 118 s Do two distant strands form a crossing?

* *

Challenge 119 s Is a crossing switch defined in more than three dimensions?

* *

Challenge 120 s Can you find a way to generalize or to modify the strand model?

* *

Looking back, we might note a relation between the strand model and the vision of 'it from qubit' that is propagated by David Deutsch. What is the difference between the Challenge 121 e fundamental principle and a qubit?

* *

Is the strand model confirmed by other, independent research? Yes, a few years after the strand model appeared, this started to happen. For example, in a long article exploring

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the small scale structure of space-time from various different research perspectives in general relativity, Steven Carlip comes to the conclusion that all these perspectives suggest the common result that 'space at a fixed time is thus threaded by rapidly fluctuating lines'. This is exactly what the strand model states.

Ref. 153

Other theoretical approaches that confirm the strand model are mentioned in various places later in the text. Despite such developments, the essential point remains to check how the strand model compares with experiment. Given that the strand model turns out to be unmodifiable, there are no ways to amend predictions that turn out to be wrong. If a single prediction of the strand model turns out to be incorrect, the model is doomed. So far, no experimental prediction of the strand model contradicts experiments.

Page 290

Page 382

Do strands unify? – The millennium list of open issues

Does the strand model reproduce all the paradoxical results we found in the first chapters? Yes, it does. The strand model implies that vacuum cannot be distinguished from matter at Planck scales: both are made of strands. The strand model implies that observables are not real numbers at Planck scales. The strand model implies that the universe and the vacuum are the same, when explored at high precision: both are made of one strand. The strand model also implies that the number of particles in the universe is not clearly defined and that nature is not a set. You can check by yourself that all other paradoxes appear automatically. Furthermore, almost all requirements for a final theory listed in Table 6 are fulfilled. Only two requirements of the table must be discussed in more detail: the requirements of complete precision and of unmodifiability. We start with complete precision.

Page 62

Page 71

Page 87

Page 124

Challenge 122 e

If strands really describe *all* of nature, they must explain the inverse square dependence with distance of the electrostatic and of the gravitational interaction. But that is not sufficient. If the strand model is a final, unified description, it must provide *complete* precision. This requires, first of all, that the model describes *all* experiments. As will be shown below, this is indeed the case, because the strand model contains both general relativity and the standard model of particle physics. But secondly and most importantly, the model must also settle all those questions that were left unanswered by twentieth-century fundamental physics. Because the questions, the *millennium list* of open issues, are so important, they are given, again, in Table 8.

TABLE 8 The millennium list: *everything* the standard model and general relativity *cannot* explain; thus, also the list of the *only* experimental data available to test the final, unified description of motion.

Observable Property unexplained since the year 2000	
Local quantities unexplained by the standard model: particle properties	
$\alpha = 1/137.036(1)$	the low energy value of the electromagnetic coupling constant
α_w or θ_w	the low energy value of the weak coupling constant or the value of the weak mixing angle
α_s	the value of the strong coupling constant at one specific energy value
m_q	the values of the 6 quark masses
m_l	the values of 6 lepton masses
m_W	the value of the mass of the W vector boson

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 8 (Continued) *Everything* the standard model and general relativity *cannot* explain.

OBSERVABLE	PROPERTY UNEXPLAINED SINCE THE YEAR 2000
m_H	the value of the mass of the scalar Higgs boson
$\theta_{12}, \theta_{13}, \theta_{23}$	the value of the three quark mixing angles
δ	the value of the CP violating phase for quarks
$\theta^\nu_{12}, \theta^\nu_{13}, \theta^\nu_{23}$	the value of the three neutrino mixing angles
$\delta^\nu, \alpha_1, \alpha_2$	the value of the three CP violating phases for neutrinos
$3 \cdot 4$	the number of fermion generations and of particles in each generation
J, P, C, etc.	the origin of all quantum numbers of each fermion and each boson
Local mathematical structures unexplained by the standard model	
$c, \hbar, k$	the origin of the invariant Planck units of quantum field theory
3 + 1	the number of dimensions of physical space and time
SO(3,1)	the origin of Poincaré symmetry, i.e., of spin, position, energy, momentum
$S(n)$	the origin of particle identity, i.e., of permutation symmetry
Gauge symmetry	the origin of the gauge groups, in particular:
U(1)	the origin of the electromagnetic gauge group, i.e., of the quantization of electric charge, as well as the vanishing of magnetic charge
SU(2)	the origin of weak interaction gauge group, its breaking and P violation
SU(3)	the origin of strong interaction gauge group and its CP conservation
Ren. group	the origin of renormalization properties
$\delta W = 0$	the origin of wave functions and the least action principle in quantum theory
$W = \int L_{SM}\, dt$	the origin of the Lagrangian of the standard model of particle physics
Global quantities unexplained by general relativity and cosmology	
0	the observed flatness, i.e., vanishing curvature, of the universe
$1.2(1) \cdot 10^{26}$ m	the distance of the horizon, i.e., the 'size' of the universe (if it makes sense)
$\rho_{de} = \Lambda c^4/(8\pi G)$ $\approx 0.5\,\mathrm{nJ/m^3}$	the value and nature of the observed vacuum energy density, dark energy or cosmological constant
$(5 \pm 4) \cdot 10^{79}$	the number of baryons in the universe (if it makes sense), i.e., the average visible matter density in the universe
$f_0(1, ..., c.\ 10^{90})$	the initial conditions for *c.* 10^{90} particle fields in the universe (if or as long as they make sense), including the homogeneity and isotropy of matter distribution, and the density fluctuations at the origin of galaxies
ρ_{dm}	the density and nature of dark matter
Global mathematical structures unexplained by general relativity and cosmology	
c, G	the origin of the invariant Planck units of general relativity
$\delta \int L_{GR} dt = 0$	the origin of the least action principle and the Lagrangian of general relativity
$R \times S^3$	the observed topology of the universe

The open issues in the millennium list must be resolved by any final, unified model of nature, and thus also by the strand model. The open issues can be summarized in two general points:

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— *Reproduce* quantum theory, the standard model, general relativity and cosmology.

— *Explain* masses, mixing angles and coupling constants.

Of course, only the second point is the *definite test* for a final, unified description. But we need the first point as well. The following chapters deal with the two points.

Are strands final? – On generalizations and modifications

> The chief attraction of the theory lies in its logical completeness. If a single one of the conclusions drawn from it proves wrong, it must be given up; to modify it without destroying the whole structure seems impossible.
>
> Albert Einstein, *The Times*, 28. 11. 1919.

If a description of motion claims to be *final*, it must explain *all* aspects of motion. To be a full explanation, such a description must not only be logically and experimentally complete, it must also be *unmodifiable*. Even though Einstein made the point for general relativity, this important aspect is rarely discussed with clarity. In particular, any unmodifiable explanation has two main properties: first, it cannot be generalized, and second, it is not itself a generalization.

Generalizing models is a sport among theoretical and mathematical physicists. If you have a description of a part of nature, they will try to find more general cases. For any candidate unified description, they will try to explore the model in more than three dimensions, with more than three generations of quarks, with more complicated gauge symmetries, with different types of supersymmetry, with more Higgs bosons, or with additional heavy neutrinos. In the case of the strand model, researchers will also explore models with more complicated entities than strands, such as bands or bifurcating entities, and any other generalization they can imagine.

Can a *final* description of nature have generalizations? The answer is *no*. Indeed, if it were possible to generalize the final description, it would lose the ability to *explain* any of the millennium issues! If a candidate unified theory could be generalized, it would not be final. In short, if the strand model is a final description, the efforts of theoretical and mathematical physicists just described must all be impossible. So far, investigations confirm this prediction: no generalization of the strand model has been found yet.

Where does this fondness for generalization come from? In the history of physics, generalizations often led to advances and discoveries. In the past, generalizations often led to descriptions that had a *wider range* of validity. As a result, generalizing became the way to search for new discoveries. Indeed, in the history of physics, the old theory often was a *special case* of the new theory. This relation was so common that usually, *approximation* and *special case* were taken to be synonyms. This connection leads to a second point.

General relativity and the standard model of particle physics must indeed be *approximations* of the final theory. But can either general relativity or the standard model be *special cases* of the final, unified theory? Or, equivalently: Can the unified theory itself be a generalization of existing theories? The answer is again *no*. Because neither general

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

relativity nor the standard model of particle physics are able to explain the millennium issues, any generalization of them would also be unable to do so. Generalizations have *no* explanatory power. If the unified theory were a generalization of the two existing theories, it could not explain any of the millennium issues of Table 8! Therefore, general relativity and the standard model of particle physics must be approximations, but *not* special cases, of the final theory. In particular, if the strand model is a final description, *approximations* of the strand model must exist, but *special cases* must not. This is indeed the case, as we will find out.

To summarize, a final theory must be an *explanation* of all observations. An explanation of an observation is the recognition that it follows unambiguously, *without alternative*, from a general property of nature. We conclude that the final, unified description of motion must neither allow generalization nor must it be a generalization of either the standard model or general relativity. The unified theory cannot be generalized and cannot be 'specialized'; the unified theory must be *unmodifiable*.* This requirement is extremely strong; you may check that it eliminates most past attempts at unification. For example, this requirement eliminates grand unification, supersymmetry and higher dimensions as aspects of the final theory: indeed, these ideas *generalize* the standard model of elementary particles and they are *modifiable*. Therefore, all these ideas lack explanatory power.

Challenge 123 e

A final and unified theory must be an *unmodifiable explanation* of general relativity and the standard model. Because neither supersymmetry, nor the superstring conjecture, nor loop quantum gravity explain the standard model of particle physics, they are not unified theories. Because these models are modifiable, they are not final theories. In fact, at least one of these two aspects is lacking in every candidate final theory proposed in the twentieth century.

We will discover below that *the strand model is unmodifiable*. Its fundamental principle cannot be varied in any way without destroying the whole description. Indeed, no modification of the strand model or of the fundamental principle has been found so far. We will also discover that the strand model *explains* the standard model of particle physics and explains general relativity. The strand model is thus a candidate for the final theory.

Challenge 124 e

Why strands? – Simplicity

> "Simplex sigillum veri.**"
>
> Antiquity

Let us assume that we do not know yet whether the strand model can be modified or not. Two other reasons still induce us to explore featureless strands as basis for a unified description. First, featureless strands are the *simplest* known model that unifies quantum field theory and general relativity. Second, featureless strands are the *only*

Ref. 154

* In the meantime the author found out that David Deutsch makes a similar point with his criterion that an explanation is only correct if it is *hard to vary*. Used in the case of a final theory, we can say that the final theory must be an *explanation* of general relativity and of the standard model. This implies that the final theory must be hard to vary. This matches the above conclusion that the final theory must be unmodifiable.

** 'Simplicity is the seal of truth.'

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Page 102 *known* model that realizes an important requirement: a unified description must not be based on points, sets or any axiomatic system. Let us explore the issue of simplicity first.

In order to reproduce three-dimensional space, Planck units, spin, and black-hole entropy, the fundamental constituents must be *extended* and *fluctuating*. We have deduced
Page 112 this result in detail in the previous chapter. The extension must be one-dimensional, because this is the simplest option, and it is also the only option compatible with three-dimensional space. In fact, one-dimensional strands explain the three-dimensionality of space, because tangles of one-dimensional strands exist *only* in three spatial dimensions. In four or more dimensions, any tangle or knot can be undone; this is impossible in three spatial dimensions.

Ref. 140 No *simpler* model than featureless strands is possible. All other extended constituents
Ref. 155 that have been explored – ribbons, bands, strings, membranes, posets, branched lines,
Ref. 156 networks, crystals and quantum knots – increase the complexity of the model. In fact
Ref. 157 these constituents increase the complexity in *two* ways: they increase the number of features of the fundamental constituents and they complicate the mapping from the model to observation.

First, no other model based on extension uses *featureless* constituents. In all other models, the fundamental constituents have properties such as tension, field values, coordinates, quantum numbers, shape, twists, orientation, non-trivial topological information, etc. In some models, space-time is non-commutative or fermionic. All these features are *assumed*; they are added to the model by fiat. As such, they allow alternatives and are difficult if not impossible to justify. In addition, these features increase the complexity of the possible processes. In contrast, the strand model has no justification issue and no complexity issue.

Secondly, the link between more complicated models and experiment is often *intricate* and sometimes not unique. As an example, the difficulties to relate superstrings to
Ref. 150 experiments are well-known. In contrast, the strand model argues that the experimentally accessible Dirac equation of quantum field theory and the experimentally accessible field equations of general relativity arise *directly*, from an averaging procedure of crossing switches. Indeed, the strand model proposes to unify these two halves of physics with only one fundamental principle: strand crossing switches define Planck units. In fact, we will find out that the strand model describes not only vacuum and matter, but also gauge interactions and particle properties as *natural* consequences of the structure of nature at Planck scales. The comparable ideas in other models are much more elaborate.

We remark that building three-dimensional physical space from strands is even simpler than building it from points! In order to build three-dimensional space from *points*, we need concepts such as sets, neighbourhoods, topological structures and metric structures. And despite all these intricate concepts, the concept of space defined in this way still has no defined physical length scale; in short, it is *not* the same as physical space. In contrast, in order to build three-dimensional physical space from *strands*, we need no fundamental points, sets, or metric structures; we only need long-time averages of strands and their crossings. And the length scale is built in.

All this suggests that the strand model, based on featureless, one-dimensional and fluctuating constituents, might be the model for unification with the smallest number of concepts, thus satisfying Occam's razor. In fact, we will discover that strands indeed are the *simplest* way to model particles, interactions and the vacuum, while fulfilling the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 9 The differences between nature and any description.

NATURE	DESCRIPTION
Nature is not a set.	Descriptions need sets to allow talking and thinking.
Nature has no events, no points and no continuity.	Descriptions need events, points and continuous 3 + 1-dimensional space-time to allow formulating them.
Nature has no point particles.	Descriptions need point particles to allow talking and thinking.
Nature is not local.	Descriptions need locality to allow talking and thinking.
Nature has no background.	Descriptions need a background to allow talking and thinking.
Nature shows something akin to $R \leftrightarrow 1/R$ duality.	Descriptions need to break duality to allow talking and thinking.
Nature is not axiomatic but contains circular definitions.	Axiomatic descriptions are needed for precise talking and thinking.

requirements of a final theory.

The simplicity of a model helps in two ways. First, the simpler a model is, the freer it is of ideology, preconceptions and beliefs. Secondly, the simpler a model is, the easier it can be checked against observation. In particular, a simple model allows simple checking of its solution of paradoxes. Above all, we can resolve the most important paradox of physics.

WHY STRANDS? – THE FUNDAMENTAL CIRCULARITY OF PHYSICS

> Without the concepts *place*, *void* and *time*, change cannot be. [...] It is therefore clear [...] that their investigation has to be carried out, by studying each of them separately.
>
> Aristotle *Physics*, Book III, part 1.

The strand model describes strands as fluctuating in a background space-time of three plus one space-time dimensions. The background space-time is introduced by the observer. The background is thus different for every observer; however, all such backgrounds have three dimensions of space and one of time. The observer – be it a machine, an animal or a human – is itself made of strands, so that in fact, the background space is itself the product of strands.

We therefore have a fundamental circular definition: we describe strands with a background, and the background with strands. *Strands thus do not provide an axiomatic system in the mathematical sense.* This fulfils one of the requirements for the unified description.

Page 105

Why does the fundamental circular definition arise? Physics is talking (and think-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

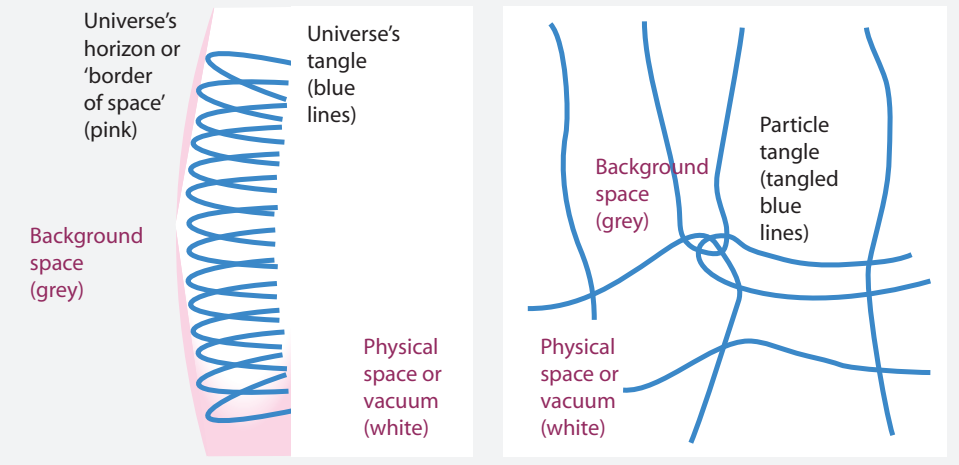

Universe's horizon or 'border of space' (pink)
Universe's tangle (blue lines)
Background space (grey)
Physical space or vacuum (white)
Background space (grey)
Particle tangle (tangled blue lines)
Physical space or vacuum (white)

FIGURE 16 In the strand model, physical space – or vacuum – and background space are distinct, both near the horizon and near particles.

ing) about nature and motion. A unified model of physics is talking about motion with highest precision. This implies that on the one hand, as talkers, we must use *concepts that allow us to talk*. Talking and thinking requires that we use continuous space and time: on short, we must use a *background*. The background must be continuous, without minimum length. On the other hand, to talk *with precision*, we must have a minimum length, and use *strands*. There is no way to get rid of this double and apparently contradictory requirement. More such contradictory requirements are listed in Table 9. And since there is no way to get rid of these contradictory requirements, we don't: *we use both continuous background space-time and discrete strands to describe nature.*

In a few words: A unified model of physics allows talking about motion with highest precision. This requirement forces us to use, *at the same time*, both continuous space-time and discrete strands. This double use is not a contradiction but, as just explained, the result of a *circular definition*. Since we, the talkers, are part of nature, a unified model means that we, the talkers, talk about ourselves.*

We do not state that *background* space and time exist *a priori*, as Immanuel Kant states, but only that background space and time are *necessary* for thinking and talking, as Aristotle states. In fact, *physical* space and time result from strands, and thus do not exist a priori; however, background space and time are required concepts for any description of observations, and thus necessary for thinking and talking. Figure 16 illustrates the solution proposed by the strand model.

Ref. 158

We have always to be careful to keep the fundamental circular definition of strands and backgrounds *in our mind*. Any temptation to resolve it leads astray. For example, if we attempt to define *sets* or *elements* (or points) with the help of measurements, we are

* It is essential that despite this circularity, Gödel's incompleteness theorem does not apply to the situation. In fact, the theorem does not apply to any unified theory of physics. The incompleteness theorem applies to *self-referential* statements, not to circular definitions. Self-referential statements do not appear in physics, not in sensible mathematics and not in the strand model.

Vol. III, page 300

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

hiding or forgetting the fundamental circularity. Indeed, many physicists constructed and still construct axiomatic systems for their field. The fundamental circularity implies that axiomatic systems are possible for *parts* of physics, but not for physics as a whole. Indeed, there are axiomatic descriptions of classical mechanics, of electrodynamics, of quantum theory, of quantum field theory, and even of general relativity. But there is no axiomatic system for *all* of physics – i.e., for the description of all motion – and there cannot be one.

Page 105

A further issue must be discussed in this context. As mentioned, strands fluctuate in a background space, and only crossing switches can be observed. In particular, this implies that the mathematical points of the background space cannot be observed. In other words, despite using mathematical points to describe the background space (and strands themselves), none of them have physical significance. *Physical points do not exist in the strand model.* Physical locations of events are due to crossing switches, and can at best be localized to within a Planck length. The same limitation applies to physical events and to physical locations in time. *A natural Planck-scale non-locality is built into the model.* This realizes a further requirement that any unified description has to fulfil.

The situation for physicists working on unification is thus harder – and more fascinating – than that for biologists, for example. Biology is talking about living systems. Biologists are themselves living systems. But in the case of biologists, this does *not* lead to a circular definition. Biology does not use concepts that contain circular definitions: a living being has no problems describing *other* living beings. Even neurobiologists, who aim to explore the functioning of the brain, face no fundamental limit doing so, even though they explore the human brain using their own brain: a brain has no problem describing other brains. In contrast, physicists working on unification need to live with circularity: a fundamental, precise description of motion requires to be conscious of our own limitations as describing beings. And our main limitation is that we cannot think without continuous space and time, even though these concepts do not apply to nature.

Ref. 159

We conclude: *A unified description cannot be axiomatic, cannot be based on observable physical points, must distinguish physical space from background space, and cannot be background-independent.* Many models based on extended constituents also use backgrounds. However, most models also allow the definition of sets and axiomatic descriptions. Such models thus cannot be candidates for a unified description of nature. In contrast, the strand model keeps the fundamental circularity of physics intact; it does not allow an axiomatic formulation of fundamental physics, and only allows points or sets as approximate concepts.

Funnels – an equivalent alternative to strands

Another type of constituent also fulfils all the conditions for a unified description. As shown in Figure 17, as an alternative to fluctuating strands, we can use fluctuating *funnels* as fundamental constituents. In the description with funnels, nature resembles a complicated tangle of a three-dimensional space that is projected back into three dimensions.

Funnels show that the strand model only requires that the effective *minimal* effective diameter of a strand is the Planck length; it could have other diameters as well. Funnels also show that due to varying diameters, strands can, through their fluctuations, literally be everywhere in space and thus effectively *fill* space, even if their actual density is low.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

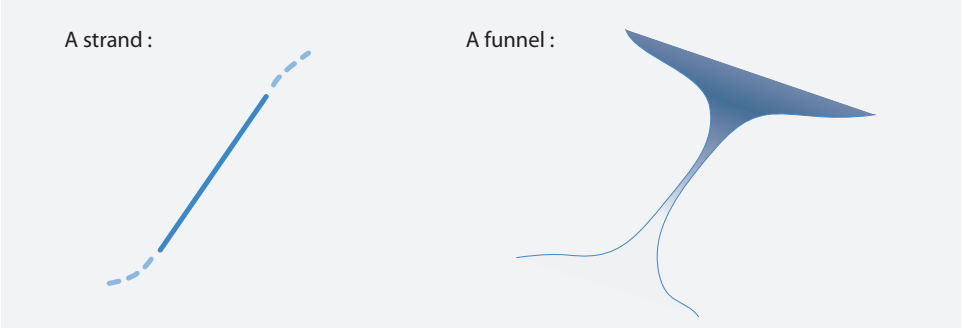


FIGURE 17 Two equivalent depictions of the fundamental constituents of nature: strands and funnels.

Funnels resemble many other research topics. Funnels are similar to wormholes; however, both their ends lead, at the border of space, 'into' usual three-dimensional space. Funnels are also similar to D-branes, except that they are embedded in three spatial dimensions, not ten. Funnels also resemble a part of an exotic manifold projected into three-dimensional space. Fluctuating funnels also remind us of the amoeba mentioned above. However, the similarities with wormholes, D-branes or exotic manifolds are of little help: so far, none of these approaches has led to viable models of unification.

Page 126

A first check shows that the funnel alternative seems *completely equivalent* to strands.* You might enjoy testing that all the conclusions deduced in the following pages appear unchanged if strands are replaced by funnels. In particular, also funnels allow us to deduce quantum field theory, the standard model and general relativity. Due to the strict equivalence between strands and funnels, the choice between the two alternatives is a matter of taste or of visualization, but not a matter of physics. We use strands in the following, as they are simpler to draw.

Challenge 125 e

Knots and the ends of strands

In the original strand model, developed in the year 2008, strands that contain knots were part of the allowed configurations. This has the disadvantage that the formation of a knot requires at least one loose end that is pulled through a strand configuration. Such loose ends, however, go against the aim of highest possible simplicity of the unified model.

Later, in 2015, it became clear that strands without knots are sufficient to recover modern physics. This is shown in the following. For this reason, knots and the ends of strands play no role in the model any more; the aim of highest possible simplicity is now realized.

Summary on the fundamental principle of the strand model – and on continuity

We have introduced featureless, fluctuating *strands* as common constituents of space, matter, radiation and horizons. All physical processes are composed of fundamental

* Two issues that put this equivalence into question are ending funnels and diameter behaviour under boosts. The first issue is subject of research, but it is expected that it poses no problem. The second issue is mitigated by the shivering of the background space.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

events. The values of all physical *observables* are defined with the help of Planck units, which in turn are due to crossing switches of strands. The definition of all physical observables through Planck units with the help of crossing switches of strands is the *fundamental principle*.

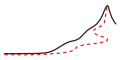
Using the fundamental principle, *continuity* of any kind – of space, fields, wave functions or time – results from the time averaging of crossing switches. This issue will be explored in detail below.

The strand model fulfils the general requirements for the final and unified description listed in Table 6, *provided* that it describes all motion with full precision and that it is unmodifiable.

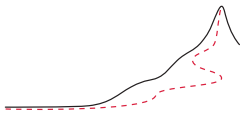
Page 143

At this point, therefore, we must start the comparison with experiment. We need to check whether strands describe *all* motion with *complete* precision. Fortunately, the task is limited: we only need to check whether strands solve each of the millennium issues listed in Table 8. If the strand model can solve those issues, then it reproduces all observations about motion and provides a final and unified description of nature. If it cannot, the strand model is worthless.

Page 157



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 8

QUANTUM THEORY OF MATTER DEDUCED FROM STRANDS

We show in this chapter that featureless strands that fluctuate, together with the fundamental principle – defining $\hbar/2$ as a crossing switch – imply without alternative that matter is described by quantum theory. More precisely, we will deduce that tangles of fluctuating strands reproduce the spin 1/2 behaviour of matter particles, allow us to define wave functions, and imply the Dirac equation for the motion of matter. In particular, we show that the components and phases of the wave function at a point in space are due to the orientation and phase of crossings at that point.

Furthermore, we show that strands imply the least action principle and therefore, that tangles of fluctuating strands are described by the Lagrangian of relativistic quantum particles. So far, the strand model is the only microscopic model of relativistic quantum theory available in the research literature.

In the present chapter, we derive the quantum theory of *matter*, and we show that strands reproduce all observations about fermions and their motion. We leave for later the derivation of the quantum theory of light and the nuclear interactions, the standard model of elementary particles, and the quantum description of gravitation. As usual in quantum theory, we work in *flat* space-time.

Strands, vacuum and particles

In nature, particles move in the vacuum. The vacuum is free of matter and energy. In the strand model,

▷ ***Vacuum*** is a collection of fluctuating, unknotted and untangled strands.

Page 152 The vacuum is illustrated in Figure 14. The time average of unknotted and untangled strands has no energy and no matter content, because there are – averaged over time – *no* crossing switches and *no* tangles. The temporary crossing switches that can appear through fluctuations of the vacuum will turn out to be virtual particles; we will explore Page 231 them below. We note that the physical vacuum, being a time average, is *continuous*. The flat physical vacuum is also *unique*: it is the same for all observers. The strand model thus contains both a minimum length and a continuous vacuum. The two aspects do not contradict each other.

In nature, quantum particles *move*: quantum particles change position and phase over time. We therefore must define these concepts. At this stage, as just explained, we con-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

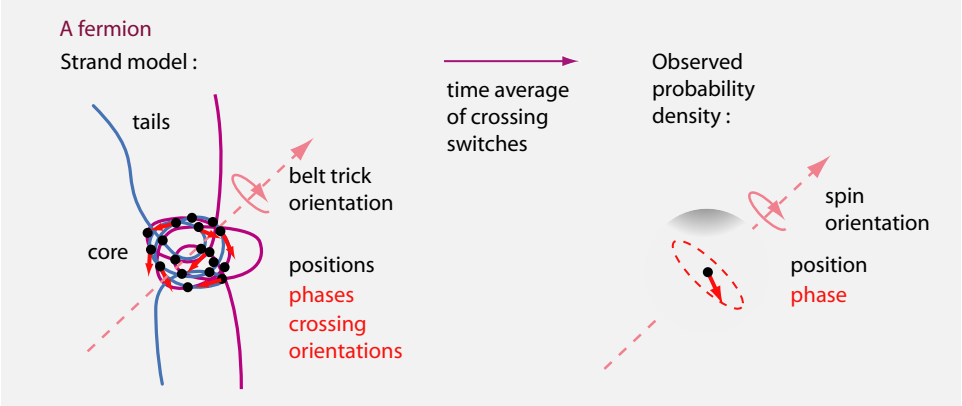


FIGURE 18 A fermion is described by a tangle of two or three strands. The crossings in the tangle core and their properties lead, after averaging, to the wave function and the probability density.

centrate on quantum matter particles and leave radiation particles for later on. As illustrated in Figure 18 and Figure 19, we define:

▷ An elementary ***matter particle***, or ***fermion***, is a tangle of two or more strands that realizes the belt trick.

The details of this definition will become clear shortly, including the importance of the related tangle *family*. In every tangle, the important structure is the *tangle core*: it is the tangled or knotted part of the tangle that contains all the links and crossings. The core is connected to the border of space by the *tails* of the tangle.

▷ The ***position*** of a particle is given by the centre of the averaged tangle core. The particle position is thus the average of all its crossing positions.

▷ The ***phase*** of a matter particle is given by half the angle that describes the orientation of the tangle core around the spin axis. The particle phase is thus the average of all its crossing phases.

▷ The ***spin orientation*** of a matter particle is given by the rotation axis of the core. The spin orientation is thus the average of all its crossing orientations.

▷ The ***wave function*** of a matter particle is a blurred rendering of the crossing of its fluctuating strands.

These definitions are illustrated in Figure 18 and will be explored in detail below. We
Page 179 note that all these definitions imply a short-time average over tangle fluctuations. With the definitions, we get:

▷ ***Motion*** of any quantum particle is the change of the position and orientation of its tangle core.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In nature, quantum particle motion is described by *quantum theory*. The main property of quantum theory is the appearance of the invariant quantum of action $\hbar$. In the strand model, $\hbar/2$ is described by a single crossing switch; the value of the quantum of action is thus invariant by definition.

We now explore in detail *how* the quantum of action $\hbar$ determines the motion of quantum particles. In particular, we will show that tangle fluctuations reproduce usual textbook quantum theory. As an advance summary, we clarify that

▷ ***Free quantum particle motion*** is due to fluctuations of tangle *tails*. The deformations of the tangle core are not important for free motion, and we can neglect them in this case.

In other words, when exploring quantum theory, we approximate tangle cores as being *rigid*. We will study *core deformations* in the next chapter, where we show that they
Page 217
are related to *interactions*. Core deformations will lead to quantum *field* theory. In this chapter we explore just the deformations of tangle *tails*; they produce the motion of *free* (and stable) quantum particles. In short, tail deformations lead to quantum mechanics. To deduce quantum mechanics from strands, we first study the rotation and then the translation of free matter particles.

Rotation, spin 1/2 and the belt trick

In nature, quantum particles are described by their behaviour under *rotation* and by their behaviour under *exchange*. The behaviour of a particle under rotation is described by its spin value, its spin axis and its phase. The behaviour of quantum particles under exchange can be of two types: a quantum particle can be a fermion or a boson. In nature, *particles with integer spin are bosons, and particles with half-integer spin are fermions.* This is the *spin–statistics theorem*.

We now show that all properties of particle rotation and exchange follow from the strand model. We start with the case of spin 1/2 particles, and first clarify the nature of particle rotation. (We follow the usual convention to use 'spin 1/2' as a shorthand for 'z-component of spin with value $\hbar/2$'.)

It is sometimes claimed that spin is *not* due to rotation. This misleading statement is due to two arguments that are repeated so often that they are rarely questioned. First, it is said, spin 1/2 particles cannot be modelled as small rotating stones. Secondly, it is allegedly impossible to imagine rotating electric charge distributions with a speed of rotation below that of light and an electrostatic energy below the observed particle masses. These statements are correct. Despite being correct, there is a way to get around them, namely by modelling particles with strands; at the present stage, we focus on the first argument: we will show that spin *can* be modelled as rotation.

In the strand model, for all quantum particles we have:

▷ ***Spin*** is core rotation.

Indeed, in the strand model, all quantum particles, including those with spin 1/2, *differ* from everyday objects such as stones, and the essential difference is due to extension:

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

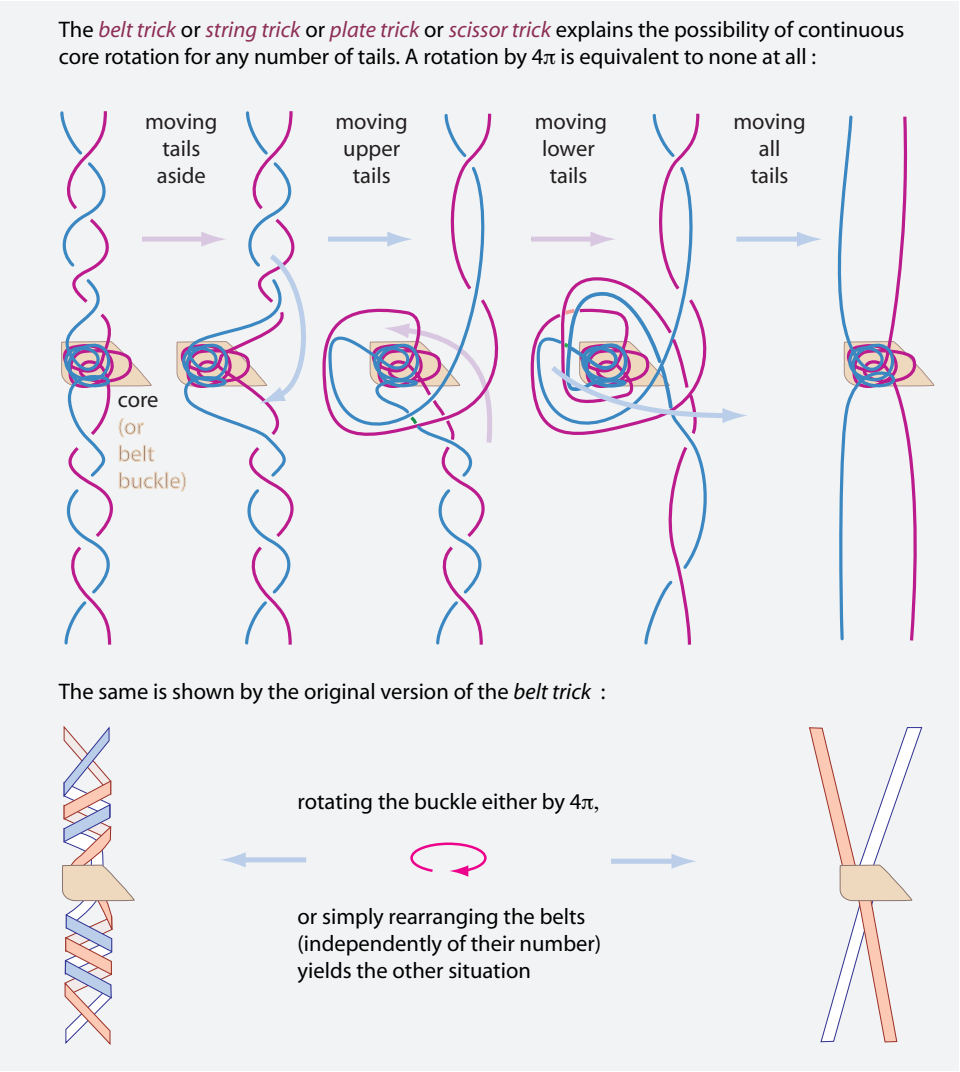

The belt trick or string trick or plate trick or scissor trick explains the possibility of continuous core rotation for any number of tails. A rotation by 4π is equivalent to none at all :
moving tails aside
moving upper tails
moving lower tails
moving all tails
core (or belt buckle)
The same is shown by the original version of the belt trick :
rotating the buckle either by 4π,
or simply rearranging the belts (independently of their number) yields the other situation

FIGURE 19 The *belt trick* – or *string trick* or *plate trick* or *scissor trick* – shows that a rotation by 4 π of a central object with three or more tails (or with one or more ribbons) attached to spatial infinity is equivalent to no rotation at all. This equivalence allows a suspended object, such as a belt buckle or a tangle core, to rotate for ever. The belt trick thus shows that tangle cores made from two or more strands behave as spin 1/2 particles.

▷ ***Quantum particles*** are particles whose tails cannot be neglected.

For stones and other everyday objects, tails do not play an important role, because everyday objects are mixed states, and not eigenstates of angular momentum. In short, in everyday objects, tails can be neglected. Therefore, everyday objects are neither fermions nor bosons. But for quantum particles, the tails are essential. Step by step we will see

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

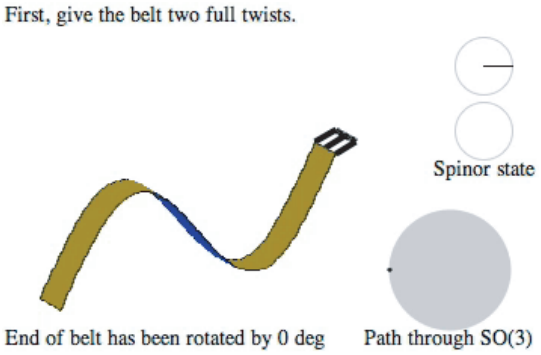


FIGURE 20 The belt trick: a double rotation of the belt buckle is equivalent to no rotation; this animation shows one way in which the belt trick can be performed. Not shown: the belt trick is also possible with *any* number of belts attached to the buckle. (QuickTime film © Greg Egan)

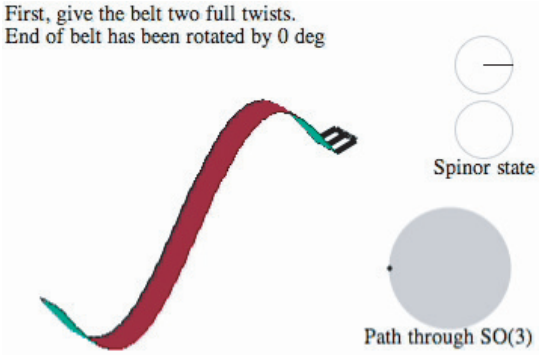


FIGURE 21 The belt trick again: this animation shows another way – another direction – in which the trick can be performed. Not shown: the belt trick is also possible with *any* number of belts attached to the buckle. (QuickTime film © Greg Egan)

that the tails of quantum particles explain their spin behaviour, their exchange behaviour and their wave behaviour. We will also see that in the strand model, wave functions are *blurred* tangles; we can thus explore the general behaviour of wave functions by exploring the behaviour of tangles.

It has been known for about a century that the so-called *belt trick* – illustrated in Figure 19, Figure 20, Figure 21 and Figure 22 – can be used, together with its variations, to model the behaviour of spin 1/2 particles under rotations. The belt trick is the observation that a belt buckle rotated by *two* full turns – in contrast to a buckle rotated by only *one* full turn – can be brought back into its original state without moving the buckle; only the motion of the belt is necessary. The belt trick is also called the *scissor trick*, the *plate trick*, the *string trick*, the *Philippine wine dance* or the *Balinese candle dance*. It is sometimes incorrectly attributed to Dirac.

Ref. 160

The belt trick is of central importance in the strand model of spin 1/2 particles. In the strand model, all spin 1/2 particles are made of *two* (or more) tangled strands, and thus have four (or more) tails to the 'border', as shown in Figure 19. For such tangles, a rotation by 4π of the tangle core – thus a rotation by *two* full turns – can bring back the tangle to the original state, provided that the tails can fluctuate. Any system that returns to its original state after rotation by 4π is described by spin 1/2. In fact, the tails must be

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

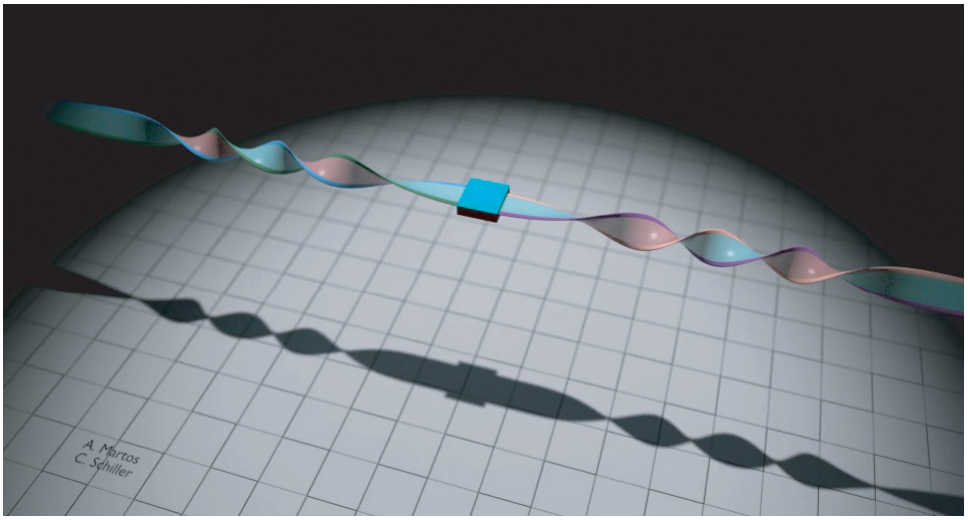


FIGURE 22 Assume that the belt cannot be observed, but the square object can, and that it represents a particle. The animation then shows that such a particle (the square object) can return to the starting position after rotation by 4π (but not after 2π). Such a 'belted' or 'tethered' particle thus fulfils the defining property of a *spin 1/2 particle*: rotating it by 4π is equivalent to no rotation at all. The belted square thus represents the spinor wave function; for example, a 2π rotation leads to a twist; this means a change of the sign of the wave function. A 4π rotation has no influence on the wave function. The equivalence is shown here with two attached belts, but the trick works with any positive number of belts! You can easily repeat the trick at home, with a paper strip or one or several real belts. (QuickTime film © Antonio Martos)

Page 193

unobservable for this equivalence to hold; in the strand model, tails are simple strands and thus indeed unobservable. We will show below that the intermediate twisting of the tails that appears after rotation by only 2π corresponds to a multiplication of the wave function by -1, again as expected from a spin 1/2 particle.

Page 184

If we replace each belt by its two coloured edges, Figure 22 shows how tails behave when a spin 1/2 tangle is rotated. By the way, systems with tails – be they strands or bands – are the *only possible systems* that realize the spin 1/2 property. Only systems with tails to spatial infinity have the property that a rotation by 4π is equivalent to no rotation at all. (Can you show this?) The fundamental connection between spin 1/2 and extension is one of the properties that led to the strand model.

Challenge 126 e

The animations show that the belt trick works with one and with two belts attached to the buckle. In fact, belt trick works with *any number* of belts attached to the buckle. The belt trick even works with *infinitely* many belts, and also with a *full two-dimensional sheet*. The wonderful video www.youtube.com/watch?v=UtdljdoFAwg by Gareth Taylor and the slightly different animation of Figure 23 both illustrate the situation. A sphere glued to a flexible sheet can be rotated as often as you want: if you do this correctly, there is *no* tangling and you can go on for ever.

The animations of the belt trick lead us to a statement on strands and tangles that is central for the strand model:

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

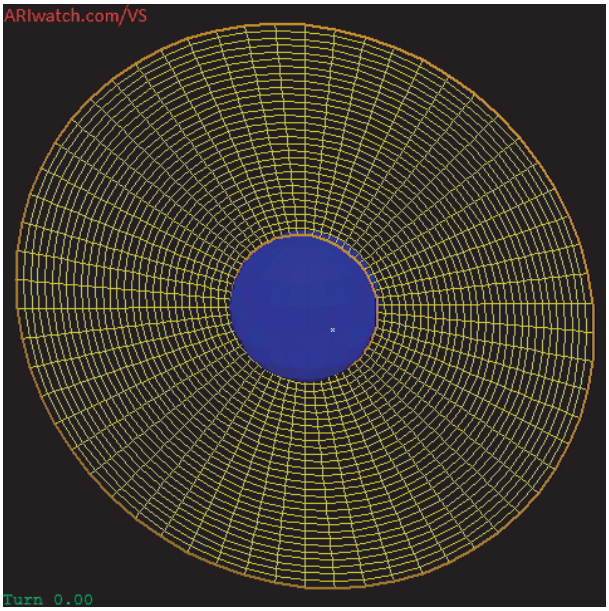


FIGURE 23 The belt trick realized as a rotating ball attached to a sheet (QuickTime film © www.ariwatch.com/VS/Algorithms/DiracStringTrick.htm).

▷ An object or a tangle core that is attached by (three or more) tails to the border of space can rotate *continuously*.

Here we made the step from belts to strands. In other terms, the possibility of continuous rotation allows us to describe spin 1/2 particles by rotating tangles. In other terms,

▷ Rotating tangles model spin.

The tail fluctuations required to rearrange the tails after two full turns of the core can be seen to model the average *precession* of the spin axis. We thus confirm that spin and rotation are the same for spin 1/2 particles.

The belt trick is not unique

Ref. 160 One aspect of the belt trick seems unmentioned in the research literature: after a rotation of the belt buckle or tangle core by 4π, there are various options to untangle the tails. Two different options are shown in Figure 20 and Figure 21. You can test this yourself, using a Challenge 127 e real belt. In fact, there are *two* extreme ways to perform the belt trick, and a continuum of options in between. These options will be of central importance later on: the options require a description of fermions with *four* complex functions. We will discover that the various options of the belt trick are related to the difference between matter and antimatter and to the parity violation of the weak interaction.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

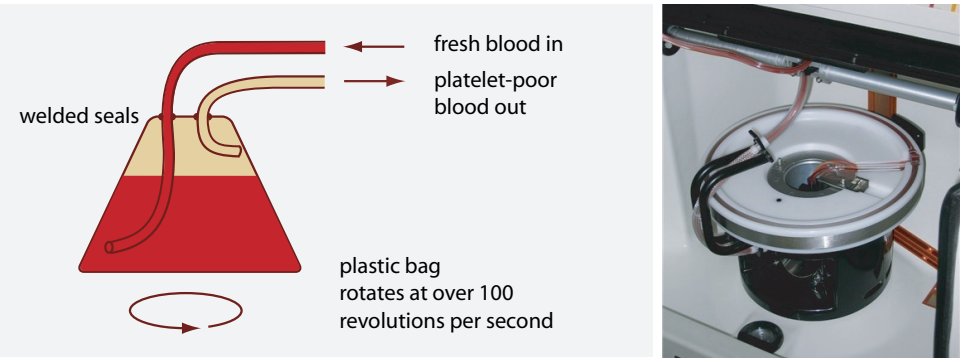


FIGURE 24 In an apheresis machine, the central bag spins at high speed despite being connected with tubes to a patient; this happens with a mechanism that continuously realizes the belt trick (photo © Wikimedia).

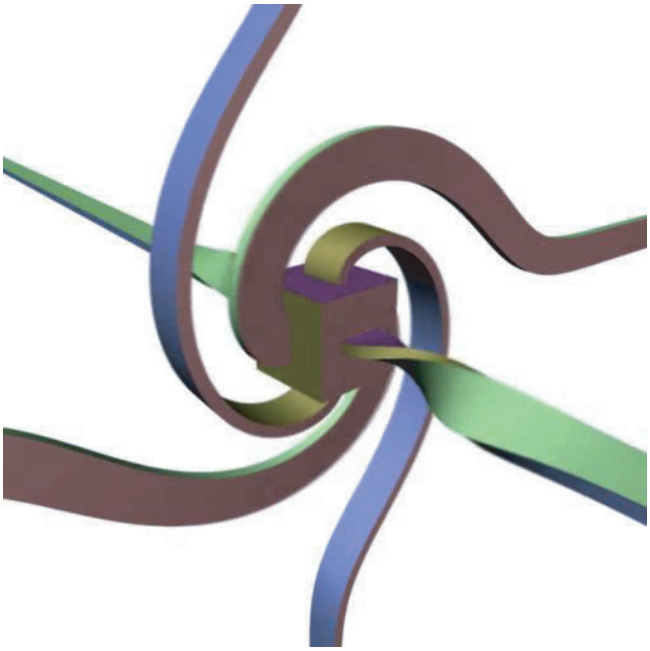


FIGURE 25 The basis of the apheresis machine – and yet another visualisation of the belt trick, here with 6 belts (QuickTime film © Jason Hise).

An aside: the belt trick saves lives

Without the belt trick, the *apheresis machines* found in many hospitals would not work. When a person donates blood platelets, the blood is continuously extracted from one arm and fed into a bag in a centrifuge, where the platelets are retained. The platelet-free blood then flows back into the other arm of the donor. This happens continuously, for about an hour or two. In order to be *sterile*, tubes and bag are used only once and are effectively *one* piece, as shown in Figure 24. Apheresis machines need *tethered rotation*

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

FIGURE 26 A version of the antitwister mechanism, or belt trick, with 96 belts attached to a black and white ball that rotates continuously (QuickTime film © Jason Hise).

to work. Topologically, this set-up is identical to a fermion tangle: each tube corresponds to one belt, or two strand tails, and the rotating bag corresponds to the rotating core.

In such apheresis machines, the centrifugation of the central bag takes place at over 100 revolutions per second, in the way illustrated in Figure 25. To avoid tangling up the blood tubes, a bracket moves the tubes during each rotation, alternatively up and down. This so-called *anti-twister mechanism* produces precisely the motion along which the belt moves when it is untangled after the buckle is rotated by 4π. An apheresis machine thus performs the belt trick 50 times per second, with each rotation of the centrifugation. Due to the centrifugation, the lighter platelets are retained in the bag, and the heavier components of the blood are pumped back to the donor. The retained platelets are then used to treat patients with leukaemia or severe blood loss due to injury. A single platelet donation can sustain several lives.

In short, without the belt trick, platelet donations would not be sterile and would thus be impossible. Only the belt trick, or tethered rotation, allows sterile platelet donations that save other people's lives.

Fermions and spin

In nature, *fermions* are defined as those particles whose wave function changes sign when they are exchanged. Does the strand model reproduce this observation?

We will see below that in the strand model, wave functions are *blurred* tangles. We thus can explore exchange properties of quantum particles and of their wave functions by exploring the exchange properties of their tangles. Now, if we exchange two tangle

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

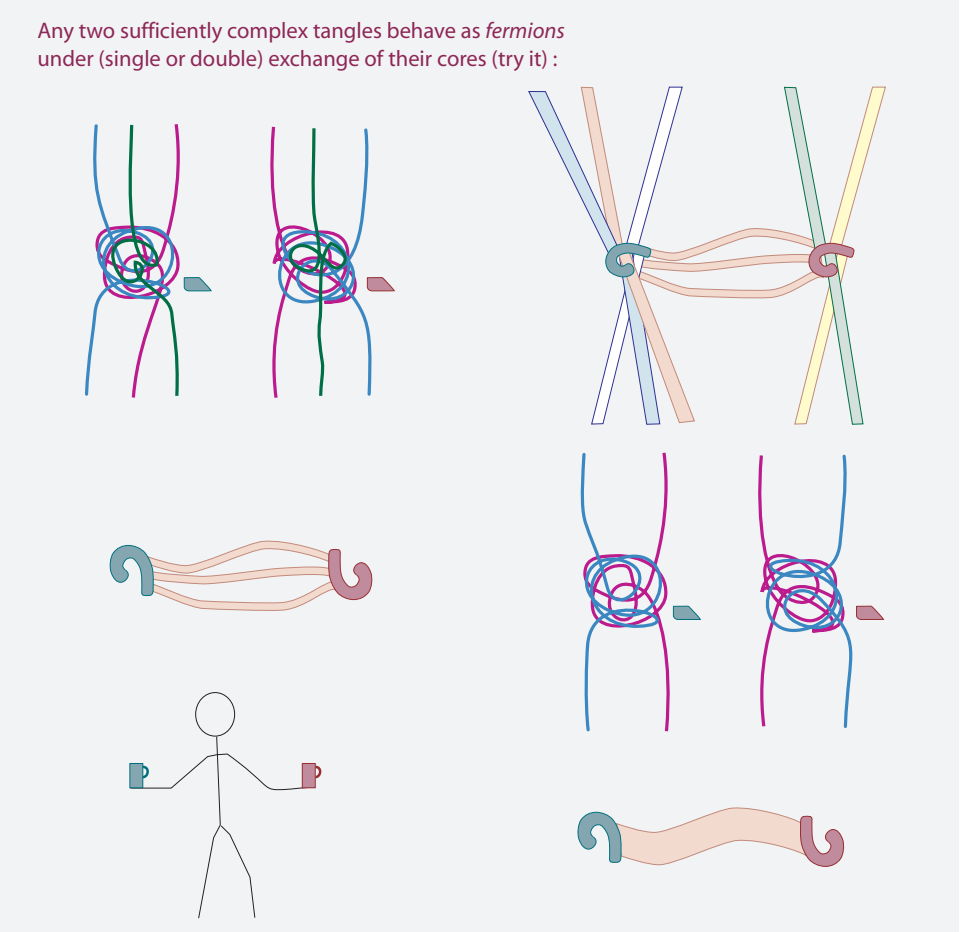


FIGURE 27 When two spin 1/2 tangles each made of several strands or bands, are exchanged *twice*, it is possible to rearrange their tails to yield the original situation. This is not possible when the tangles are only rearranged *once*. Spin 1/2 tangles are thus fermions. The figure presents the most common systems that show this behaviour.

cores *twice*, while keeping all tails connections fixed, tail fluctuations alone can return the situation back to the original state! The exchange properties of spin 1/2 tangles are easily checked by playing around with some pieces of rope or bands, as shown in Figure 27, or by watching the animation of Figure 28.

The simplest possible version of the experiment is the following: take two coffee cups, one in each hand, and cross the two arms over each other (once). Keeping the orientation of the cups fixed in space, uncross the arms by walking around the cups. This is possible, but as a result, both arms are twisted. If you are intrepid, you can repeat this with two (or more) people holding the cups. And you can check the difference with what is possible after a *double* crossing of arms: in this case, all arms return to the starting situation.

All these experiments show:

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

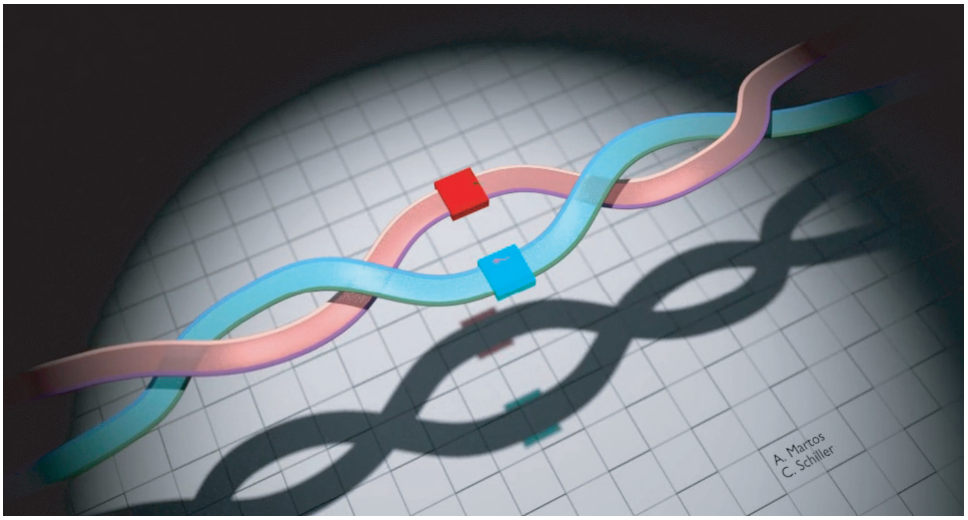


FIGURE 28 Assume that the belts cannot be observed, but the square objects can, and that they represent particles. We know from above that belted buckles behave as spin 1/2 particles. The animation shows that two such particles return to the original situation if they are switched in position twice (but not once). Such particles thus fulfil the defining property of *fermions*. (For the opposite case, that of bosons, a simple exchange would lead to the identical situation.) You can repeat the trick at home using paper strips. The equivalence is shown here with two belts per particle, but the trick works with any positive number of belts attached to each buckle. This animation is the essential part of the proof that spin 1/2 particles are fermions. This is called the *spin–statistics theorem*. (QuickTime film © Antonio Martos)

- ▷ A *simple* exchange of two spin 1/2 particles (tangles, cups on hands, belt buckles) is equivalent to a multiplication by −1, i.e., to *twisted* tangles, arms or belts.

- ▷ In contrast, a *double* exchange of two spin 1/2 particles can always be untwisted and is equivalent to no exchange at all.

Spin 1/2 particles are thus fermions. In other words, the strand model reproduces the spin–statistics theorem for spin 1/2: all elementary matter particles are fermions. In summary, a tangle core made of two or more tangled strands behaves – both under rotations and under exchange – like a spin 1/2 particle.

We note that it is sometimes claimed that the appearance of spin 1/2 can only be modelled with the help of a topology change of space or space-time. The various belt trick animations given above prove that this is not correct: spin 1/2 can be modelled in three dimensions in all its aspects. No topology change is needed. You might want to model the creation of a spin 1/2 particle–antiparticle pair as a final argument. Challenge 128 e

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

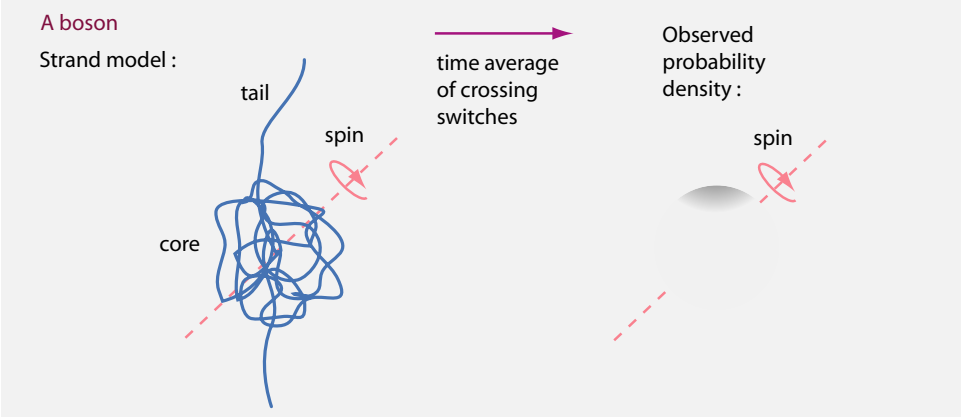


FIGURE 29 A massive spin 1 particle in the strand model (left) and the observed probability density when averaging its crossings over long time scales (right).

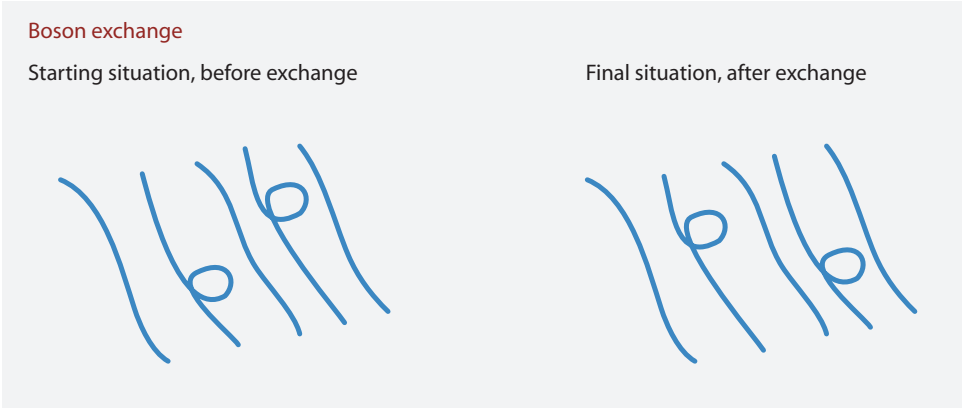


FIGURE 30 In the strand model, unknotted *boson* tangles can switch states without generating crossings, and thus without changing the sign of the phase.

Bosons and spin

For tangles made of *one* strand – thus with two tails to the border – a rotation of the tangle core by 2π restores the original state. Such a tangle, shown in Figure 29, thus behaves like a spin 1 particle. The figure also shows the wave function that results from time averaging the crossings.

Bosons are particles whose combined state does not change phase when two particles are exchanged. We note directly that this is impossible with the tangle shown in Figure 29; the feat is only possible if the boson tangle is made of *unknotted* strands. Indeed, for unknotted strands, the exchange process can easily switch the two deformations, as illustrated in Figure 30.

Vol. IV, page 115

▷ Massive elementary particles thus can only be bosons if they also have an *unknotted* tangle in the tangle family that represents them.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

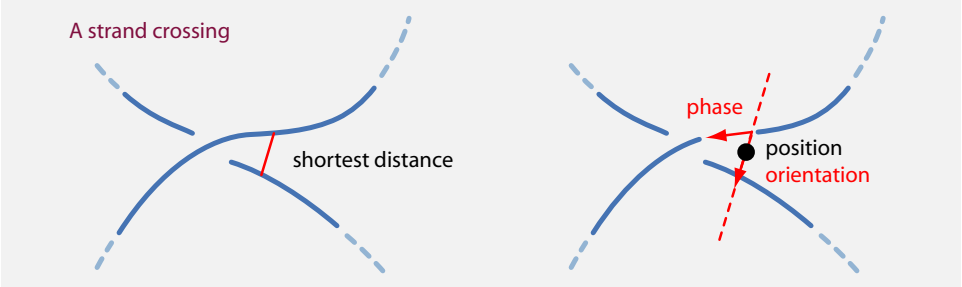


FIGURE 31 The definition of a crossing, its position, its orientation and its phase.

The simplest strand model for each elementary boson – the photon, the W boson, the Z boson, the gluon and the Higgs boson – must thus be made of unknotted strands. We will deduce the precise tangles below, in the chapter on the particle spectrum. The tangle for the hypothetical graviton – also a boson, but in this case with spin 2 and invariant under core rotations by π – will be introduced in the chapter on general relativity.

Page 304, page 321

Page 271

In summary, unknotted tangles realize the spin–statistics theorem for particles with integer spin: radiation particles, which have integer spin, are automatically bosons.

Spin and statistics

We just saw that fluctuating strands reproduce the spin–statistics theorem for fermions and for bosons, and thus for all elementary particles, if appropriate tangles are used. Apart from this fundamental result, the strand model also implies that no spins lower than $\hbar/2$ are possible, and that spin values are always an *integer multiple of* $\hbar/2$. All this matches observations.

Challenge 129 e

In the strand model, temporal evolution and particle reactions *conserve* spin, because all interactions conserve the number of strands and tails. The details of the conservation will become clear later on. Again, the result agrees with observations.

The strand model thus explains the origin of permutation symmetry in nature: *permutation symmetry* of particles is due the possibility to exchange tangle cores of identical particles; and identical particles have tangle cores of identical topology. We have thus already ticked off one item from the millennium list of unexplained properties of nature.

Page 157

In summary, the strand model reproduces the rotation, the spin and the exchange behaviour of elementary quantum particles – both fermions and bosons – in all its observed details. We now proceed to the next step: quantum mechanics of translational motion.

Tangle functions: blurred tangles

In the strand model, particle motion is due to the motion of tangle cores. But according to the fundamental principle, strands and tangles are not observable; only crossing switches are. To explore the relation between crossing switches and motion, we first recall what a crossing is.

▷ A ***crossing*** of strands is a local minimum of strand distance. The position,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

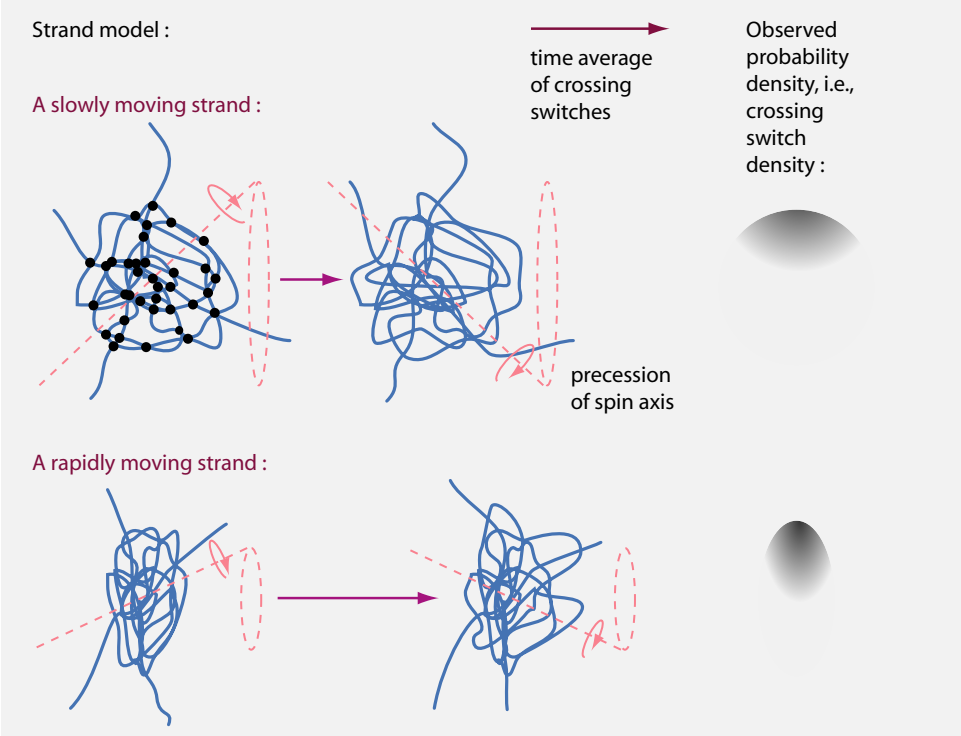

Strand model :
time average of crossing switches
Observed probability density, i.e., crossing switch density :
A slowly moving strand :
precession of spin axis
A rapidly moving strand :

FIGURE 32 Some strand configurations, some of their short time fluctuations, and the corresponding probability density that results when averaging crossing switches over time. (The black dots are not completely drawn correctly.)

orientation and the phase of a crossing are defined by the space vector corresponding to the local distance minimum, as shown in Figure 31. The sign of the orientation is defined by arbitrarily selecting one strand as the starting strand. The even larger arbitrariness in the definition of the phase will be of great importance later on, and lead to gauge invariance.

To describe the motion of tangles, we need concepts that allow us to take the step from general strand fluctuations to the motion of tangle cores. As a mathematical tool to describe crossing fluctuations, we define:

▷ The ***tangle function*** of a system described by a tangle is the short-time average of the positions and the orientations of its crossings (and thus *not* of crossing switches and *not* of the strands themselves).

The tangle function can be called the 'oriented crossing density' or simply the 'blurred tangle'. As such, the tangle function is a continuous function of space, similar to a cloud; we will see below what its precise mathematical description looks like. The tangle function captures the short-time average of all possible tangle fluctuations. For a tangle made

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of two strands, Figure 32 illustrates the idea. However, the right-hand side of the figure does not show the tangle function itself, but its probability density. We will see shortly that the probability density is the (square of the) crossing *position* density, whereas the tangle function is a density that describes *both position and orientation* of crossings.

The tangle function at any given time is *not* observable, as its definition is not based on crossing switches, but only on crossings. However, since crossing switches only occur at places with crossings, the tangle function is a useful tool to *calculate* observables. In fact, we will show that the tangle function is just another name for what is usually called the *wave function*. In short, the tangle function, i.e., the oriented crossing density, will turn out to describe the *quantum state* of a system.

In summary, the tangle function is a blurred image of the tangle – with the important detail that the crossings are blurred, not the strands.

▷ For the definition of the tangle function, the ***short-time average*** of crossings is taken over the typical time resolution of the observer. This is a time that is much *longer* than the Planck time, but also much *shorter* than the typical evolution time of the system. The time resolution is thus what the observer calls an 'instant' of time. Typically – and in all known experiments – this will be 10^{-25} s or more; the typical averaging will thus be over a time interval with a value between 10^{-43} s, the Planck time, and around 10^{-25} s.

There are *two ways* to imagine tangle fluctuations and to deduce the short-time average from a given tangle. The first, straightforward way is to average over all possible strand fluctuations during the short time. *Each piece of strand* can change in shape, and as a result, we get a cloud. This is the common *Schrödinger picture* of the wave function and of quantum mechanics. The second, alternative way to average is to imagine that the *tangle core as a whole* changes position and orientation randomly. This is easiest if the core with all its crossings is imagined to be tightened to a small, almost 'point-like' region. Then all observables are also localized in that region. It is often simpler to imagine an average over all position and orientation fluctuations of such a tightened core, that to imagine an average over all possible strand fluctuations. This alternate view leads to what physicists call the *path integral formulation* of quantum mechanics. (Can you show the equivalence of the two averaging methods?) Of course, in both cases the final result is that the tangle function is a cloud, i.e., a probability amplitude.

Challenge 130 e

Details on fluctuations and averages

In the strand model, the strand fluctuations of particle strands are a consequence of the embedding of all particles in a background which itself is made of fluctuating vacuum strands. Fluctuations randomly add detours to particle strands and randomly shift the core position. Fluctuations do not keep the strand length constant. Fluctuations do not conserve strand shape nor any other property of strands, as there is no mechanism that enforces such rules. Strand fluctuations are thus quite wild. What then can be said about the details of the averaging procedure for strand fluctuations?

The *fluctuations of the vacuum* are those strand fluctuations that lead to the definition of the background space. This definition is possible in a consistent manner only if the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

fluctuations are homogeneous and isotropic. The vacuum state can thus be *defined* as that state for which the fluctuations are (locally) homogeneous and isotropic. In particular, the fluctuations imply

▷ Flat vacuum has a tangle function that vanishes everywhere.

Challenge 131 e The proof is an interesting exercise. The existence of a homogeneous and isotropic background space then implies conservation of energy, linear and angular momentum of particles travelling through it.

The *fluctuations of a tangle* lead, after averaging, to the tangle function, i.e., as we will see, to the wave function. The conservation of energy and momentum implies that the time average of the tangle fluctuations also conserves these quantities.

Therefore we can continue our discussion without yet knowing the precise details of the tangle fluctuations themselves. (We will provide these details below, in the section Page 285 on general relativity.) Here we only require that the average of the fluctuations behaves in such a way as to be *consistent* with the definition of the background used by the observer. We thus make explicit use of the conviction that a background-free description Page 105, page 162 of nature is impossible, and that a fundamental description of nature *must* contain a circular definition that makes an axiomatic description of nature impossible. Despite this limitation, such a circular description of nature must be *self-consistent*.

Page 197 We will also show below that the definition of the tangle function does *not* introduce hidden variables, even though first impression might suggest the opposite. In fact, it is possible to define something akin to a strand evolution equation. However, it does not deepen our understanding of the evolution equation of the wave function.

Tangle functions are wave functions

In the following, we show that the *tangle function*, the blurred image of tangle crossings, is the same as what is usually called the wave function. We recall what we know from textbook quantum theory:

▷ A single-particle ***wave function*** is, generally speaking, a *rotating and diffusing cloud*.

The *rotation* describes the evolution of the phase, and the *diffusion* describes the evolution of the density. We now show that tangle functions have these and all other known properties of wave functions. We proceed by deducing all the properties from the definition of tangle functions. We recall that, being a short-time average, a tangle function is a continuous function of space and time.

▷ Using the tangle function, we define the strand ***crossing position density***, or ***crossing density***, for each point in space, by discarding the orientation information, counting the crossings in a volume, and taking the square root. The crossing density – more precisely, its square root – is a *positive number*, more precisely, a positive real function $R(x, t)$ of space and time.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

We will see shortly that the crossing position density is the square root of what is usually called the *probability density*.

▷ A tangle function also defines an ***average crossing orientation*** and a ***average phase*** at each point in space. The average crossing orientation and the average phase are related to the *spin orientation* and *phase* of the wave function. The mathematical descriptions of these quantities depend on the approximation used.

The *simplest approximation* for a tangle function is to assume, in the physical situation under study, that the spin direction is *independent* of spatial position and thus not taken into consideration; this approximation will lead to the Schrödinger equation. In this simplest approximation, at each point in space, the local average orientation of the fluctuations of the tangle core will just be described by a *single angle*. This quantum phase is a function of time and space and describes how much the local average phase is rotated around the fixed spin orientation.

▷ The ***quantum phase*** of fermions is *one half* the core rotation angle α.

Without the neglect of spin, and especially when the spin axis can *change* over space, the description of orientation and phase averages require more details; we will study these cases separately below. They will lead to the non-relativistic Pauli equation and to the relativistic Dirac equation.

In short, in the simple approximation when spin effects can be neglected, the local tangle function value can be described by one real number R and by one quantum phase α. The tangle function can thus be described by a *complex number* ψ at each point in space and time:

$$\psi(x,t) = R(x,t)\, e^{i\alpha(x,t)/2} \,. \tag{122}$$

If a system changes with time, the tangle function changes; this leads to crossing switches; therefore, temporal evolution is expected to be observable through these crossing switches. As we will see shortly, this leads to an evolution equation for tangle functions.

Challenge 132 s Here is a fun challenge: how is the shortest distance between the strands, for a crossing located at position x and t, related to the magnitude, i.e., the absolute value $R(x,t)$, of the wave function?

Page 197 We note that if *many* particles need to be described, the many-particle tangle function defines a separate crossing density for each particle tangle.

Tangle functions form a *vector space*. To show this, we need to define the ***linear combination*** or ***superposition*** $\chi = a_1\psi_1 + a_2\psi_2$ of two tangle functions. This requires the definition of two operations: scalar multiplication and addition. We can do this in two ways. The first way is to define the operations for tangle functions directly, as is done in quantum mechanics:

▷ First, boring definition: The ***scalar multiplication*** $a\psi$ and the ***addition***

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

$\psi_1 + \psi_2$ of quantum states are taken by applying the relative operations on complex numbers at each point in space, i.e., on the local values of the tangle function.

The second way to deduce the vector space is more fun, because it will help us to visualize quantum mechanics: we can define addition and multiplication for tangles, and take the time average *after* the tangle operation is performed.

▷ Second, fun definition: The ***scalar multiplication*** $a\psi$ of a state ψ by a complex number $a = re^{i\delta}$ is formed by taking a tangle underlying the tangle function ψ, then rotating the tangle core by the angle 2δ, and finally pushing a fraction $1-r$ of the tangle to the border of space, thus keeping the fraction r of the original tangle at finite distances. Time averaging then leads to the tangle function $a\psi$.

The scalar multiplication for strands is illustrated in Figure 33. The above definition of scalar multiplication is only defined for factors $r \leqslant 1$. Indeed, no other factors ever appear in physical problems (provided all wave functions are normalized), so that scalar multiplication is not required for other scalars.

The strand version of scalar multiplication is *unique*; indeed, even though there is a choice about which fraction r of a tangle is kept and which fraction $1 - r$ is sent to the border of space, the resulting tangle function, which is defined as an average over fluctuations, is independent from this choice.

The scalar multiplication of strands behaves as expected for 1 and 0. By construction, the strand version of scalar multiplication is associative: we have $a(b\psi) = (ab)\psi$. The strand multiplication by -1 is defined as the rotation of the full tangle core by 2π.

We also need to define the addition operation that appears in the linear combination of two tangle functions. This is a straightforward complex addition at each point in space. Again, for fun, we also define the operation on tangles themselves, and take the time average that leads to the tangle function afterwards.

▷ Second, fun definition: The ***addition*** of two tangles $a_1\psi_1$ and $a_2\psi_2$, where ψ_1 and ψ_2 have the same topology and where $a_1^2 + a_2^2 = 1$, is defined by connecting those tails that reach the border of space, and discarding all parts of the tangles that were pushed to the border of space. The connection of tangles must be performed in such a way as to maintain the topology of the original tangles; in particular, the connection must not introduce any crossings or linking. Time averaging then leads to the tangle function of the superposition $\chi = a_1\psi_1 + a_2\psi_2$.

To visualize the result of addition and superposition, it is easiest to imagine that the strands reaching the border of space have fluctuated back to finite distances. This is possible because by definition, these connections are all unlinked. An example of superposition, for the case of two quantum states at different positions in space, is shown in Figure 34. We note that despite the wording of the definition, no strand is actually cut

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

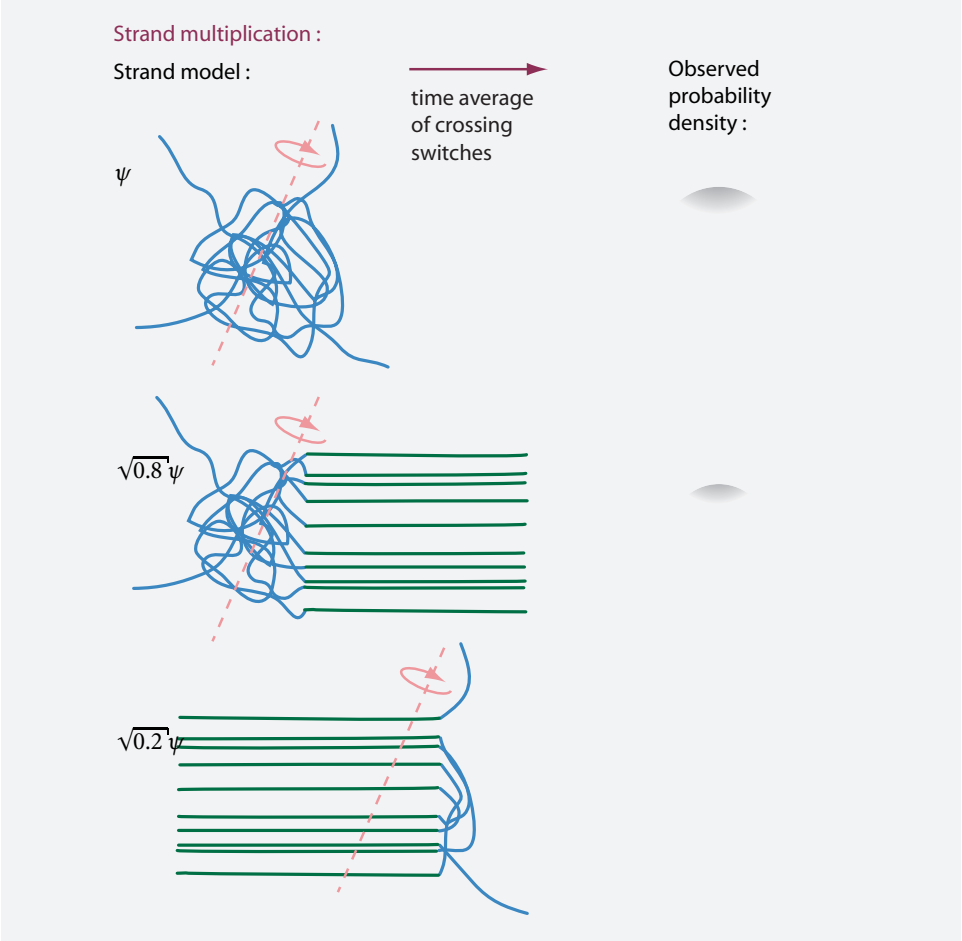


FIGURE 33 Scalar multiplication of localized tangles, visualizing the scalar multiplication of wave functions.

or re-glued in the operation of addition.

The definition of linear combination requires that the final strand χ has the same topology and the same norm as each of the two strands ψ_1 and ψ_2 to be combined. Physically, this means that only states for the same particle can be added and that particle number is preserved; this automatically implements the so-called *superselection rules* of quantum theory. This result is pretty because in usual quantum mechanics the superselection rules need to be added by hand. This is not necessary in the strand model.

Page 186

The sum of two tangle functions is *unique*, for the same reasons given in the case of scalar multiplication. The definition of addition can also be extended to more than two terms. Addition is commutative and associative, and there is a zero state, or identity element, given by no strands at all. The definition of addition also implies distributivity with respect to addition of states and with respect to addition of scalars. It is also possible to extend the definitions of scalar multiplication and of addition to all complex numbers

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

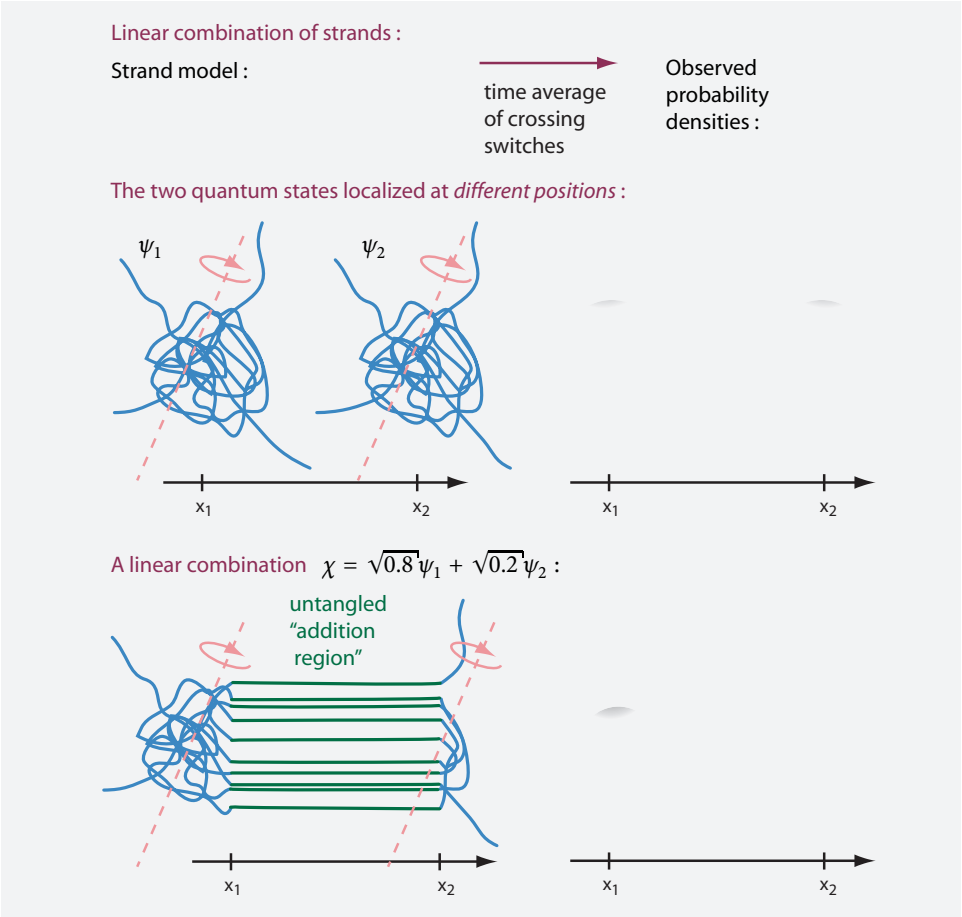


FIGURE 34 A linear combination of strands, in this case for two states representing a particle at two different position in space, visualizing the linear combination of wave functions.

Challenge 133 e

and to unnormed states, but this leads us too far from our story.

In short, tangle functions form a vector space. We now define the scalar product and the probability density in the same way as for wave functions.

- ▷ The ***scalar product*** between two states φ and ψ is $\langle\varphi|\psi\rangle = \int\overline{\varphi}(\mathbf{x})\psi(\mathbf{x})\,\mathrm{d}\mathbf{x}$.
- ▷ The ***norm*** of a state is $\|\psi\| = \sqrt{\langle\psi|\psi\rangle}$.
- ▷ The ***probability density*** ρ is $\rho(x,t) = \overline{\psi}(x,t)\psi(x,t) = R^2(x,t)$. It thus ignores the orientation of the crossings and is the *crossing position density*.

The scalar product and the probability density are *observables*, because their definitions can be interpreted in terms of crossing switches. Indeed, the scalar product $\langle\varphi|\psi\rangle$ can be seen as the (suitably normed) number of crossing switches required to transform the tangle $\overline{\varphi}$ into the tangle ψ, where the tangle $\overline{\varphi}$ is formed from the tangle φ by exchanging

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the orientation of each crossing. A similar interpretation is possible for the probability density, which therefore is at the same time the crossing density squared and the crossing switch density. We leave this confirmation as fun for the reader.

Challenge 134 e

It is also possible to define the scalar product, the norm and the probability density using tangles, instead of using tangle functions. This is left as a puzzle to the reader.

Challenge 135 e

In summary, we have shown that tangle functions form a *Hilbert space*. The next steps are now obvious: We must first show that tangle functions obey the Schrödinger equation. Then we must extend the definition of quantum states by including spin and special relativity, and show that they obey the Dirac equation.

Deducing the Schrödinger equation from tangles

The Schrödinger equation, like all evolution equations in the quantum domain, results when the definition of the wave function is combined with the energy–momentum relation. As already mentioned, the Schrödinger equation for a quantum particle also assumes that the orientation of particle spin is constant for all positions and all times. In this case, the spin can be neglected, and the tangle function is a single complex number at each point in space and in time, usually written $\psi(x,t)$. How does the tangle function evolve in time? To answer this question, we will only need the fundamental principle that crossing switches define the quantum of action $\hbar$.

We start with a free particle. We assume a fixed, but *unspecified* rotation direction of its tangle. Now, in the strand model, a localized particle with constant speed is described by a localized tangle that rotates and advances. In other words, the strand fluctuations produce a peak of probability density that changes position with constant speed.

Every tangle rotation leads to crossing switches. A rapid tangle rotation leads to many crossing switches per time, and slow rotation to few crossing switches per time. Now, the fundamental principle tells us that crossing switches per time are naturally measured in action per time, or ***energy***. In other words, tangle rotation is related to tangle energy.

- ▷ Particles with *high* energy have *rapidly* rotating tangles.
- ▷ Particles with *low* energy have *slowly* rotating tangles.

The ***energy*** *of a rotating tangle is the number of crossing switches per time.* Rotating a tangle core leads to crossing switches in its tails. In the strand model, the kinetic energy E of a particle is thus due to the crossing switches formed in its tails. In other words, the kinetic energy E is related to the (effective) angular frequency ω of the core rotation by

$$E = \hbar\omega \,. \tag{123}$$

The local phase of the tangle function ψ changes with the rotation. This implies that

$$\omega = i\partial_t \psi \,. \tag{124}$$

We will need the relation shortly.

The linear motion of a tangle implies that it makes also sense to pay attention to the number of crossing switches per distance.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

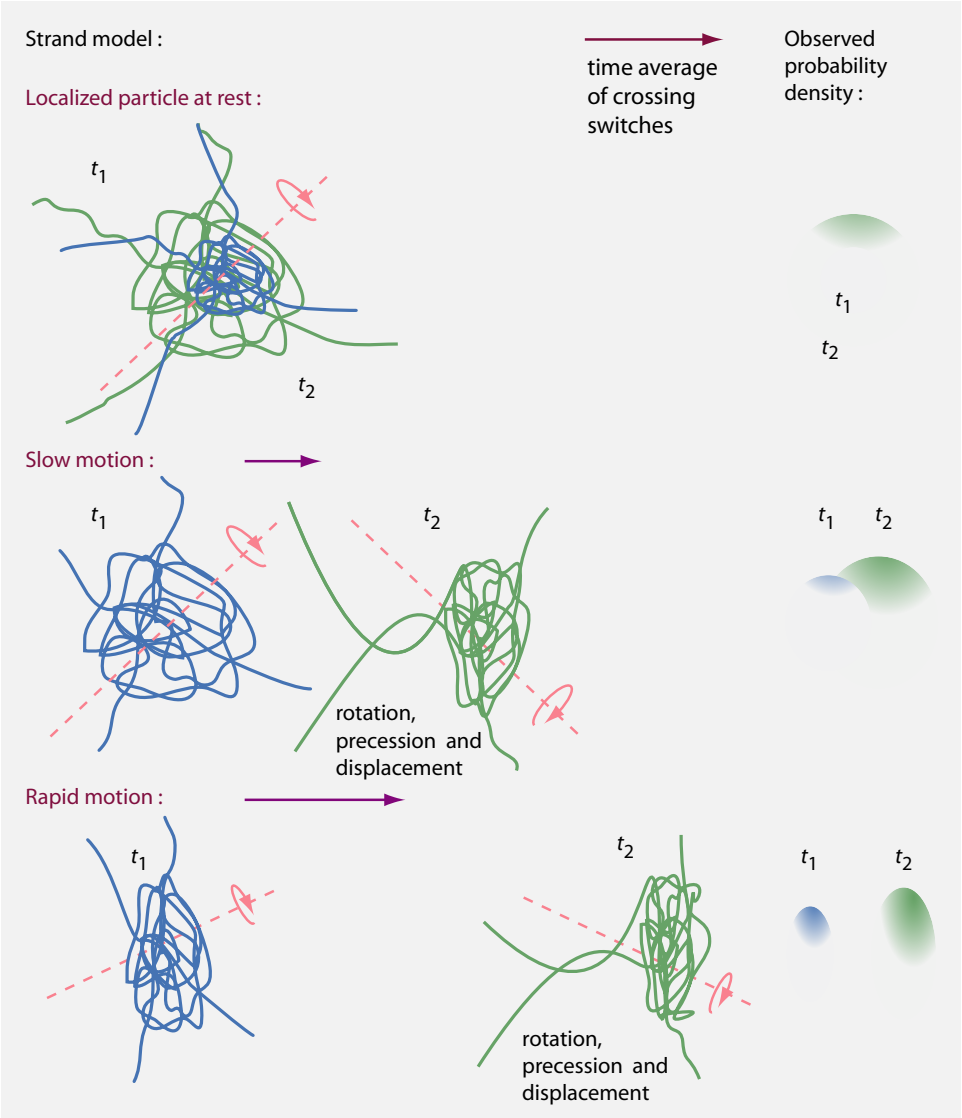


FIGURE 35 Examples of moving tangles of free particles.

▷ Rapidly moving tangles show many crossing switches per distance.

▷ Slowly moving tangles show few crossing switches per distance.

The fundamental principle tells us that the natural observable to measure crossing switches per distance is action per distance, or ***momentum***. Linear motion of tangles is thus related to momentum: *The* ***momentum*** *of a moving tangle is the number of crossing switches per distance.* The momentum p is thus related to the (effective) wave number

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

$k = 2\pi/\lambda$ of the core motion by

$$p = \hbar k \,. \tag{125}$$

The local phase of the tangle function ψ changes with the motion. This implies

$$k = -i\partial_x \psi \,. \tag{126}$$

This completes the description of matter wave functions without spin.

The belt trick for the fluctuating tails now has a fascinating consequence. To allow the belt trick also for high linear momentum, the more the momentum increases, the more the spin rotation axis has to align with the direction of motion. This is shown in Figure 35. This leads to a quadratic increase of crossing switches with momentum p: one factor p is due to the increase of the speed of rotation, the other factor is due to the increase of the alignment. We thus get

$$E = \frac{p^2}{2m} \quad \text{and} \quad \omega = \frac{\hbar}{2m} k^2 \,. \tag{127}$$

This is dispersion relation for masses moving at velocities much smaller than the speed of light. The relation agrees with all experiments. The constant m is a proportionality factor that depends on the tangle core. We can now use the same argument that was used already by Schrödinger. Substituting the tangle relations in the dispersion relation, we get the evolution equation for the tangle function ψ given by

$$i\hbar\partial_t \psi = -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\partial_{xx}\psi \,. \tag{128}$$

This is the famous Schrödinger equation for a free particle (written for just one space dimension for simplicity). We thus have deduced the equation from the strand model under the condition that spin can be neglected and that velocities are small compared to the speed of light. In this way, we have also deduced, indirectly, Heisenberg's *indeterminacy relations*.

We have thus completed the proof that tangle functions, in the case of negligible spin effects and small velocities, are indeed wave functions. In fact, tangle functions are wave functions also in the more general case, but then their mathematical description is more involved, as we will see shortly. We can sum up the situation in a few simple terms: *wave functions are blurred tangles.*

Mass from tangles

In quantum theory, particles spin while moving: the quantum phase rotates while a particle advances. The coupling between rotation and translation has a name: it is called the *mass* of a particle. We saw that the rotation is described by an average angular frequency ω, and the translational motion is described by a wave number k. The proportionality factor $m = \hbar k^2/2\omega = p^2/2E$ is thus a quantity that relates rotation frequency and wave number. In quantum theory,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

▷ The (inertial) mass m describes the coupling between translation and rotation.

We note that a large mass value implies, for a given momentum value, both a slow translation and a slow rotation.

In the strand model, particle translation and rotation are modelled by the translation and rotation of the tangle core. Now, the strand model makes a point that goes beyond usual quantum theory. The strand model explains *why* core translation and rotation are coupled: When the core moves through the vacuum, the vacuum strands and the core effectively push against each other, due to their impenetrability. The result is a motion that resembles the motion of an asymmetrical body in a viscous fluid.

When an asymmetrical body is moved through a viscous fluid, it starts rotating. For example, this happens when a stone falls through water or honey. The rotation results
Ref. 161 from the asymmetrical shape of the body. All the tangle cores of elementary particles are asymmetrical. The strand model thus predicts that tangle cores will rotate when they move through vacuum. In other terms, the strand model predicts

▷ Knotted tangles have mass.

▷ Unknotted tangles, such as those of photons, are predicted to be massless.

We also deduce that the more complicated a tangle is, the higher the mass value is.

In addition to the geometry effect due to the core, which is valid for massive bosons and fermions, the rotation of fermions is also influenced by the tails. The effective volume required by the belt trick will influence the coupling between translation and rotation. This effective volume will depend on the topology of the tangle core, and on the number of its tails. We again deduce that, for a given number of tails, a complicated core topology
Page 344 implies a high mass value.

In other words, the strand model links the mass m of a particle to its tangle topology: *large tangle cores have large mass.* The strand model thus predicts

▷ Particle masses are *calculable* – if the tangle topology is known.

This is an exciting prospect! To sum up, the strand model predicts that experiments in viscous fluids can lead to a deeper understanding of the masses of elementary particles.

The tangle model also implies that the mass of elementary particles – thus of particles
Challenge 136 e made of few strands – will be much smaller than the Planck mass. This is the first hint
Page 346 that the strand model solves the so-called *mass hierarchy problem* of particle physics.

At this point, however, we are still in the dark about the precise origin of particle mass values. We do not know how to calculate them. Nevertheless, the missing steps are clear: first, we need to determine the tangle topology for each elementary particle; then we need to deduce their mass values, i.e., the relation between their rotation and translation. This is a central aim in the following.

An example of the issues that arise: How does the mass value depend on the number
Challenge 137 e of strands in a tangle? How does mass depend on the type of tangle?

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Potentials

In quantum mechanics, interactions are described by potentials. An *electric potential* $V(x,t)$ changes the total energy of a particle with charge q at position x, since in quantum mechanics, electric potentials influence the rotation velocity of the wave function. As a result, with an electric potential, the left-hand side of the Schrödinger equation (128), the energy term, is changed from $\hbar\omega\psi(x,t)$ to $(\hbar\omega - qV)\psi(x,t)$.

Another possibility is a potential that does not change the rotation velocity, but that changes the wavelength of a charged particle. Such a *magnetic vector potential* $A(x,t)$ thus changes the momentum term $\hbar\boldsymbol{k}$ on the right-hand side of Schrödinger's equation to $(\hbar\boldsymbol{k}-q\boldsymbol{A})\psi(x,t)$. This double substitution, the so-called *minimal coupling*, is equivalent to the statement that quantum electrodynamics has a U(1) gauge symmetry. We will deduce it in detail in the next chapter.

Page 227

In the strand model of quantum mechanics, potentials are introduced in precisely the same way as in usual quantum mechanics, so that the full Schrödinger equation for charged particles in external fields is recovered:

$$(i\hbar\partial_t - qV)\psi = \frac{1}{2m}(-i\hbar\boldsymbol{\nabla} - q\boldsymbol{A})^2\psi \,. \tag{129}$$

This equation is the simplest formulation of quantum theory. We saw in the fourth volume that it describes and explains the size of atoms and molecules, and thus of all objects around us; and we saw that it also explains the (relative) colours of all things. The equation also explains interference, tunnelling and decay.

In summary, a non-relativistic fluctuating tangle reproduces the full Schrödinger equation. An obvious question is: how does the strand model explain the influence of interactions on the rotation speed and on the wavelength of tangles? In other words: why do strands imply minimal coupling? We will answer this question in the following chapter, on gauge interactions.

Page 217

Quantum interference from tangles

The observation of *interference* of quantum particles is due to the linear combination of states with different phases at the same position in space. Tangle functions, being wave functions, reproduce the effect. But again, it is both more fun and more instructive to explain and visualize interference with the help of tangles.

Page 184

As mentioned above, a pure change of phase of a state ψ is defined by multiplication by a complex number of unit norm, such as $e^{i\beta}$. This corresponds to a rotation of the tangle core by an angle 2β, where the factor 2 is due to the belt trick of Figure 19.

Page 170

To deduce interference, we simply use the above definition of linear combinations of tangles. This leads to the result shown in Figure 36. We find, for example, that a symmetric sum of a tangle and the same tangle with the phase rotated by $\pi/2$ (thus a core rotated by π) results in a tangle whose phase is rotated by the intermediate angle, thus $\pi/4$.

The most interesting case of interference is that of *extinction*. Scalar multiplication of a tangle function ψ by -1 gives the negative of the tangle function, the additive inverse $-\psi$. The sum of a tangle function with its negative is zero. This gives extinction

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

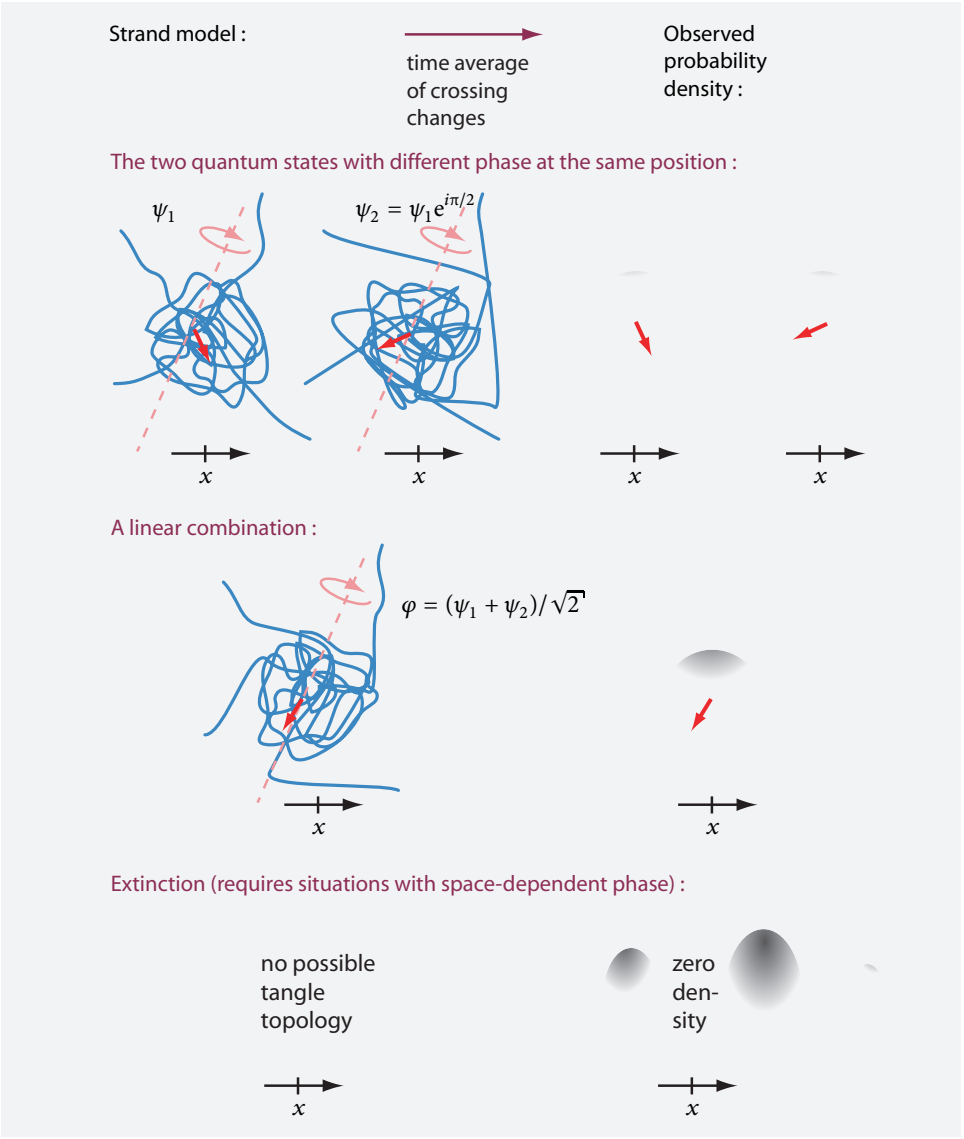

Strand model :
time average of crossing changes
Observed probability density :
The two quantum states with different phase at the same position :
ψ_1
$\psi_2 = \psi_1 e^{i\pi/2}$
x
A linear combination :
$\varphi = (\psi_1 + \psi_2)/\sqrt{2}$
Extinction (requires situations with space-dependent phase) :
no possible tangle topology
zero density

FIGURE 36 Interference: the linear combination of strands with different phase, but located at the same position.

in usual quantum theory. Let us check the result in the strand model, using the tangle definition of linear combinations. We have seen above that the negative of a tangle is a tangle whose core is rotated by 2π. Using the tangle definition of linear combination, we find that it is *topologically impossible* to draw or construct a localized tangle for the sum of a quantum state with its negative. The resulting particle tangle therefore must have vanishing crossing density in spatial regions where this operation is attempted. In short, particle tangles do explain extinction. And as expected from quantum particles,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the explanation of extinction directly involves the tangle structure.

Deducing the Pauli equation from tangles

As we have seen, the Schrödinger equation describes the motion of quantum particles when their spin is neglected, by assuming that spin is constant over space and time. The next step is thus to include the variations of spin over space and time. This turns out to be quite straightforward.

In the strand model, spin is modelled by the continuous rotation of a tangle. We also saw that we get wave functions from tangles if we average over short time scales. At a given position in space, a tangle function will have a local average density of crossings, a local average phase, and new, a local average orientation of the rotation axis of the tangle.

To describe the axis and orientation of the tangle core, we use the *Euler angles* α, β and γ. This yields a description of the tangle function as

Ref. 162

$$\Psi(x,t) = \sqrt{\rho}\, e^{i\alpha/2} \begin{pmatrix} \cos(\beta/2)e^{i\gamma/2} \\ i\sin(\beta/2)e^{-i\gamma/2} \end{pmatrix} , \tag{130}$$

which is the natural description of a tangle that includes the orientation of the axis. As before, the crossing density is the square root of the probability density $\rho(x,t)$. The angle $\alpha(x,t)$, as before, describes the phase, i.e., (one half of) the rotation *around* the axis. The local orientation of the axis is described by a two-component matrix and uses the two angles $\beta(x,t)$ and $\gamma(x,t)$. Due to the belt trick, the expression for the tangle function only contains *half* angles. And indeed, due to the half angles, the two-component matrix is not a vector, but a *spinor*. (The term 'spinor' was coined by well-known physicist Paul Ehrenfest in analogy to 'vector' and 'tensor'; the English pronunciation is 'spinnor'.) For $\beta = \gamma = 0$, the previous wave function ψ is recovered.

The other ingredient we need is a description of the spinning motion of the tangle. In contrast to the Schrödinger case, the spinning motion itself must be added in the description. A spinning tangle implies that the propagation of the wave is described by the wave vector $\boldsymbol{k}$ multiplied with the spin operator $\boldsymbol{\sigma}$. The *spin operator* $\boldsymbol{\sigma}$, for the wave function just given, is defined as the vector of three matrices

$$\boldsymbol{\sigma} = \left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i \\ i & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix} \right) . \tag{131}$$

The three matrices are the well-known *Pauli matrices*.

We now take the description of the axis orientation and the description of the spinning and insert both, as we did for the Schrödinger equation, into the non-relativistic dispersion relation $\hbar\omega = E = p^2/2m = \hbar^2 k^2/2m$. We then get the wave equation

$$i\hbar\partial_t \Psi = -\frac{\hbar^2}{2m}(\boldsymbol{\sigma}\boldsymbol{\nabla})^2 \Psi . \tag{132}$$

This is *Pauli's equation* for the evolution of a free quantum particle with spin 1/2.

As final step, we include the electric and the magnetic potentials, as we did in the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

case of the Schrödinger equation. We again use *minimal coupling*, substituting $i\hbar\partial_t$ by $i\hbar\partial_t - qV$ and $-i\hbar\nabla$ by $-i\hbar\nabla - q\boldsymbol{A}$, thus introducing electric charge q and the potentials V and $\boldsymbol{A}$. A bit of algebra involving the spin operator then leads to the famous complete form of the Pauli equation

Challenge 138 s

$$(i\hbar\partial_t - qV)\Psi = \frac{1}{2m}(-i\hbar\nabla - q\boldsymbol{A})^2\Psi - \frac{q\hbar}{2m}\boldsymbol{\sigma}\boldsymbol{B}\Psi \,, \tag{133}$$

where now the magnetic field $\boldsymbol{B} = \nabla \times \boldsymbol{A}$ appears explicitly. The equation is famous for describing, among others, the motion of silver atoms, which have spin 1/2, in the Stern–Gerlach experiment. This is due to the new, last term on the right-hand side, which does not appear in the Schrödinger equation. The new term is a pure spin effect and predicts a g-factor of 2. Depending on the spin orientation, the sign of the last term is either positive or negative; the term thus acts as a spin-dependent potential. The two options for the spin orientation then produce the upper and the lower beams of silver atoms that are observed in the Stern–Gerlach experiment.

Vol. IV, page 81

In summary, a non-relativistic tangle that rotates continuously reproduces the Pauli equation. In particular, such a tangle predicts that the g-factor of an elementary charged fermion is 2.

Rotating arrows, path integrals and interference

Another simple way to visualize the equivalence between the strand model and the Pauli equation uses the formulation of quantum theory with path integrals. We recall that tangle tails are not observable, and that the tangle core defines the position and phase of the quantum particle. The motion of the core thus describes the 'path' of the particle. Different paths are due to different core motions.

The continuous rotation of the tangle core corresponds to Feynman's rotating little arrow in his famous popular book on QED. The different paths then correspond to different motions of the tangle core. The tangle model also reproduces the path integral formulation of quantum mechanics.

Ref. 163

Also interference can be visualized with strands. Because of its tails, a fermion tangle obeys spinor statistics and spinor rotation behaviour. This leads to the correct interference behaviour for spin 1/2 particles. Indeed, interference for fermions is visualized in Figure 37. The corresponding visualization for photon interference is given in Figure 38.

Measurements and wave function collapse

In nature, a measurement of a quantum system in a superposition is observed to yield one of the possible eigenvalues and to prepare the system in the corresponding eigenstate. In nature, the probability of each measurement outcome depends on the coefficient of that eigenstate in the superposition.

Vol. IV, page 141

To put the issue into context, here is a short reminder from quantum mechanics. Every measurement apparatus shows measurement results. Thus, every measurement apparatus is a device with memory. (In short, it is *classical*.) All devices with memory contain one or several baths. Thus, every measurement apparatus couples at least one bath to the system it measures. The coupling depends on and defines the observable to be measured

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

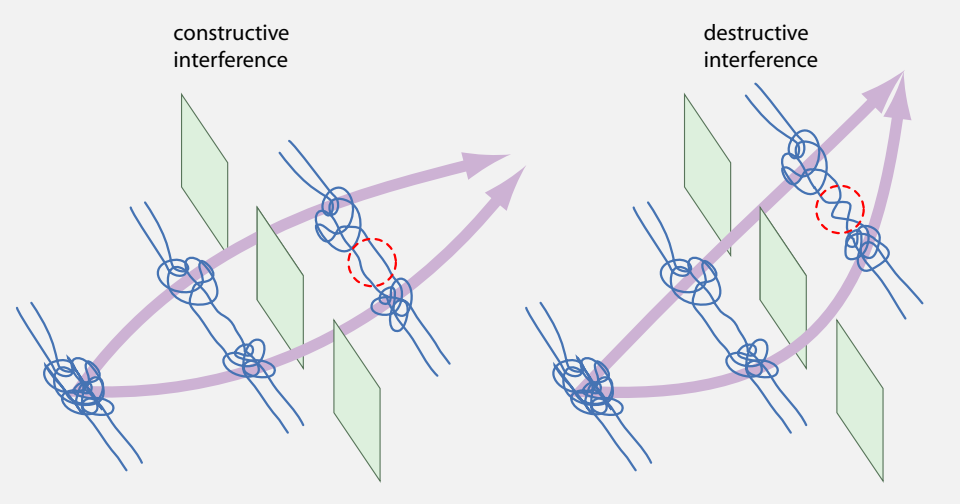


FIGURE 37 A fermion tangle passing a double slit: constructive interference (left) and destructive interference (right).

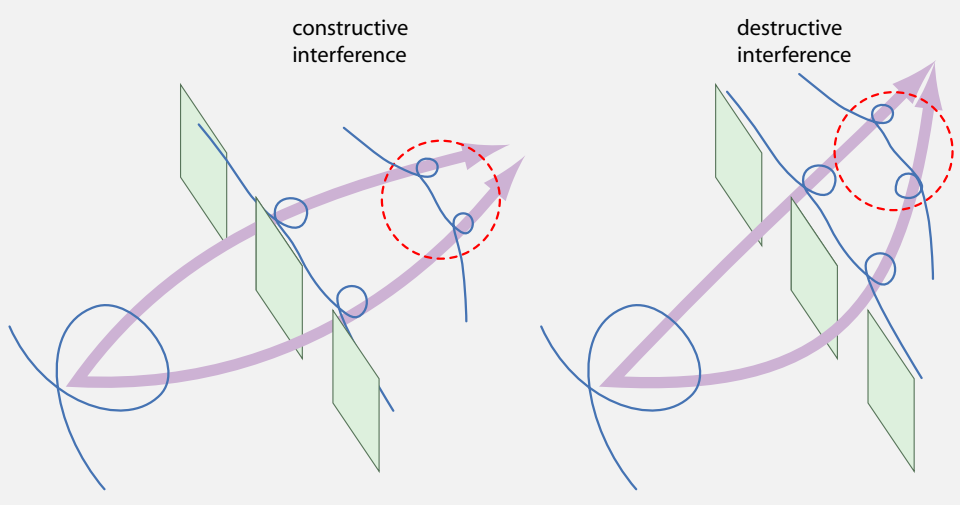


FIGURE 38 The double-slit experiment with photons: constructive interference (left) and destructive interference (right).

by the apparatus. Every coupling of a bath to a *quantum* systems leads to decoherence. Decoherence leads to probabilities and wave function collapse. In short, collapse and measurement probabilities are necessary and automatic in quantum theory.

The strand model describes the measurement process in precisely the same way as standard quantum theory; in addition, it *visualizes* the process.

▷ A ***measurement*** is modelled as a strand deformation induced by the measurement apparatus that 'pulls' a tangle towards the resulting eigenstate.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

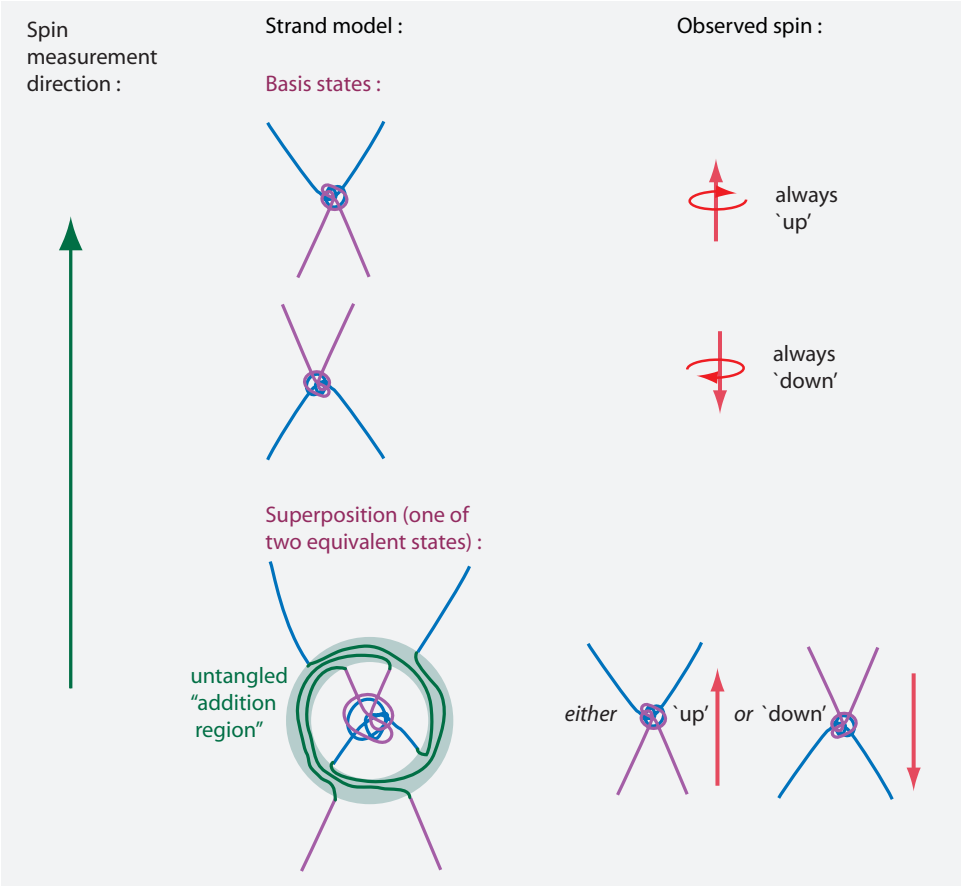


FIGURE 39 Measurement of a spin superposition: the addition region disappears either outwards or inwards.

▷ This pulling of strands models and visualizes the ***collapse*** of the wave function.

An example of measurement is illustrated in Figure 39. When a measurement is performed on a superposition, *the untangled 'addition region' can be imagined to shrink into disappearance.* For this to happen, one of the underlying eigenstates has to 'eat up' the other: that is the collapse of the wave function. In the example of the figure, the addition region can disappear either towards the outside or towards the inside. The choice is due to the bath that is coupled to the system during measurement; the bath thus determines the outcome of the measurement. We also deduce that the probability of measuring a particular eigenstate will depend on the (weighed) volume that the eigenstate took up in the superposition.

This visualization of the wave function collapse also makes clear that the collapse is not limited by any speed limit, as no energy and no information is transported. Indeed, the collapse happens by displacing strands and at most crossings, but does not produce

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

any crossing changes.

In summary, the strand model describes measurements in precisely the same way as usual quantum theory. In addition, *strands visualize the collapse of the wave function as a shape deformation from a superposed tangle to an eigenstate tangle.*

Hidden variables and the Kochen–Specker theorem

At first sight, the strand model seems to fall into the trap of introducing hidden variables into quantum theory. One could indeed argue that the shapes (and fluctuations) of the strands play the role of hidden variables. On the other hand, it is well known that non-contextual hidden variables are impossible in quantum theory, as shown by the Kochen–Specker theorem (for sufficiently high Hilbert-space dimensions). Is the strand model flawed? No.

Ref. 166

We recall that strands are not observable. In particular, strand shapes are not physical observables and thus not physical variables either. Even if we tried promoting strand shapes to physical variables, the evolution of the strand shapes would only be observable through the ensuing crossing switches. And crossing switches evolve due to the influence of the environment, which consists of all other strands in nature, including those of space-time itself. Thus

▷ The evolution of strand shapes and crossing switches is *contextual*.

Therefore, the strand model does not contradict the Kochen–Specker theorem.

In simple language, in quantum theory, hidden variables are not a problem if they are properties of the environment, and not of the quantum system itself. This is precisely the case for the strand model. For a quantum system, the strand model provides no hidden variables. In fact, for a quantum system, the strand model provides no variables beyond the usual ones from quantum theory. And as expected and required from any model that reproduces decoherence, the strand model leads to a contextual, probabilistic description of nature.

In summary, despite using fluctuating tangles as underlying structure, the strand model is equivalent to usual quantum theory. The strand model contains nothing more and nothing less than usual quantum theory.

Many-particle states and entanglement

In nature, the quantum states of two or more particles can be *entangled*. Entangled states are many-particle states that are not separable. Entangled states are one of the most fascinating quantum phenomena; especially in the case of macroscopic entanglement, they are still being explored in many experiments. We will discover that the strand model visualizes them simply and clearly.

To describe entanglement, we first need to clarify the notion of many-particle state. In the strand model,

▷ A ***many-particle state*** is composed of several tangles.

In this way, an N-particle wave function defines N values at every point in space, one

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

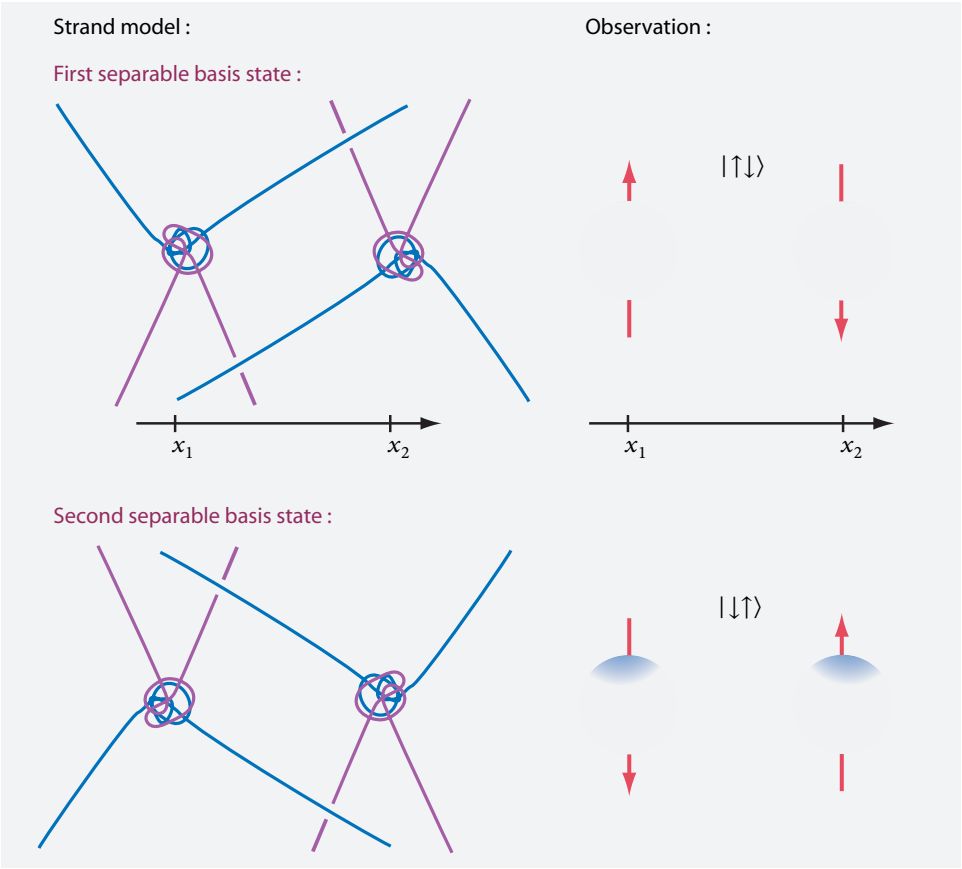


FIGURE 40 Two examples of two distant particles with spin in separable states: observation and strand model.

value for each particle. This is possible, because in the strand model, the strands of each particle tangle are *separate* from these of other particles.

Usually, a N-particle wave function is described by a single-valued function in $3N$ dimensions. It is less known that a single-valued N-particle wave function in $3N$ dimensions is mathematically equivalent to an N-valued wave function in three dimensions. Usually, N-valued functions are not discussed; we feel uneasy with the concept. But the strand model naturally defines N wave function values at each point in space: each particle has its own tangle, and each tangle yields, via short-term averaging, one complex value, with magnitude and phase, at each point in space. In this way, the strand model is able to describe N particles in just 3 dimensions.

In other words, the strand model does not describe N particles with 1 function in $3N$ dimensions; it describes many-particle states with N functions in 3 dimensions. In this way, the strand model remains as close to everyday life as possible. Many incorrect statements on this issue are found in the research literature; many authors incorrectly claim the impossibility of many-particle quantum theory in 3 dimensions. Some authors

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

even claim, in contrast to experiment, that it is impossible to visualize many-particle states in 3 dimensions. These arguments all fail to consider the possibility to define completely separate wave functions for each particle in three dimensions. (It must be said that this unusual possibility is hard to imagine if wave functions are described as continuous functions.) However, clear thinkers like Richard Feynman always pictured many-particle wave functions in 3 dimensions. Also in this domain, the strand model provides an underlying picture to Feynman's approach. This is another situation where the strand model eliminates incorrect thinking habits and supports the naive view of quantum theory.

Ref. 163

Now that we have defined many-particle states, we can also define entangled states.

▷ An ***entangled state*** is a non-separable superposition of separable many-particle states. State are separable when their tangles can be pulled away without their tails being entangled.

We will now show that the above definitions of superpositions and of measurements using strands are sufficient to describe entanglement.

As first example, we explore entangled states of the spin of two distant massive fermions. This is the famous thought experiment proposed by David Bohm. In the strand model, two distant particles with spin 1/2 in a *separable* state are modelled as two distant, separate tangles of identical topology. Figure 40 shows two separable basis states, namely the two states with total spin 0 given by $|\uparrow\downarrow\rangle$ and by $|\downarrow\uparrow\rangle$. Such states can also be produced in experiments. We note that to ensure total spin 0, the tails must be imagined to cross somewhere, as shown in the figure.

We can now draw a superposition $\sqrt{90\,\%}\,|\uparrow\downarrow\rangle + \sqrt{10\,\%}\,|\downarrow\uparrow\rangle$ of the two spin-0 basis states. We simply use the definition of addition and find the state shown in Figure 41. We can now use the definition of measurement to check that the state is indeed entangled. If we measure the spin orientation of one of the particles, the untangled addition region disappears. The result of the measurement will be either the state on the inside of the addition region or the state on the outside. And since the tails of the two particles are linked, after the measurement, independently of the outcome, the spin of the two particles will always point in opposite directions. This happens for every particle distance. Despite this extremely rapid and apparently superluminal collapse, no energy travels faster than light. The strand model thus reproduces exactly the observed behaviour of entangled spin 1/2 states.

A second example is the entanglement of two photons, the well-known Aspect experiment. Also in this case, entangled spin 0 states, i.e., entangled states of photons of opposite helicity (spin), are most interesting. Again, the strand model helps to visualize the situation. Here we use the strand model for the photon that we will deduce only later on. Figure 42 shows the strand model of the two separable basis states and the strand model of the entangled state. Again, the measurement of the helicity of one photon in the entangled state will lead to one of the two basis states. And as soon as the helicity of one photon is measured, the helicity of its companion collapses to the opposite value, whatever the distance! Experimentally, the effect has been observed for distances of many kilometres. Again, despite the extremely rapid collapse, no energy travels faster than light. And again, the strand model completely reproduces the observations.

Page 222

Ref. 164

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

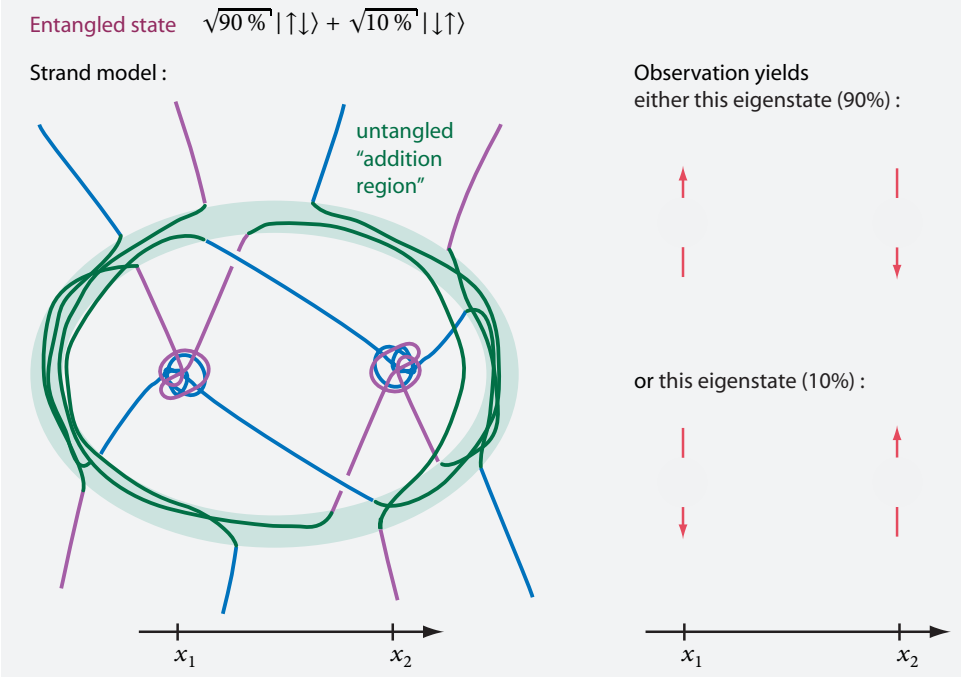


FIGURE 41 An entangled spin state of two distant particles.

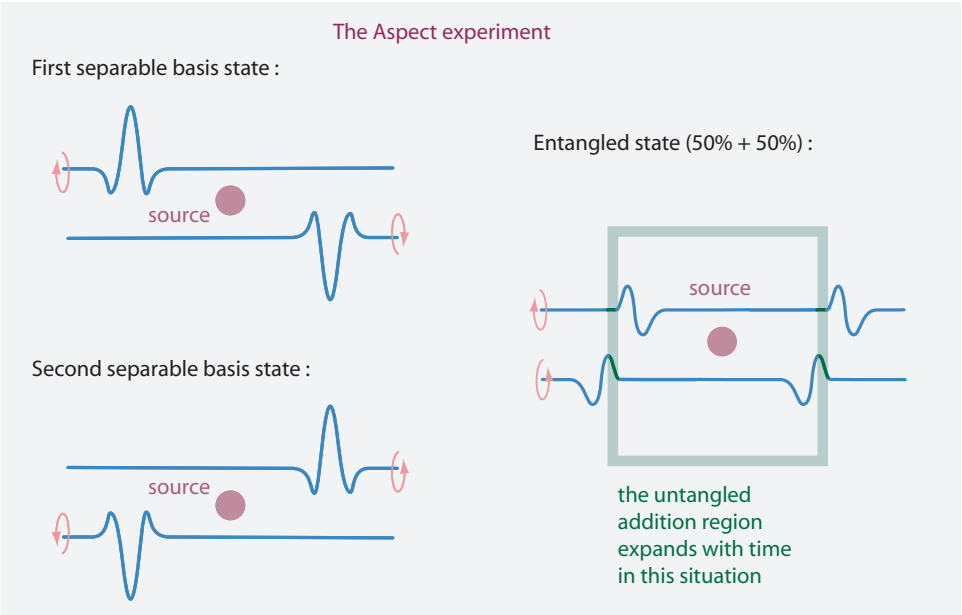


FIGURE 42 The basis states and an entangled state of two distant photons travelling in opposite directions, with total spin 0.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Mixed states

Mixed states are statistical ensembles of pure states. In the strand model,

▷ A ***mixed state*** is a (weighted) temporal alternation of pure states.

Mixed states are important in discussions of thermodynamic quantities. We mention them to complete the equivalence of the states that appear in quantum theory with those provided by the strand model. We do not pursue this topic any further.

The dimensionality of space-time

'Nature consists of particles moving in empty space.' Democritus stated this 2500 years ago. Today, we know that is a simplified description of one half of physics: it is a simplified description of quantum theory. In fact, Democritus' statement, together with strands, allows us to argue that physical space must have three dimensions, as we will see now.

Deducing the dimensionality of physical space from first principles is an old and difficult problem. The difficulty is also due to the lack of alternative descriptions of nature. Page 162 Our exploration of the foundations of the strand model has shown that humans, animals and machines always use three spatial dimensions to describe their environment. They cannot do otherwise. Humans, animals and machines cannot talk and think without three dimensions as background space.

But how can we show that *physical space* – not the *background space* we need for thinking – is three-dimensional and must be so? We need to show that (1) all experiments reproduce the result and that (2) no other number of dimensions yields a consistent description of nature.

In nature, and also in the strand model, as long as particles can be defined, they can be rotated around each other and they can be exchanged. No experiment has ever been performed or has ever been proposed that changes this observation. The observed properties of rotations, of spin 1/2, of particle exchange and all other observations confirm that space has three dimensions. Fermions only exist in three dimensions. In the strand model, the position and the orientation of a particle is intrinsically a three-dimensional quantity; physical space is thus three-dimensional, in all situations where it can be defined. (The only situations where this definition is impossible are horizons and the Planck scales.) In short, both nature and the strand model are found to be three-dimensional at all experimentally accessible energy scales. Conversely, detecting an additional spatial dimension would directly invalidate the strand model.

Nature has three dimensions. The only way to predict this result is to show that no other number is possible. The number of dimensions of nature can only result from a self-consistency argument. And interestingly, the strand model produces such an argument.

In the strand model, knots and tangles are impossible to construct in physical spaces with dimensions *other* than three. Indeed, mathematicians can show that in four spatial dimensions, every knot and every tangle can be undone. (In this argument, time is not and does not count as a fourth spatial dimension, and strands are assumed to remain one-dimensional entities.) Worse, in the strand model, spin does not exist in spaces that have

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

more or fewer than three dimensions. Also the vacuum and its quantum fluctuations do not exist in more than three dimensions. Moreover, in other dimensions it is impossible to formulate the fundamental principle. In short, the strand model of matter and of observers, be they animals, people or machines, is possible in three spatial dimensions only. No description of nature with a background or physical space of more or less than three dimensions is possible with strands. Conversely, constructing such a description would invalidate the strand model.

The same type of arguments can be collected for the one-dimensionality of physical time. It can be fun exploring them – for a short while. In summary, the strand model *only* works in 3+1 space-time dimensions; it does not allow any other number of dimensions. We have thus ticked off another of the millennium issues. We can thus continue with our adventure.

Challenge 139 e

Page 157

Operators and the Heisenberg picture

In quantum theory, Hermitean operators play an important role. In the strand model, *Hermitean* or self-adjoint operators are operators that leave the tangle topology invariant. Also unitary operators play an important role in quantum theory. In the strand model, *unitary* operators are operators that deform tangles in a way that the corresponding wave function retains its norm, i.e., such that tangles retain their topology and their core shape.

Physicists know two ways to describe quantum theory. One is to describe evolution with time-dependent quantum states – the *Schrödinger picture* we are using here – and the other is to describe evolution with time-dependent operators. In this so-called *Heisenberg picture*, the temporal evolution is described by the operators.

The two pictures of quantum theory are equivalent. In the Heisenberg picture, the fundamental principle, the equivalence of a crossing switch with $\hbar$, becomes a statement on the behaviour of operators. Already in 1987, Louis Kauffman had argued that the commutation relation for the momentum and position operators

Ref. 165

$$px - xp = \hbar i \tag{134}$$

is related to a crossing switch. The present section confirms that speculation.

In quantum mechanics, the commutation relation follows from the definition of the momentum operator as $p = \hbar k$, $k = -i\partial_x$ being the wave vector operator. The factor $\hbar$ defines the unit of momentum. The wave vector counts the number of wave crests of a wave. Now, in the strand model, a rotation of a state by an angle π is described by a multiplication by i. Counting wave crests of a propagating state is only possible by using the factor i, as this factor is the only property that distinguishes a crest from a trough. In short, the commutation relation follows from the fundamental principle of the strand model.

Lagrangians and the principle of least action

Before we derive the Dirac equation, we show that the strand model naturally leads to describe motion with Lagrangians.

In nature, physical action is an observable measured in multiples of the natural unit, the quantum of action $\hbar$. Action is the fundamental observable about nature, because

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

action measures the total change occurring in a process.

In the strand model,

▷ The physical ***action*** W of a physical process is the observed number of crossing switches of strands. Action values are multiples of $\hbar$.

We note that these multiples, if averaged, do not need to be integer multiples. We further note that through this definition, *action is observer-invariant.* This important property is thus automatic in the strand model.

In nature, energy is action per time. Thus, in the strand model we have:

▷ ***Energy*** is the number of crossing switches per time in a system.

In nature, when free quantum particles move, their phase changes linearly with time. In other words, the 'little arrow' representing the free particle phase rotates with constant angular frequency. We saw that in the strand model, the 'little arrow' is taken as (half) the orientation angle of the tangle core, and the arrow rotation is (half) the rotation of the tangle core.

▷ The ***kinetic energy*** T of a particle is the number of crossing switches per time induced by shape fluctuations of the continuously rotating tangle core.

We call $\mathcal{T}$ the corresponding volume density: $\mathcal{T} = T/V$. In nature, the Lagrangian is a practical quantity to describe motion. For a *free* particle, the Lagrangian density $\mathcal{L} = \mathcal{T}$ is simply the kinetic energy density, and the action $W = \int \mathcal{L} \, \mathrm{d}V\mathrm{d}t = Tt$ is the product of kinetic energy and time. In the strand model, a free particle is a constantly rotating and advancing tangle. We see directly that this constant evolution minimizes the action W for a particle, given the states at the start and at the end.

This aspect is more interesting for particles that interact. Interactions can be described by a potential energy U, which is, more properly speaking, the energy of the field that produces the interaction. In the strand model,

▷ ***Potential energy*** U is the number of crossing switches per time induced by an interaction field.

We call $\mathcal{U}$ the corresponding volume density: $\mathcal{U} = U/V$. In short, in the strand model, an interaction changes the rotation rate and the linear motion of a particle tangle.

In the strand model, the *difference* between kinetic and potential energy is thus a quantity that describes how much a system consisting of a tangle and a field *changes* at a given time. The total change is the integral over time of all instantaneous changes. In other words, in the strand model we have:

▷ The ***Lagrangian density*** $\mathcal{L} = \mathcal{T} - \mathcal{U}$ is the number of crossing switches per volume and time, averaged over many Planck scales.

▷ The physical ***action*** $W = \int L \, \mathrm{d}t = \int\int \mathcal{L} \, \mathrm{d}V\mathrm{d}t$ of a physical process is the ob-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

served number of crossing switches of strands. The action value W_{if} between an initial state ψ_i and a final state ψ_f is given by

$$W_{if} = \langle \psi_i \,|\, \int \mathcal{L}\, dt \,|\, \psi_f \rangle = \langle \psi_i \,|\, \int (\mathcal{T} - \mathcal{U})\, dt \,|\, \psi_f \rangle \,. \tag{135}$$

Since energy is related to crossing switches, it is natural that strand fluctuations that do *not* induce crossing switches are *favoured*. In short, the strand model states

▷ Evolution of tangles *minimizes the action* W.

In the strand model, *the least action principle appears naturally*. In the strand model, an evolution has least action when it occurs with the smallest number of crossing changes. With this connection, one can also show that the strand model implies Schwinger's quantum action principle.

Challenge 140 e

To calculate quantum motion with the principle of least action, we need to define the kinetic and the potential energy in terms of strands. There are various possibilities for Lagrangian densities for a given evolution equation; however, all are equivalent. In case of the free Schrödinger equation, one possibility is:

$$\mathcal{L} = \frac{i\hbar}{2}(\overline{\psi}\,\partial_t\psi - \partial_t\overline{\psi}\,\psi) - \frac{\hbar^2}{2m}\nabla\overline{\psi}\nabla\psi \,. \tag{136}$$

In this way, the principle of least action can be used to describe the evolution of the Schrödinger equation. The same is possible for situations with potentials, for the Pauli equation, and for all other evolution equations of quantum particles.

We thus retain that the strand model explains the least action principle. It explains it in the following way: quantum evolution minimizes the number of crossing switches.

Special relativity: the vacuum

In nature, there is an invariant limit energy speed c, namely the speed of light and of all other massless radiation. Special relativity is the description of the consequences from this observation, in the case of a flat space-time.

We remark that special relativity also implies and requires that the flat vacuum looks exactly the same for all inertial observers. In the strand model, the idea of flat vacuum as a set of fluctuating featureless strands that are *unknotted* and *unlinked* automatically implies that for any inertial observer the flat vacuum has no matter content, has no energy content, is isotropic and is homogeneous. The strand model thus realizes this basic requirement of special relativity. In the strand model, vacuum is *Lorentz-invariant*.

Many models of the vacuum, even fluctuating ones, have difficulties reproducing Lorentz invariance. The strand model differs, because the strands are not the observable entities; only their crossing switches are. This topological definition, together with the averaging of the fluctuations, makes the vacuum Lorentz-invariant.

We note that in the strand model, the vacuum is unique, and the vacuum energy of flat infinite vacuum is exactly zero. In the strand model, there is no divergence of the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

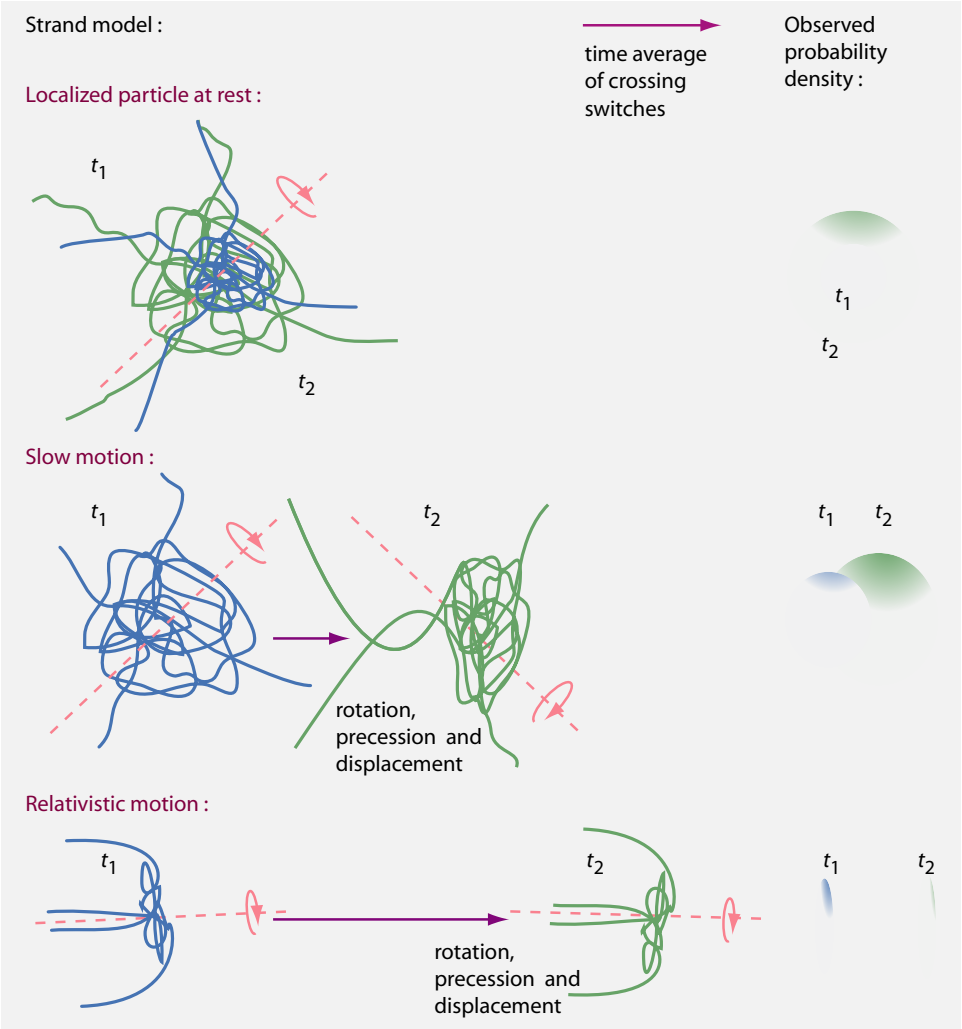


FIGURE 43 Tangles at rest, at low speed and at relativistic speed.

vacuum energy, and there is thus *no* contribution to the cosmological constant from quantum field theory. In particular, there is no need for supersymmetry to explain the small energy density of the vacuum.

Special relativity: the invariant limit speed

In the strand model, massless particles are unknotted and untangled. Even though we will deduce the strand model for photons only later on, we use it here already, to speed up the discussion. In the strand model, the *photon* is described by a single, helically deformed unknotted strand, as shown in Figure 50. Therefore, we can define:

Page 222

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

▷ The ***Planck speed*** c is the observed average speed of crossing switches due to photons.

Because the definition uses crossing switches and a massless particle, the speed of light c is an *energy speed*. The speed of light c is also an average for long times. Indeed, as is well-known in quantum field theory, due to the indeterminacy relation, single photons can travel faster or slower than light, but the probability for large deviations is extremely low.

Ref. 167

The linear motion of a helically deformed photon strand through the vacuum strands is similar to the motion of a bottle opener through cork. It differs from the linear motion of a matter tangle through vacuum, which makes use of the belt trick. The belt trick slows fermions down, though the details are not simple, as we will discover below. In short, we find that matter tangles always move *more slowly than light*. The speed c is a *limit speed*.

Page 339

In fact, we see that ultrarelativistic tangles move, as shown in Figure 43, almost like light. We thus find that matter can *almost* reach the speed of light. The speed c is indeed a *limit speed*.

However, one problem remains open: how exactly do tangles move through the web that describes the vacuum? We will clarify this issue later on. In a few words, the motion of a photon requires that the strands of the surrounding space make room for it. This requires favourable fluctuations, thus a finite time. The motion process of photons thus makes it clear that the speed of light is *finite*.

Page 339

The speed of light c is defined as an average, because, as well-known in quantum field theory, there are small probabilities that light moves faster or slower that c. But the average result c will be the same for every observer. The value of the speed c is thus *invariant*.

In 1905, Einstein showed that the mentioned properties of the speed of light – energy speed, limit speed, finite speed and invariant speed – imply the Lorentz transformations. In particular, the three properties of the speed of light c imply that the energy E of a particle of mass m is related to its momentum p as

$$E^2 = m^2c^4 + c^2p^2 \quad \text{or} \quad \hbar^2\omega^2 = m^2c^4 + c^2\hbar^2k^2 \,. \tag{137}$$

This dispersion relation is thus also valid for massive particles made of tangled strands – even though we cannot yet calculate tangle masses. (We will do this later on.)

Page 344

Should we be surprised at this result? No. In the fundamental principle, the definition of the crossing switch, we inserted the speed of light as the ratio between the Planck length and the Planck time. Therefore, by defining the crossing switch in the way we did, we have implicitly stated the invariance of the speed of light.

Page 146

Fluctuating strands imply that flat vacuum has no matter or energy content, for *every* inertial observer. Due to the strand fluctuations, flat vacuum is also homogeneous and isotropic for every inertial observer. Therefore, together with the 3 + 1-dimensionality of space-time deduced above, we have now definitely shown that flat vacuum has Poincaré symmetry. This settles another issue from the millennium list.

Page 201

Page 157

The relativistic dispersion relation differs from the non-relativistic case in two ways. First, the energy scale is shifted, and now includes the rest energy $E_0 = c^2m$. Secondly,

Page 189

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the spin precession is not independent of the particle speed any more; for relativistic particles, the spin lies close to the direction of motion. Both effects follow from the existence of a limit speed.

If we neglect spin, we can use the relativistic dispersion relation to deduce directly the well-known Klein–Gordon equation for the evolution of a wave function:

$$-\hbar^2 \partial_{tt}\psi = m^2c^4 - c^2\hbar^2\nabla^2\psi \,. \tag{138}$$

In other words, the strand model implies that relativistic tangles follow the Klein–Gordon equation. We now build on this result to deduce Dirac's equation for relativistic quantum motion.

Dirac's equation deduced from tangles

The relativistic Klein–Gordon equation assumes that spin effects are negligible. This approximation fails to describe most experiments. A precise description of relativistic elementary particles must include spin.

So far, we deduced the Schrödinger equation using the relation between phase and the quantum of action, using the non-relativistic energy–momentum relation, and neglecting spin. In the next step we deduced the Pauli equation by including the properties of spin 1/2. The following step was to deduce the Klein–Gordon equation using again the relation between phase and the quantum of action, this time the relativistic energy–momentum relation, but assuming zero spin. The final and correct description of elementary fermions, the Dirac equation, results from combining all three ingredients: (1) the relation between the quantum of action and the phase of the wave function, (2) the relativistic mass–energy relation, and (3) the effects of spin 1/2. Now we can reproduce this derivation because all three ingredients are reproduced by the strand model.

We first recall the derivation of the Dirac equation found in textbooks. The main observation about spin in the relativistic context is the existence of states of right-handed and of left-handed chirality: spin can precess in two opposite senses around the direction of momentum. In addition, for massive particles, the two chiral states mix. The existence of two chiralities requires a description of spinning particles with a wave function that has *four* complex components, thus *twice* the number of components that appear in the Pauli equation. Indeed, the Pauli equation implicitly assumes only one, given sign for the chirality, even though it does not specify it. This simple description is possible because in non-relativistic situations, states of different chirality do not mix.

Consistency requires that each of the four components of the wave function of a relativistic spinning particle must follow the relativistic energy–momentum relation, and thus the Klein–Gordon equation. This requirement is known to be sufficient to deduce the Dirac equation. One of the simplest derivations is due to Lerner; we summarize it here.

Ref. 168
Ref. 169

When a spinning object moves relativistically, we must take both chiralities into account. We call u the negative chiral state and v the positive chiral state. Each state is described by two complex numbers that depend on space and time. The 4-vector for

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

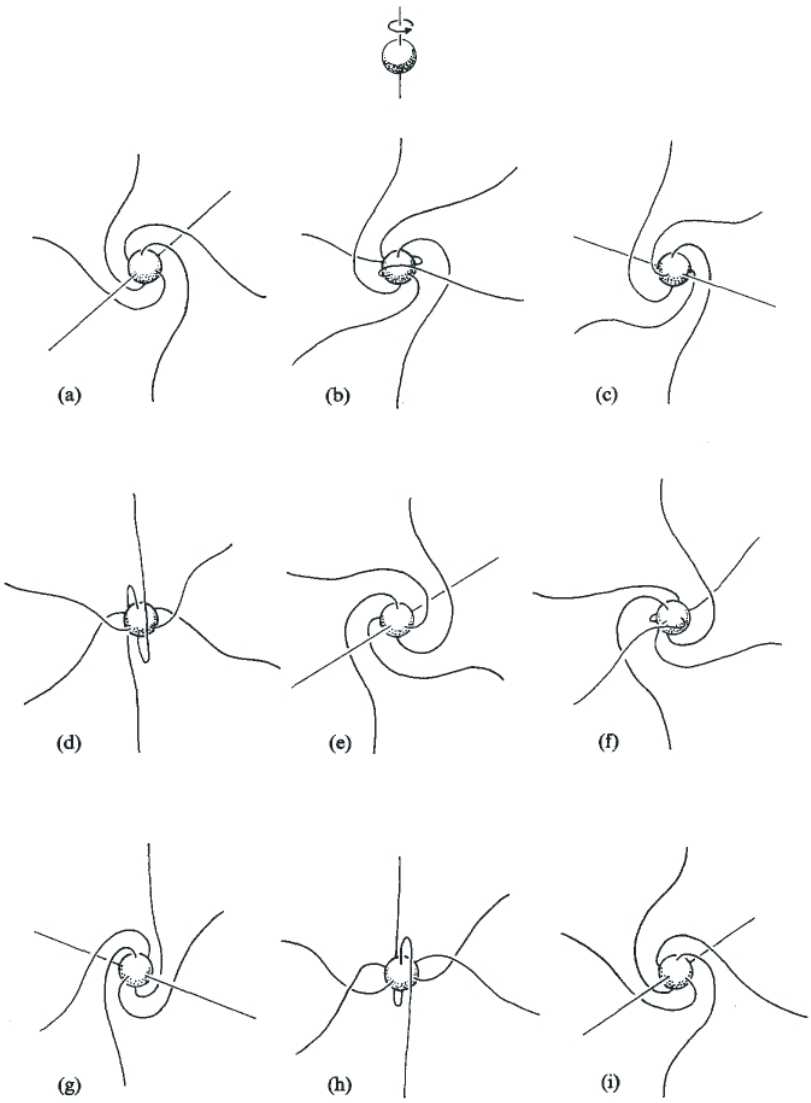


FIGURE 44 The belt trick for a rotating body with many tails, as used by Battey-Pratt and Racey to deduce the Dirac equation (© Springer Verlag, from Ref. 170).

probability and current becomes

$$J_\mu = u^\dagger \sigma_\mu u + v^\dagger \sigma_\mu v \,. \tag{139}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

We now introduce the four-component spinor φ and the 4×4 spin matrices a_μ

$$\varphi = \begin{pmatrix} u \\ v \end{pmatrix} \quad \text{and} \quad \alpha_\mu = \begin{pmatrix} \sigma_\mu & 0 \\ 0 & \overline{\sigma}_\mu \end{pmatrix} , \tag{140}$$

where $\sigma_\mu = (I, \boldsymbol{\sigma})$ and $\overline{\sigma}_\mu = (I, -\boldsymbol{\sigma})$ and I is the 2×2 identity matrix. The 4-current can then be written as

$$J_\mu = \varphi^\dagger \alpha_\mu \varphi \, . \tag{141}$$

The three requirements of current conservation, Lorentz invariance and linearity then yield the evolution equation Ref. 169

$$\mathrm{i}\hbar \partial^\mu (\alpha_\mu \varphi) + mc\gamma_5 \varphi = 0 \, . \tag{142}$$

This is the Dirac equation in the (less usual) spinorial representation.* The last term shows that mass mixes right and left chiralities. The equation can be expanded to include potentials using minimal coupling, in the same way as done above for the Schrödinger and Pauli equations.

The above textbook derivation of the Dirac equation from usual quantum theory can be repeated and visualized also with the help of strands. There is no difference. This derivation was performed for the first time by Battey-Pratt and Racey, in 1980. Ref. 170 They explored a central object connected by unobservable strands (or 'tails') to the border of space, as shown in Figure 44. In their approach, the central object plus the tails correspond to a quantum particle. The central object is assumed to be continuously rotating, thus reproducing spin 1/2. They also assumed that only the central object is observable. (In the strand model, the central object becomes the tangle core.) Battey-Pratt and Racey then explored relativistically moving, objects of both chiralities. They showed that a description of such an object requires four complex fields. Studying the evolution of the phases and axes for the chiral objects yields the Dirac equation. The derivation by Battey-Pratt and Racey is mathematically equivalent to the textbook derivation just given.

We can thus say that the Dirac equation follows from the belt trick. We will visualize this connection in more detail in the next section. When the present author found this connection in 2008, Lou Kauffman pointed out the paper by Battey-Pratt and Racey. Paul Dirac was still alive when they found this connection, but he did not answer their letter for comment.

In summary, tangles completely reproduce both the rotation and the linear motion of elementary fermions. Therefore, the strand model provides a simple view on the evolution equations of quantum theory. In the terms of the strand model, when spin is neglected, the Schrödinger equation describes the evolution of crossing density. For relativistic fermions, when the belt trick is included, the Dirac equation describes the

* The matrix γ_5 is defined here as

$$\gamma_5 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & I \\ I & 0 \end{pmatrix} , \tag{143}$$

where I is the 2×2 identity matrix.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

evolution of crossing density. In fact, strands visualize these evolution equations in the most concrete way known so far.

Visualizing spinors and Dirac's equation using tangles

Despite its apparent complexity, the Dirac equation makes only a few statements: spin 1/2 particles are fermions, obey the relativistic energy–momentum relation, keep the quantum of action invariant, and thus behave like a wave. Each statement is visualized by the tangle model of fermions: tangles behave as spinors, the relativistic energy–momentum relation is built-in, the fundamental principle holds, and rotating tangle cores reproduce the evolution of the phase. Let us look at the details.

Given a particle tangle, the short-time fluctuations lead, after averaging of the crossings, to the wave function. The tangle model of fermions also provides a *visualization* of the *spinor* wave function. Indeed, at each point in space, the wave function has the following parameters:

— There is an average density $\rho(x,t)$; physically, this is the probability density. In the strand model, this is the local crossing density.
— There is a set of three Euler angles α, β and γ; physically, they describe the average local orientation and phase of the spin axis. In the strand model, this is the average local orientation and phase of the tangle core.
— There is a second set of three parameters $\boldsymbol{v} = (v_x, v_y, v_z)$; physically, they describe, at one's preference, either the average local Lorentz boost or a second set of three Euler angles. In the strand model, these parameters describe the average local deformation of the core that is due to the Lorentz boost. It can also be seen as the axis around which the belt trick is performed.
— There is a phase δ; physically, this represents the relative importance of particle and antiparticle density. In the strand model, this phase describes with what probability the average local belt trick is performed right-handedly or left-handedly.

In total, these are eight real parameters; they correspond to one positive real number and seven phases. They lead to the description of a spinor wave function as Ref. 171

$$\varphi = \sqrt{\rho}\, e^{i\delta}\, L(\boldsymbol{v})\, R(\alpha/2, \beta/2, \gamma/2)\ , \tag{144}$$

where the product LR is an abbreviation for the boosted and rotated unit spinor and all parameters depend on space and time. This expression is equivalent to the description with four complex parameters used in most textbooks. In fact, this description of a spinor wave function and the related physical visualization of its density and its first six phases dates already from the 1960s. Ref. 171 The visualisation can be deduced from the study of relativistic spinning tops or of relativistic fluids. Rotating tangles are more realistic, however. In contrast to all previous visualizations, the rotating tangle model explains also the last, seventh phase. This is the phase that describes matter and anti-matter, that explains the appearance of the quantum of action $\hbar$, and that explains the fermion behaviour.

In short, only rotating tangles together with the fundamental principle provide a simple, complete and precise visualisation of spinor wave functions and their evolution. The tangle model for spinning relativistic quantum particles remains a simple extension

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Ref. 163 of Feynman's idea to describe a quantum particle as a rotating little arrow. The arrow can be imagined as being attached to the rotating tangle core. The tails are needed to reproduce fermion behaviour. The specific type of tangle core determines the type of particle. The blurring of the crossings defines the wave function. Rotating arrows describe non-relativistic quantum physics; rotating tangles describe relativistic quantum physics.

Visualizing spinor wave functions with tangles of strands helps the understanding of the Dirac equation in several ways.

1. Tangles support the view that elementary particles are little rotating entities, also in Ref. 171 the relativistic case. This fact has been pointed out by many scholars over the years. The strand model provides a consistent visualization for these discussions.
2. The belt trick can be seen as the mechanism underlying the famous Zitterbewegung Ref. 172 that is part of the Dirac equation. The limitations in the observing the belt trick translate directly into the difficulties of observing the Zitterbewegung.
3. The belt trick also visualizes why the velocity operator for a relativistic particle has eigenvalues $\pm c$.
4. The Compton length is often seen as the typical length at which quantum field effects take place. In the tangle model, it would correspond to the average size needed for the belt trick. The strand model thus suggests that the mass of a particle is related to the average size needed for the belt trick.
5. Tangles support the – at first sight bizarre – picture of elementary particles as little Ref. 173 charges rotating around a centre of mass. Indeed, in the tangle model, particle rotation Page 170 requires a regular application of the belt trick of Figure 19, and the belt trick can be interpreted as inducing the rotation of a charge, defined by the tangle core, around a centre of mass, defined by the average of the core position. It can thus be helpful to use the strand model to visualize this description.
6. The tangle model can be seen as a vindication of the stochastic quantization research Ref. 174 programme; quantum motion is the result of underlying fluctuations. For example, the similarity of the Schrödinger equation and the diffusion equation is modelled and explained by the strand model: since crossings can be rotated, diffusion of crossings leads to the imaginary unit that appears in the Schrödinger equation.

In short, rotating tangles are a correct underlying model for the propagation of fermions. And so far, tangles are also the only known correct model. *Tangles model propagators.* This modelling is possible because the Dirac equation results from only three ingredients:

— the relation between the quantum of action and the phase of the wave function (the wave behaviour),
— the relation between the quantum of action and spinor behaviour (the exchange behaviour),
— and the mass–energy relation of special relativity (the particle behaviour), itself due to the fundamental principle.

And all three ingredients are reproduced by the strand model. We see that the apparent complexity of the Dirac equation hides its fundamental simplicity. The strand model reproduces the ingredients of the Dirac equation, reproduces the equation itself, and makes the simplicity manifest. In fact, we can say:

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

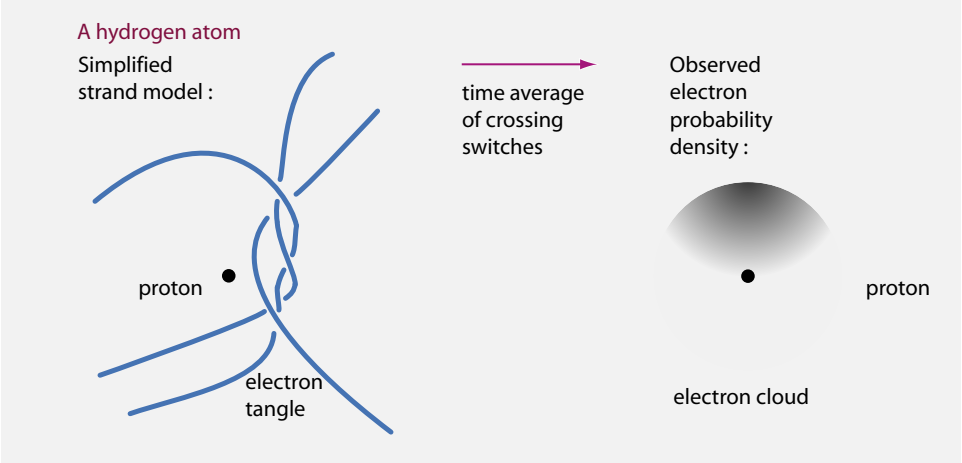


FIGURE 45 A simple, quantum-mechanical view of a hydrogen atom.

▷ The Dirac equation describes the relativistic infinitesimal belt trick or string trick.

The belt trick is fundamental for understanding the Dirac equation. In the strand model, core rotations vary along two dimensions – the rotation is described by two angles – and so does the belt trick. The resulting four combinations form the four components of the Dirac spinor and of the Dirac equation.

Page 173

In summary, tangles can be used as a precise visualization and explanation of quantum physics. Wave functions, also those of fermions, are *blurred tangles* – with the detail that not the strands, but their crossings are blurred.

Quantum mechanics vs. quantum field theory

Quantum mechanics is the approximation to quantum physics in which fields are continuous and particles are immutable. In the strand model, quantum mechanics is thus the approximation in which a particle is described by a tangle with a shape that is *fixed* in time. This approximation allows us to derive the Dirac equation, the Klein–Gordon equation, the Proca equation, the Pauli equation and the Schrödinger equation. In this approximation, the strand model for the electron in a hydrogen atom is illustrated in Figure 45. This approximation already will allow us to deduce the existence of the three gauge interactions, as we will see in the next chapter.

In contrast, *quantum field theory* is the description in which fields are themselves described by bosons, and particles types can transform into each other. The strand model allows us to deduce the existence of all known gauge bosons, as shown in the next chapter. In the strand description of quantum field theory, particles are not tangles with a fixed shape of their core, but for each particle, the shape *varies*. This variation leads to gauge boson emission and absorption.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

A flashback: settling three paradoxes of Galilean physics

In all descriptions of physics, space and time are measured, explained and defined using matter. This occurs, for example, with the help of metre bars and clocks. On the other hand, matter is measured, explained and defined using space and time. This occurs, for example, by following a localized body over space and time. The circularity of the two definitions is at the basis of modern physics.

Page 105 As already mentioned above, the circularity is a natural consequence of the strand model. Both matter and space-time turn out to be approximations of the same basic building blocks; this common origin explains the apparent circular reasoning of Galilean physics. Most of all, the strand model changes it from a paradox to a logical necessity.

The strand model defines vacuum, and thus physical space, as a result of averaging strand crossings. Space is thus a *relative* concept. Newton's bucket experiment is sometimes seen as a counter-argument to this conclusion and as an argument for absolute space. However, the strand model shows that any turning object is connected to the rest of the universe through its tails. This connection makes every rotation an example of relative motion. Rotation is thus always performed relatively to the horizon of the universe. On the other hand, the detection of tangles among the tails allows a *local* determination of the rotation state, as is observed. Strands thus confirm that rotation and space are relative concepts. Strands thus also explain why we can turn ourselves on ice by rotating an arm over our head, without outside help. Strands lie to rest all issues around the rotating bucket.

A long time ago, Zeno of Elea based one of his paradoxes – the flying arrow that cannot reach the target – on an assumption that is usually taken as granted: he stated the impossibility to distinguish a short-time image (or state) of a *moving* body from the image (or state) of a *resting* body. The flattening of the tangles involved shows that the assumption is incorrect; motion and rest are *distinguishable*, even in (imagined) photographs taken with extremely short shutter times. The argument of Zeno is thus not possible, and the paradox disappears.

Fun challenges about quantum theory

> "Urlaub ist die Fortsetzung des Familienlebens unter erschwerten Bedingungen.*"
>
> Dieter Hildebrandt

Challenge 141 s Are the definitions for the addition and multiplication of Schrödinger wave functions that were given above also valid for spinor tangle functions?

* *

Challenge 142 e The definition of tangle functions, or wave functions, did not take into account the crossings of the vacuum strands, but only those of the particle tangle. Why is this allowed?

* *

Modelling the measurement of action at the quantum level as the counting of full turns

* 'Vacation is the continuation of family life under aggravated conditions.' Dieter Hildebrandt (b. 1927 Bunzlau, d. 2013 Munich) was a cabaret artist, actor and author.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of a wheel is a well-known idea that is used by good teachers to take the mystery out of quantum physics. The strand model visualizes this idea by assigning the quantum of
Challenge 143 e action $\hbar$ to a full turn of one strand segment around another.

* *

Challenge 144 s Is any axiomatic system of quantum theory in contrast with the strand model?

* *

In the strand model, tangle energy is related to tangle core rotation. What is the difference between the angular frequency for tangles in the non-relativistic and in the relativ-
Challenge 145 s istic case?

* *

Ref. 175 If you do not like the deduction of quantum mechanics given here, there is an alternative: you can deduce quantum mechanics in the way Schwinger did in his course, using the
Challenge 146 e quantum action principle.

* *

Modern teaching of the Dirac equation replaces the spinor picture with the vector
Ref. 176 picture. Hrvoje Nikolić showed that the vector picture significantly simplifies the understanding of Lorentz covariance of the Dirac equation. How does the vector picture clarify
Challenge 147 r the relation between the belt trick and the Dirac equation?

* *

In the strand description of quantum mechanics, strands are impenetrable: they cannot pass through each other (at finite distances). Can quantum mechanics also be derived if
Challenge 148 s the model is changed and this process is allowed? Is entanglement still found?

* *

A puzzle: Is the belt trick possible in a continuous and deformable medium – such as a
Challenge 149 e sheet or a mattress – in which a coloured sphere is suspended? Is the belt trick possible with an *uncountably* infinite number of tails?

* *

Page 174 At first sight, the apheresis machine diagram of Figure 24 suggests that, using the belt trick, animals could grow and use wheels instead of legs, because rotating wheels could be supplied with blood and connected to nerves. Why did wheels not evolve neverthe-
Challenge 150 s less?

Summary on quantum theory of matter: millennium issues and experimental predictions

In this chapter, we used the fundamental principle – crossing switches define the quantum of action $\hbar$ and the other Planck units – to deduce that particles are tangles of strands and that wave functions are time-averaged rotating tangles. In simple words,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

▷ Both non-relativistic and relativistic wave functions are *blurred rotating tangles*.

More precisely, a wave function appears from the blurred crossings of a tangle. The components and phases of the wave function at a point in space are due to the orientation and phase of crossings at that point. We also deduced that blurred tangles obey the least action principle and the Dirac equation.

In other words, visualizing the quantum of action as a crossing switch implies quantum theory. The strand model confirms Bohr's statement: quantum theory is indeed a consequence of the quantum of action. Specifically, the strand model thus shows that all quantum effects are *consequences of extension* and *consequences of the three dimensions of space*. More precisely, all quantum effects are *due to tails*, the tails of the tangles that represent a quantum system. In particular, the strand model confirms that

▷ The Dirac equation is essentially the infinitesimal version of the belt trick (or string trick).

In other words, we have shown that strands reproduce the relativistic Lagrangian density $\mathcal{L}$ of charged, elementary, relativistic fermions in an external electromagnetic field $\boldsymbol{A}$

$$\mathcal{L} = \overline{\varphi}\,(i\hbar c \not{D} - c^2 m)\,\varphi\,, \tag{145}$$

where

$$\not{D} = \gamma^\sigma \mathrm{D}_\sigma = \gamma^\sigma(\partial_\sigma - iqA_\sigma)\,. \tag{146}$$

We thus conclude that *strands reproduce the quantum theory of matter*.

The strand model predicts deviations from the relativistic matter Lagrangian, and thus from the Dirac equation, *only* in three cases: first, when quantum aspects of electrodynamic field play a role, second, when nuclear interactions play a role, and third, when space curvature, i.e., strong gravity, plays a role. All this agrees with observation.

We will deduce the description of quantum electrodynamics and of the nuclear interactions in the next chapter. In the case of gravity, the strand model predicts that deviations from quantum theory occur only when the energy–momentum of an elementary particle approaches the Planck value, i.e., for really strong gravity. Such deviations are not accessible to experiment at present. We will explore this situation in the subsequent chapter.

In addition, the strand model predicts that in nature, the Planck values for momentum and energy are limit values that cannot be exceeded by a quantum particle. All experiments agree with this prediction.

Page 38

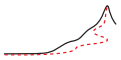
The deduction of quantum theory from strands given here is, at present, the *only* known microscopic explanation for quantum physics. So far, no other microscopic model, no different explanation nor any other Planck-scale deduction of quantum theory has been found. In particular, the extension of fundamental entities – together with observability limited to crossing switches – is the key to understanding quantum physics.

Let us evaluate the situation. In our quest to explain the open issues of the millennium list, we have explained the origin of Planck units, the origin of wave functions, the origin

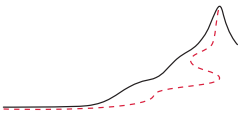
Page 157

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of the least action principle, the origin of space-time dimensions, the Lorentz and Poincaré symmetries, the origin of particle identity, and the simplest part of the Lagrangian of quantum field theory, namely, the Lagrangian of free fermions, such as the electron, and that of fermions in continuous external fields. Therefore, for the next leg, we turn to the most important parts of the standard model Lagrangian that are missing: those due to gauge interactions.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 9

GAUGE INTERACTIONS DEDUCED FROM STRANDS

What are interactions? At the start of this volume, when we summarized what relates the Planck units to relativity and to quantum theory, we pointed out that the nature of interactions at Planck scales was still in the dark. In the year 2000, it was known for several decades that the essential properties of the electromagnetic, the weak and the strong nuclear interaction are their respective gauge symmetries: all three interactions are *gauge interactions*. But the underlying reason for this property was still unknown.

Page 17

Ref. 177

In this chapter we discover that fluctuating strands in three spatial dimensions explain the existence of precisely three gauge interactions, each with precisely the gauge symmetry that is observed. This is the first time ever that such an explanation is possible. In other terms, we will deduce quantum field theory from strands. Indeed, strands provide a natural mechanism for interactions that explains and implies Feynman diagrams. The term 'mechanism' has to be taken with a grain of salt, because there is nothing mechanical involved; nevertheless, the term is not wrong, because we shall discover a surprisingly simple result: *Gauge interactions and gauge symmetries are due to specific strand deformations.*

Ref. 178

In this chapter, we work in *flat* space-time, as is always done in quantum field theory. We leave the quantum aspects of *curved* space-time and of gravitation for the next chapter. We thus start by exploring the non-gravitational interactions in the quantum domain.

Interactions and phase change

Experiments in the quantum domain show that interactions *change the phase* of wave functions. But how precisely does this happen? The strand model will give us a simple answer: the emission and the absorption of gauge bosons is only possible *together* with a phase change. To explain this connection, we need to study the phase of tangle *cores* in more detail.

When we explored spin and its connection to the belt trick, we pictured the rotation of the tangle core in the same way as the rotation of a belt buckle. We assumed that the core of the tangle rotates like a *rigid* object; the rotation is completed through the shape fluctuations of the tails only. Why did we assume this?

Page 169

In Feynman's description of quantum theory, *free particles are advancing rotating arrows.* In the strand model, *free* particle motion is modelled as the change of position of the tangle core and *spin* as the rotation of the core. We boldly assumed that the core

Ref. 163

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

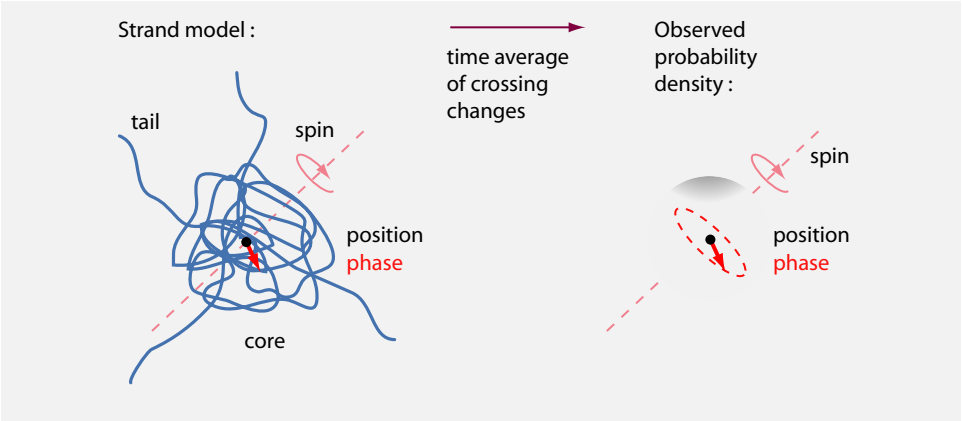


FIGURE 46 In the chapter on quantum theory, the phase was defined assuming a *rigidly rotating core*; this approximation was also used in the description of particle translation.

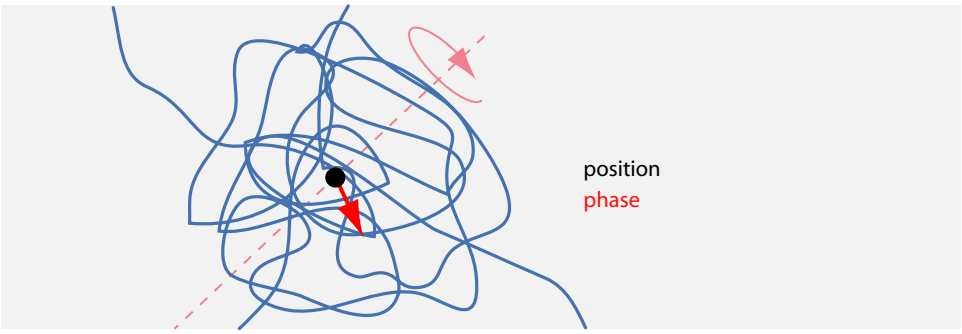


FIGURE 47 A magnified tangle core shows that the phase can also change due to *core deformations*; such core deformations lead to *gauge interactions*.

remained rigid, attached the phase arrow to it, and described spin as the rotation of the core with its attached arrow, as shown again in Figure 46. This bold simplification led us to the Dirac equation. In short, the assumption of a rigid core works.

However, we swept a problem under the rug: what happens if the core is *not* rigid? It turns out that the answer to this question automatically leads to the existence of gauge interactions. Now, we know from usual quantum theory that

▷ An ***interaction*** is a process that changes the phase of a wave function, but differs from a rotation.

In the strand model, shape deformations of tangle cores also lead to phase changes. In fact, we will discover that core deformations automatically lead to precisely those three gauge interactions that we observe in nature.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Tail deformations versus core deformations

We can summarize the previous chapter, on the free motion of matter tangles, as the chapter that focused on shape fluctuations of *tails*. Indeed, the belt trick completed the proof that

▷ ***Space-time symmetries*** are due to *tail* deformations.

All space-time symmetries – translation, rotation, boost, spin and particle exchange – are due to tail deformations; in such tail deformations, the tangle core is assumed to remain unchanged and rigid (in its own rest frame).

In contrast, the present chapter focuses on shape fluctuations in *tangle cores*.* We will discover that

▷ ***Gauge symmetries*** are due to *core* deformations.

Let us explore the tangle core in more detail. Figure 47 shows a magnified view of the core and its phase arrow. The phase of the core results from the phases of all its crossings. Thus, the figure makes it clear that the phase arrow will be sensitive to the shape fluctuations and deformations of the strand segments that make up the core.

In nature, any phase change of the wave function that is not due to a space-time symmetry is due to an interaction. For the strand model, this connection implies:

▷ When the phase of a core changes through *rigid orientation change*, we speak of ***core rotation***.

▷ When the phase of a core changes through *core shape deformation*, we speak of ***interaction***.

We thus need to understand two things: First, what kinds of core deformation exist? Secondly, how precisely is the phase – i.e., each arrow definition – influenced by core deformations? In particular, we have to check the answers and deductions with experiment.

The first question, on the classification of the core deformations, is less hard than it might appear. The fundamental principle – events are crossing switches of strands – implies that deformations are observable only if they induce crossing switches. Other deformations do not have any physical effect. (Of course, certain deformations will have crossing switches for one observer and none for another. We will take this fact into consideration.) Already in 1926, the mathematician Kurt Reidemeister classified all those tangle deformations that lead to crossing switches. The classification yields exactly three classes of deformations, today called the three *Reidemeister moves*. They are shown in Figure 48.

Ref. 178

Ref. 180

* The contrast between tail deformations and core deformations has a *remote* similarity to gravity/gauge duality, or AdS/CFT correspondence, and to space-time duality. For example, in the strand model, the three Reidemeister moves on tangle cores represent the three gauge interactions, whereas the three Reidemeister moves on the vacuum represent (also) gravitational effects.

Ref. 179

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

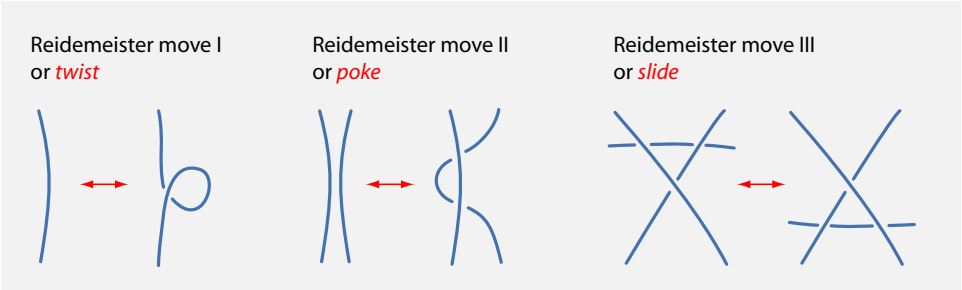


FIGURE 48 The Reidemeister moves: the three types of deformations that induce crossing switches – if the moves are properly defined in three dimensions.

- ▷ The ***first Reidemeister move***, or ***type I move***, or ***twist***, is the addition or removal of a twist in a strand.
- ▷ The ***second Reidemeister move***, or ***type II move***, or ***poke***, is the addition or removal of a bend of one strand under (or over) a second strand.
- ▷ The ***third Reidemeister move***, or ***type III move***, or ***slide***, is the displacement of one strand segment under (or over) the crossing of two other strands.

The type number of each Reidemeister move is also the number of involved strands. We will discover that despite appearances, each Reidemeister move induces a crossing switch. To find this connection, we have to generalize the original Reidemeister moves, which were defined in a two-dimensional projection plane, to the three-dimensional situation of tangle cores.

The three Reidemeister moves turn out to be related to the three gauge interactions:

- ▷ The first Reidemeister move corresponds to *electromagnetism*.
- ▷ The second Reidemeister move corresponds to the *weak nuclear interaction*.
- ▷ The third Reidemeister move corresponds to the *strong nuclear interaction*.

We will prove this correspondence in the following.

For each Reidemeister move we will explore two types of core deformation processes: One deformation type are *core fluctuations*, which correspond, as we will see, to the emission and absorption of *virtual* interaction bosons. The other deformations are *externally induced core disturbances*, which correspond to the emission and absorption of *real* interaction bosons. As the first step, we show that both for fluctuations and for disturbances, the first Reidemeister move, the twist, is related to the electromagnetic interaction.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

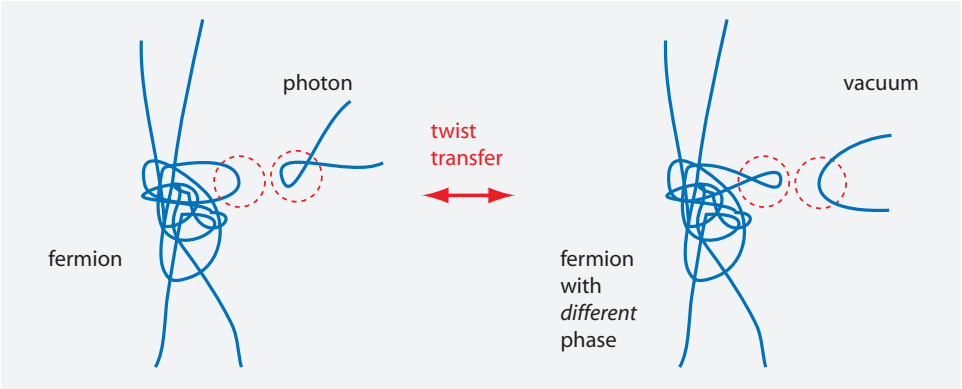


FIGURE 49 A single strand changes the rotation of a tangle: *twist transfer* is the basis of electromagnetism in the strand model. No strand is cut or reglued; the transfer occurs, statistically, through the excluded volume due to the impenetrability of strands.

ELECTRODYNAMICS AND THE FIRST REIDEMEISTER MOVE

Experiments show that all four fundamental interactions are described by potentials. Experiments also show that potentials change the phase, the rotation frequency and the wave number of wave functions. Experiments show that interactions result from the absorption and the emission of gauge bosons. In particular, for electromagnetism, the potentials are due to the flow of real and virtual, massless, uncharged spin-1 photons. Photons are emitted from or absorbed by charged elementary particles; neutral elementary particles do not emit or absorb photons. There are two types of charge, positive and negative. The attraction and repulsion of static charges diminishes with the inverse square of the distance. Charge is conserved. All charged particles are massive and move slower than light. The Lagrangian of matter coupled to the electromagnetic field has a U(1) gauge symmetry. Electromagnetism has a single fundamental Feynman diagram. The electromagnetic coupling constant at low energy, the so-called *fine structure constant*, is measured to be 1/137.035 999 074(44); its energy dependence is described by renormalization.

The previous paragraph contains everything known about the electromagnetic interaction. For example, Maxwell's field equations follow from Coulomb's inverse square relation, its relativistic generalization, and the conservation of charge. More precisely, all experimental observations about electricity and magnetism follow from the Lagrangian of quantum electrodynamics, or QED. In short, we now need to show that the Lagrangian of QED follows from the strand model.

Strands and the twist, the first Reidemeister move

In the strand model of electromagnetism, massless spin 1 bosons such as the photon are made of a single strand. How can a single strand change the phase of a tangle? The answer is given in Figure 49: a *twisted loop* in a single strand will influence the rotation of a tangle because it changes the possible fluctuations of the tangle core. Due to the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

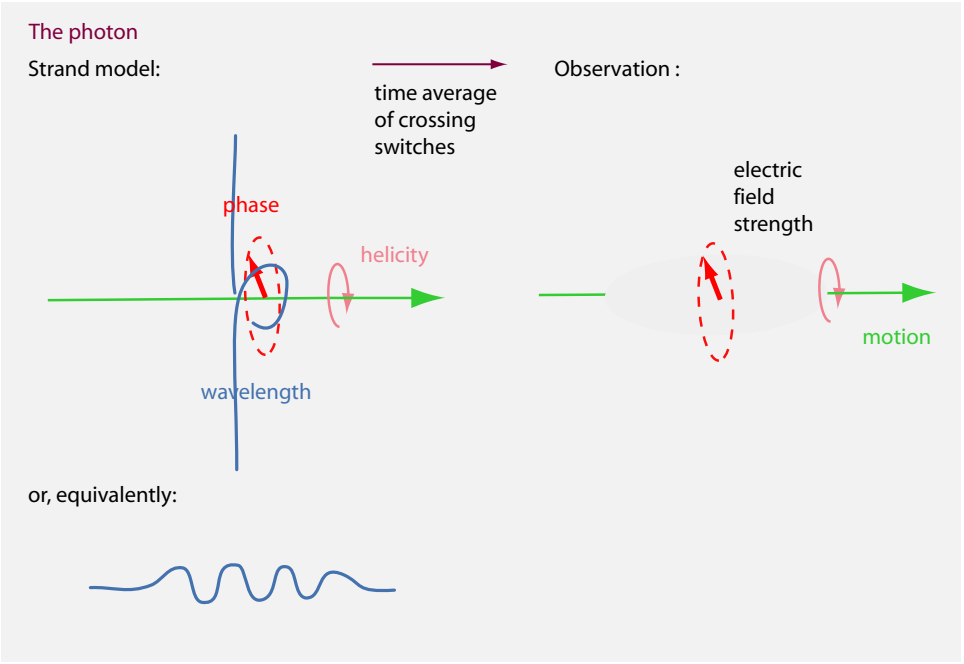


FIGURE 50 The photon in the strand model.

impenetrability of strands, an approaching twisted loop will sometimes transfer its twist to the tangle and thereby change its phase. The observed effect of an electromagnetic field on the phase of a charged fermion is the *time average* of all such twist transfers.

Page 169 Single strands represent bosons, as we saw above. Twisted loops are single strands and can have *two* twist senses, or two polarizations. Single, twisted and *unknotted* strands have no mass; in other words, twisted loops effectively move with the speed of light. And twisted loops, being curved, carry energy.

Approaching twisted loops will change the phase, i.e., the orientation of a matter tangle. Twisted loops correspond to a local rotation of a strand segment by π. But twists can be generalized to arbitrary angles. These generalized twists can be concatenated. Because they are described by a single angle, and because a double twist is equivalent to no Page 227 twist at all, twists form a U(1) group. We show this in detail shortly.

In summary, twists behave like *photons* in all their properties. Therefore, the strand model suggests:

- ▷ A ***photon*** is a twisted strand. An illustration is given in Figure 50.
- ▷ The ***electromagnetic interaction*** is the transfer of twists, i.e., the transfer of first Reidemeister moves, between two particles, as shown in Figure 49.

The transfer of a twist from a single strand to a tangle core thus models the absorption of a photon. We stress again that this transfer results from the way that strands hinder each other's motion, because of their impenetrability. No strand is ever cut or reglued.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Can photons decay, disappear or break up?

The strand model of the photon, as shown in Figure 50, might be seen to suggest that photons can disappear. For example, if a photon strand is straightened out by pulling the ends of the helical deformation, the helix might disappear. A helix might also disappear by a shape fluctuation.

A full image of a photon also includes the vacuum strands around it. In the strand model, the energy of the photon is localized in the configuration formed by the photon strand and the surrounding vacuum strands. In the strand model, energy is localized in regions of strand curvature. If the helical strands disappears, the surrounding vacuum strands are curved instead, or more strongly, and the energy is taken up by these surrounding strands. The net result is that the helix is transferred, permanently or for a short time, to another strand. In other terms, in the strand model, photons can also move by hopping from one strand to the next.

Page 339

The only way in which a photon can disappear completely is by transferring its energy to a tangle. Such a process is called the *absorption* of a photon by a charged particle.

A single photon strand cannot break up into *several* photon strands of smaller helical diameters or of different rotation frequencies. Such a process is prevented by the fundamental principle.

Challenge 151 e

In short, due to energy and to topological restrictions, the strand model prevents the decay, disappearance or splitting of photons, as long as no electric charge is involved. Linear and angular momentum conservation also lead to the same conclusion. Photons are *stable* particles in the strand model.

Electric charge

Surrounded by a bath of photon strands, not all fermion tangles will change their phase. A tangle subject to randomly approaching virtual photons will feel a net effect over time only if it lacks some symmetry. In other words, only tangles that lack a certain symmetry will be electrically charged. Which symmetry will this be?

In a bath of photon strands, thus in a bath that induces random Reidemeister I moves, only *chiral* fermion tangles are expected to be influenced. In other terms:

▷ ***Electric charge*** is due to tangle chirality.

Conversely, we have:

▷ ***Electrically charged particles*** randomly emit twisted strands. Due to the tangle chirality, a random emission will lead to a slight asymmetry, so that right-handed twists will be in the majority for particles of one charge, and left-handed twists will be in the majority for particles of the opposite charge.

Equating electric charge with tangle chirality allows modelling several important observations. First, because chirality can be right-handed or left-handed, there are positive and negative charges. Second, because strands are never cut or reglued in the strand model, chirality, and thus electric charge, is a *conserved quantity*. Third, chirality is only possible for tangles that are localized, and thus massive. Therefore, chiral tangles – charged

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

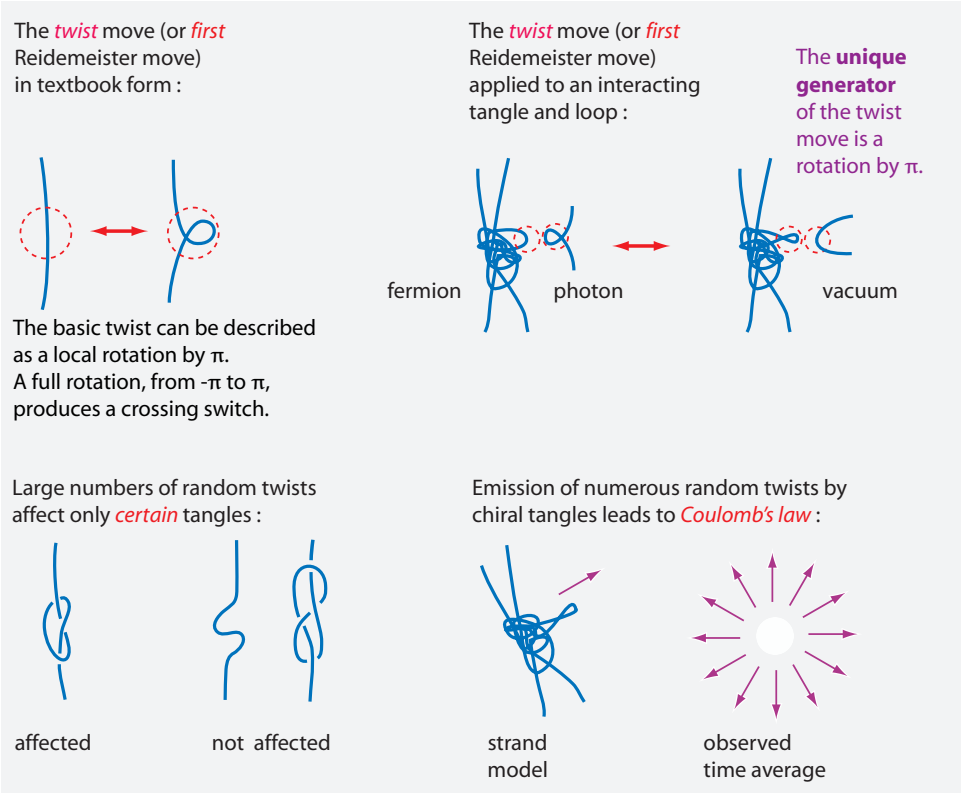

The *twist* move (or *first* Reidemeister move) in textbook form :
The basic twist can be described as a local rotation by π.
A full rotation, from -π to π, produces a crossing switch.
The *twist* move (or *first* Reidemeister move) applied to an interacting tangle and loop :
fermion
photon
The **unique generator** of the twist move is a rotation by π.
vacuum
Large numbers of random twists affect only *certain* tangles :
affected
not affected
Emission of numerous random twists by chiral tangles leads to *Coulomb's law* :
strand model
observed time average

FIGURE 51 Electromagnetism in the strand model: the electromagnetic interaction, electric charge and Coulomb's inverse square relation.

particles – always move slower than light. Fourth, a chiral tangle at rest induces a twisted strand density around it that changes as $1/r^2$, as is illustrated in Figure 51. Finally, photons are uncharged; thus they are not influenced by other photons (to first order).

In short, all properties of electric charge found in nature are reproduced by the tangle model. We now check this in more detail.

Challenge: What knot invariant is electric charge?

Chirality explains the sign of electric charge, but not its magnitude in units of the elementary charge e. A full definition of electric charge must include this aspect.

Mathematicians defined various topological invariants for knot and tangles. *Topological invariants* are properties that are independent of the shape of the knot or tangle, but allow to distinguish knots or tangles that differ in the ways they are knotted. Several invariants are candidates as building blocks for electric charge: *chirality* c, which can be +1 or −1, *minimal crossing number* n, or *topological writhe* w, i.e., the signed minimal crossing number.

Page 404

A definition of electric charge q, proposed by Claus Ernst, is $q = c\,(n \bmod 2)$. Another option for the definition of charge is $q = w/3$. Equivalent definitions use the linking

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

number. At this point of our exploration, the issue is open. We will come back to the
Page 369 detailed connection between charge, chirality and tangle topology later on.

Electric and magnetic fields and potentials

The definition of photons with twisted strands leads to the following definition.

- The ***electric field*** is the volume density of (oriented) crossings of twisted loops.
- The ***magnetic field*** is the flow density of (oriented) crossings of twisted loops.
- The ***electric potential*** is the density of twisted loops.
- The ***magnetic potential*** is the flow density of twisted loops.

The simplest way to check these definitions is to note that the random emission of twisted loops by electric charges yields Coulomb's inverse square relation: the force between two static spherical charges changes with inverse square of the distance. The strand model implies that in this case, *the crossing density is proportional to the square of the loop density*; in other words, the potential falls of as the inverse distance, and the electric field as the square distance.

The definition of the magnetic field simply follows from that of the electric field by changing to moving frame of reference. The two field definitions are illustrated in Figure 52.

We note that the electric field is defined almost in the same way as the wave function:
Page 179 both are oriented crossing densities. However, the electric field is defined with the crossing density of *twisted loops*, whereas the wave function is defined with the crossing density of *tangles*. The definitions differ only by the topology of the underlying strand structures.

In the strand model, energy, or action per time, is the number of crossing switches *per time*. The electromagnetic field energy per volume is thus given by the density of crossing switches *per time* that are due to twisted loops. Now, the strand model implies that *the crossing switch density per time is given by half the square of the crossing density plus half the square of the crossing density flow*. For twisted loops, we thus get that the
Challenge 152 e energy density is half the square of the electric plus half the square of the magnetic field. Inserting the proportionality factors that lead from Planck units to SI units we get the well-known expression

$$\frac{E}{V} = \frac{\varepsilon_0}{2}E^2 + \frac{1}{2\mu_0}B^2 \,. \tag{147}$$

The strand model thus reproduces electromagnetic energy.

We note that in the strand model, the definition of the fields implies that there is no *magnetic charge* in nature. This agrees with observation.

The strand model predicts limit values to all observables. They always appear when strands are as closely packed as possible. This implies a maximum electric field value $E_{\text{max}} = c^4/4Ge \approx 1.9 \cdot 10^{62}$ V/m and a maximum magnetic field value $B_{\text{max}} = c^3/4Ge \approx$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

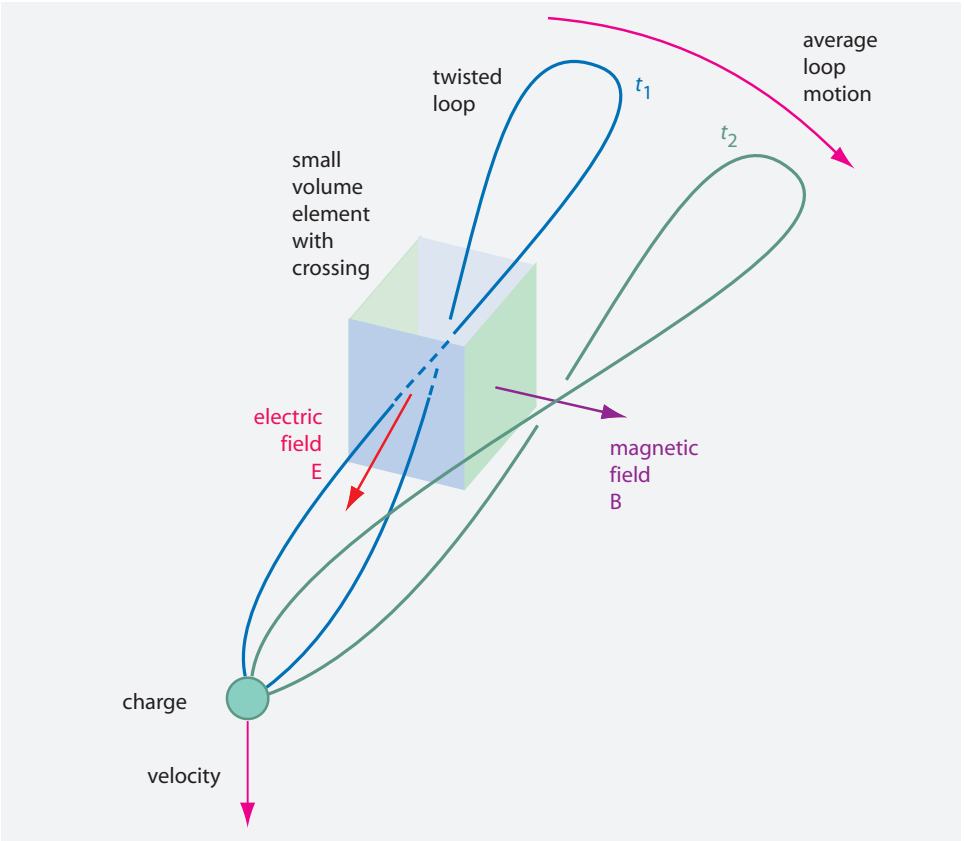


FIGURE 52 Moving twists allow us to define electric fields – as the density of twisted loop crossings – and magnetic fields – as the corresponding flow.

$6.3 \cdot 10^{53}$ T. All physical systems – including all astrophysical objects, such as gamma-ray bursters or quasars – are predicted to conform to this limit. Also this prediction agrees with observations.

The Lagrangian of the electromagnetic field

In classical electrodynamics, the energy density of the electromagnetic field is used to deduce its Lagrangian density. The Lagrangian density describes the intrinsic, observer-independent change that occurs in a system. In addition, the Lagrangian density must be quadratic in the fields and be a Lorentz-scalar.

A precise version of these arguments leads to the Lagrangian density of the electromagnetic field F

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{EM}} = \frac{\varepsilon_0}{2} E^2 - \frac{1}{2\mu_0} B^2 = -\frac{1}{4\mu_0} F_{\mu\nu} F^{\mu\nu} \tag{148}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

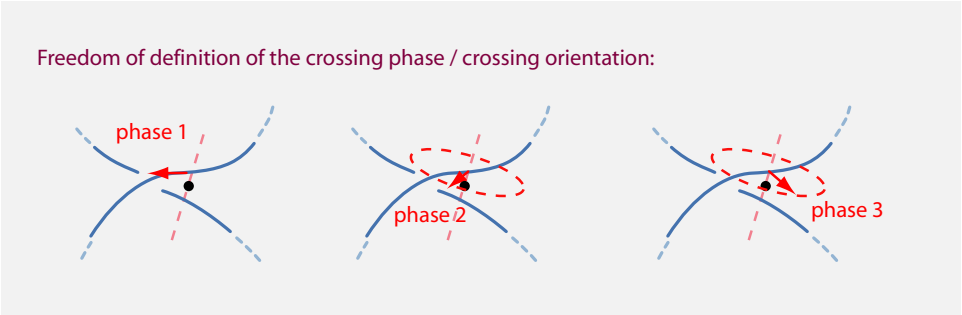


FIGURE 53 The definition of the phase or orientation of a single crossing is not unique: there is a freedom of choice.

where the electromagnetic field F is defined with the electromagnetic potential A as

$$F_{\mu\nu} = \partial_\mu A_\nu - \partial_\nu A_\mu \,. \tag{149}$$

Since the strand model reproduces the electromagnetic energy, it also reproduces the Lagrangian of classical electrodynamics. In particular, Maxwell's equations for the electromagnetic field follow from this Lagrangian density. Maxwell's field equations are thus a consequence of the strand model. Obviously, this is no news, because any model that reproduces Coulomb's inverse square distance relation and leaves the speed of light invariant automatically contains Maxwell's field equations.

U(1) GAUGE INVARIANCE INDUCED BY TWISTS

In nature, the electromagnetic potential A_μ is not uniquely defined: one says that there is a freedom in the choice of gauge. The change from one gauge to another is a *gauge transformation*. Gauge transformations are thus transformations of the electromagnetic potential that have no effect on observations. In particular, gauge transformations leave unchanged all field intensities and field energies on the one hand and particle probabilities and particle energies on the other hand.

All these observations can be reproduced with strands. In the strand model, the following definitions are natural:

- A ***gauge choice*** for *radiation* and for *matter* is the choice of definition of the respective phase arrow.
- A ***gauge transformation*** is a change of definition of the phase arrow.

In the case of electrodynamics, the gauge freedom is a result of allowing phase choices that lie in a plane around the crossing orientation. (The other interactions follow from the other possible phase choices.) The phase choice can be different at every point in space. Changing the (local) phase definition is a (local) gauge transformation. Changing the phase definition for a single crossing implies changing the phase of wave functions and of the electromagnetic potentials. A schematic illustration of the choice of gauge is given in Figure 54.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

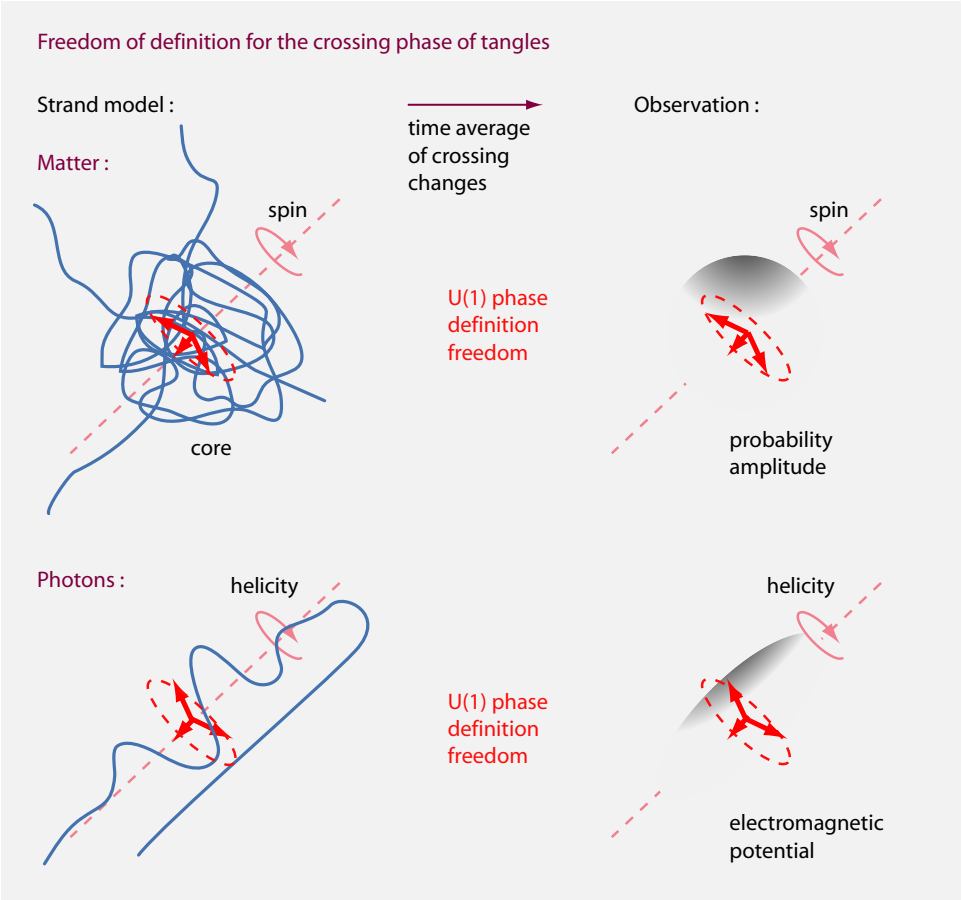


FIGURE 54 The freedom in definition of the phase of crossings leads to the gauge invariance of electrodynamics.

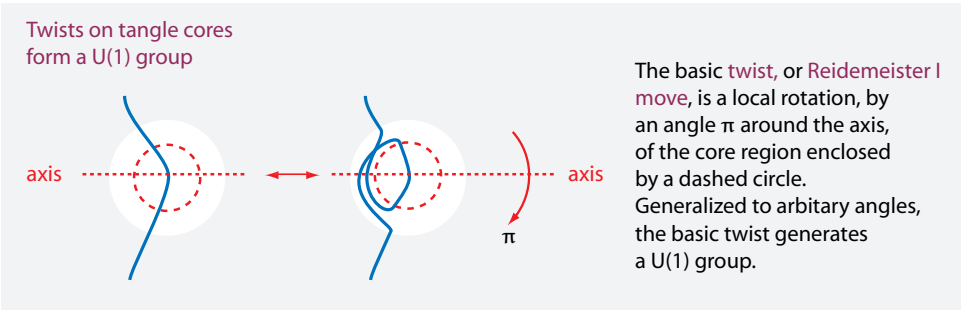

Twists on tangle cores
form a U(1) group
axis
axis
π
The basic twist, or Reidemeister I move, is a local rotation, by an angle π around the axis, of the core region enclosed by a dashed circle. Generalized to arbitary angles, the basic twist generates a U(1) group.

FIGURE 55 How the set of generalized twists – the set of all local rotations of a single strand segment around an axis – forms a U(1) gauge group.

We note that gauge transformations have no effect on the density or flow of crossings or crossing switches. In other words, gauge transformations leave electromagnetic

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

field intensities and electromagnetic field energy invariant, as observed. Similarly, gauge transformations have no effect on the number of crossing switches of rotating tangles. A rotation by 4π does not change the phase, independently of which definition of arrow is chosen. Therefore, gauge transformations leave probability densities – and even observable phase differences – unchanged. This agrees with experiment.

A gauge transformation on a wave functions also implies a gauge transformation on the electrodynamic potential. The strand model thus implies that the two transformations are connected, as is observed. This connection is called *minimal coupling*. In short, minimal coupling is a consequence of the strand model.

U(1) gauge interactions induced by twists

There is only a small step from a gauge *choice* to a gauge *interaction*. We recall:

▷ A ***gauge interaction*** is a change of phase resulting from a strand deformation of the particle core.

In particular, electromagnetism results from the transfer of *twists*; twists are one of the three types of core deformations that lead to a crossing switch.

The basic twist, or first Reidemeister move, corresponds to a local rotation of some strand segment in the core by an angle π, as illustrated by Figure 55. Twists can be generalized to arbitrary angles: we simply define a *generalized twist* as a local rotation of a strand segment by an arbitrary angle. The rotation axis is chosen as in shown by Figure 55. Generalized twists can be concatenated, and the identity twist – no local rotation at all – also exists. Generalized twists thus form a group. Furthermore, a generalized twist by 2π is equivalent to no twist at all, as is easily checked with a piece of rope:keeping the centre region is it disappears by pulling the ends, in contrast to a twist by π. These properties uniquely define the group U(1). In short, Figure 55 shows that generalized twists define the group U(1), which has the topology of a circle.

Challenge 153 e

In summary, the addition of a twist to a fermion tangle or to a photon strand changes their phase, and thus represents a gauge interaction. We have shown that core fluctuations induced by twists produce a U(1) gauge symmetry. Electromagnetic field energy and particle energy are U(1) invariant. In short, the strand model implies that *the gauge group of quantum electrodynamics is U(1).* With this result, we are now able to deduce the full Lagrangian of QED.

The Lagrangian of QED

Given the U(1) gauge invariance of observables, the Lagrangian of quantum electrodynamics, or QED, follows directly, because U(1) gauge invariance is equivalent to minimal coupling. We start from the Lagrangian density $\mathcal{L}$ of a *neutral*, *free*, and relativistic fermion in an electromagnetic field. It is given by

$$\mathcal{L} = \overline{\Psi}(i\hbar c\partial\!\!\!/ - c^2 m)\Psi - \frac{1}{4\mu_0} F_{\mu\nu}F^{\mu\nu} \,. \tag{150}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

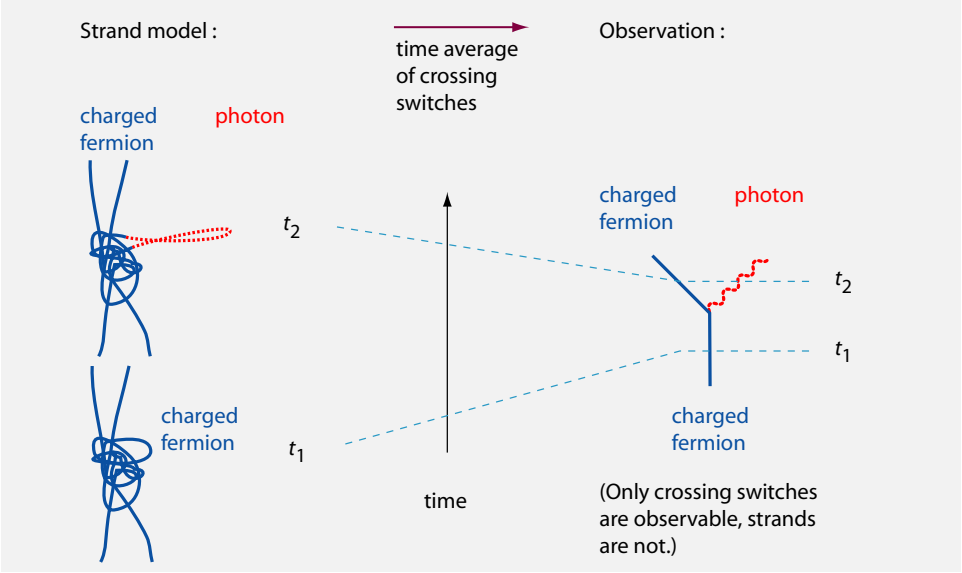


FIGURE 56 The fundamental Feynman diagram of QED and its tangle version.

Page 214 We deduced the fermion term in the chapter of quantum theory, and we deduced the electromagnetic term just now, from the properties of twisted loops.

As we have seen, the strand model implies minimal coupling. This changes the Lagrangian density for a *charged*, i.e., *interacting*, relativistic fermion in the electromagnetic field, into the Lagrangian density of QED:

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{QED}} = \overline{\Psi}(i\hbar c \not{D} - c^2 m)\Psi - \frac{1}{4\mu_0} F_{\mu\nu}F^{\mu\nu} \,. \tag{151}$$

Here, $\not{D} = \gamma^\sigma D_\sigma$ is the *gauge covariant derivative* that is defined through minimal coupling to the charge q:

$$D_\sigma = \partial_\sigma - iqA_\sigma \,. \tag{152}$$

Minimal coupling implies that the Lagrangian density of QED is invariant under U(1) Page 366 gauge transformations. We will discuss the details of the charge q later on.

We have thus recovered the Lagrangian density of quantum electrodynamics from strands. Strands thus reproduce the most precisely tested theory of physics.

Feynman diagrams and renormalization

Feynman diagrams are abbreviations of formulas to calculate effects of quantum electrodynamics in perturbation expansion. Feynman diagrams follow from the Lagrangian of QED. All Feynman diagrams of QED can be constructed from one fundamental diagram, shown on the right-hand side of Figure 56. Important Feynman diagrams are shown on the left-hand sides of Figure 57 and of Figure 58.

In the strand model, the fundamental Feynman diagram can be visualized directly

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

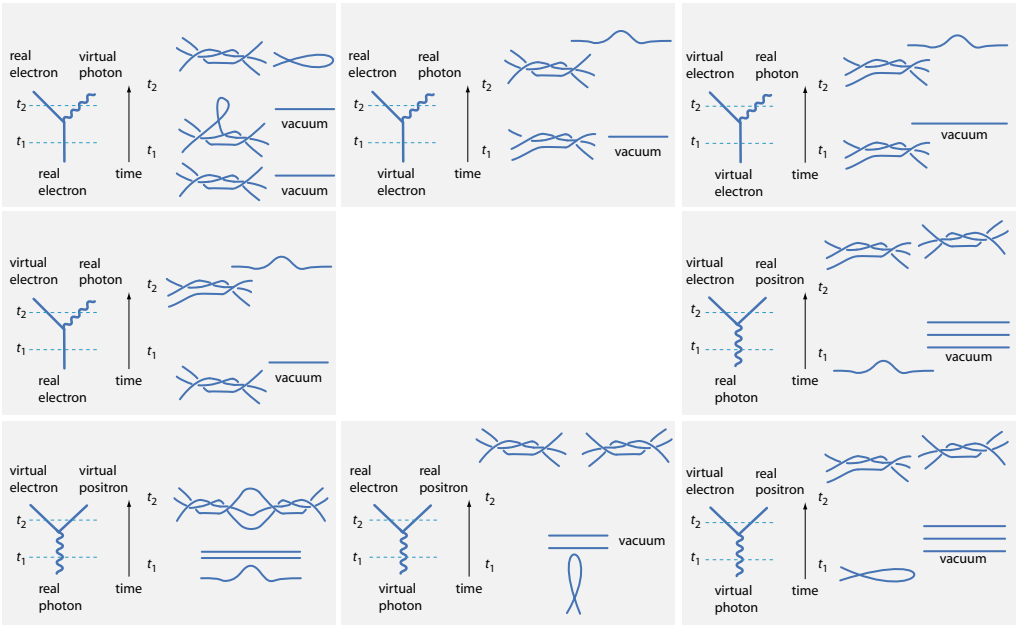


FIGURE 57 The different variations of the fundamental Feynman diagram of QED and their tangle versions.

in terms of strands, as shown on the left-hand side of Figure 56. This is the same dia-
Page 221 gram that we have explored right at the start of the section on electrodynamics, when we defined electrodynamics as twist exchange. (The precise tangles for the charged fermi-
Page 304 ons will be deduced later on.) Since all possible Feynman diagrams are constructed from the fundamental diagram, the strand model allows us to interpret all possible Feynman diagrams as strand diagrams. For example, the strand model implies that the vacuum is full of virtual particle-antiparticle pairs, as shown in Figure 58.

In quantum field theory, Lagrangians must not only be Lorentz and gauge invariant, but must also be renormalizable. The strand model makes several statements on this issue. At this point, we focus on QED only; the other gauge interactions will be treated below. The strand model reproduces the QED Lagrangian, which is renormalizable. Renormalizability is a natural consequence of the strand model in the limit that strand diameters are negligible. The reason for renormalizability that the strand model reproduces the single, fundamental Feynman diagram of QED, without allowing other types of diagrams.

The twist deformations underlying the strand model for QED also suggest new ways to calculate higher order Feynman diagrams. Such ways are useful in calculations of g-factors of charged particles, as shown in the next section. In particular, the strand model for QED, as shown in Figure 56, implies that higher order QED diagrams are simple *strand deformations* of lower order diagrams. Taking statistical averages of strand deformations up to a given number of crossings thus allows us to calculate QED effects up to a given order in the coupling. The strand model thus suggests that non-perturbative calculations are possible in QED. However, we do not pursue this topic in the present text.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

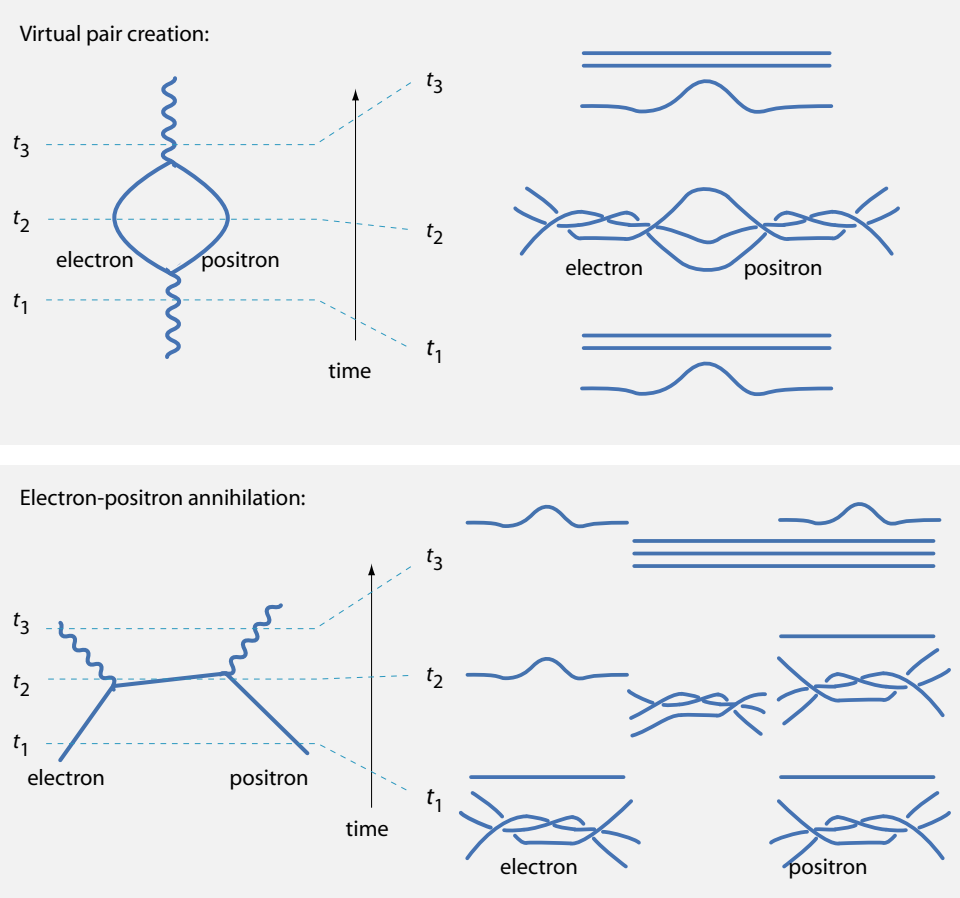


FIGURE 58 Some Feynman diagrams of QED with their tangle versions.

For precise non-perturbative calculations, the effective diameter of the strands must be taken into account. The diameter eliminates the Landau pole and all ultraviolet divergences of QED. In the strand model, the vacuum energy of the electromagnetic field is automatically zero. In other words, the strand model eliminates all problems of QED; in fact, QED appears as an approximation of the strand model for negligible strand diameter. In passing, we thus predict that perturbation theory for QED is valid and *converges* if the strand model, and in particular the finite strand diameter, is taken into account. (The diameter is the only gravitational influence predicted to affect QED.)

The strand model also suggests that the difference between renormalized and unrenormalized mass and charge is related to the difference between minimal and non-minimal crossing switch number, or equivalently, between tangle deformations with few and with many crossings, where strands are deformed on smaller distance scales. In other terms, unrenormalized quantities – the so-called *bare* quantities at Planck energy – can be imagined as those deduced when the tangles are pulled tight, i.e., pulled to Planck distances, whereas renormalized mass and charge values are those deduced for particles

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

surrounded by many large-size fluctuations.

In summary, the strand model provides a new underlying picture or mechanism for Feynman diagrams. The strand model does not change any physical result at any experimentally accessible energy scale. In particular, the measured change or 'running' with
Page 370 energy of the fine structure constant and of the masses of charged particles are reproduced by the strand model, because Feynman diagrams of all orders are reproduced up to energies just below the Planck scale. Deviations between QED and the strand model are only expected near the Planck energy, when tangles of Planck diameter are pulled tight.

The anomalous magnetic moment

The anomalous magnetic moment g of the electron and of the muon is given by the well-known expression

$$\frac{g}{2} = 1 + \frac{\alpha}{2\pi} - O(\alpha^2) \,, \tag{153}$$

where $g/2$ is half the so-called g-factor, with a measured value of 1.00116(1), and α is the fine structure constant, with a measured value of 1/137.036(1). Julian Schwinger discovered this expression in 1948; the involved calculations that led Schwinger to this and similar results in quantum field theory earned him the 1965 Nobel Prize in Physics. The result is also inscribed on the memorial marker near his grave in Mount Auburn Cemetery. The strand model proposes a simple explanation for this result.

The factor $g/2$ describes the ratio between the 'mechanical' rotation frequency – the rotation of the particle mass that leads to spin – and 'magnetic' rotation frequency – the rotation of the particle charge that leads to the magnetic moment.

The *mechanical* rotation frequency is related to the ratio of the angular momentum L and the mass m. Using the definitions from classical physics, we have $\boldsymbol{L}/m = \boldsymbol{r} \times \boldsymbol{v}$. The *magnetic* rotation frequency is related to the ratio of the magnetic moment $\boldsymbol{\mu}$ and the electric charge e. Classically, this ratio is $\boldsymbol{\mu}/e = \boldsymbol{r} \times \boldsymbol{v}$. Therefore, in classical physics – and also in the first order of the Pauli–Dirac description of the electron – the two rotation frequencies coincide, and the factor $g/2$ is thus equal to 1. However, as mentioned, both experiment and QED show a slight deviation from unity, called the *anomalous* magnetic moment.

In the strand model, the mechanical rotation of a charged elementary particle is due to the rotation of the tangle core as a rigid whole, whereas the magnetic rotation also in-
Page 219 cludes phase changes due to the deformations of the tangle core. In particular, the magnetic rotation of a charged elementary particle includes phase changes due to emission and reabsorption of a virtual photon, i.e., of a twisted loop.

In nature, the probability of the emission and reabsorption of a photon is determined by the fine structure constant. This process leads to an additional angle that makes the 'magnetic' rotation angle differ from the 'mechanical' rotation angle. Since the fine structure constant describes the rotation of the phase due to virtual photon exchange, the emission and reabsorption of a virtual photon leads to an angle difference, and this angle difference is given by the fine structure constant itself. The ratio between the purely mechanical and the full magnetic rotation frequency is therefore not one, but increased

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

by the ratio between the additional angle and 2π. This is Schwinger's formula.

The strand model also implies that Schwinger's formula is valid for all charged elementary particles, independently of their mass, as is indeed observed. In short, the strand model reproduces Schwinger's celebrated formula almost from thin air. Higher order corrections also appear naturally. Finally, the strand model implies that the complete expression, with all orders included, must converge, because the total result is due to the shape and dynamics of the tangle core. The discussions about the existence of the perturbation limit in QED are thus laid to rest.

Challenge 154 e

In addition, the strand description of particle rotation suggests a way to calculate the fine structure constant. We will explore it below.

Page 376

Maxwell's equations

The strand model also allows us to check Maxwell's field equations of classical electrodynamics directly. The equations are:

$$\begin{aligned} \nabla \mathbf{E} &= \frac{\rho}{\varepsilon_0} \,, \\ \nabla \mathbf{B} &= 0 \,, \\ \nabla \times \mathbf{E} &= -\frac{\partial \mathbf{B}}{\partial t} \,, \\ \nabla \times \mathbf{B} &= \frac{1}{c^2}\frac{\partial \mathbf{E}}{\partial t} + \mu_0 \mathbf{J} \,. \end{aligned} \tag{154}$$

▪ The first of these equations is satisfied whatever the precise mechanism at the basis of twisted loop emission by electric charges may be. Indeed, any mechanism in which a charge randomly sends out or swallows a handle yields a $1/r^2$ dependence for the electrostatic field and the required connection between charge and the divergence of the electric field. This is not a deep result: any spherically-symmetric system that randomly emits or swallows some entity produces the equation, including the underlying inverse-square dependence. The result can also be confirmed in another, well-known way. In any exchange interaction between two charges, the exchange time is proportional to their distance apart r; in addition, quantum theory states that the exchanged momentum is inversely proportional to the distance r. Therefore, the force, or momentum per unit time, varies as $1/r^2$. This relation is valid independently of the underlying motion of the twisted loops, because space has three dimensions: all localized sources automatically fulfil the inverse square dependence.

The constant on the right-hand side of the first equation results from the definition of the units; in the language of the strand model, the constant fixes the twisted loop emission rate for an elementary charge.

▪ The second of the field equations (154) expresses the lack of magnetic charges. This equation is automatically fulfilled by the strand model, as the definition of the magnetic field with strands does not admit any magnetic sources. In fact, strands suggest that no localized entity can have a magnetic charge. Also this equation is valid independently of the details of the motion of the strands. Again, this is a topological effect.

▪ The third field equation relates the temporal change of the magnetic field to the curl

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of the electric field. In the strand model, this is satisfied naturally, because a curl in the electric field implies, by construction, a change of the magnetic field, as shown by Figure 52. Again, this relation is valid independently of the details of the motion of the strands, as long as the averaging scale is taken to be large enough to allow the definition of electric and the magnetic fields.

▪ The most interesting equation is the last of the four Maxwell equations (154): in particular, the second term on the right-hand side, the dependence on the charge current. In the description of electrodynamics, the charge current **J** appears with a positive sign and with no numerical factor. (This is in contrast to linearized gravity, where the current has a numerical factor and a negative sign.) The positive sign means that a larger current produces a larger magnetic field. The strand model reproduces this factor: strands lead to an effect that is proportional both to charge (because more elementary charges produce more crossing flows) and to speed of movement of charge (large charge speed lead to larger flows). Because of this result, the classical photon spin, which is defined as L/ω, and which determines the numerical factor, namely 1, that appears before the charge current **J**, is recovered. Also this connection is obviously independent of the precise motion of the underlying strands.

The first term on the right-hand side of the fourth equation, representing the connection between a changing electric field and the curl of the magnetic field, is automatically in agreement with the model. This can again be checked from Figure 52 – and again, this is a topological effect, valid for any underlying strand fluctuation. As an example, when a capacitor is charged, a compass needle between the plates is deflected. In the strand model, the accumulating charges on the plates lead to a magnetic field. The last of Maxwell's equations is thus also confirmed by the strand model.

In summary, the strand model reproduces Maxwell's equations. However, this is not a great feat. Maxwell-like equations appear in many places in field theory, for example in solid-state physics and hydrodynamics. Mathematical physicists are so used to the appearance of Maxwell-like equations in other domains that they seldom pay it much attention. The real tests for any model of electrodynamics, quantum or classical, are the deviations that the model predicts from electrodynamics, especially at high energies.

Curiosities and fun challenges about QED

Challenge 155 e Can you confirm that the strand model of quantum electrodynamics does not violate charge conjugation C nor parity P at any energy?

* *

Challenge 156 e Can you confirm that the strand model of quantum electrodynamics conserves colour and weak charge at all energies?

* *

Challenge 157 e Can you determine whether the U(1) gauge group deduced here is that of electrodynamics or that of weak hypercharge?

* *

Challenge 158 d Can you find a measurable deviation of the strand model from QED?

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Summary on QED and experimental predictions

In the strand model, photons are single, helically twisted strands, randomly exchanged between charges; charges are chiral tangles, and therefore they effectively emit and absorb real and virtual photons. This is the complete description of QED using strands.

In particular, we have shown that Reidemeister I moves – or twists – of tangle cores lead to U(1) gauge invariance, Coulomb's inverse square relation, Maxwell's equations of electrodynamics and to Feynman diagrams. In short, we have deduced all experimental properties of quantum electrodynamics, except one: the strength of the coupling. Despite this open point, we have settled one line of the millennium list of open issues: we know the origin of the electromagnetic interaction and of its properties.

Page 157

Is there a difference between the strand model and quantum electrodynamics? The precise answer is: there are *no measurable* differences between the strand model and QED. For example, the g-factor of the electron or the muon predicted by QED is not changed by the strand model. The U(1) gauge symmetry and the whole of QED remain valid at all energies. There are no magnetic charges. There are no other gauge groups. QED remains exact in all cases – as long as gravity plays no role.

The strand model prediction of a lack of larger gauge symmetries is disconcerting. There is thus *no* grand unification in nature; there is no general gauge group in nature, be it SU(5), SO(10), E6, E7, E8, SO(32) or any other. This result indirectly also rules out supersymmetry and supergravity. This unpopular result contrasts with many cherished habits of thought.

In the strand model, the equivalence of Feynman diagrams and strand diagrams implies that deviations of the strand model from QED are expected *only* when gravity starts to play a role. The strand model predicts that this will only happen just near the Planck energy $\sqrt{\hbar c^5/4G}$. At lower energies, QED is predicted to remain valid.

The strand model also confirms that the combination of gravity and quantum theory turns all Planck units into *limit* values, because there is a maximum density of strand crossings in nature, due to the fundamental principle. In particular, the strand model confirms the maximum electric field value $E_{\text{max}} = c^4/4Ge \approx 1.9 \cdot 10^{62}$ V/m and a maximum magnetic field value $B_{\text{max}} = c^3/4Ge \approx 6.3 \cdot 10^{53}$ T. So far, these predictions are not in contrast with observations.

Thus the strand model predicts that approaching the electric or magnetic field limit values – given by quantum gravity – is the only option to observe deviations from QED. But measurements are not possible in those domains. Therefore we can state that there are no measurable differences between the strand model and QED.

Our exploration of QED has left open only two points: the calculation of the electromagnetic coupling constant and the determination of the spectrum of possible tangles for the elementary particles. Before we clarify these points, we look at the next Reidemeister move.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

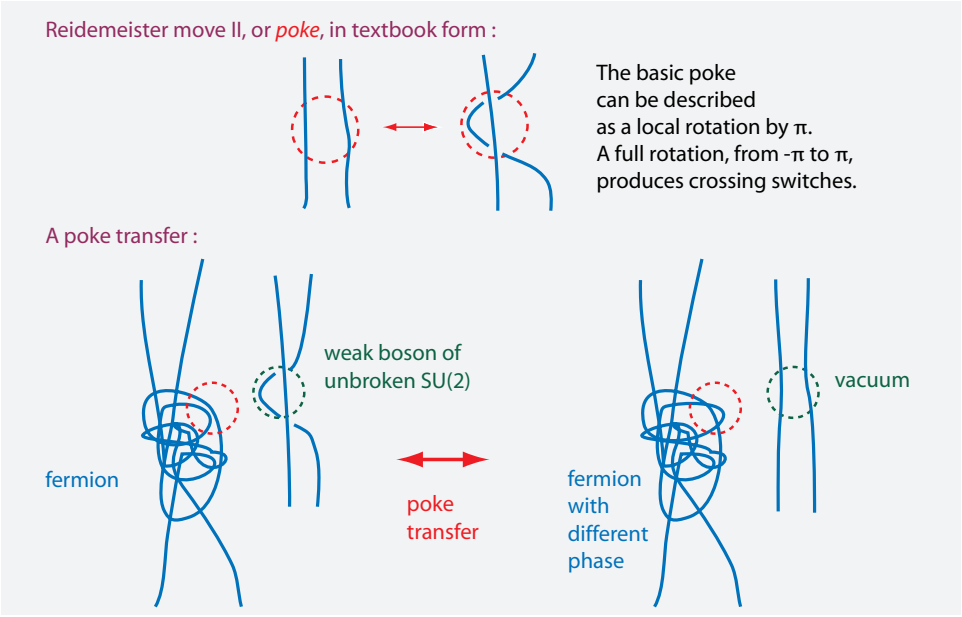


FIGURE 59 *Poke transfer* is the basis of the weak interaction in the strand model. No strand is cut or reglued; the transfer occurs only through the excluded volume due to the impenetrability of strands.

THE WEAK NUCLEAR INTERACTION AND THE SECOND REIDEMEISTER MOVE

In nature, the weak interaction is the result of the absorption and the emission of massive spin-1 bosons that form a broken weak triplet. The W and the Z bosons are emitted or absorbed by particles with weak charge; these are the left-handed fermions and right-handed antifermions. In other words, the weak interaction breaks parity P maximally. The W boson has unit electric charge, the Z boson has vanishing electric charge. The emission or absorption of W bosons changes the particle type of the involved fermion. The weak bosons also interact among themselves. All weakly charged particles are massive and move slower than light. The Lagrangian of matter coupled to the weak field has a broken SU(2) gauge symmetry. There are fundamental Feynman diagrams with triple and with quartic vertices. The weak coupling constant is determined by the electromagnetic coupling constant and the weak boson masses; its energy dependence is fixed by renormalization. The Higgs boson ensures full consistency of the quantum field theory of the weak interaction.

Page 246

The previous paragraph summarizes the main observations about the weak interaction. More precisely, all observations related to the weak interaction are described by its Lagrangian. Therefore, we need to check whether the weak interaction Lagrangian follows from the strand model.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

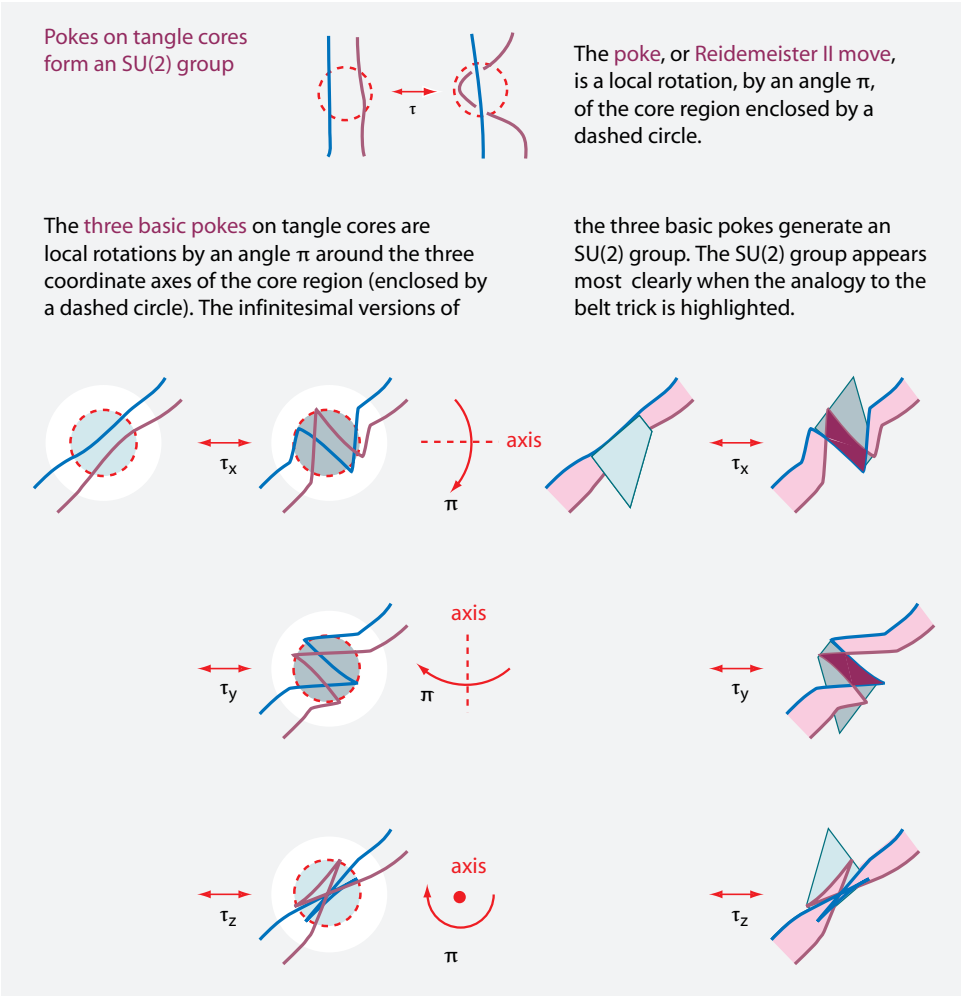

Pokes on tangle cores form an SU(2) group
τ
The poke, or Reidemeister II move, is a local rotation, by an angle π, of the core region enclosed by a dashed circle.
The three basic pokes on tangle cores are local rotations by an angle π around the three coordinate axes of the core region (enclosed by a dashed circle). The infinitesimal versions of the three basic pokes generate an SU(2) group. The SU(2) group appears most clearly when the analogy to the belt trick is highlighted.
τ_x
axis
π
τ_x
τ_y
axis
π
τ_y
τ_z
axis
π
τ_z

FIGURE 60 How the set of all pokes – the set of all deformations induced on tangle cores by the weak interaction – forms an SU(2) gauge group: the three pokes lead to the belt trick, illustrated here with a pointed buckle and two belts. For clarity, deformations of two strands are shown, instead of the deformation of a single strand.

Strands, pokes and SU(2)

Page 217

As explained above, any gauge interaction involving a fermion is a deformation of the tangle core that changes the phase and rotation of the fermion tangle. We start directly with the main definition.

▷ The ***weak interaction*** is the transfer of a poke, i.e., the transfer of a Reidemeister II move, between two particles. An illustration is given in Figure 59. Strands are not cut in this process; they simply transfer the deformation as a result of their impenetrability.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Strands describe the weak interaction as exchange of pokes. In tangle cores, the *basic* pokes induce local rotations by an angle π, as shown in Figure 60: each basic poke rotates the region enclosed by the dotted circle. There are *three*, linearly independent, basic pokes, in three mutually orthogonal directions. The three basic pokes τ_x, τ_y and τ_z act on the local region in the same way as the three possible mutually orthogonal rotations act on a belt buckle. For completeness, we note that the following arguments do not depend on whether the two strands involved in a poke are parallel, orthogonal, or at a general angle. The following arguments also do not depend on whether the pokes are represented by deforming *two* strands or only *one* strand. Both cases lead to crossing switches, for each possible poke type.

Challenge 159 e

Figure 60 illustrates that the product of two different basic pokes gives the third basic poke, together with a sign – which depends on whether the sequence is cyclic or not – and a factor of i. Using the definition of -1 as a local rotation of the buckle region by 2π, we also find that the square of each basic poke is -1. In detail, we can read off the following multiplication table for the three basic pokes:

Challenge 160 e

Page 184

$\cdot$	τ_x	τ_y	τ_z
τ_x	-1	$i\tau_z$	$-i\tau_y$
τ_y	$-i\tau_z$	-1	$i\tau_x$
τ_z	$i\tau_y$	$-i\tau_x$	-1

(155)

In other terms, the three basic pokes – and in particular also their infinitesimal versions – behave like the generators of an SU(2) group. Because pokes can be seen as local rotations of a buckle region, they can be generalized to arbitrary angles. Such arbitrary pokes can be concatenated. We thus find that arbitrary pokes form a full SU(2) group. This is the reason for their equivalence with the belt trick.

The different gauge choices for a particle are not illustrated in Figure 60. The gauge choices arise from the different ways in which the basic pokes τ_x, τ_y and τ_z can be assigned to the set of deformations that describe the belt trick.

In summary, we can state that in any definition of the phase of a tangled fermion core, there is an SU(2) gauge freedom; in addition, there exists an interaction with SU(2) gauge symmetry. In other words, the strand model implies, through the second Reidemeister move, *the existence of the unbroken weak interaction with a gauge group SU(2).*

Weak charge and parity violation

A particle has weak charge if, when subject to many random pokes, a non-zero average phase change occurs. Surrounded by a bath of strands that continuously induce random pokes, not all tangles will change their phase on a long-time average: only tangles that lack symmetry will. One symmetry that must be lacking is spherical symmetry. Therefore, only tangles whose cores lack *spherical symmetry* have the chance to be influenced by random pokes. Since all tangles with knotted or braided cores lack spherical symmetry, all such tangles, i.e., all massive particles, are candidates to be influenced, and thus are candidates for weakly charged particles. We therefore explore them in detail.

If a tangle is made of *two or more* knotted or braided strands, it represents a massive spin-1/2 particle (except for a simple twist, which represents the graviton). All such fer-

Page 287

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

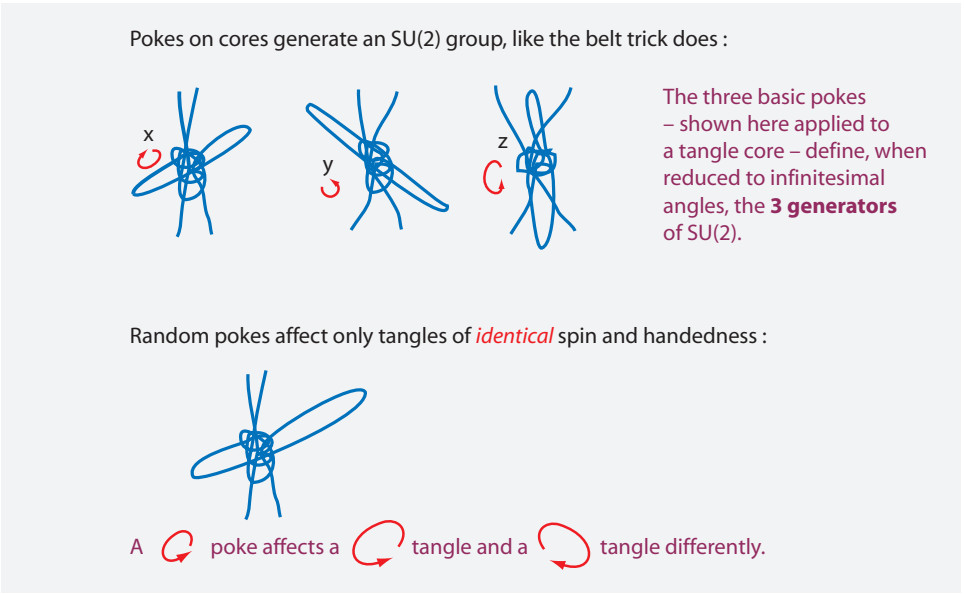

Pokes on cores generate an SU(2) group, like the belt trick does :
x
y
z
The three basic pokes – shown here applied to a tangle core – define, when reduced to infinitesimal angles, the 3 generators of SU(2).
Random pokes affect only tangles of identical spin and handedness :
A poke affects a tangle and a tangle differently.

FIGURE 61 The three basic pokes and weak charge in the strand model.

mion cores lack spherical and cylindrical symmetry. When a fermion spins, two things happen: the core rotates and the belt trick occurs, which untangles the tails. Compared to the direction of motion, the rotation and the untangling can be either left-handed or right-handed.

Page 212

Every poke is a shape transformation of the core with a preferred handedness. The chirality is of importance in the following.

A particle has weak charge if random pokes lead to a long-time phase change. In order to feel any average effect when large numbers of random pokes are applied, a core must undergo different effects for a poke and its reverse. As already mentioned, this requires a lack of core symmetry. Whenever the core has no symmetry, non-compensating phase effects will occur: if the core rotation with its tail untangling and the poke are of the same handedness, the phase will increase, whereas for opposite handedness, the phase will decrease a bit less.

▷ Non-vanishing ***weak charge*** for fermions appears only for tangle cores whose handedness leads to average poke effects.

In other words, the strand model predicts that random pokes will only affect a core if the core handedness and the randomly applied belt trick are of the *same* handedness. In physical terms, random pokes will only affect left-handed particles or right-handed anti-particles. Thus, the strand model predicts that *the weak interaction violates parity maximally*, This is exactly as observed. In other terms, weak charge and the parity violation of the weak interaction are consequences of the belt trick. This relation is summarized in Figure 61.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

If an elementary particle is described by a *two tangled* strands, we expect it to be influenced by average pokes. Such tangle cores are spin-1 bosons; their cores lack spherical and cylindrical symmetry. The core rotation will induce a left-right asymmetry that will lead to a higher effect of a poke than of its reverse. Two-stranded particles are thus predicted to carry weak charge. We therefore expect that quarks – to be explored below – and the weak bosons themselves interact weakly.

Because the weak bosons interact weakly, the strand model implies that the weak interaction is a *non-Abelian* gauge theory, as is observed.*

If a tangle is made of a *single unknotted* strand, it is not affected by random pokes. The strand model thus predicts that the photon has no weak charge, as is observed. The same also holds for gluons.

The strand definition of weak charge leads to two conclusions that can be checked by experiment. First, all electrically charged particles – having cores that are chiral and thus lack cylindrical symmetry – are predicted to be weakly charged. Secondly, in the strand model, only massive particles interact weakly; in fact, *all* massive particles interact weakly, because their cores lack cylindrical symmetry. In other words, all weakly charged particles move more slowly than light and vice versa. Both conclusions agree with observation.

In summary, all properties of weak charge found in nature are reproduced by the tangle model.

Weak bosons

Gauge bosons are those particles that are exchanged between interacting fermions: gauge bosons induce phase changes of fermions. This implies that the (unbroken) weak bosons are the particles** that induce the three poke moves:

▷ ***Weak intermediate bosons*** are described by double strands. An illustration is given in Figure 62.

Single strands that induce phase changes in fermions interacting weakly are shown on the left side of Figure 62. They correspond to the three basic pokes τ_x, τ_y and τ_z.

We note two additional points. First of all, the (unbroken) spin-1 bosons could also be described by the motion of a single strand in a strand group. This makes them spin 1 particles.

Furthermore, unknotted tangles are *massless*. In the strand model, tangles that induce pokes *differ* from the massive weak intermediate bosons, shown on the right of Figure 62. This difference is due to the *breaking* of the SU(2) gauge symmetry, as we will find out soon.

* Non-Abelian gauge theory was introduced by Wolfgang Pauli. In the 1950s, he explained the theory in series of talks. Two physicists, Yang Chen Ning and Robert Mills, then wrote down his ideas. Yang received the Nobel Prize in Physics with Lee Tsung Dao for a different topic, namely for the violation of parity of the weak interaction.

** This reworked strand model of the W and Z bosons arose in 2015.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

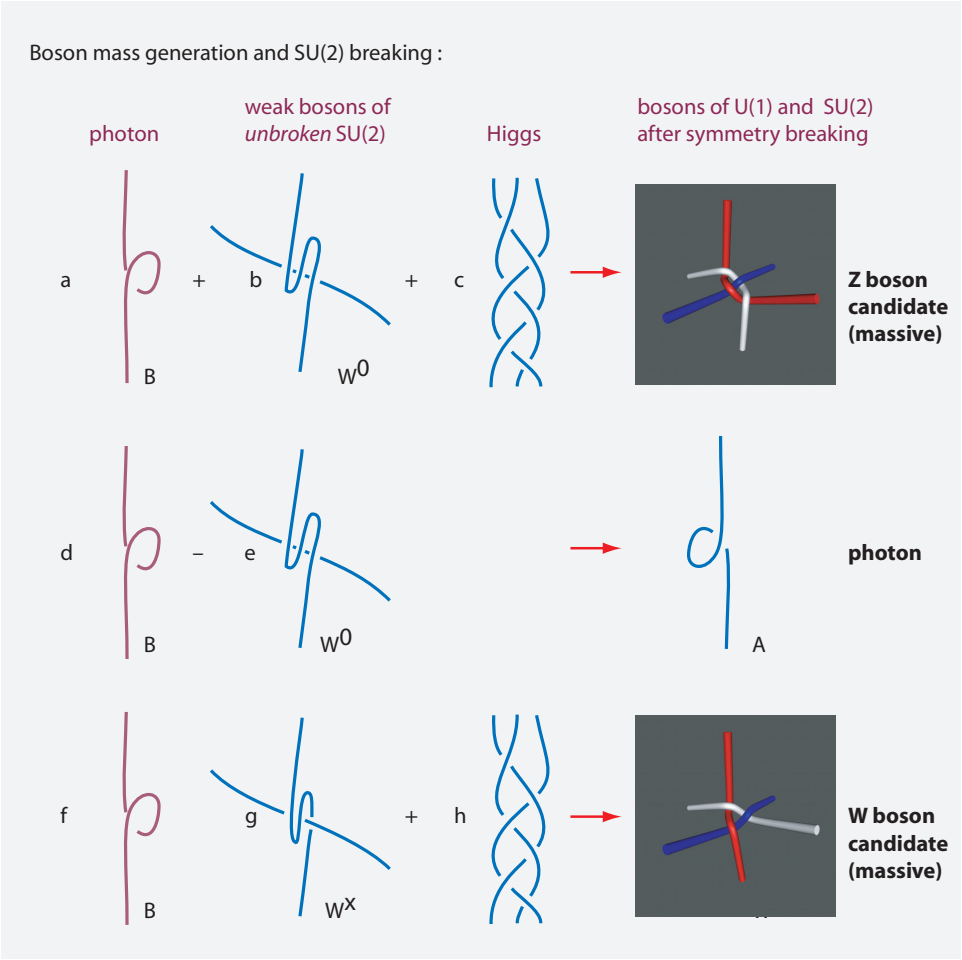


FIGURE 62 Poke-inducing strand motions (left) become massive weak vector tangles (right) through symmetry breaking and tail braiding. Tail braiding is related to the Higgs boson, whose tangle model will be clarified later on.

The Lagrangian of the unbroken SU(2) gauge interaction

The energy of the weak field is given by the density of weak gauge boson strands. As long as the SU(2) symmetry is not broken, the energy of the weak field and the energy of fermions are both SU(2) invariant. As a consequence, we are now able to deduce a large part of the Lagrangian of the weak interaction, namely the Lagrangian for the case that the SU(2) symmetry is unbroken.

As long as SU(2) is unbroken, the vector bosons are described as unknotted tangles that induce pokes, as shown on the left of Figure 62. There are three such bosons. Since they can be described by a single strand that moves, they have spin 1; since they are unknotted, they have zero mass and electric charge.

Energy is the number of crossing switches per time. As long as SU(2) is unbroken

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

and the weak bosons are massless, the energy of the weak boson field and thus their
Page 226 Lagrangian density is given by the same expression as the energy of the photon field. In particular, the strand model implies that energy density is quadratic in the field intensities. We only have to add the energies of all three bosons together to get:

$$\mathcal{L} = -\frac{1}{4}\sum_{a=1}^{3} W^{a}{}_{\mu\nu} W_{a}{}^{\mu\nu} \,, \tag{156}$$

This expression is SU(2) gauge invariant. Indeed, SU(2) gauge transformations have no effect on the number of crossing switches due to weak bosons or to the motion of pokes. Thus, gauge transformations leave weak field intensities and thus also the energy of the weak fields invariant, as observed.

We can now write down the Lagrangian for weakly charged fermions interacting with the weak vector bosons. Starting from the idea that tangle core deformations lead to phase redefinitions, we have found that pokes imply that the *unbroken* weak Lagrangian density for matter and radiation fields is SU(2) gauge invariant. In parallel to electrodynamics we thus get the Lagrangian

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{unbroken weak}} = \sum_{f} \overline{\Psi}_f (i\hbar c \not{D} - m_f c^2) \Psi_f - \frac{1}{4}\sum_{a=1}^{3} W^{a}{}_{\mu\nu} W_{a}{}^{\mu\nu} \,, \tag{157}$$

where $\not{D}$ is now the SU(2) gauge covariant derivative and the first sum is taken over all fermions. In this Lagrangian, only the left-handed fermions and the right-handed antifermions carry weak charge. This Lagrangian, however, does *not* describe nature: the observed SU(2) breaking is missing.

SU(2) BREAKING

In nature, the weak interaction does *not* have an SU(2) gauge symmetry. The symmetry is only approximate; is said to be *broken*. The main effect of SU(2) symmetry breaking are the non-vanishing – and different – masses for the W and Z bosons, and thus the weakness and the short range of the weak interaction. In addition, the symmetry breaking implies a *mixing* of the weak and the electromagnetic interaction: it yields the so-called
Page 248 *electroweak* interaction. This mixing is often called electroweak 'unification'.

The strand model suggests the following description:

▷ ***Mass generation*** for bosons and the related SU(2) ***symmetry breaking*** are due to *tail braiding* at the border of space. Figure 62 illustrates the idea.

In this description, tail braiding* is assumed to occur at a distance outside the domain of observation; in that region – which can be also the border of physical space – tail braiding is *not* forbidden and *can* occur. The probability of tail braiding is low, because

* In the original strand model of the weak bosons, from the year 2008, the role of tail braiding was taken by strand overcrossing.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the crossings have first to fluctuate to that distance and then fluctuate back. Nevertheless, the process of tail braiding can take place.

Tail braiding appears *only* in the weak interaction. It does not appear in the other two gauge interactions, as the other Reidemeister moves are not affected by processes at the border of space. In the strand model, this is the reason that only SU(2) is broken in nature. In short, SU(2) breaking is a natural consequence of the second Reidemeister move.

Tail braiding transforms the unbraided, and thus massless, poke strands into the braided, and thus massive W and Z strands. Tail braiding leads to particle cores: therefore is a mass-generating process. The precise mass values that it generates will be de- Page 344 termined below. The strand model thus confirms that mass generation is related to the breaking of the weak interaction.

Tail braiding mixes the W^0 with the 'original' photon. This is shown in Figure 62. The mixing is due to the topological similarities of the strand models of the two particles. The resulting Z boson is achiral, and thus electrically neutral, as observed. We note that the existence of a neutral, massive Z boson implies that elastic neutrino scattering in matter occurs in nature, as was observed for the first time in 1974. Since any electrically charged Page 241 particle also has weak charge, the existence of a Z boson implies that any two electrically charged particles can interact both by exchange of photons and by exchange of Z bosons. In other words, SU(2) breaking implies electroweak mixing, or, as is it usually called, Page 248 electroweak 'unification'.

Tail braiding takes place in several weak interaction processes, as shown in Figure 65. Page 247 Tail braiding thus can change particle topology, and thus particle type. The strand model thus predicts that the weak interaction *changes* particle flavours (types), as is observed. In fact, the strand model also predicts that *only* the weak interaction has this property. This is also observed.

On the other hand, strands are never cut or glued back together in the strand model, not even in the weak interaction. As a result, the strand model predicts that the weak in- Page 309 teraction conserves electric charge, spin and, as we will see below, colour charge, baryon number and lepton number. All this is observed.

Tail braiding also implies that the tangles for the Z boson and for the W boson shown above are only the *simplest* tangles associated with each boson; more complicated tangles Page 344 are higher order propagating states of the same basic open knots. This will be of great importance later on, for the proof that all gauge bosons of nature are already known today.

In summary, the second Reidemeister move leads to *tail braiding*; tail braiding leads to the observed properties of SU(2) symmetry breaking. (Equivalently, the strand model implies that the simplest tangles of the weak interaction bosons show SU(2) symmetry, whereas the more complicated, knotted tangles break this symmetry.) The value of the mixing angle and the particle masses have still to be determined. This will be done below. Page 346

Open issue: are the W and Z tangles correct?

In 2014, Sergei Fadeev raised an issue: A *tangle* version of the W and Z that does *not* contain any knot and does not require an actual strand overcrossing process at spatial

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

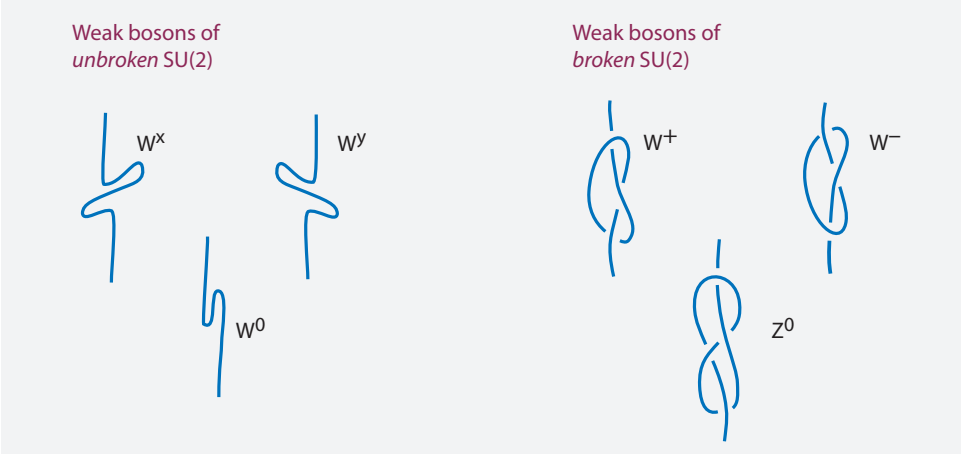


FIGURE 63 The supposed models for the weak gauge bosons from 2008, now seen to be incorrect.

infinity, the strand model would gain in simplicity and elegance. Thinking about the issue, it became clear that such a tangle could occur when vacuum strands were included, as shown above.

In contrast, in 2008, in the first version of the strand model, the W boson after symmetry breaking was thought to be an open overhand knot, and the Z boson an open figure-eight knot.

It might well be that the new, 2015/2016 strand models for the two intermediate vector bosons, shown in Figure 62 are still not correct. The possibility remains intriguing and a definitive argument that settles the issue still needs to be found.

Challenge 242 Page 242

The electroweak Lagrangian

We can now use the results on SU(2) symmetry breaking to deduce the *electroweak* Lagrangian density. We have seen that symmetry breaking leaves the photon massless but introduces masses to the weak vector bosons, as shown in Figure 62. The non-vanishing boson masses M_W and M_Z add kinetic terms for the corresponding fields in the Lagrangian.

Due to the symmetry breaking induced by tail braiding, the Z boson results from the mixing with the (unbroken) photon. The strand model predicts that the mixing can be described by an angle, the so-called weak mixing angle θ_w. In particular, the strand model implies that $\cos\theta_w = M_W/M_Z$.

As soon as symmetry breaking is described by a mixing angle due to tail braiding, we get the known electroweak Lagrangian, though at first without the terms due to the Higgs boson. (We will come back to the Higgs boson later on.) We do not write down the Lagrangian of the weak interaction predicted by the strand model, but the terms are the same as those found in the standard model of elementary particles. There is one important difference: the Lagrangian so derived does not yet contain quark and lepton mixing. Indeed, experiments show that the weak fermion eigenstates are not the same as the strong or electromagnetic eigenstates: quarks mix, and so do neutrinos. The reason

Page 319

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

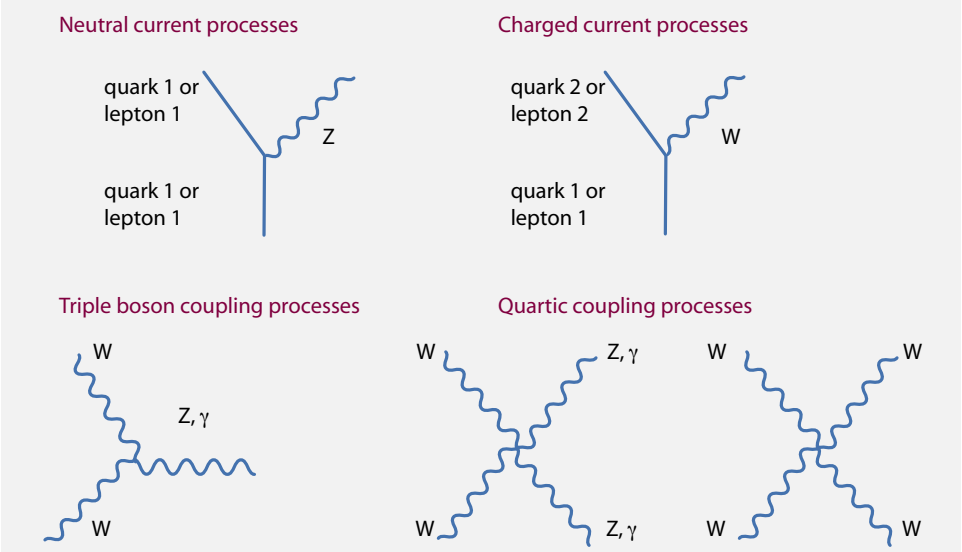


FIGURE 64 The fundamental Feynman diagrams of the weak interaction that do not involve the Higgs boson.

for this observation, and the effect that mixing has on the weak Lagrangian, will become clear once we have determined the tangles for each fermion. Page 360

In summary, the strand model implies the largest part of the Lagrangian of the weak interaction. The issue of the Higgs boson is still open, and the electroweak Lagrangian contains a number of constants that are not yet clarified. These unexplained constants are the number of the involved elementary particles, their masses, couplings, mixing angles and CP violation phases, as well as the value of the weak mixing angle.

The weak Feynman diagrams

In nature, the weak interaction is described by a small number of fundamental Feynman diagrams. Those not containing the Higgs boson are shown in Figure 64. These Feynman diagrams encode the corresponding Lagrangian of the weak interaction.

In the strand model, pokes lead naturally to strand versions of the fundamental Feynman diagrams. This happens as shown in Figure 65. We see again that the strand model reproduces the weak interaction: each Feynman diagram is due to a strand diagram for which only crossing switches are considered, and for which Planck size is approximated as zero size. In particular, the strand model does not allow any *other* fundamental diagrams for the weak interaction. Challenge 162 e

The finite and small number of possible strand diagrams and thus of Feynman diagrams implies that the weak interaction is *renormalizable*. For example, the change or 'running' of the weak coupling with energy is reproduced by the strand model, because the running can be determined through the appropriate Feynman diagrams. Page 370

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

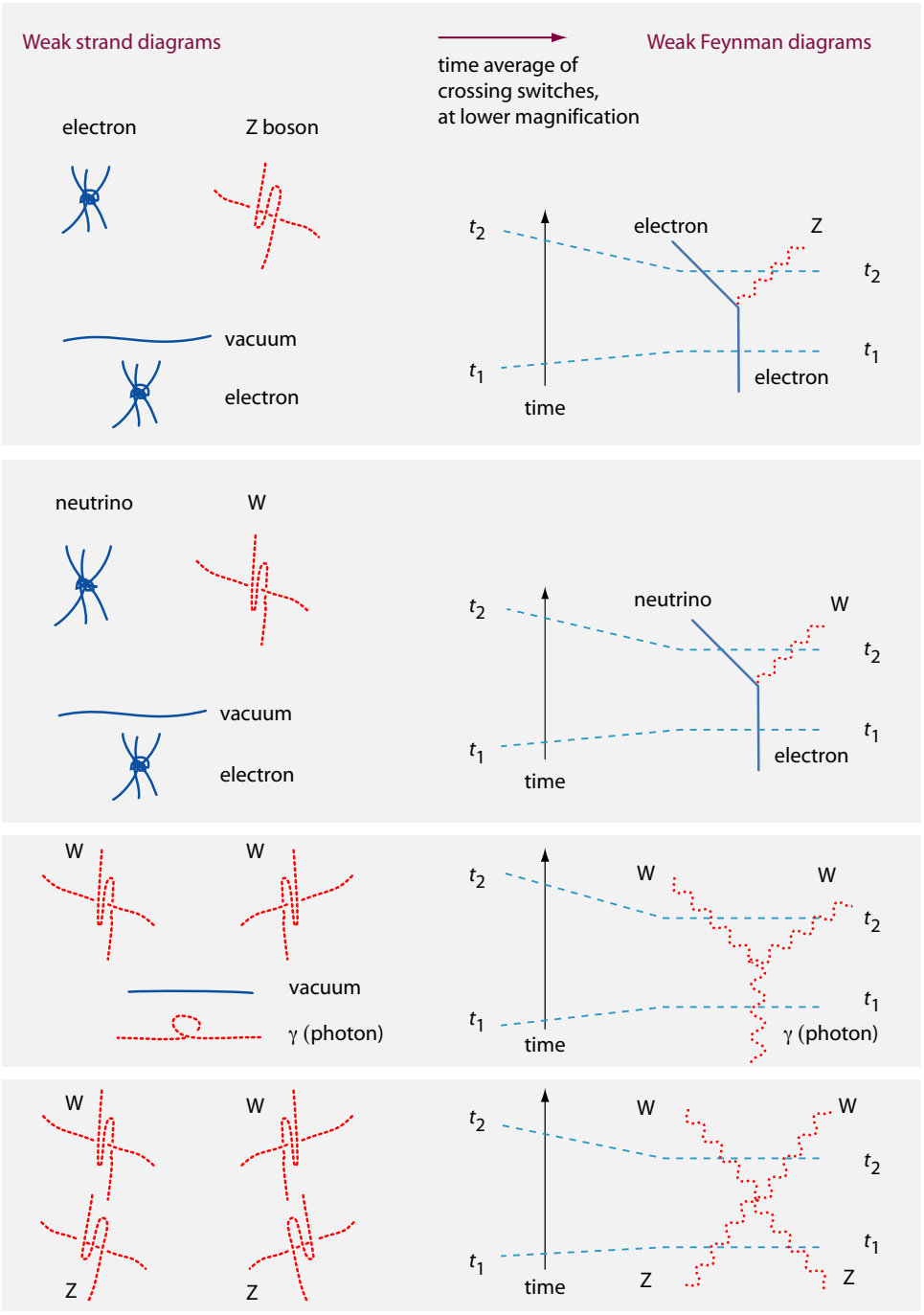


FIGURE 65 The strand model for the fundamental Feynman diagrams of the weak interaction. The tangles for the fermions are introduced later on.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Fun challenges and curiosities about the weak interaction

The W boson and its antiparticle are observed to annihilate through the electromagnetic interaction, yielding two or more photons. The tangle model of the weak bosons has a lot of advantages compared to the knot model: The annihilation is much easier to understand.

Challenge 163 e

* *

The strand model, like the standard model of particle physics, predicts that everything about the weak interaction is already known. Nevertheless, the most important weak process, the *decay of the neutron*, is being explored by many precision experiments. The strand model predicts that none of these experiments will yield any surprise.

* *

The strand model makes clear that the weak interaction and the electromagnetic interaction *mix*, but do not unify. There is only electroweak mixing, and *no* electroweak unification, despite claims to the contrary by the Nobel Prize committee and many other physicists. In fact, Sheldon Glashow, who received the Nobel Prize in Physics for this alleged 'unification', agrees with this assessment. So do Richard Feynman and, above all, Martin Veltman, who was also involved in the result; he even makes this very point in his Nobel Prize lecture. The incorrect habit to call electroweak mixing a 'unification' was one of the main reason for the failure of past unification attempts: it directed the attention of researchers in the wrong direction.

Ref. 181

In the strand model, the mixing of the electromagnetic and the weak interaction can be seen as a consequence of knot geometry: the poke generators of the weak interaction also contain twists, i.e., also contain generators of the electromagnetic interaction. In contrast, generators of other Reidemeister moves do not mix among them or with pokes; and indeed, no other type of interaction mixing is observed in nature.

Summary on the weak interaction and experimental predictions

We have deduced the main properties of the weak Lagrangian from the strand model. We have shown that Reidemeister II moves – or pokes – in tangle cores lead to a broken SU(2) gauge group and to massive weak bosons. We found that the deviation from tangle core sphericity plus chirality is weak charge, and that the weak interaction is non-Abelian. We have also shown that the weak interaction naturally breaks parity maximally and mixes with the electromagnetic interaction. In short, we have deduced the main experimental properties of the weak interaction.

Is there a difference between the strand model and the electroweak Lagrangian of the standard model of particle physics? Before we can fully answer the question on deviations between the strand model and the standard model, we must settle the issue of the Higgs boson. This is done later on.

Page 319

In any case, the strand model predicts that the broken SU(2) gauge symmetry remains valid at all energies. No other gauge groups appear in nature. The strand model thus predicts again that there is no grand unification, and thus no larger gauge group, be it SU(5), SO(10), E6, E7, E8, SO(32) or any other group. This result indirectly also rules out supersymmetry and supergravity.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The strand model also predicts that the combination of gravity and quantum theory turns all Planck units into *limit* values, because there is a maximum density of strand crossings in nature, due to the fundamental principle. Therefore, the strand model predicts a *maximum weak field* value given by the Planck force divided by the smallest weak charge. All physical systems – including all astrophysical objects, such as neutron stars, quark starts, gamma-ray bursters or quasars – are predicted to conform to this limit. So far, no observed field value is near this limit, so that the prediction does not contradict observation.

So far, our exploration of the weak interaction has left us with a few open issues: we need to calculate the weak coupling constant and determine the tangle for each particle of the standard model, including the Higgs boson. But we also need to explain weak fermion mixing, CP violation and the masses of all particles. Despite these open points, we have settled another line of the millennium list: we know the origin of the weak interaction and of its main properties. Before we clarify the open issues, we explore the third Reidemeister move.

Page 157

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

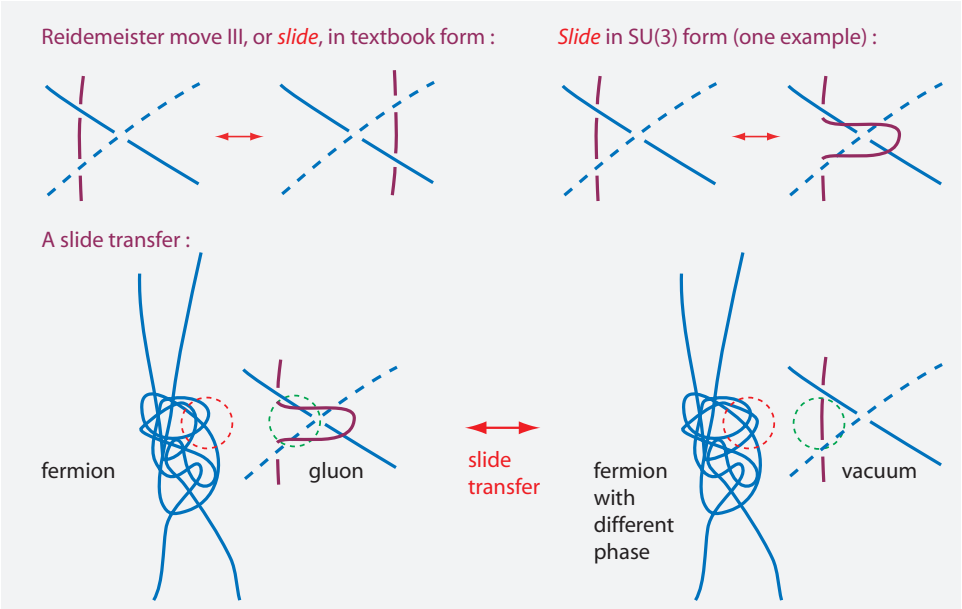


FIGURE 66 A gluon changes the phase of a tangle: *slide transfer* is the basis of the strong interaction in the strand model. During the interaction, no strand is cut or reglued; the transfer occurs purely through the excluded volume that results from the impenetrability of strands.

THE STRONG NUCLEAR INTERACTION AND THE THIRD REIDEMEISTER MOVE

In nature, the strong interaction is the result of the absorption and the emission of massless, electrically uncharged, spin-1 gauge bosons that are called *gluons*. Gluons interact with quarks, the only fermions with *colour* charge. Fermions can have three different colour charges, antifermions three different anticolours. Gluons form an octet, are themselves colour charged and therefore also interact among themselves. The Lagrangian of quarks coupled to the gluon field has an unbroken SU(3) gauge symmetry. There are three fundamental Feynman diagrams: one for quark-gluon interaction and two for gluon-gluon interactions: a triple and a quartic gluon vertex. The strong coupling constant is about 0.5 at low energy; its energy dependence is determined by renormalization.

The previous paragraph summarizes the main observations about the strong interaction. All known observations related to the strong interaction, without any known exception, are contained in its Lagrangian. Therefore, we need to show that the strong interaction Lagrangian follows from the strand model.

Strands and the slide, the third Reidemeister move

Page 217

As explained above, interactions of fermions are deformations of the tangle core that change its phase. We start directly by presenting the strand model for the strong interaction.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

▷ The ***strong interaction*** is the transfer of *slides*, i.e., the transfer of third Reidemeister moves, between a gluon and a particle. As shown in Figure 66, strands are not cut in this process; they simply transfer deformations as a result of their impenetrability.

Such a slide transfer will influence the phase of the affected particle tangle. Therefore, slide transfers are indeed a type of interaction.

An introduction to SU(3)

Before we show that slides are responsible for the strong nuclear interaction, we summarize the mathematical properties of the Lie group SU(3). This Lie group is the structure generated by the unitary 3×3 matrices with determinant +1. It is a *group*, because matrices can be properly multiplied, because the identity matrix is included, and inverse matrices exist. SU(3) is also a *manifold*; a quick check shows that it has eight dimensions. In short, SU(3) is a *Lie group*: its elements behave like points on a manifold that can be multiplied. The Lie bracket is the commutator. A general element E of SU(3) can be written as an exponential in the well-known way

Challenge 164 e

$$E = \mathrm{e}^{\sum_{n=1}^{8} \alpha_n i \lambda_n / 2} \tag{158}$$

where the eight real parameters α_n can be thought of as the eight coordinates of the group elements on the group manifold. Since SU(3) is compact and simple, these coordinates are best visualized as angles. Of course, i is the imaginary unit. The generators λ_n are complex, traceless and hermitian 3×3 matrices; they are used to define a basis for the group elements. The eight generators are *not* group elements themselves. They describe the structure of the group manifold near the identity matrix; for a Lie group, this local structure defines the full group manifold. Like for any basis, also set of eight generators λ_n is not unique. Of the many possible choices for the generators, the *Gell-Mann matrices* λ_1 to λ_8 are the most commonly used in physics.

The Gell-Mann matrices λ_n, the corresponding group elements D_n for general angles, and the group elements E_n for the finite angle π are given by:

$$\lambda_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \; D_1(\alpha) = \mathrm{e}^{\alpha i \lambda_1 / 2} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos \alpha/2 & i \sin \alpha/2 & 0 \\ i \sin \alpha/2 & \cos \alpha/2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_1 = \mathrm{e}^{\pi i \lambda_1 / 2} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & i & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \; D_2(\alpha) = \mathrm{e}^{\alpha i \lambda_2 / 2} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos \alpha/2 & \sin \alpha/2 & 0 \\ -\sin \alpha/2 & \cos \alpha/2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_2 = \mathrm{e}^{\pi i \lambda_2 / 2} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ -1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

$$\lambda_3 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix},\ D_3(\alpha) = e^{\alpha i \lambda_3/2} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos\alpha/2 + i\sin\alpha/2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \cos\alpha/2 - i\sin\alpha/2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_3 = e^{\pi i \lambda_3/2} = \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_4 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix},\ D_4(\alpha) = e^{\alpha i \lambda_4/2} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos\alpha/2 & 0 & i\sin\alpha/2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ i\sin\alpha/2 & 0 & \cos\alpha/2 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_4 = e^{\pi i \lambda_4/2} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & i \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_5 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & -i \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ i & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix},\ D_5(\alpha) = e^{\alpha i \lambda_5/2} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos\alpha/2 & 0 & \sin\alpha/2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ -\sin\alpha/2 & 0 & \cos\alpha/2 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_5 = e^{\pi i \lambda_5/2} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ -1 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_6 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix},\ D_6(\alpha) = e^{\alpha i \lambda_6/2} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \cos\alpha/2 & i\sin\alpha/2 \\ 0 & i\sin\alpha/2 & \cos\alpha/2 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_6 = e^{\pi i \lambda_6/2} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & i \\ 0 & i & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_7 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -i \\ 0 & i & 0 \end{pmatrix},\ D_7(\alpha) = e^{\alpha i \lambda_7/2} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \cos\alpha/2 & \sin\alpha/2 \\ 0 & -\sin\alpha/2 & \cos\alpha/2 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_7 = e^{\pi i \lambda_7/2} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_8 = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}} \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$D_8(\alpha) = e^{\sqrt{3}\alpha i \lambda_8/2} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos\alpha/2 + i\sin\alpha/2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \cos\alpha/2 + i\sin\alpha/2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \cos\alpha - i\sin\alpha \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_8 = D_8(\pi) = \begin{pmatrix} i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}. \tag{159}$$

The eight Gell-Mann matrices λ_n are hermitean, traceless and trace-orthogonal. The corresponding group elements D_n and E_n can be thought as the unnormed and normed

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

basis vectors of the group manifold. We note that the definition of E_8 differs from that of the other group elements E_n: it contains an extra factor $\sqrt{3}$. The fourfold concatenation of each matrix $i\lambda_n$ is the identity matrix – except for the case $i\lambda_8$. Instead, the generator λ_8 commutes with λ_1, λ_2 and λ_3 – though not with the other generators.

There is *no* ninth or tenth Gell-Mann matrix. Such a matrix would not be linearly independent from the first eight ones. Indeed, the two matrices deduced from λ_3 using symmetry considerations, namely

$$\lambda_9 = \begin{pmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \; D_9(\alpha) = e^{\alpha i \lambda_9/2} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos\alpha/2 - i\sin\alpha/2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \cos\alpha/2 + i\sin\alpha/2 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_9 = D_9(\pi) = \begin{pmatrix} -i & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & i \end{pmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_{10} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}, \; D_{10}(\alpha) = e^{\alpha i \lambda_{10}/2} = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \cos\alpha/2 + i\sin\alpha/2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \cos\alpha/2 - i\sin\alpha/2 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$E_{10} = D_{10}(\pi) = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & i & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -i \end{pmatrix} \tag{160}$$

are linear combinations of λ_3 and λ_8; in particular, we have $\lambda_3 + \lambda_9 + \lambda_{10} = 0$ and $\sqrt{3}\lambda_8 + \lambda_9 = \lambda_{10}$. Therefore, λ_9 and λ_{10} are *not* Gell-Mann matrices. (Also two further matrices corresponding to λ_8 in the other two triplets can be defined. The sum of these three matrices is 0 as well.)

The multiplication properties of the Gell-Mann generators λ_1 to λ_8 are listed in Table 10. To make the threefold symmetry more evident, the table also lists the products containing the linearly dependent matrices λ_9 and λ_{10}. Writing the table with the commutators would directly show that the generators form a Lie algebra.

Vol. V, page 223

The *centre* of SU(3), the subgroup that commutes with all other elements of the group, is Z_3; its threefold symmetry is useful in understanding the behaviour of the group elements and of the generators in more detail.

The group elements E_1 to E_8 listed above share the property that their fourth powers $(E_n)^4$ are the identity matrix. The first matrix triplet E_1, E_2, E_3, the second triplet E_4, E_5, E_9 and the third triplet E_6, E_7, E_{10} each form a SU(2) subgroup. Reflecting the threefold symmetry of its centre, SU(3) contains three linearly independent SU(2) subgroups. The group element E_8 commutes with the first triplet E_1, E_2, E_3; therefore, these four elements generate a U(2) subgroup of SU(3). This U(2) subgroup, often sloppily labeled as SU(2)xU(1), is given by those 3 by 3 matrices that contain a unitary 2 by 2 matrix in the upper left, contain zeroes in the remaining four off-diagonal elements, and contain the inverse value of the determinant of the 2 by 2 matrix in the remaining, lower right diagonal element. In short, SU(3) contains three linearly independent U(2) subgroups.

SU(3) is characterized by the way that the SU(2) triplets are connected. In particular, the product $E_3E_9E_{10}$ is the identity, reflecting the linear dependence of the three corresponding generators λ_n. We also have $E_8E_9 = E_{10}$. Also the product of E_8 with its

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 10 The multiplication table for the generators λ_1 to λ_8 of SU(3), and for the additional, *linearly dependent* matrices $\lambda_9 = -\lambda_3/2 - \lambda_8\sqrt{3}/2$ and $\lambda_{10} = -\lambda_3/2 + \lambda_8\sqrt{3}/2$ that are *not* generators. Note that, despite the appearance, $\lambda_4^2 = \lambda_5^2 = \lambda_9^2$ and $\lambda_6^2 = \lambda_7^2 = \lambda_{10}^2$.

	λ_1	λ_2	λ_3	λ_4	λ_5	λ_9	λ_6	λ_7	λ_{10}	λ_8
λ_1	$2/3$ $+\lambda_8/\sqrt{3}$	$i\lambda_3$	$-i\lambda_2$	$\lambda_6/2$ $+i\lambda_7/2$	$-i\lambda_6/2$ $+\lambda_7/2$	$-\lambda_1/2$ $+i\lambda_2/2$	$\lambda_4/2$ $+i\lambda_5/2$	$-i\lambda_4/2$ $+\lambda_5/2$	$\lambda_1/2$ $+i\lambda_2/2$	$\lambda_1/\sqrt{3}$
λ_2	$-i\lambda_3$	$2/3$ $+\lambda_8/\sqrt{3}$	$i\lambda_1$	$i\lambda_6/2$ $-\lambda_7/2$	$\lambda_6/2$ $+i\lambda_7/2$	$-i\lambda_1/2$ $-\lambda_2/2$	$-i\lambda_4/2$ $+\lambda_5/2$	$-\lambda_4/2$ $-i\lambda_5/2$	$-i\lambda_1/2$ $+\lambda_2/2$	$\lambda_2/\sqrt{3}$
λ_3	$i\lambda_2$	$-i\lambda_1$	$2/3$ $+\lambda_8/\sqrt{3}$	$\lambda_4/2$ $+i\lambda_5/2$	$-i\lambda_4/2$ $+\lambda_5/2$	$-1/3 - \lambda_3/3$ $+\lambda_9/3$	$-\lambda_6/2$ $-i\lambda_7/2$	$i\lambda_6/2$ $-\lambda_7/2$	$-1/3 + \lambda_3/3$ $+\lambda_{10}/3$	$\lambda_3/\sqrt{3}$
λ_4	$\lambda_6/2$ $-i\lambda_7/2$	$-i\lambda_6/2$ $-\lambda_7/2$	$\lambda_4/2$ $-i\lambda_5/2$	$2/3 + \lambda_3/2$ $-\lambda_8/2\sqrt{3}$	$-i\lambda_9$	$i\lambda_5$	$\lambda_1/2$ $+i\lambda_2/2$	$i\lambda_1/2$ $-\lambda_2/2$	$-\lambda_4/2$ $-i\lambda_5/2$	$-\lambda_4/2\sqrt{3}$ $-i\sqrt{3}\lambda_5/2$
λ_5	$i\lambda_6/2$ $+\lambda_7/2$	$\lambda_6/2$ $-i\lambda_7/2$	$i\lambda_4/2$ $+\lambda_5/2$	$i\lambda_9$	$2/3 + \lambda_3/2$ $-\lambda_8/2\sqrt{3}$	$-i\lambda_4$	$-i\lambda_1/2$ $+\lambda_2/2$	$\lambda_1/2$ $+i\lambda_2/2$	$i\lambda_4/2$ $-\lambda_5/2$	$i\sqrt{3}\lambda_4/2$ $-\lambda_5/2\sqrt{3}$
λ_9	$-\lambda_1/2$ $-i\lambda_2/2$	$i\lambda_1/2$ $-\lambda_2/2$	$-1/3 - \lambda_3/3$ $+\lambda_9/3$	$-i\lambda_5$	$i\lambda_4$	$2/3 + 2\lambda_3/3$ $+\lambda_9/3$	$\lambda_6/2$ $-i\lambda_7/2$	$i\lambda_6/2$ $+\lambda_7/2$	$-1/3 - \lambda_9/3$ $+\lambda_{10}/3$	-1 $+\lambda_{10}$
λ_6	$+\lambda_4/2$ $-i\lambda_5/2$	$i\lambda_4/2$ $+\lambda_5/2$	$-\lambda_6/2$ $+i\lambda_7/2$	$\lambda_1/2$ $-i\lambda_2/2$	$i\lambda_1/2$ $+\lambda_2/2$	$\lambda_6/2$ $+i\lambda_7/2$	$2/3 - \lambda_3/2$ $-\lambda_8/2\sqrt{3}$	$i\lambda_{10}$	$-i\lambda_7$	$-\lambda_6/2\sqrt{3}$ $-i\sqrt{3}\lambda_7/2$
λ_7	$i\lambda_4/2$ $+\lambda_5/2$	$-\lambda_4/2$ $+i\lambda_5/2$	$-i\lambda_6/2$ $-\lambda_7/2$	$-i\lambda_1/2$ $-\lambda_2/2$	$\lambda_1/2$ $-i\lambda_2/2$	$-i\lambda_6/2$ $+\lambda_7/2$	$-i\lambda_{10}$	$2/3 - \lambda_3/2$ $-\lambda_8/2\sqrt{3}$	$i\lambda_6$	$i\sqrt{3}\lambda_6/2$ $-\lambda_7/2\sqrt{3}$
λ_{10}	$-\lambda_1/2$ $+i\lambda_2/2$	$-i\lambda_1/2$ $-\lambda_2/2$	$-1/3 + \lambda_3/3$ $-\lambda_{10}/3$	$-\lambda_4/2$ $+i\lambda_5/2$	$-i\lambda_4/2$ $-\lambda_5/2$	$-1/3 - \lambda_9/3$ $+\lambda_{10}/3$	$i\lambda_7$	$-i\lambda_6$	$2/3 - \lambda_3/3$ $+\lambda_9/3$	1 $+\lambda_9$
λ_8	$\lambda_1/\sqrt{3}$	$\lambda_2/\sqrt{3}$	$\lambda_3/\sqrt{3}$	$-\lambda_4/2\sqrt{3}$ $+i\sqrt{3}\lambda_5/2$	$-i\sqrt{3}\lambda_4/2$ $-\lambda_5/2\sqrt{3}$	-1 $+\lambda_{10}$	$-\lambda_6/2\sqrt{3}$ $+i\sqrt{3}\lambda_7/2$	$-i\sqrt{3}\lambda_6/2$ $-\lambda_7/2\sqrt{3}$	1 $+\lambda_9$	$2/3$ $-\lambda_8/\sqrt{3}$

companions from the other two triplets is the identity.

Finally, the product $(E_k E_l)^3$ for any k taken from the set $(1, 2, 4, 5, 6, 7)$ and any l from the same set, but from a *different* triplet, is also the identity matrix. This property of the third powers – taken together with the threefold symmetry of its centre – can be seen as the essential property that distinguishes SU(3) from other Lie groups. We now return to the strand model and show that slides indeed define an SU(3) group.

From slides to SU(3)

The *slide*, or *third Reidemeister move*, involves *three* pieces of strands. The textbook version of the third Reidemeister move – which is called E_0 here and is illustrated in Figure 67 – moves or 'slides' one strand, taken to be the horizontal blue one in the figure,

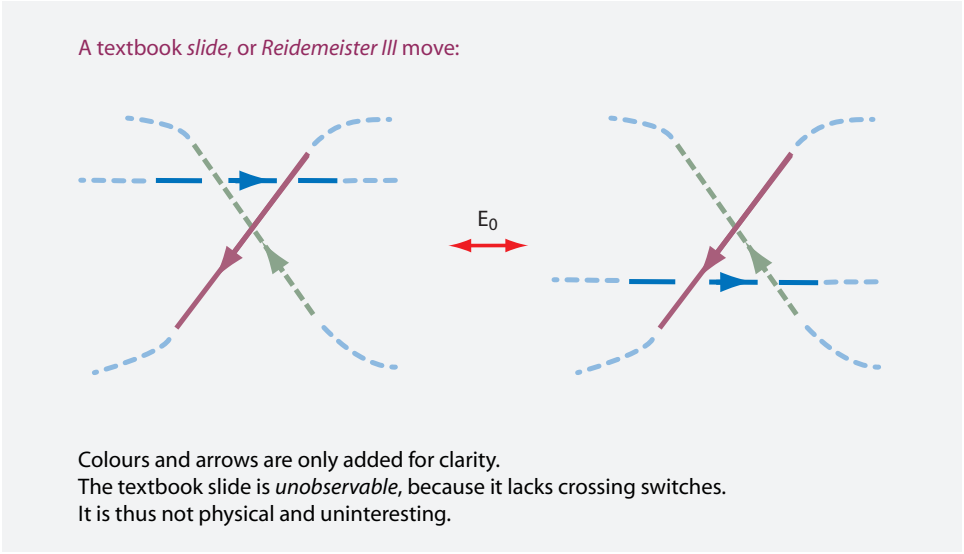

A textbook *slide*, or *Reidemeister III* move:
E_0
Colours and arrows are only added for clarity.
The textbook slide is *unobservable*, because it lacks crossing switches.
It is thus not physical and uninteresting.

FIGURE 67 The textbook version E_0 of the slide move, or third Reidemeister move, is unobservable, because it does not involve crossing switches.

against a crossing of the other two. Equivalently, we can say that a slide pushes two strands against the blue strand that is kept in place. This textbook slide – we also call it a *pure slide* here – does not contain any crossing switch; following the fundamental principle of the strand model, it is therefore unobservable, or, simply said, of no physical relevance. However, related strand moves that do involve crossing switches do exist.

We introduce eight *generalized slides*, or slide-rotations, for a three-strand configuration; they are shown in Figure 68. We directly call these generalized slides E_1 to E_8, because they will turn out to correspond to the SU(3) group elements with the same name that were introduced above. In other words, we will show that the *generalized slides* E_n are elements of a Lie group SU(3); in particular, they obey all the properties expected from the correspondence with the SU(3) generators λ_n in Gell-Mann's choice:

$$E_n = e^{\pi i \lambda_n/2} \,. \tag{161}$$

In the strand model, the generators λ_n describe the difference between an infinitesimal generalized slide – thus a slide-rotation with a rotation by an infinitesimal angle – and the identity. For slides, concatenation is equivalent to group multiplication, as expected. Slides form a group. We will now show that the slide generators obey the multiplication table already given in Table 10.

To see how the SU(3) multiplication table follows from Figure 68, we first note that the starting strand configuration of the Reidemeister III move contains, if all spatial configurations are considered, the same threefold symmetry as the centre of SU(3). In particular, like the generators and the basis vectors of SU(3), also the slides of the figure can be grouped into three triplets.

We now focus on the first triplet, the one formed by the three slides E_1, E_2 and E_3.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The *generalized slides,* or *Reidemeister III moves*, acting on three strands, form an SU(3) group.

The 8 generalized slides are shown below, with grey background. They are local slides and rotations by an angle π of an *imaginary buckle* formed by (usually) two strands. The strands lie (mostly) in a paper plane.

For each SU(2) triplet inside SU(3), the rotation axes of the finite group elements E_n are arranged at right angles to each other, as are those of the generators λ_n shown on the right. The rotation axes for E_3, E_9 and E_{10} are parallel; they are perpendicular to the paper plane. The three imaginary belt buckles for the three SU(2) subgroups are also shown.

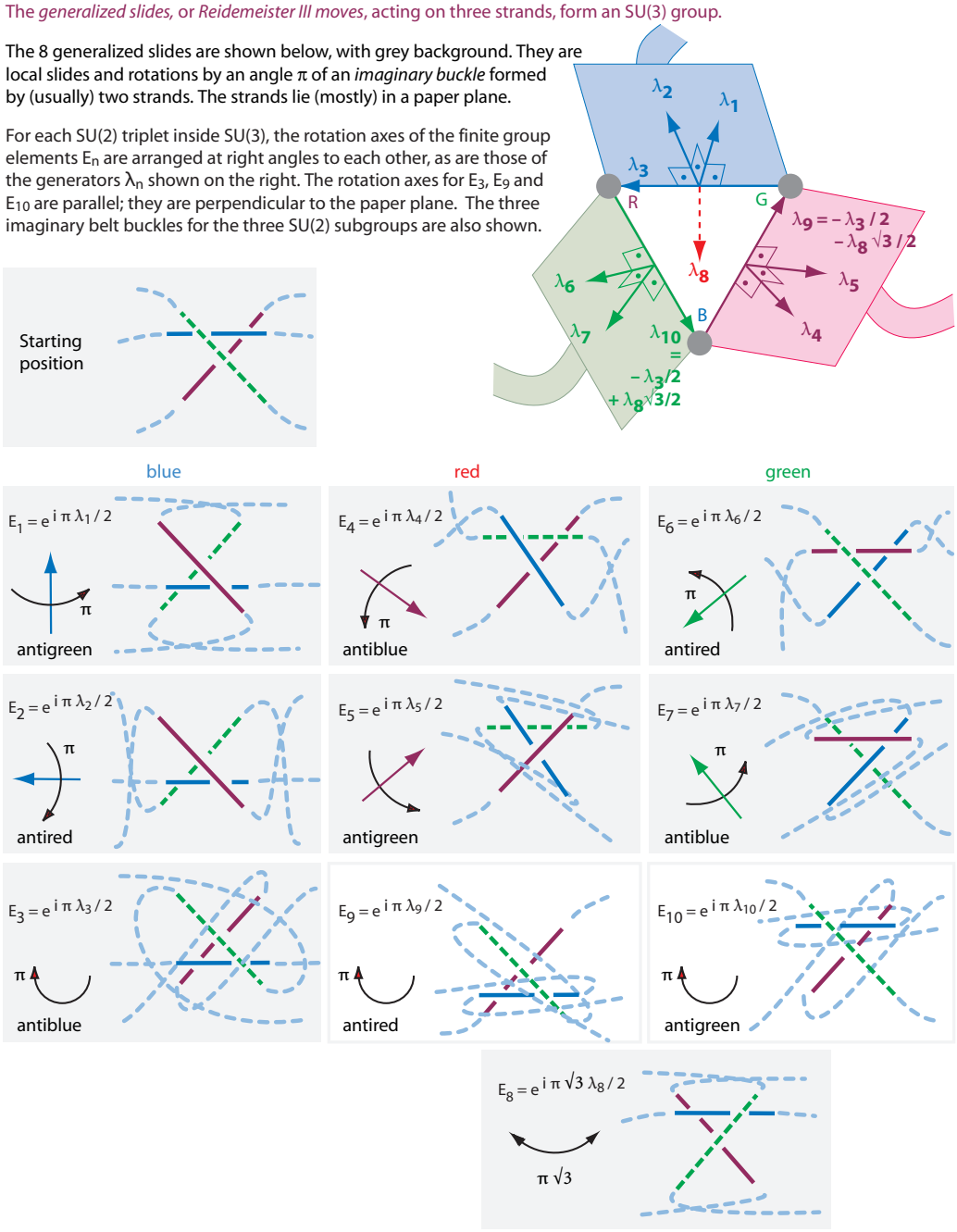


FIGURE 68 The strand deformations for the generalized slide moves E_n. The corresponding generators λ_n lead to an SU(3) structure, as shown in the text. Note that the rotation vectors for the generators λ_n and for the generalized slide moves E_n differ from each other. For clarity, the figure shows, instead of the deformation of the strand under discussion, the complementary deformations of the other two strands.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

To makes things clear, these moves can be pictured as combined deformations and slides of the red and green strands against the horizontal blue strand. We can imagine these moves like those of the belt trick, but acting on an *imaginary buckle* formed only by the red and green strands. These generalized slides do contain crossing changes; therefore they are observable and are of physical relevance.

We note that 'slide' is not a perfect term for the generalized deformations E_1 to E_8; in fact, we might prefer to call them *slide-rotations*, because they are slide-rotations by an angle π that are applied to an imaginary belt buckle. Despite the involved construction, these generalized, observable moves remain modelled on the textbook slide E_0; in particular, they require *three* strand segments. The generalized, observable moves just defined *differ* from the twists and pokes discussed above, in the sections on the electromagnetic and weak interactions; thus they differ from Reidemeister I and II moves. As a result, we will usually continue to call the generalized, observable moves simply *slides*.

For simplicity, we assume – similarly to what we did in the discussion about the weak interaction – that the three strand segments are (roughly) in a plane. This is an idealized situation; in fact, the arguments given in the following apply also to all other three-dimensional configurations of three strands. In particular, the same results appear if all three strands segments are assumed perpendicular to each other, instead of lying in a plane.

We note that the rotation axes of the generalized slides E_1 and E_2 are neither aligned nor orthogonal to the paper plane. More precisely, the rotation axes of E_1, E_4 and E_6 are perpendicular to the sides of a cube. E_2, E_5 and E_7 are perpendicular to them. For the first triplet, the rotation axes E_1, E_2 and E_3 form an orthonormal basis; the same is valid for the other two triplets. We now show that the slides of the first triplet define an SU(2) group.

The observable, generalized slides in the triplet E_1, E_2 and E_3 can be concatenated. We distinguish two cases. The first case is the concatenation of any such slide with itself. The result corresponds to a rotation by 2π of the chosen strand pair and its imaginary belt buckle, and thus induces a corresponding amount of tail twisting. In fact, when any slide of the triplet is concatenated *four* times with itself, the result is the identity operation. Comparing a twofold and a fourfold concatenation, we see that they differ only by an entangling, or algebraically, by a minus sign for the imaginary buckle. This already realizes half of the belt trick that visualizes SU(2).

The other case to be checked is the concatenation of two different slides of the triplet. The result is always the third slide of the triplet (up to a sign that depends on whether the combination is cyclical or not). This behaviour realizes the other half of the belt trick. In short, we have shown that the triplet containing the first three generalized slides defines an SU(2) group. More precisely, the infinitesimal slide-rotations λ_1, λ_2 and λ_3 corresponding to the finite SU(3) elements E_1, E_2 and E_3 generate the SU(2) Lie algebra of an SU(2) Lie group. The SU(2) subgroup just found is just one of the three linearly independent SU(2) subgroups of SU(3). The generators of the first slide triplet thus reproduce the nine results in the upper left of Table 10. We thus retain that we can indeed visualize the first three generalized slides with the help of the three orthogonal rotations by π of an imaginary belt buckle formed by the red and green strands.

Page 254

For the visualization of SU(3) it is essential to recall that the direction in three-dimensional space of the vectors visualizing λ_n and those visualizing E_n differ from each

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

other. This already the case for U(1).

The remaining generalized slides that are possible in the three-strand configuration are easily constructed using the threefold symmetry of the strand configuration; they are illustrated in Figure 68. For each of the three strand segments there is a triplet of observable slides; this yields a total of *nine* possible generalized slides for the observer defined by the paper plane. In the second triplet, the slides corresponding to E_1 and E_2 are called E_4 and E_5, and in the third triplet they are called E_6 and E_7. For the three slides corresponding to E_3 – we call the other two E_9 and E_{10} – *only two* generators are linearly independent. Indeed, the figure shows that $E_3E_9E_{10}$ – whose axes are all three parallel – is the identity matrix; this expected from an SU(3) structure. The three operations E_3, E_9 and E_{10} also commute with all other operations; thus they form the centre of the group defined by all E. The second linearly independent, generalized slide of common use, E_8, is also shown in the figure; it is a linear combination of E_9 and E_{10}. We note that the strand model also visualizes the factor $\sqrt{3}$ in the definition of E_8. In total, we get *eight* linearly independent generalized slides. All slides, except for E_8, act on an imaginary belt buckle that is formed by two strands.

We saw that the generators corresponding to the slides E_1, E_2 and E_3 generate an SU(2) subgroup. The same holds for the corresponding triplet E_4, E_5 and the linear combination $E_9 = -E_3/2 - E_8\sqrt{3}/2$ (corresponding to E_3), and for the triplet E_6, E_7 and $E_{10} = -E_3/2 + E_8\sqrt{3}/2$. For each of these slides, a fourfold concatenation yields the identity; and inside each triplet, the concatenation of two different slides yields a multiple of the third slide. In short, for each triplet, the corresponding infinitesimal slides generate an SU(2) group. These three SU(2) groups are linearly independent. We have thus reproduced an important part of the structure of SU(3). In addition, we have found a visualization of SU(3); since each SU(2) group can be represented by a separate imaginary buckle, the group SU(3) can be visualized – in many, but not all in aspects – with the help of three imaginary buckles. The top right of Figure 68 illustrates this visualization.

The correspondence of the slides and the multiplication table increases further if we change slightly the definition of the first triplet. In this first triplet we can take as imaginary buckle the set of *all three* central segments. Moving all three strands together simplifies the visualization, because for the first triplert, the blue strand is trapped between the other two strands. In this way, generalized slide still consists of a rotation followed by a slide. And we still have a SU(2) subgroup for the first triplet.

The slide E_8 differs from the other slides, as expected from SU(3). It describes a motion that rotates the red and green strands in opposite directions; this is illustrated in Figure 68. E_8 is thus *not* well described with an imaginary belt buckle. It is straightforward to check that the slide E_8 commutes with E_1, E_2, E_3 and obviously with itself, but not with the other generalized slides. Together, E_8 and the first triplet thus form a U(2) Lie group, as expected. In addition, we find that E_8 commutes with E_9 and E_{10}, and that $E_8E_9 = E_{10}$, as expected from SU(3). The strand model also implies that the product of E_8 with its two counterparts from the other triplets is the identity matrix, as expected from SU(3).

The last step to show the equivalence of slides and SU(3) requires us to confirm the multiplication properties – between slides E_n or between generators λ_n – from *different* triplets. In fact, because of the three-fold symmetry of the centre, we only need to check two multiplication results between slides from different triplets: one that either involves

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

λ_3 or λ_8, and one that does not.

We begin with products involving λ_3 and one of the first two elements of another triplet. Such products yield a weighted sum of generators of the triplet. It is easier to check these product properties by using the exemplary relation between finite group elements $E_5E_3E_4 = E_3$. Note that only this specific permutation of 5, 3 and 4 yields this result. Playing with the strand model confirms the relation. Similar comments apply to $E_6E_3E_7 = E_3$ – and to the corresponding products involving E_9, such as $E_1E_9E_2 = E_9$, or E_{10}, such as $E_1E_{10}E_2 = E_{10}$ – as well as $E_4E_8E_5 = E_8$ and $E_6E_8E_7 = E_8$. The strand model allows anybody to check that these relations are satisfied.

We continue with the exemplary product $\lambda_5\lambda_7$, respectively E_5E_7. We note a basic difference between a product like $\lambda_5\lambda_7$ and any product of two generators from the same triplet. The product $\lambda_5\lambda_7$ – like the other concatenations of generators from different triplets – does not yield a single generator, but yields a combination, i.e., a *sum* of generators. The combination is not easy to visualize with strands; an easier way is to check the SU(3) algebra using the properties of the product E_5E_7.

As mentioned above, in SU(3), for products involving the first two members from different triplets, *the threefold concatenation* $(E_iE_j)^3$ *is the identity.* And indeed, Figure 68 confirms that $(E_2E_4)^3$ or $(E_5E_7)^3$ is the identity. Similarly, also the other products can be tested with the help of three strands.

Using the visualization with three strands, we have thus confirmed all products of generators from two different triplets that appear in Table 10. We note that Figure 68 also illustrates that the three slides E_2, E_5 and E_7 generate an SO(3) group, the rotation group in three dimensions. In order to see this, we observe that the infinitesimal versions of the three slides generate all possible rotations in three dimensions of the central triangle. An SO(3) group also appears for the slides 1, 4 and 7, for the slides 1, 5 and 6, and for the slides 2, 4 and 6. These are the four basic SO(3) subgroups of SU(3). The remaining combinations of three operations from three different triplets – such as 1, 4 and 6, or the combination 1, 5 and 7, or the combination 2, 4 and 7, or the combination 2, 5 and 6 – do *not* generate any subgroup. This can be confirmed by exploring the corresponding strand moves.

We can conclude: in a region with three strands crossing each other, the eight linearly independent, generalized slides that can be applied to that region define the group SU(3). In other words, *the group SU(3) follows from the third Reidemeister move.*

In the same way as for the other gauge groups, we find that particles whose strand models contain configurations with three strand segments can be subject to an SU(3) gauge interaction. In experiments, this interaction is called the *strong nuclear interaction*. The strong interaction is due to the Reidemeister III move. Like for the other interactions, a particle will only interact strongly if its tangle is not too symmetric, because in the symmetric case, averaged over time, there will be no net interaction. We will clarify the details below, when we discuss the specific tangles and colour charges of the different elementary matter particles.

Page 303

The strand model for gluons

Physically, the eight slides corresponding to the Gell-Mann matrices represent the effects of the eight *gluons*, the intermediate vector bosons of the strong interaction, that can act

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

on a particle.

▷ Given that the eight slides E_1 to E_8 represent the effects of the eight gluons, they also represent the gluons themselves.

Interactions are transfers of a tangle process to another tangle. Therefore

▷ The absorption of a gluon is a slide that is transferred to another particle.
▷ The emission of a gluon is a slide that is transferred to three vacuum strands.

To visualize the concept of gluon even further, we can say that every gluon can be described as a strand structure that continuously performs an SU(3) operation, i.e., a generalized slide continuously repeating itself. We found a similar correspondence for the other gauge interactions. In case of the electromagnetic interaction, the intermediate vector boson, the photon, can be described as a strand that continuously performs a U(1) operation, i.e., a rotation. In case of the weak interaction, a weak intermediate vector boson can be described as a strand that continuously performs an SU(2) operation, i.e., an operation from the belt trick. This is most evident in the unbroken form of the weak bosons.

Every gluon can also be seen as the deformation of a single strand that drags its surrounding with it. This single strand description of gluons implies that gluons have vanishing mass and vanishing charge. This single strand description of gluons also implies that they have spin 1, as is observed. The strand model of the gluon also implies that free gluons would have a huge energy.

Challenge 165 e

The SU(3) multiplication table confirms that the eight gluons transform according to the adjoint (and faithful) representation of SU(3). Therefore, each row or column in a Gell-Mann matrix thus corresponds to one of the three *colours* of the strong interaction. The exploration of slide concatenation also showed that two general slides do not commute and do not anticommute. The group SU(3) is *non-Abelian*. This implies that gluons interact among themselves. Both the multiplication table and the strand model for gluons imply that two interacting gluons can yield either one or two new gluons, but not more. This is illustrated in Figure 69. The strand model, through its generation of SU(3), thus implies that gluons interact among themselves, but only in triple and quartic gluon vertices.

Slides – i.e., gluon emission or absorption – never change the topology of tangles, and in particular, of matter tangles. Therefore, the strand model predicts that the strong interactions conserve electric charge, baryon number, weak isospin, flavour, spin and all parities. This is indeed observed. In particular, there is a natural lack of C, P and CP violation by slides. This is precisely what is observed for the strong interaction.

Because gluons do not change the topology of the particle tangles they act upon, but only change their shape, gluons are predicted to be massless in the strand model, despite interacting among themselves. And because gluons interact among themselves, free gluons are predicted not to appear in nature. And of course, all these conclusions agree with experiments.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

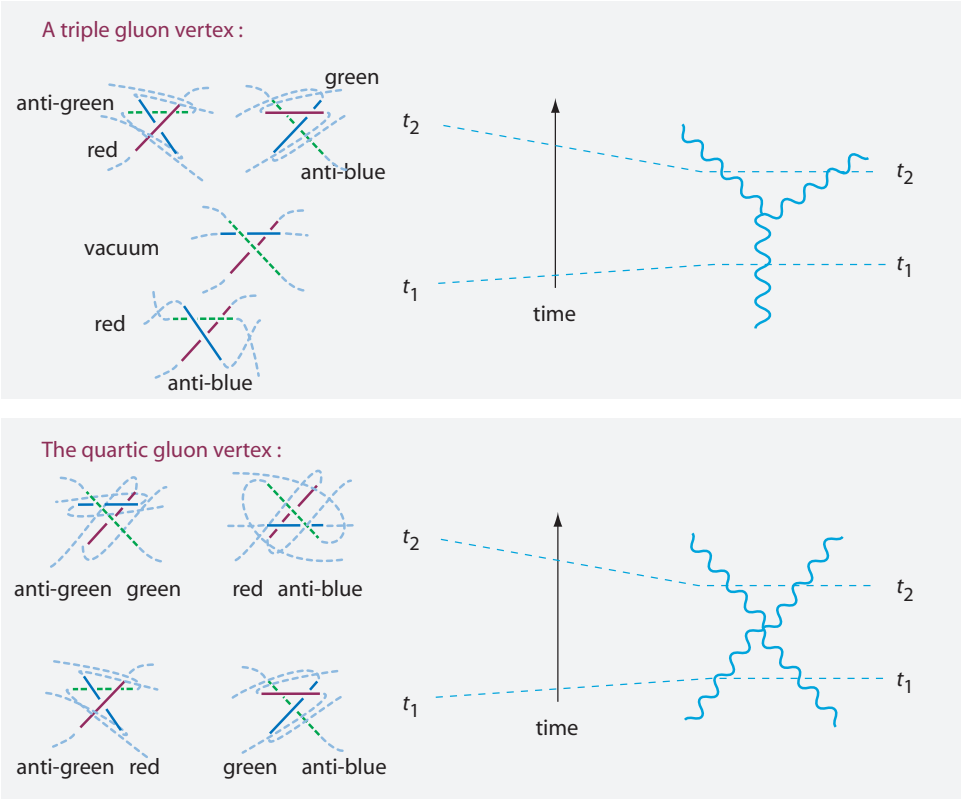


FIGURE 69 The two types of self-interaction of gluons in the strand model.

In summary, we have shown that in the strand model, the strong nuclear interaction and all its properties appear automatically form slides, i.e., from Reidemeister III moves. In particular, the strand model implies that the Lagrangian of strongly interacting fermions has a SU(3) gauge invariance that is due to generalized slide deformations.

The gluon Lagrangian

Gluons are massless particles with spin 1. As a result, the field intensities and the Lagrangian are determined in the same way as for photons: energy density is the square of crossing density, i.e., the 'square' of field intensity. Since there are 8 gluons, the Lagrangian density becomes

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{gluons}} = -\frac{1}{4}\sum_{a=1}^{8} G^a_{\mu\nu} G^{\mu\nu}_a \tag{162}$$

where the gluon field intensities, with *two* greek indices, are given naturally as

$$G^a_{\mu\nu} = \partial_\mu G^a_\nu - \partial_\nu G^a_\mu - g f^{abc} G^b_\mu G^c_\nu \,, \tag{163}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

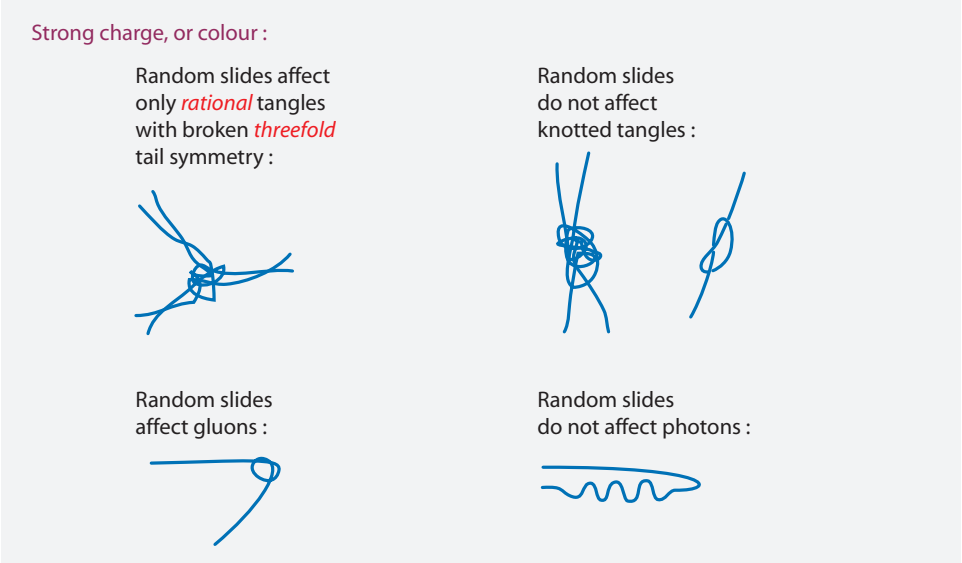

Strong charge, or colour :
Random slides affect only rational tangles with broken threefold tail symmetry :
Random slides do not affect knotted tangles :
Random slides affect gluons :
Random slides do not affect photons :

FIGURE 70 Tangles with and without colour charge. (This figure needs to be updated.)

and f_{abc} are the structure constants of SU(3) that can be deduced from the multiplication table given above. The quantities G^a_μ, with *one* greek index, are the gluon vector potentials. The last term in the definition of the field intensities corresponds to the triple and quartic vertices in the Feynman diagrams of gluon interactions. They are shown in Figure 69. The Lagrangian is simply the natural generalization from the U(1) case of photons to the SU(3) case of gluons. In short, we obtain the usual free gluon Lagrangian from the strand model.

Page 226

Colour charge

Surrounded by a bath of gluons that randomly induce slides of all kinds, not all fermion cores will change their rotation state. Generally speaking, particles have colour if a bath of random gluons changes their phase. Only tangles which lack some symmetry will therefore possess colour charge. Tangle that are symmetric will be neutral, or 'white'. Which symmetry is important here?

We see directly that the *photon* tangle is not sensitive to a gluon bath. The same is valid for W and Z bosons. These tangles are too simple. The strand model predicts that these particles are colour-neutral, i.e., that they are 'white', as is observed.

On the other hand, the multiplication properties given above shows that *gluons* interact among themselves and thus that they have colour charge. In fact, group theory shows that their properties are best described by saying that gluons have a colour and an anticolour; this is the simplest way to describe the representation to which they belong. In short, the strand model of gluons automatically implies that they carry both a colour and an anti-colour.

Fermions behave differently. In the strand model, a fermion has colour charge if the corresponding triple belt model is affected by large numbers of random gluons. The first

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

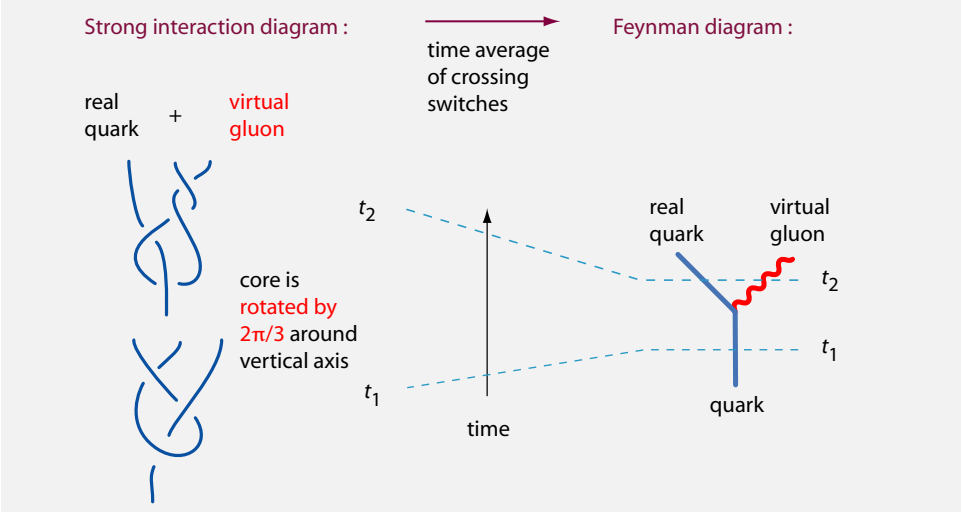


FIGURE 71 The Feynman diagram of the strong interaction for a quark. The upper triplet of tails correspond to the three belts.

tangles that come to mind are tangles made of three strands, such as the simple tangles shown in Figure 68. But a short investigation shows that such tangles are colour-neutral, or 'white'. We will see below that this implies that *leptons* are colour-neutral, or 'white'. In contrast, a rational fermion tangle made of *two* strands does not suffer this fate. In a bath of gluon strands that induce slides, i.e., third Reidemeister moves, a general *rational tangle* made of two strands is expected to be influenced, and thus to be colour-charged.

Rational tangles made of two strands are the simplest possible tangles with colour. A tangle is called *rational* if it can be untangled just by moving the tails around. An example of a rational tangle is shown in Figure 71. Such tangles break the three-fold symmetry of the three-belt structure, and are thus colour-charged. We will show below how these tangles are related to *quarks*. We can thus say:

▷ A fermion tangle has ***colour charge*** if its three-belt model is not symmetric for rotations by $\pm 2\pi/3$.

Coloured rational tangles automatically have *three* possible colours:

▷ The ***three colour charges*** are the three possibilities to map a tangle to the three belt model.* *Each colour is thus a particular orientation in ordinary space.*

If we explore more complicated types of tangles of two strands, such as *prime* tangles or *locally knotted* tangles, we find that their colour depends on their structure. The strand model thus predicts that rational tangles made of two strands are the basic colour states. And indeed, in nature, quarks are the only fermions with colour charge.

Page 309

Challenge 166 ny * Can you define a geometric or even a topological knot invariant that reproduces colour charge?

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

We can summarize that colour charge is related to orientation in space. The three possible colours and anticolours are consequences of the possible orientations along the three dimensions of space.

Properties of the strong interaction

In the strand model, all interactions are *deformations* of the tangle core. Specifically, the strong interaction is due to exchange of *slides*. Particles have strong charge, or colour, if their tangles lack the three-belt symmetry just specified. In the case of coloured fermions, *colour change* is a change of the mapping to the three-belt model, i.e., a change of orientation of the tangle in space.

If we use the strand definition of the strong interaction, visual inspection shows us that slide exchanges, and thus gluon exchanges, are deformations that conserve topology; therefore gluon exchange *conserves colour*. Since the strong interaction conserves the topology of all involved tangles and knots, the strong interaction also *conserves electric charge*, *parity*, and, as we shall see below, *all other quantum numbers* – except colour itself, of course. All these results correspond to observation.

The Lagrangian of QCD

We started from the idea that tangle core deformations lead to phase redefinitions. We then found that slides imply that the strong interaction Lagrangian for matter and for radiation fields is SU(3) gauge invariant. If we include these two gauge invariances into the fermion Lagrangian density from the Dirac equation, we get

$$\mathcal{L}_{\text{QCD}} = \sum_q \overline{\Psi}_q (i\hbar c \not{D} - m_q c^2 \delta_{qq'}) \Psi_{q'} - \frac{1}{4} \sum_{a=1}^{8} G^a{}_{\mu\nu} G_a{}^{\mu\nu} \,, \tag{164}$$

where the index q counts the coloured fermion, i.e., the quark. In this Lagrangian density, $\not{D}$ is now the SU(3) gauge covariant derivative

$$\not{D} = \not{\partial} - g \gamma^\mu G^a_\mu \lambda_a \,, \tag{165}$$

where g is the gauge coupling, λ_a are the generators of SU(3), i.e., the Gell-Mann matrices given above, and the G^a_μ are, as before, the gluon vector potentials. The last term in the covariant derivative corresponds to the Feynman diagram and the strand diagram of Figure 71. This is the Lagrangian density of QCD.

In summary: the strand model reproduces QCD. However, we have not yet deduced the number and masses m_q of the quarks, nor the strong gauge coupling g.

Renormalization of the strong interaction

The slide move description of the strong interaction implies that only three Feynman diagrams are possible: one QCD Feynman diagram is possible for quarks, and only the triple and the quartic vertices are possible among gluons. This limited range of options allowed us to deduce the QCD Lagrangian. The limited range of options is also essential

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

for the *renormalization* of QCD. The strand model thus automatically ensures that the strong interaction is renormalizable.

In short, the strand model provides a new underlying picture for the Feynman diagrams of the strong interaction, but does not change the physical results at any energy scale accessible in the laboratory. In particular, the measured running of the strong coupling constant is reproduced. Indeed, in the strand model, a flux-tube–like bond between the quarks appears automatically, as we will see when exploring hadrons. At high kinetic energies, the bond has little effect, so that quarks behave more like free particles. In short, we find that the strand model reproduces *asymptotic freedom* and also provides an argument for quark confinement. We will return to the issue in more detail below.

Page 370
Page 323, page 331
Page 328

Curiosities and fun challenges about SU(3)

Deducing the Lie group SU(3) from a three-dimensional model is a new result. In particular, deducing the gauge group SU(3) as a *deformation gauge group* is new. Frank Wilczek, Alfred Shapere, Alden Mead, Jerry Marsden and several others have confirmed that before this discovery, only the geometric Lie group SO(3) and its subgroups had been found in deformations. The fundamental principle of the strand model shows its power by overcoming this limitation. (Apparently, nobody had even realized that the belt trick already implies the possibility of an SU(2) gauge group for deformations.)

Vol. V, page 286
Ref. 182

* *

We have discussed the *shape deformations* that lead to the SU(3) group. But what are the precise *phase choices* for a crossing that lead to SU(3) invariance?

Challenge 167 ny

* *

Do the two linear independent gluons with lined-up tails have the same properties as the other six gluons?

Challenge 168 ny

* *

Three strands can cross each other also in another way, such that the three strands are interlocked. Why can we disregard the situation in this section?

Challenge 169 s

* *

Deducing the Lie groups U(1), SU(2) and SU(3) directly from a basic principle contradicts another old dream. Many scholars hoped that the three gauge groups have something to do with the sequence complex numbers, quaternions and octonions. The strand model quashes this hope – or at least changes it in an almost unrecognizable way.

* *

The tangles for the W and Z bosons have no colour charge. Can you confirm this?

Challenge 170 e

* *

The Lie group SU(3) is also the symmetry group of the three-dimensional harmonic oscillator. What is the geometric relation to the Lie group SU(3) induced by slides?

Challenge 171 ny

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

Challenge 172 e Confirm that the strand model does not contradict the Coleman–Mandula theorem on the possible conserved quantities in quantum field theory.

* *

Challenge 173 e Confirm that the strand model does not contradict the Weinberg–Witten theorem on the possible massless particles in quantum field theory.

* *

Challenge 174 d Are the *Wightman axioms* of quantum field theory fulfilled by the strand model with interactions? The *Haag–Kastler axioms*? Is Haag's theorem circumvented?

* *

Ref. 183 Challenge 175 ny Show that the BCFW recursion relation for tree level gluon scattering follows from the strand model.

Summary on the strong interaction and experimental predictions

We have deduced the Lagrangian density of QCD from the strand model with the help of slides. Is there a difference between the strand model and QCD? No, not as long as gravity plays no role. The strand model predicts that gravitation only comes into play near the Planck energy $\sqrt{\hbar c^5/4G}$. And indeed, accelerator experiments have not yet found any effect that contradicts QCD, and therefore no effect that contradicts the strand model of the strong interaction.

The strand model also predicts that the strong interaction is naturally CP-invariant. This means that axions – particles invented to explain the invariance – are unnecessary: Page 342 as shown below, the strand model even predicts that they do not to exist. Both predictions agree with experiment.

The strand model of the strong interaction implies that the SU(3) gauge symmetry is valid at all energies. No other gauge group plays a role in the strong interaction. The strand model thus predicts again that there is no grand unification in nature, and thus no larger gauge group. Often discussed groups such as SU(5), SO(10), E6, E7, E8 or SO(32) are predicted not to apply to nature. Also this prediction is not contradicted by experiment.

The strand model further predicts that the combination of gravity and quantum theory turns all Planck units into *limit* values. The strand model thus predicts a maximum strong field value given by the Planck force divided by the strong charge of the quark. All physical systems – including all astrophysical objects, such as neutron stars, quark stars, gamma-ray bursters or quasars – are predicted to conform to this field limit. So far, this prediction is validated by experiment.

In summary, we have shown that Reidemeister III moves – or slides – in tangle cores lead to an SU(3) gauge invariance and a Lagrangian that reproduces the strong interaction. Colour charge is related to the topology of certain rational tangles. In this way, we have deduced the origin and most observed properties of the strong interaction. We have Page 157 thus settled another issue of the millennium list. However, we still need to deduce the tangles and the number of quarks, their masses and the strength of the strong coupling.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

SUMMARY ON MILLENNIUM ISSUES ABOUT GAUGE INTERACTIONS

At this point of our adventure, we have deduced gauge theory and the three known gauge
Page 146 interactions from strands. Using only the fundamental principle, we explained the dimensions of space-time, the Planck units, the principle of least action, the appearance of the gauge groups U(1), broken SU(2) and SU(3), of renormalization, of Lorentz symmetry and of permutation symmetry. Thus we have deduced all the concepts and all the mathematical structures that are necessary to *formulate* the standard model of elementary particles.

In particular, the strand model provides a description and explanation of the three gauge interactions at Planck scales that is based on *deformations* of strands. The deduction of the three gauge interactions given in this text, with the help of the Reidemeister moves, is the first and, at present, the *only* explanation of the three gauge forces. No other explanation or deduction has ever been given.

We have shown that quantum field theory is an *approximation* of the strand model. The approximation appears when the strand diameter is neglected; quantum field theory is thus valid for all energies below the Planck scale. In other words, in contrast to many other attempts at unification, the strand model is *not a generalization* of quantum field theory. The strand model for the three gauge interactions is also unmodifiable. These
Page 143 properties are in agreement with our list of requirements for a final theory.

We have not yet deduced the complete standard model: we still need to show which particles exist, which properties they have and what couplings they produce. However, we have found that the strand model explains all the mathematical structures from the
Page 157 millennium list that occur in quantum field theory and in the standard model of particle physics. In fact, the strand explanation for the origin of the gauge interactions allows us to make several strong statements.

Prediction about the number of interactions

Already in 1926, Kurt Reidemeister proved an important theorem about possible deformations of knots or tangles that lead to changes of crossings. When tangles are described with two-dimensional diagrams, all possible deformations can be reduced to *exactly three*
Ref. 180 moves, nowadays called after him. In the strand model, the two-dimensional tangle diagram describes what an observer *sees* about a physical system. Together with the equivalence of interactions as crossing-changing deformations, Reidemeister's theorem thus proves that there are *only three gauge interactions* in nature. Searches for other gauge interactions are predicted to fail. And indeed, they have failed up to now.

Unification of interactions

Ref. 142 We can also state that there is only *one* Reidemeister move. This becomes especially clear if we explore the three-dimensional shape of knots instead of their two-dimensional diagrams: all three Reidemeister moves can be deduced from the *same* deformation of a single strand. Only the projection on a two-dimensional diagram creates the distinction between the three moves. In the terms of the strand model, this means that all gauge

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

interactions are in fact aspects of only one basic process, a fluctuation of strand shape, and that the three gauge interactions are only distinguished by their projections. In this way, the three gauge interactions are thus *unified* by the strand model.

The plane of projection used in a strand diagram defines a mapping from strand fluctuations to Reidemeister moves. The projection plane is defined by the observer, i.e., by the frame of reference. Depending on the projection plane, a general deformation is mapped into different Reidemeister moves. At first sight, the nature of an interaction – whether electromagnetic, strong or weak – seems to depend on the observer. In nature, however, this is not the case. But this contradiction is only apparent. In the strand model, the nature of interaction of a particle results from the type of asymmetry of its tangle core. Certain strand deformations do not lead to interactions, because their effects are suppressed by the averaging of short-time fluctuations underlying every observation. In other words, the averaging process at the basis of observations also ensures that interactions are effectively observer-independent at low energy.

Page 368 In short, the strand model provides a natural *unification* of the interactions. And this unification of the interactions differs completely from any past proposal. The final test, of course, can only be provided by experiment.

No divergences

The strand model implies that there are *no* divergences in the quantum description of nature. This lack of divergence occurs because physical values result after strand effects have been averaged out. As mentioned above, strand effects on space-time disappear Page 146 through 'shivering' and strand effects on particles disappear through wavefunctions.

In summary, in the strand model, no interaction implies or contains divergences: neither gravity nor the gauge interactions. There are neither ultraviolet nor infrared divergences. The strand model avoids divergences, infinities and singularities of any kind from its very start.

Predictions about grand unification and supersymmetry

The three gauge interactions are due to the three Reidemeister moves. Therefore, the strand model asserts that there is *no* single gauge group for all interactions. In short, the strand model asserts that there is *no* so-called *grand unification*. The absence of grand unification implies the absence of large proton decay rates, the absence of additional, still undiscovered gauge bosons, the absence of neutron–antineutron oscillations, and the absence of sizeable electric dipole moments in elementary particles. All these searches Page 378 are ongoing at present; the strand model predicts that they yield *null results*.

Supersymmetry and approaches based on it assume gauge group unification. The strand model therefore predicts that there is no supersymmetry and no supergravity. The strand model predicts the absence of all conjectured 'superparticles'.

Reidemeister moves are confined to three spatial dimensions. Indeed, the strand model is based on exactly three spatial dimensions. There are no other, undetected dimensions. The strand model also predicts the absence of non-commutative space-time, Page 338 even though, with some imagination, strands can be seen as remotely related to that approach. The strand model also predicts the lack of different vacua: the vacuum is unique. In short, the strand model differs both experimentally and theoretically from many uni-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

fication proposals made in the twentieth century.

In simple terms, the strand model predicts the *absence* of additional symmetries and of additional space-time properties at high energy. The strand model predicts that unification is not achieved by searching for higher symmetries, nor for higher dimensions, nor for concepts that contain both. This lack of complex mathematical or symmetry concepts in nature is disappointing; the hopes and search activities in the last fifty years are predicted to have been misguided. In other words, the predictions of the strand model are unpopular. However, the predictions agree with our list of requirements for a final theory; and so far, all these predictions agree with experiment.

Page 143
Page 382

No new observable gravity effects in particle physics

In the 'cube' structure of physics shown in Figure 1, the transition from the final, unified description to quantum field theory occurs by neglecting gravity, i.e., by assuming flat space-time. The same transition occurs in the strand model, where neglecting gravity in addition requires neglecting the strand diameter. In this way, the gravitational constant G disappears completely from the description of nature.

Page 7

We can summarize our findings on quantum field theory also in the following way:

▷ The strand model predicts that masses are the only observable effect of gravity in quantum physics and in particle physics.

This result will be complemented below by a second, equally restrictive result that limits the observable quantum effects in the study of gravity. In short, the strand model keeps particle physics and general relativity almost completely separated from each other. This is a consequence of the different effects of tail deformations and core deformations. And also the strand model prediction of a lack of additional gravitational effects in particle physics agrees with all experiments so far.

Page 301

The status of our quest

In this chapter, we have deduced that strands predict exactly three interactions, because interactions are deformations of tangle cores and because only three classes of such tangle core deformations exist. The three classes of deformations are given by the three Reidemeister moves. Because of the properties of the Reidemeister moves, the three interactions are described by a U(1), a broken SU(2) and a SU(3) gauge symmetry, respectively.

Strands also show that the three interactions are renormalizable, relativistically invariant, and that they follow the least action principle. Strands thus imply the three interaction Lagrangians of the standard model of particle physics. In addition, strands predict the absence of other interactions, symmetries and space-time structures.

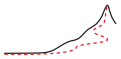
If we look at the millennium list of open issues in fundamental physics, we have now solved all issues concerning the mathematical structures that appear in quantum field theory and in the standard model of particle physics.

Page 157

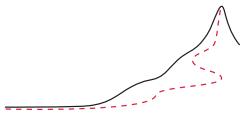
▷ All mathematical structures found in quantum physics result from the fundamental principle of the strand model.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

This is an intriguing result that induces to continue the exploration. Only two groups of issues are still unexplained: the theory of general relativity and the spectrum of elementary particles. We proceed in this order.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 10

GENERAL RELATIVITY DEDUCED FROM STRANDS

General relativity describes the deformations of the vacuum. In everyday life, gravitation is the only such effect that we observe. But on astronomical scale, gravity shows more phenomena: vacuum can deflect light, producing gravitational lenses, can wobble, giving gravitational waves, and can accelerate, yielding the darkness of the sky and the fascinating black holes. All these observations require general relativity for their description. Therefore, general relativity must be part of any unified description of nature.

In the following, we explain the existence of gravity as a consequence of strands. Then we deduce the field equations of general relativity, the entropy of black holes and relativistic cosmology from the strand model. We also predict the outcome of many quantum gravity experiments. Finally, we deduce the consequences of strands for cosmology, including a new experimental prediction. Of all Planck-scale models of space or space-time, strands seem to be the simplest one that provides these deductions.

Flat space, special relativity and its limitations

Page 201 We have seen above that any observer automatically introduces a 3+1-dimensional *background* space-time. We have also seen that in the case of quantum theory, *physical* space-time, the space-time that is formed by the fluctuations of the vacuum strands, is naturally 3+1-dimensional and flat. In the absence of gravity, physical space and background space coincide.

Page 204 Using strands, we have deduced the invariant limit c for all energy speeds and shown that it is realized only for free massless particles, such as photons. Strands also showed us that massive particles move more slowly than light. In short, strands reproduce special relativity.

The strand model thus predicts that *pure* special relativity is correct for all situations and all energies in which gravity and quantum theory play no role. The strand model also predicts that when gravity or quantum effects do play a role, general relativity or quantum theory *must* be taken into account. This means that there is no domain of nature in which intermediate descriptions are valid.

It is sometimes suggested that the invariant Planck energy limit for elementary particles might lead to a 'doubly special relativity' that deviates from special relativity Ref. 85 at high particle energy. However, this suggestion is based on two assumptions: that at Planck energy *point masses* are a viable approximation to particles, and that at Planck energy *vacuum and matter differ*. In nature, and in the strand model, both assump-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

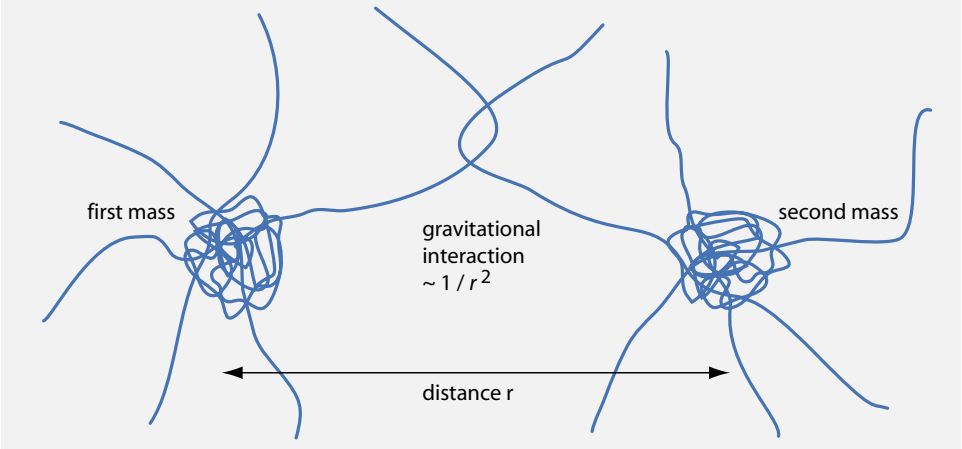


FIGURE 72 Gravitational attraction as result of strands.

tions are incorrect. Nature, as general relativity shows, does not allow the existence of point masses: the densest objects in nature are black holes, and these are not point-like for any mass value. Furthermore, at Planck energy, matter and vacuum *cannot* be distinguished. Put simply, no system at Planck energy can be described without general relativity or without quantum gravity. In short, the strand model predicts that the approach of 'doubly special relativity' cannot be correct.

Page 62
Ref. 184

Classical gravitation

In nature, at low speeds and in the flat space limit, gravitation is observed to lead to an acceleration a of test masses that changes as the inverse square distance from the gravitating mass;

$$a = G\frac{M}{R^2} \,. \tag{166}$$

This acceleration is called *universal gravitation* or *classical gravitation*. It is an excellent approximation for the solar system and for many star systems throughout the universe.

In the strand model, every space-time effect, including gravitation, is due to the behaviour of tangle tails. In the strand model, every mass, i.e., every system of tangles, is connected to the border of space by tails. The nearer a mass is to a second mass, the more frequently the tails of the two masses cross and get tangled. Figure 72 illustrates the situation. The strand model states:

▷ ***Gravitation*** is due to the fluctuations of tail crossings.

The tail crossings fluctuate; averaged of time, the fluctuations lead to a crossing switch density. The resulting energy density – where energy is the number of crossing switches per time – changes like the inverse distance from the central mass. This is the reason for the $1/r$-dependence of the gravitational potential and the $1/r^2$-dependence of gravitational acceleration. (This applies to all those cases where curvature is negligible.) In

Challenge 176 e

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

simple words, in the strand model, the inverse square dependence of gravitational acceleration is due to the three-dimensionality of space combined with the one-dimensionality of strands.

The strand model also shows that masses and energies are always positive: every tangle has tails. The model also shows qualitatively that larger masses produce stronger attraction, as they generally have more tails. We will show below that the effective number density of tails is indeed proportional to the mass.

Page 344

In the strand model, crossing switches are not only related to energy; they are also related to entropy. A slightly different – but equivalent – view on gravitation therefore appears when we put the stress on the entropic aspect.

Deducing universal gravitation from black hole properties

Black holes have entropy; this implies universal gravitation. There are at least two ways to explain this connection.

An especially clear explanation was recently given by Erik Verlinde. In this view, *gravity appears because any mass M generates an effective vacuum temperature around it.* A gravitating mass M attracts test masses because during the *fall* of a test mass, the total entropy *decreases*. It is not hard to describe these ideas quantitatively.

Ref. 185

Given a spherical surface A enclosing a gravitating mass M at its centre, the acceleration a of a test mass located somewhere on the surface is given by the local vacuum temperature T:

$$a = T\,\frac{2\pi\,kc}{\hbar}\,, \tag{167}$$

where k is the Boltzmann constant. This relation is called the *Fulling–Davies–Unruh effect* and relates vacuum temperature and local acceleration. Thus, an inertial or a freely falling mass (or observer) measures a vanishing vacuum temperature.

In the strand model, the vacuum temperature at the surface of the enclosing sphere is given by the crossing switches induced by the tails starting at the mass. We can determine the vacuum temperature by dividing the energy E contained inside the sphere by *twice* the *maximum* possible entropy S for that sphere. This maximum value is the entropy that the sphere would have if it were a black hole horizon; it can be calculated by the strand model, as we will see shortly. This calculation yields the expression

Page 279

$$T = \frac{E}{2S} = \frac{M}{A}\,\frac{2G\hbar}{kc}\,. \tag{168}$$

Neglecting spatial curvature, we can set $A = 4\pi R^2$; this gives a temperature at the enclosing sphere given by

$$T = \frac{M}{R^2}\,\frac{G\hbar}{2\pi\,kc}\,. \tag{169}$$

Inserting this expression into the above expression (167) for the Fulling–Davies–Unruh acceleration, we get

$$a = G\,\frac{M}{R^2}\,. \tag{170}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

This is universal gravitation, as discovered by Robert Hooke and popularized by Isaac Newton. Since spatial curvature was neglected, and the central mass was assumed at rest, this expression is only valid for large distances and small speeds. We have thus deduced universal gravity from the effects of gravitating masses on vacuum temperature. Below, we generalize this sequence of arguments to the relativistic case and deduce the field Page 284 equations of general relativity.

An alternative deduction of universal gravitation from black hole entropy is the following. The gravitational force F on a test mass m is given by the vacuum temperature T created by the central mass M and by the change of entropy S per length that is induced by the motion of the test mass:

$$F = T\frac{\mathrm{d}S}{\mathrm{d}x} \,. \tag{171}$$

The change of entropy $\mathrm{d}S/\mathrm{d}x$ when a test mass m moves by a distance x can be determined from the strand model in a simple manner. When the test mass m moves by a (reduced) Compton wavelength, in the strand model, the mass has rotated by a full turn: the entropy change is thus $2\pi k$ per (reduced) Compton wavelength. Thus we have

$$\frac{\mathrm{d}S}{\mathrm{d}x} = m\frac{2\pi\, kc}{\hbar} \,. \tag{172}$$

Using the temperature T found in expression (169), we get an expression for the gravitational force given by

$$F = G\frac{Mm}{R^2} \,. \tag{173}$$

This is universal gravitation again. This time we have thus deduced universal gravitation from the entropy and temperature generated by gravitating masses.

We note that the temperature and entropy of black holes are limit values. We can thus Page 33 say that universal gravitation is a consequence of nature's limit values.

Summary on universal gravitation from strands

Universal gravitation is due to the temperature and entropy of black holes and the vacuum. In the strand model, these temperature and entropy values are a consequence of Page 279 the underlying strand crossing switches; we will show this shortly. Universal gravitation thus (again) appears as an effect of the crossing switches induced by masses.

We thus have several explanations of universal gravitation using strands. We have deduced universal gravitation from the energy of strands, from the temperature of strands and from the entropy of strands. And we have deduced universal gravitation from the maximum force, which strands fulfil as well. In short, strands explain the origin of universal gravitation.

Incidentally, modelling mass as a source for strand crossing switches is remotely re- Ref. 186 miniscent of Georges-Louis Lesage's eighteenth-century model of gravitation. Lesage proposed that gravity appears because many tiny, usually unnoticed corpuscules push masses together. In fact, as we will see shortly, there is a certain similarity between these assumed tiny corpuscules and virtual gravitons. And interestingly, all criticisms

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

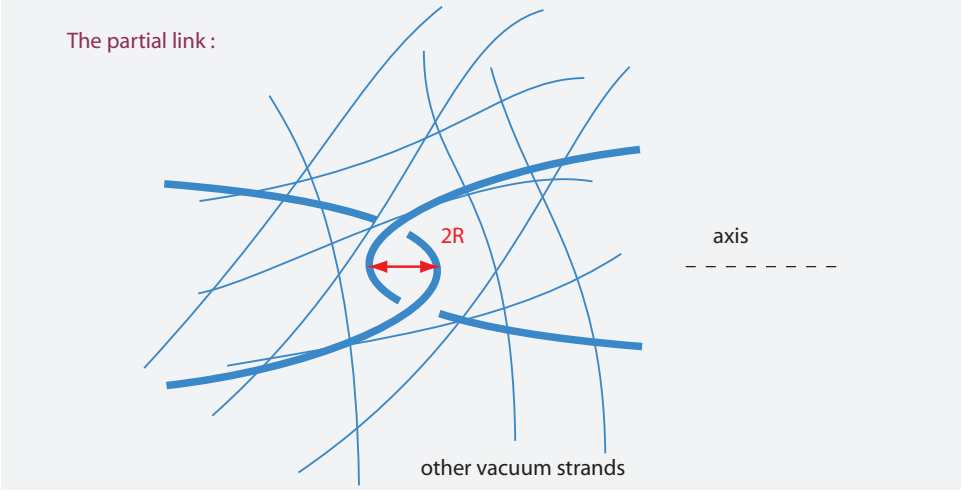


FIGURE 73 A schematic model of the fundamental defect, and thus the fundamental type of curvature: the *partial link*.

Vol. I, page 213

of Lesage's model then cease to hold. First, there is no deceleration of free masses in inertial motion, thanks to the built-in special-relativistic invariance. Secondly, there is no heating of masses, because the entangled tails represent virtual gravitons that scatter elastically. Thirdly, and most of all, by replacing the *corpuscules ultra-mondains* of Lesage by virtual gravitons – and finally by strands – we can predict an additional effect of gravity that is not described by the inverse square dependence: space-time curvature.

Curved space

In nature, observation shows that physical space is not flat around masses, i.e., in the presence of gravity. Near mass and energy, physical space is *curved*. Observations also show that curved space-time remains 3+1-dimensional. The observation of this type of curvature was predicted long before it was measured, because curvature follows unambiguously when the observer-invariance of the speed of light c and the observer-invariance of the gravitational constant G are combined.

We continue directly with the strand model of spatial curvature and show that all observations are reproduced.

- ***Curvature*** (of physical space-time) is due to simple, unknotted and weakly localized defects in the tangle of strands that make up the vacuum. An example is shown in Figure 73.
- In the case of curvature, *physical* space-time, which is due to averaged strand crossing switches, *differs* from flat *background* space-time, which usually corresponds to the tangent or to the asymptotic space-time. In Figure 73, the grey background colour can be taken as visualization of the background space.
- ***Mass*** is a localized defect in space and is due to knotted or tangled strands.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

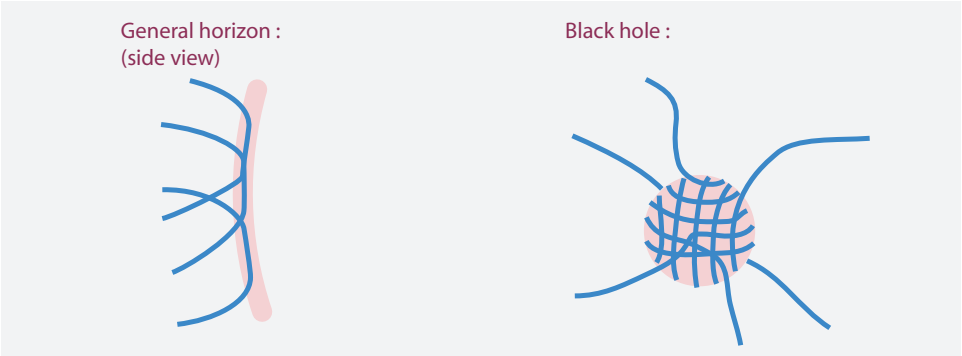


FIGURE 74 A schematic model of a general and a spherical horizon as tight weaves, as pictured by a distant observer. In the strand model there is *nothing*, no strands and thus no space, behind a horizon.

Thus mass curves space around it.

- ▷ ***Energy*** in a volume is the number of crossing switches per unit time. As a result, mass is equivalent to energy. As a second result, energy also curves space.
- ▷ ***Gravitation*** is the space-time curvature originating from compact regions with mass or energy.

These natural definitions show that curvature is due to strand configurations. In particular, curvature is built of unknotted – i.e., massless – *defects*. The massless defects leading to curvature are usually dynamic: they evolve and change. Such curvature defects – virtual gravitons – originate at regions containing matter or energy. In fact, the curvature of space around masses is a natural result of fluctuations of the strands that make up matter tangles.

Page 344

We note that curved space, being a time average, is *continuous* and *unique*. Vacuum or curved space, more precisely, curved physical space, thus differs from background space, which is flat (and drawn in grey in the figures).

Incidentally, the distinction between physical and background space also avoids Einstein's hole argument; in fact, the distinction allows discussing it clearly, as only physical space describes nature.

Vol. II, page 282

The structure of horizons and black holes

In general relativity, another concept plays a fundamental role. In the strand model we have:

- ▷ A ***horizon*** is a tight, one-sided weave of strands.

Therefore, there are no strands behind the horizon. This implies that behind a horizon, there is no matter, no light, no space and no time – just *nothing*. Indeed, this is the experience of any observer about a horizon. A horizon is thus a structure that limits physical space. It does *not* limit background space.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

One particular type of horizon is well-known:

▷ A ***black hole*** is a tight, one-sided and *closed* weave of strands.

In principle, closed horizons can have any shape. The simplest case is the spherical, non-rotating horizon, which defines the *Schwarzschild black hole*. It is illustrated on the right-hand side of Figure 74.

If an observer is located outside a spherical horizon, the strand model states that there is nothing *inside* the horizon: no matter, no light and no vacuum. The strand model thus provides a simple and drastic view of black hole horizons. Figure 74 also illustrates that the concept of radius (or size) of a black hole has to be approached with the (well-known) care. In general, the size of a structure made of strands is the number of crossings encountered when travelling through it. However, an observer cannot travel *through* a black hole: there are no strands inside, thus there is no vacuum there! The size of a black hole must therefore be defined indirectly. The simplest way is to take the square root of the area, divided by 4π, as the radius. Thus the strand model, like general relativity, requires that the size of a compact horizon be defined by travelling *around* it.

We note that the strand model also provides an intuitive explanation for the differences between a rotating and a non-rotating black hole.

Is there something behind a horizon?

A drawing of a horizon weave, such as the one of Figure 74, clearly points out the difference between the background space and the physical space. The *background space* is the space we need for thinking, and is the space in which the drawing is set. The *physical space* is the one that appears as a consequence of the averaging of the strand crossings. Physical, curved space exists only on the observer side – usually outside – of the horizon. The physical space around a black hole is curved; it agrees with the background space only at infinite distance from the horizon. Inside the horizon, there is background space, but no physical space. In short, the strand model implies that – for an observer at spatial infinity – there is *nothing*, not even a singularity, inside a black hole horizon.

▷ There is no physical space, no matter and no singularity inside a horizon.

Horizons are observer-dependent. Both the existence and the shape of a horizon depends on the observer. As we will see, this happens in precisely the same way as in usual general relativity. In the strand model, there is no contradiction between the one observer at spatial infinity who says that there is *nothing* behind a horizon, not even physical space, and another, falling observer, who does not observe a horizon and thus states that there is *something* there. In the strand model, the two statements naturally transform into each other under change of viewpoint. Indeed, the transformation between the two viewpoints contains a deformation of the involved strands.

We note that the equivalence of viewpoints and the statement that there is nothing behind a horizon is based on the combination of general relativity and quantum theory. If we would continue thinking that space and time is a manifold of points – thus disregarding quantum theory – these statements would *not* follow.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In summary, one-sided tight weaves are a *natural* definition of horizons.

Energy of black hole horizons

The strand model allows us to calculate the energy content of a closed horizon. Energy is action per unit time. In the strand model, the energy of a non-rotating spherical horizon is thus given by the number N_{cs} of crossing switches per time unit. In a tight weave, crossing switches cannot happen in parallel, but have to happen sequentially. As a result, a crossing switch 'propagates' to the neighbouring Planck area on the surface. Since the horizon weave is tight and the propagation speed is one crossing per crossing switch time, this happens at the speed of light. In the time T that light takes to circumnavigate the spherical horizon, all crossings switch. We thus have:

Challenge 177 e

$$E = \frac{N_{cs}}{T} = \frac{4\pi R^2}{2\pi R}\,\frac{c^4}{4G} = R\,\frac{c^4}{2G}\,. \tag{174}$$

Strands thus imply the well-known relation between energy (or mass) and radius of Schwarzschild black holes.

How do the crossing switches occur at a horizon of a black hole? This interesting puzzle is left to the reader.

Challenge 178 e

The tight-weave model of horizons also illustrates and confirms the *Penrose conjecture*. For a given mass, because of the minimum size of crossings, a spherical horizon has the smallest possible diameter, compared to other possible shapes. This implies that, for a given mass, spherical black holes indeed are the densest objects in nature.

The nature of black holes

The strand model naturally implies the *no-hair theorem*. Since all strands are the same, independently of the type of matter that formed or fell into the horizon, a black hole has no characteristics other than mass, angular momentum and charge. Here we used a result from the next chapter, when it will become clear that all elementary particles are indeed made of the same featureless strands. Taking that result as given, we deduce that flavour quantum numbers and particle number do not make sense for black holes. We also deduce that weak and strong charge are not defined for black holes. Strands explain naturally why neutral black holes made of antimatter and neutral black holes made of matter do not differ, if their masses and angular momenta are the same. In short, the strand model of nature implies the no-hair theorem: *strands, not hairs*.

Horizons and black holes are borderline systems between space and matter. This borderline property must be fulfilled by every final theory. The strand model fulfils this requirement: in the strand model, black holes can either be described as curved space or as particles in free fall.

Entropy of vacuum and matter

Both vacuum and matter are made of fluctuating strands. We note directly:

▷ The flat and infinite vacuum has *vanishing* entropy, because the number of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

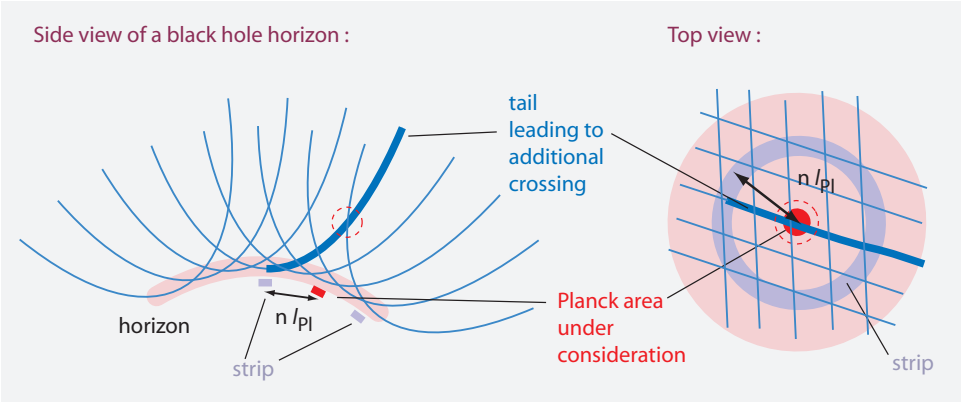


FIGURE 75 The entropy of black holes results from the number of possible crossing switches.

crossing switches is zero on average.

At the same time,

▷ Curved space and horizons have *non-vanishing* entropy.

The entropy of vacuum and of horizons differs from that of matter. In the *absence of gravity*, the number of microstates of matter is determined – as in usual thermodynamics (thermostatics) – by the behaviour of tangle *cores*.

In *strong gravity*, when the distinction between matter and vacuum is not so clear-cut, the number of microstates is determined by the possible crossing switches of the strands. In strong gravity, only *tails* play a role. This becomes clear when we calculate the entropy of black holes.

Entropy of black holes deduced from the strand model

Despite the tight weaving, the strands making up a horizon are fluctuating and moving: the weave shape fluctuates and crossing switch all the time. This fluctuating motion is the reason why horizons – in particular those of black holes – have entropy.

The weave model of a horizon, illustrated in detail in Figure 75, allows us to calculate the corresponding entropy. Since the horizon is a tight weave, there is a crossing on each Planck area. To a first approximation, on each (corrected) Planck area of the horizon, the strands can cross in *two* different ways. The fundamental principle of the strand model thus yields two microstates per Planck area. The number N of Planck areas is given by $N^2 = Ac^3/4G\hbar$. The resulting number of black hole microstates is 2^{N^2}. The entropy is given by the natural logarithm of the number of the possible microstates times k. This gives an entropy of a horizon of

$$S = A\,\frac{kc^3}{4G\hbar}\ln 2\,. \tag{175}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

This is the well-known first approximation of black hole entropy: one bit per corrected Planck area. In the strand model, the proportionality of entropy and area is thus a direct consequence of the *extension* of the strands. This proportionality is also well known from studies of quantum gravity and of strings. In those approaches however, the relation between the area proportionality and extension is less obvious.

Ref. 187

For Schwarzschild black holes, the entropy value of expression (175) is *not* correct. In the strand model, this incorrect value is explained as a consequence of neglecting the effects of the strand *tails*. Indeed, additional contributions to the entropy appear at a *finite distance* from the horizon, due to the crossing of the tails on their way to the border of space, as shown in Figure 75. The actual entropy will thus be larger than the first approximation, but still be proportional to the area A.

The correct proportionality factor between the area and the entropy of a black hole results when the strand tails are taken into account. (The correction factor is called the *Barbero–Immirzi parameter* in the research literature on quantum gravity.) The calculation is simplest for Schwarzschild black holes. By construction, a black hole with macroscopic radius R, being a tight weave, has R/l_{Pl} tails. For each given Planck area, there are, apart from the basic, or lowest crossing, additional crossings 'above it', along the radial direction, as shown in Figure 75. These additional crossings are due to the tails from neighbouring and distant Planck areas.

Taking into effect all strand tails allows us to calculate the average number of crossings *above* a given Planck area. The main point is to perform this calculation for all those tails that start in a circular strip of Planck width centred around the Planck area under consideration. We then add the probabilities for all possible circular strips. One such circular strip is drawn in Figure 75.

The definition of horizons as tight weaves implies that a horizon with N^2 Planck areas is made of N strands. This means that for each circular strip of radius nl_{Pl}, there is only *one* strand that starts there and reaches spatial infinity as a tail.

For this tail, the average probability p that it crosses above the central Planck area under consideration is

Challenge 179 e

$$p = \frac{1}{n!} \,. \tag{176}$$

Summing over all strips, i.e., over all values n, we get a total of $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} 1/n! = \mathrm{e} = 2.71828...$ microstates *on* and *above* the central Planck area under consideration. Thus the number e replaces the number 2 of the first approximation: the number of horizon microstates of a Schwarzschild black hole is not 2^{N^2}, but e^{N^2}. As a consequence, the entropy of a macroscopic Schwarzschild horizon becomes

$$S = A \, \frac{kc^3}{4G\hbar} \,. \tag{177}$$

This is the Bekenstein–Hawking expression for the entropy of Schwarzschild black holes. The strand model thus reproduces this well-known result. With this explanation of the difference between 2 and e = 2.71828..., the strand model confirms an old idea:

▷ The entropy of a black hole is located *at and near* the horizon.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The above calculation, however, counts some states more than once. Topologically identical spherical horizons can differ in the direction of their north pole and in their state of rotation around the north–south axis. If a spherical horizon is made of N strands, it has N^2 possible physical orientations for the north pole and N possible angular orientations around the north–south axis. The actual number of microstates is thus e^{N^2}/N^3. Using the relation between N^2 and the surface area A, namely $A = N^2 4G\hbar/c^3$, we get the final result

$$S = A\,\frac{kc^3}{4G\hbar} - \frac{3k}{2}\ln\frac{A\,c^3}{4G\hbar}\,. \tag{178}$$

The strand model thus makes a specific prediction for the logarithmic correction of the entropy of a Schwarzschild black hole. This final prediction of the strand model agrees with many (but not all) calculations using superstrings or other quantum gravity approaches. Ref. 188

In summary, the entropy value (177), respectively (178), of black holes is due to the *extension* of the fundamental entities in the strand model and to the *three dimensions* of space. If either of these properties were not fulfilled, the entropy of black holes would not result. This is not a surprise; also our deduction of quantum theory was based on the same two properties. In short: like every quantum effect, also the entropy of black holes is a result of extension and three-dimensionality. Only a three-dimensional description of nature agrees with observation.

Temperature, radiation and evaporation of black holes

The strands that make up a horizon fluctuate in shape. Since every horizon contains energy, the shape fluctuations imply energy fluctuations. In other words, horizons are predicted to have a *temperature*. The value of the temperature can be deduced from the strand model by noting that the characteristic size of the fluctuations for a spherical horizon is the radius R of the horizon. Therefore we have

$$kT = \frac{\hbar c}{2\pi R}\,. \tag{179}$$

Using the definition of *surface gravity* as $a = c^2/R$, we get

$$T = \frac{\hbar a}{2\pi k c}\,. \tag{180}$$

The strand model predicts that horizons have a temperature proportional to their surface gravity. This result has been known since 1973. Ref. 57, Ref. 58

All hot bodies radiate. The strand model thus predicts that Schwarzschild black holes *radiate* thermal radiation of the horizon temperature, with power and wavelength

$$P = 2\pi\hbar c^2/R^2 \quad , \quad \lambda \approx R\,. \tag{181}$$

This confirms a well-known consequence of the temperature of black holes.

Like all thermal systems, horizons follow thermodynamics. In the strand model, black

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

hole radiation and evaporation occur by reduction of the number of strands that make up the horizon. The strand model thus predicts that black holes *evaporate completely*, until only elementary particles are left over. In particular, the strand model implies that in black hole radiation, there is *no* information loss.

In short, strand model reproduce all aspects of black hole evaporation. The strand model also shows that there is no information loss in this process.

Black hole limits

In many ways, black holes are *extreme* physical systems. Not only are black holes the limit systems of general relativity; black holes also realize various other limits. As such, black holes resemble light, which realizes the speed limit. We now explore some of these limits.

For a general physical system, not necessarily bound by a horizon, the definitions of energy and entropy with strands allow some interesting conclusions. The entropy of a system is the result of the number of crossing possibilities. The energy of a system is the number of crossing changes per unit time. A large entropy is thus only possible if a system shows many crossing changes per time. Since the typical system time is given by the circumference of the system, the entropy of a physical system is therefore limited:

$$S \leqslant ER\, 2\pi k/\hbar c \,. \tag{182}$$

This relation is known as *Bekenstein's entropy bound*; it thus also follows from the strand model. The equality is realized only for black holes.

In the strand model, horizons are tight, one-sided weaves. For example, this implies that any tangle that encounters a horizon is essentially flat. Because of tangle flatness and the extension of the tails, at most one Planck mass can cross a horizon during a Planck time. This yields the mass rate limit

$$\mathrm{d}m/\mathrm{d}t \leqslant c^3/4G \tag{183}$$

that is valid in general relativity and in nature.

Black holes can rotate. The strand model states that there is a highest angular frequency possible; it appears when the equator of the black hole rotates with the speed of light. As a result, the angular momentum J of a black hole is limited by

$$J < 2GM^2/c \,. \tag{184}$$

Ref. 189 This limit is well known from general relativity.

The electric charge of a black hole is also limited. The force limit in nature implies that the electrical forces between two charged black holes must be lower than their gravitational interaction. This means that

$$\frac{Q^2}{4\pi\varepsilon_0 r^2} \leqslant \frac{GM^2}{r^2} \,, \tag{185}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

or

$$Q^2 \leqslant 4\pi\varepsilon_0 GM^2 \,. \tag{186}$$

This is the well-known charge limit for (static) black holes given by the Reissner–Nordström metric. The maximum charge of a black hole is proportional to its radius. It follows directly from the maximum force principle.

To explain the charge limit, we deduce that the *extremal* charge surface density Q/A of a black hole is proportional to $1/R$. The higher the horizon curvature, the more charge per Planck area is possible. In the strand model, a horizon is a tight weave of strands. We are thus led to conjecture that at Planck scale, electric charge is related to and limited by strand curvature. We will explore this connection in more detail below.

Page 366

The strand model limits energy density to the Planck energy per Planck volume, or to the value $c^7/(16G^2\hbar)$. This limit implies a lower size limit for black holes; therefore, the strand model does not allow singularities, be they dressed or naked. And indeed, no singularity has ever been observed.

In summary, the strand model reproduces the known limit properties of horizons. And all these results are independent of the precise fluctuation details of the strands.

Curvature around black holes

The tails of a black hole extend up to the border of space; the density of tails is highest at the horizon. A black hole is therefore surrounded by partial links at any *finite* distance from the horizon. In other words, the space around a black hole is *curved*. The value of the space-time curvature increases as one approaches the horizon, because of the way in which the partial links hinder each other in their motion. The nearer they are to the horizon, the more they hinder each other. The curvature that appears is proportional to the density of partial links and to their average strand curvature.

At the horizon, the curvature radius is the horizon radius R. By construction, the number of tails departing from a non-rotating black hole is proportional to R. The spatial curvature is given by the average crossing density gradient. Hence at a radial distance r from a static black hole, the spatial curvature K is

$$K \sim \frac{R}{r^3} \,. \tag{187}$$

So at the horizon itself, the curvature K is (of the order of) the inverse square of the horizon radius; further away, it decreases rapidly, with the third power of the distance. This result is a well-known property of the Schwarzschild solution and is due to the extension of the strands. The rapid decay with radius is the reason why in everyday situations there is no noticeable curvature of space-time. In short, strands allow us to deduce the correct curvature of space-time around black holes and spherical masses.

The shape of non-rotating black holes

The strand model also explains and visualizes the importance of spherical horizons in nature. First of all, strands illustrate the non-existence of (uncharged) one-dimensional or toroidal horizons in 3 + 1 space-time dimensions. Such configurations are unstable,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

in particular against transverse shear and rearrangement of the strands.

The strand model also implies that non-rotating, closed horizons are spherical. Obviously, spheres are the bodies with the smallest surface for a given volume. The minimum horizon surface appears because the strands, through their fluctuations, effectively 'pull' on each Planck area of the horizon. As a result, all non-rotating macroscopic horizons will evolve to the spherical situation in a few Planck times. (Deviations from the spherical shape will mainly occur near Planck scales.) With the definition of gravity waves given below, it also becomes clear that strongly deformed, macroscopic and non-spherical horizons are unstable against emission of gravity waves or of other particles. In short,

▷ All non-rotating horizons of non-spherical shape are unstable.

The strand model thus confirms that spherical horizons are favoured and that the most compact bodies with a given mass. The reasoning can be extended to rotating horizons, yielding the well-known shapes.

In summary, strands reproduce all known qualitative and quantitative properties of horizons and of black holes, and thus of general systems with strong gravitational fields. All predictions from strands agree with observations and with other approaches to quantum gravity. These hints already suggest that strands imply the field equations.

The field equations of general relativity

The field equations can be deduced from the fundamental principle in two different, but related ways. Essentially, both derivations repeat the reasoning for universal gravitation given above and extend it to the relativistic case. Page 272 The first deduction of the field equations is based on an old argument on the thermodynamics of space-time. Ref. 22 Strands show that horizons have three thermodynamic properties:

— an area–entropy relation of $S = A\,kc^3/4G\hbar$,

— a curvature–temperature relation of $T = a\,\hbar/2\pi kc$,

— a relation between heat and entropy of $\delta Q = T\delta S$.

Using these three properties, and using the relation

$$\delta Q = \delta E \,, \tag{188}$$

that is valid *only* in case of horizons, we get the first principle of horizon mechanics

$$\delta E = \frac{c^2}{8\pi G} a\,\delta A \,. \tag{189}$$

From this relation, using the Raychaudhuri equation, we obtain the field equations of general relativity. Page 31 This deduction was given above.*

* Here is the argument in a few lines. The first principle of horizon mechanics can be rewritten, using the energy–momentum tensor T_{ab}, as

$$\int T_{ab} k^a \mathrm{d}\Sigma^b = \frac{c^2}{8\pi G} a\,\delta A$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In other words, the field equations result from *the thermodynamics of strands*. It is worth noting that the result is independent of the details of the fluctuations, as long as the three thermodynamic properties just given are valid. (This is a condition that must be fulfilled by any model of space-time; and indeed, several competing models claim to fulfil these properties.)

We can use the relation between fluctuations and strands to settle an issue mentioned Page 181 above, in the section on quantum theory. Strand fluctuations *must* obey the thermodynamic properties to allow us to define space-time. If they obey these properties, then space-time exists and curves according to general relativity.

The second derivation of the field equations of general relativity follows the spirit of the strand model most closely. Strands imply that all physical quantities are limited by the corresponding Planck limit. These limits are due to the limit to the fundamental principle, in other words, they are due to the packing limit of strands. In particular, the Ref. 19 fundamental principle limits force by $F \leqslant c^4/4G$ and power by $P \leqslant c^5/4G$. We have Page 31 already shown above that this limit implies the field equation.

In summary, the strand model asserts that the field equations appear as consequences of fluctuations of impenetrable, featureless strands. In particular, the strand model implies that a horizon and a particle gas at Planck energy do not differ. However, the value of the cosmological constant is *not* predicted from strand thermodynamics.

Equations from no equation

The strand model asserts that the field equations of general relativity are not the result of another, more basic evolution equation, but result directly from the fundamental principle. To say it bluntly, the field equations are deduced from a drawing – the funda- Page 143 mental principle shown in Figure 10. This strong, almost unbelievable statement is due to a specific property of the field equations and to two properties of the strand model.

First of all, the field equations are, above all, consequences of the thermodynamics of space-time. In the strand model, the thermodynamic properties are deduced as a consequence of the strand fluctuations. This deduction does not require underlying evolution equations; the field equations follow from the statistical behaviour of strands.

The second, essential property of the strand model is its independence from the underlying motion of the strands. In the strand model we obtain the evolution equations of the vacuum – the field equations of general relativity – without deducing them from

---

where $d\Sigma^b$ is the general surface element and k is the Killing vector that generates the horizon. The Raychaudhuri equation allows us to rewrite the right-hand side as

$$\int T_{ab} k^a \, d\Sigma^b = \frac{c^4}{8\pi G} \int R_{ab} k^a \, d\Sigma^b$$

where R_{ab} is the Ricci tensor describing space-time curvature. This equality implies that

$$T_{ab} = \frac{c^4}{8\pi G} (R_{ab} - (R/2 + \Lambda) g_{ab})$$

where Λ is an undetermined constant of integration. These are Einstein's field equations of general relativity. The field equations are valid everywhere and for all times, because a coordinate transformation can put a horizon at any point and at any time.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

another equation. We do not need an evolution equation for the strand shape; the deduction of the field equations works for *any* underlying behaviour of strand shapes, as long as the thermodynamic properties of the strand fluctuations are reproduced.

The third and last essential property that allows us to deduce the field equations directly from a graph, and not from another equation, is the relation between the graph and natural physical units. The relation with natural units, in particular with the quantum of action $\hbar$ and the Boltzmann constant k, is fundamental for the success of the strand model.

In summary, the fundamental principle of the strand model contains all the essential properties necessary for deducing the field equations of general relativity. In fact, the discussion so far makes another important point: unique, underlying, more basic evolution equations for the tangle shape *cannot* exist. There are two reasons. First, an underlying equation would itself require a deduction, thus would not be a satisfying solution to unification. Secondly, and more importantly, evolution equations are differential equations; they assume well-behaved, smooth space-time. At Planck scales, this is impossible.

▷ Any principle that allows deducing the field equations cannot itself be an evolution equation.

The Hilbert action of general relativity

We have just shown that the strand model implies the field equations of general relativity.
Page 202 We have also shown above that, in the strand model, the least action principle is a natural property of all motion of strands. Combining these two results, we find that a natural way to describe the motion of space-time is the (extended) *Hilbert action* given by

$$W = \frac{c^4}{16\pi G} \int (R - 2\Lambda)\, \mathrm{d}V \,, \tag{190}$$

where R is the Ricci scalar, $\mathrm{d}V = \sqrt{\det g}\, \mathrm{d}^4x$ is the invariant 4-volume element of the metric g, and Λ is the cosmological constant, whose value we have not determined yet. As is well known, the description of evolution with the help of an action does not add anything to the field equations; both descriptions are equivalent.

For a curved three-dimensional space, the Ricci scalar R is the average amount, at a given point in space, by which the curvature deviates from the zero value of flat space.
Page 275 In the strand model, this leads to a simple statement, already implied by Figure 73:

▷ The *Ricci scalar* R is the ratio of additional or missing crossings per spatial volume, compared to flat space.

As usual, the averaging is performed over all spatial orientations. A similar statement can be made for the cosmological constant Λ. In short, we can say: the Hilbert action follows directly from the fundamental principle of the strand model.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

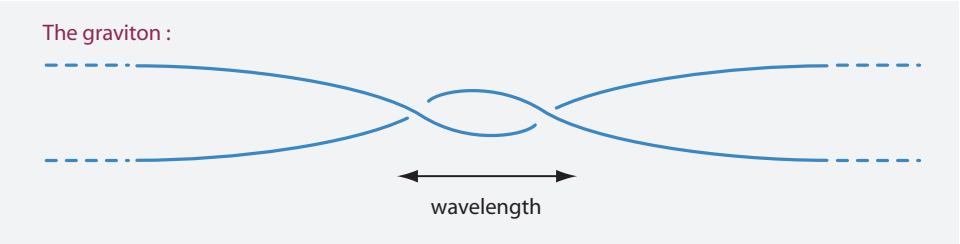


FIGURE 76 The graviton in the strand model.

Space-time foam

Quantum physics implies that at scales near the Planck length and the Planck time, space-time fluctuates heavily. John Wheeler called the situation *space-time foam*; the term *quantum foam* is also used. In a sense, *quantum gravity* can be defined as the description of space-time foam.

Historically, there have been many speculations on the details of space-time foam. Apart from its fluctuations, researchers speculated about the appearance of topology changes – such as microscopic wormholes – about the appearance of additional dimensions of space – between six and twenty-two – or about the appearance of other unusual properties – such as microscopic regions of negative energy, networks or loop structures.

The strand model makes a simple prediction that contradicts most previous speculations:

▷ Space-time foam is made of fluctuating strands.

At everyday scales, the foam is not noticed, because background space and physical space are indistinguishable. At Planck scales, space-time is not fundamentally different from everyday space-time. No unusual topology, no additional dimensions, and no new or unusual properties appear at Planck scales. Above all, the strand model predicts that there are *no* observable effects of space-time foam; for example, 'space-time noise' or 'particle diffusion' do not exist. The strand model of space-time foam is both simple and unspectacular.

Ref. 190

Gravitons, gravitational waves and their detection

In the strand model, gravitons can be seen as a special kind of partial links. An example is shown in Figure 76. As a twisted pair of parallel strands, the graviton returns to itself after rotation by π; it thus behaves like a spin-2 boson, as required.

Can single gravitons be observed? The strand model implies that the absorption of a single graviton by an elementary particle changes its spin or position. However, such a change *cannot* be distinguished from a quantum fluctuation. Furthermore, the strand model predicts that gravitons do not interact with photons, because they have no electric charge. In summary, the strand model predicts:

▷ Single gravitons *cannot* be detected.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

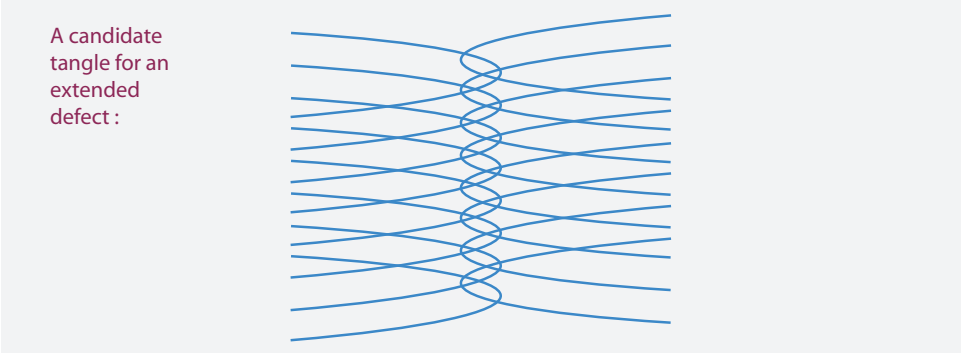


FIGURE 77 A speculative, highly schematic model for a cosmic string, a one-dimensional defect in space-time

The situation changes for gravitational waves. Such waves are coherent superpositions of large numbers of gravitons and are observable classically. In such a case, the argument against the detection of single gravitons does not apply. In short, the strand model predicts that gravitational waves *can* be observed. (This prediction, made by many since 1915 and repeated in this text on the basis of the strand model in 2008, came true in February 2016.)

Challenge 180 e

Ref. 191

Open challenge: Improve the argument for the graviton tangle

The argument that leads to the graviton tangle is too much hand-waving. Can you make the argument more compelling? Could the four tails form a cross and thus span a plane?

Challenge 181 ny

Other defects in vacuum

The strand model provides a quantum description of gravitation. The strand model does so by explaining physical space as the average of the crossing switches induced by strand fluctuations among untangled strands. Matter, radiation and horizons are defects in the 'sea' of untangled strands.

So far, we have been concerned with *particles*, i.e., localized, zero-dimensional defects, and with *horizons*, i.e., two-dimensional defects. Now, modelling of the vacuum as a set of untangled strands also suggests the possible existence of *one-dimensional* – equivalent to dislocations and disclinations in solids – of *additional* two-dimensional defects, or of *three-dimensional* defects. Such defects could model cosmic strings, domain walls, wormholes, toroidal black holes, time-like loops and regions of negative energy.

An example of such a possible new defect is illustrated in Figure 77. The illustration can be seen as the image of a one-dimensional defect or as the cross section of a two-dimensional defect. Are such defects stable against fluctuations? The strand model suggests that they are not. These defects are expected to decay into a mixture of gravitons, black holes, matter and radiation particles. However, this issue is still a topic of research, and will not be covered here.

Exploring the stability of wormholes, time-like loops and toroidal black holes leads to similar results. It seems that the strand model should not allow time-like loops of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 11 Correspondences between physical systems and mathematical tangles.

PHYSICAL SYSTEM	STRANDS	TANGLE TYPE
Vacuum	many infinite unknotted strands	unlinked
Dark energy	many fluctuating infinite strands	unlinked
Elementary vector boson	one infinite strand	a curve
Quark	two infinite strands	rational tangle
Lepton	three infinite strands	braided tangle
Meson, baryon	three or more infinite strands	composed of rational tangles
Higher-order propagating fermion	two or more infinite strands	general rational tangle
Virtual particles	open or unlinked strands	trivial tangles
Composed systems	many strands	separable tangles
Graviton	two infinite twisted strands	specific rational tangle
Gravity wave	many infinite twisted strands	many graviton tangles
Horizon	many tightly woven infinite strands	web-like rational tangle
Young universe	closed strand(s)	knot (link)

macroscopic size, since any configuration that cannot be embedded locally into three flat spatial dimensions is either a particle or a black hole. Alternatively, macroscopic time-like loops would collapse or decay because of the fluctuations of the strands. In the same way, wormholes or black holes with non-trivial topology should be unstable against more usual strand structures, such as particles or black holes.

We also note the strand model does not allow volume defects (black holes being surface-like defects). The most discussed types of volume defects are macroscopic regions of negative energy. Energy being action per unit time, and action being connected to crossing changes, the model does not allow the construction of negative-energy regions. However, the strand model does allow the construction of regions with lower energy than their environment, as in the Casimir effect, by placing restrictions on the wavelengths of photons.

The strand model thus predicts the absence of additional defects and tangle types. The final and general connection between tangle types and defects is shown (again) in Table 11. The next chapter will give details of the tangles corresponding to each particle.

In summary, the strand model reproduces the results of modern quantum gravity and predicts that the more spectacular defects conjectured in the past – linear defects such as cosmic strings, surface defects such as wormholes, volume defects such as negative-energy regions – do *not* appear in nature.

THE GRAVITY OF SUPERPOSITIONS

What is the gravitational field of a quantum system in a macroscopic superposition? The issue has been raised by many scholars as an important step towards the understanding of how to combine gravitation and quantum theory.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The strand model deflates the importance of the issue. The model shows – or predicts, if one prefers – that the gravitational field of a superposition is the temporal and spatial average of the evolving quantum system, possibly under inclusion of decoherence.

Vol. IV, page 141

What is the gravitational field of a single quantum particle in a double-slit experiment? As Figure 38 shows, the gravitational field almost always appears in both slits, and only very rarely in just one slit.

Page 195

In summary, in the strand model, the combination of gravitation and quantum theory is much simpler than was expected by most researchers. For many decades it was suggested that the combination was an almost unattainable goal. In fact, in the strand model we can almost say that the two descriptions combine naturally.

Torsion, curiosities and challenges about quantum gravity

On the one hand, the strand model denies the existence of any specific effects of *torsion* on gravitation. On the other hand, the strand model of matter describes spin with the belt trick. The belt trick is thus the strand phenomenon that is closest to the idea of torsion. Therefore, exaggerating a bit in the other direction, it could also be argued that in the strand model, torsion effects are quantum field theory effects.

Ref. 192

* *

The strand model describes three-dimensional space as made of tangled strands. Several similar models have been proposed in the past.

The model of space as a *nematic world crystal* stands out as the most similar. This model was proposed by Hagen Kleinert in the 1980s. He took his inspiration from the famous analogy by Ekkehart Kröner between the equations of solid-state elasticity around line defects and the equations of general relativity.

Ref. 193
Ref. 194

Also in the 1980s, the mentioned posets have been proposed as the fundamental structure of space. Various models of quantum gravity from the 1990s, inspired by spin networks, spin foams and by similar systems, describe empty space as made of extended constituents. These extended constituents tangle, or bifurcate, or are connected, or sometimes all of this at the same time. Depending on the model, the constituents are lines, circles or ribbons. In some models their shapes fluctuate, in others they don't.

Ref. 155
Ref. 195

Around the year 2000, another type of Planck-scale crystal model of the vacuum has been proposed by David Finkelstein. In 2008, a specific model of space, a crystal-like network of connected bifurcating lines, has been proposed by Gerard 't Hooft.

Ref. 156
Ref. 196

All these models describe space as made of some kind of extended constituents in a three-dimensional background. All these models derive general relativity from these constituents by some averaging procedure. The lesson is clear: it is *not* difficult to derive general relativity from a Planck-scale model of space. It is *not* difficult to unify gravity and quantum theory. As Luca Bombelli said already in the early 1990s, the challenge for a Planck-scale model of nature is not to derive gravity or general relativity; the challenge is to derive the other interactions. So far, the strand model seems to be the only model that has provided such a derivation.

* *

The Planck force is the force value necessary to produce a change $\hbar$ in a Planck time over

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Challenge 182 e a Planck length. The Planck force thus appears almost exclusively at horizons.

* *

Already in the 1990s, Leonard Susskind speculated that black holes could be formed by
Ref. 197 a single wound-up string. Strands differ from strings; they differ in the number of dimensions, in their intrinsic properties, in their symmetry properties, in the fields they carry and in the ways they generate entropy. Nevertheless, the similarity with the strand model of black holes is intriguing.

* *

In September 2010, two years after the strand model appeared, independent research
Page 156 confirmed its description of physical space, as already mentioned above. In an extended article exploring the small scale structure of space from several different research perspectives in general relativity, Steven Carlip comes to the conclusion that all these perspectives suggest the common idea that 'space at a fixed time is thus threaded by
Ref. 153 rapidly fluctuating lines'.

Ref. 198 In 2011, also independently, Marcelo Botta Cantcheff modelled space as a statistic ensemble of one-dimensional 'strings'. He explained the main properties of space, including the thermodynamic properties of black holes.

* *

The first version of the strand model assumed that space is not defined at the cosmic horizon, and that therefore, strand impenetrability does not hold there. The same was thought to occur at black hole horizons. The newest version of the strand model does not seem to need this exception to impenetrability. Can you explain black hole entropy
Challenge 183 e without it?

* *

Page 34 The strand model also allows us to answer the question whether quantum particles are black holes: no, they are not. Quantum particles are tangles, like black holes are, but particles do *not* have horizons. As a side result, the mass of all particles is lower than a Planck mass, or more precisely, lower than a Planck mass black hole.

Strands imply that gravity is weaker than the three gauge interactions. This consequence, like the low particle mass just mentioned, is due to the different origins of gravity and gauge interactions. Gravity is due to the strand tails, whereas gauge interactions are due to the tangle cores. Thus gravity is the weakest interaction in everyday life. The statement of the weakness of gravity at everyday energy scale is sometimes called
Ref. 199 the weak gravity conjecture. It is naturally valid in the strand model.

* *

For an observer at spatial infinity, a black hole horizon is an averaged-out tight web of strands. What does a falling observer experience? The question will still capture the imagination in many years. Such an observer will also see strands; above all, a falling observer will never hit any singularity. The details of the fall are so involved that they are not discussed here, because the fall affects both the black hole appearance and the observer.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

Can black hole radiation be seen as the result of trying to tear vacuum apart? Yes and no. The answer is no, because physical vacuum cannot be torn apart, due to the maximum force principle. But the answer is also yes in a certain sense, because the maximum force is the closest attempt to this idea that can be realized or imagined.

* *

The strand model makes the point that *entanglement* and the vacuum – and thus quantum gravity – have the same nature: both are due to crossing strands. This idea has been explored independently by Mark van Raamsdonk. Ref. 200

* *

As we have seen, the strand model predicts no *observable* violation of Lorentz-invariance – even though it predicts its violation at Planck scale. Strands predict the lack of dispersion, birefringence and opacity of the vacuum. Strands predict that the vacuum has three dimensions whenever it is observed and that it is unique, without phase transitions. We already mentioned the impossibility of detecting single gravitons.

All these negative predictions are examples of the *'no avail'* conjecture:

▷ Quantum gravity effects cannot be distinguished from ordinary quantum fluctuations.

Despite many attempts to disprove it, all experiments so far confirm the conjecture. Because both quantum gravity effects and quantum effects are due to tail fluctuations, the strand model seems to imply the conjecture.

* *

The strand model of black holes also confirms a result by Zurek and Thorne from the 1980s: the entropy of a black hole is the logarithm of the number of ways in which it could have been made. Ref. 201

* *

Argue that because of the strand model, no black hole can have a mass below the (corrected) Planck mass, about 11 μg, and thus that *microscopic black holes* do not exist. Can you find a higher lower limit for the mass? Challenge 184 s

* *

Do atoms or the elementary fermions moving inside matter emit gravitational radiation, and why? The question was already raised by Albert Einstein in 1916. The strand model answers the issue in the same way as textbook physics. Elementary particles in atoms – in the ground state – do not emit gravitational waves for the same reason that they do not emit electromagnetic waves: for atoms in the ground state, there is no lower state into which they could decay. Excited atomic states do not emit gravitational waves because of the extremely low emission probability; it is due to the extremely low mass quadrupole values.

* *

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Ref. 202 In 2009 Mikhail Shaposhnikov and Christof Wetterich argued that if gravitation is 'asymptotically safe', there is no physics beyond the standard model and the Higgs mass must be around 126 GeV – exactly the value that was found experimentally a few years afterwards. A quantum field theory is called *asymptotically safe* if it has a fixed point at extremely high energies. Does the strand model imply that gravity is – maybe only Challenge 185 ny effectively – asymptotically safe?

* *

Page 56 It is often stated that general relativity does not allow the description of fermions if the topology of space is kept fixed. This is wrong: the strand model shows that fermions can be included in the case that space is seen as an average of extended fundamental entities.

* *

Following the fundamental principle of the strand model, G is the fundamental constant that describes gravitation. The strand model predicts that gravity is the same for all energy scales; in other words, the constant G is not expected to change with energy. This Ref. 203 agrees with recent results from quantum gravity.

Predictions of the strand model about gravity

As just presented, the strand model makes several verifiable predictions about general relativity and quantum gravity.

- The maximum energy speed in nature is c, at all energy scales, in all directions, at all times, at all positions, for every physical observer. This agrees with observations.
- No deviations from special relativity appear for any measurable energy scale, as long as gravity plays no role. No 'double' or 'deformed special relativity' holds in nature, even though a maximum energy-momentum for elementary particles does exist in nature. This agrees with observations.
- There is a maximum power or luminosity $c^5/4G$, a maximum force or momentum flow $c^4/4G$, and a maximum mass change rate $c^3/4G$ in nature. This agrees with observations, but experimental data are far from these limit values.
- There is a minimum distance and a minimum time interval in nature. There is a maximum curvature and a maximum mass density in nature. There are no singularities in nature. All this agrees with observations, but experimental data are far from exhaustive.
- There are no deviations from general relativity, as described by the Hilbert action, for all measurable scales. The only deviations appear in situations with a few strands, i.e., in situations where quantum theory is necessary. This agrees with observations, but experimental data are far from sufficient.
- The usual black hole entropy given by Bekenstein and Hawking holds. The value has never been measured, but is consistently found in all calculations performed so far.
- There is no modified Newtonian dynamics, or MOND, with evolution equations that differ from general relativity. The rotation curves of stars in galaxies are due to dark matter, to other conventional explanations, or both.
- There is no effect of torsion that modifies general relativity. This agrees with obser-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

vations.
— There is no effect of higher derivatives of the metric on the motion of bodies. This agrees with observations, but experimental data are far from sufficient.
— Observations are independent of the precise strand fluctuations. Mathematical consistency checks of this prediction are possible.
— No wormholes, no negative energy regions and no time-like loops exist. This agrees with observations, but experimental data are far from complete.
— The Penrose conjecture holds. Here, a mathematical consistency check is possible.
— There are no cosmic strings and no domain walls. This agrees with observations, but experimental data are far from exhaustive.
— Gravitons have spin 2; they return to their original state after a rotation by π and are bosons. This agrees with expectations.
— Gravitons cannot be detected, due to the indistinguishability with ordinary quantum fluctuations of the detector. This agrees with data so far.
— Atoms to not emit gravitational waves or gravitons.
— Gravitational waves exist and can be detected. This agrees with experiment, at the latest since 2015.
— The gravitational constant G does not run with energy – as long as the strand diameter can be neglected. In this domain, G is not renormalized. This prediction agrees with expectations and with data, though the available data is sparse.

All listed predictions are unspectacular; they are made also by other approaches that contain general relativity and quantum gravity as limiting cases. In particular, the strand model, like many other approaches, predicts:

Page 297

▷ With the exception of the cosmological constant, *no quantum gravity effects will be observed*.

Gravity will never yield new measurable quantum effects. So far, this prediction agrees with experiment and almost all proposed models of quantum gravity in the research literature.

In other words, we have found *no unexpected* experimental predictions from the strand model in the domain of quantum gravity. But this is not a surprise. Because of the 'no avail' conjecture, we expect unexpected predictions only in two domains: cosmology (including the value of the cosmological constant) and particle physics. The rest of this chapter deals with cosmology. The subsequent chapters focus on particle physics.

Ref. 97

COSMOLOGY

Cosmology is an active field of research, and new data are collected all the time. We start with a short summary.

The sky is dark at night. This and observations about the red shift show that the universe is surrounded by a horizon and is of finite size and age. Precise measurements show that cosmic age is around 13 800 million years. The universe expands; the expansion is described by the field equations of general relativity. The universe's expansion acceler-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

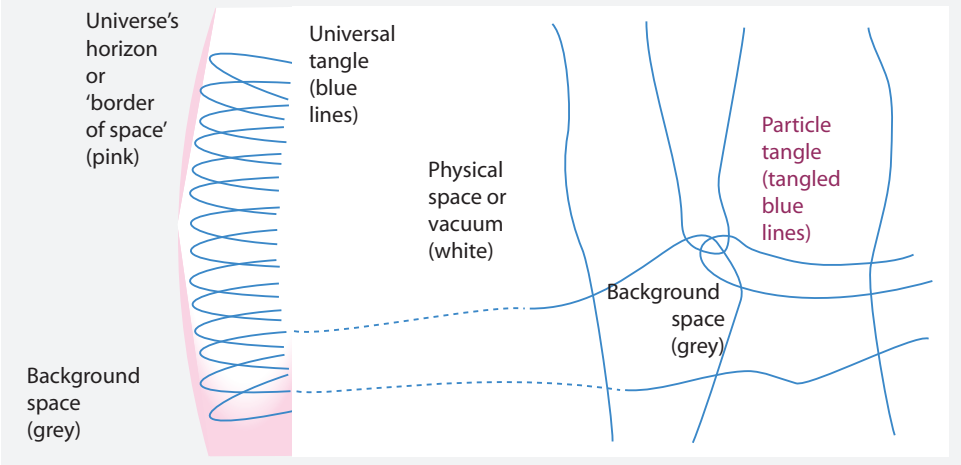

Universe's horizon or 'border of space' (pink)
Universal tangle (blue lines)
Physical space or vacuum (white)
Particle tangle (tangled blue lines)
Background space (grey)
Background space (grey)

FIGURE 78 In the strand model, the universe is limited by a horizon, as schematically illustrated here. Physical space (white) matches background space (grey) only inside the horizon. Physical space thus only exists inside the cosmic horizon.

ates; the acceleration is described by the *cosmological constant* Λ – also called *dark energy* – that has a small positive value. The universe is observed to be flat, and, averaged over large scales, homogeneous and isotropic. The observed average matter density in the universe is about 18 times smaller than the energy density due to the cosmological constant. In addition, there is a large amount of matter around galaxies that does not radiate; the nature of this *dark matter* is unclear. Galaxy formation started from early density fluctuations; the typical size and amplitude of the fluctuations are known. The topology of space is observed to be simple.

The strand model, like any unified description of nature, must reproduce and explain these measurement results. Otherwise, the strand model is wrong.

The finiteness of the universe

In the strand model, cosmology is based on the following idea:

▷ The ***universe*** is made of *one* fluctuating strand. Fluctuations increase the complexity of the strand knottedness over time.

The existence of finite size and of finite age then follows automatically:

▷ The ***universe's horizon*** appears at the age or distance at which the strand crossings cannot be embedded any more into a common three-dimensional background space. The horizon expands over time.

The strand model thus has a simple explanation for the finiteness of the universe and the cosmic horizon that bounds it. A schematic illustration of the cosmic horizon is given in Figure 78.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The strand model predicts that the cosmic horizon is an *event horizon*, like that of a black hole. Until 1998, this possibility seemed questionable; but in 1998, it was discovered that the expansion of the universe is accelerating. This discovery implies that the cosmic horizon is indeed an event horizon, as predicted by the strand model.

Ref. 204 Ref. 205

In fact, the strand model predicts that *all* horizons in nature are of the *same* type. This also means that the universe is predicted to saturate Bekenstein's entropy bound. More precisely, the strand model predicts that the universe is a kind of *inverted back hole*. Like for any situation that involves a horizon, the strand model thus does not allow us to make statements about properties 'before' the big bang or 'outside' the horizon. As explained above, there is nothing behind a horizon.

Page 297 Page 277

In particular, the strand model implies that the matter that appears at the cosmic horizon during the evolution of the universe appears through Bekenstein–Hawking radiation. This contrasts with the 'classical' explanation form general relativity that new matter appears simply because it existed behind the horizon beforehand and then crosses the horizon into the 'visible part' of the universe.

We note that modelling the universe as a single strand implies that it contains tangles. In other words, the strand model makes the prediction that the universe cannot be empty, but that it must contain particles. Strand cosmology also confirms that the question of initial conditions for the universe does not really make sense: particles appear at the horizon.

Page 98

We also note that describing the universe as made of a single strand is a natural, but somewhat unusual way to incorporate what particle physicists and cosmologists like to call *holography*. Holography is the idea that all observables of a physical system are defined on a boundary enclosing the system. In other words, if we would know, at Planck scale, everything that happens on the walls of a room, we could know everything that is and goes on inside the room. Instead of holography, we could also call it the *NSA dream*. Holography is a consequence of the extension of the fundamental constituents of nature and is a natural consequence of the strand model. As a consequence, strand cosmology naturally reproduces holographic cosmology – though not fully, as is easy to check.

Challenge 186 e

> "Or cette liaison ou cet accommodement de toutes les choses créées à chacune, et de chacune à toutes les autres, fait que chaque substance simple a des rapports qui expriment toutes les autres, et qu'elle est par conséquent un miroir vivant perpétuel de l'univers.*"
>
> Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz, *Monadologie*, 56.

The big bang – without inflation

Any expanding, homogeneous and isotropic matter distribution had earlier stages of smaller size and higher density. Also the universe has been hotter and denser in the past. But the strand model also states that singularities do not appear in nature, because there

Ref. 206 Page 283

* 'Now this connexion or adaptation of all created things to each and of each to all, means that each simple substance has relations which express all the others, and, consequently, that it is a perpetual living mirror of the universe.'

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

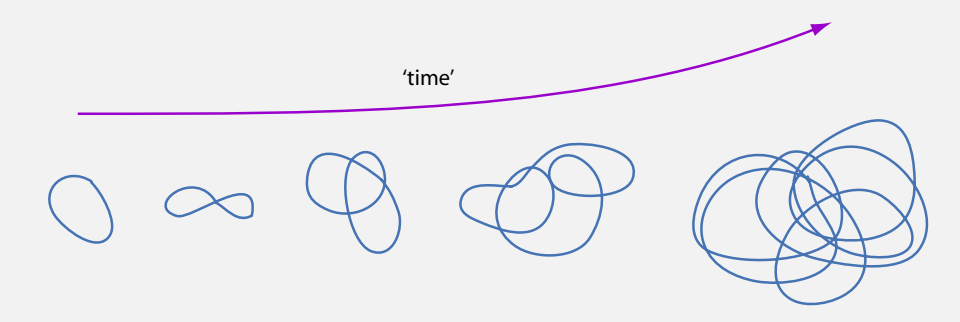


FIGURE 79 An extremely simplified view of how the universe evolved near the big bang. In this situation, physical space is not 'yet' defined.

is a highest possible energy density. As a result, the big bang might be imagined as illustrated in Figure 79. Obviously, physical space and time are not well defined near that situation, so that the figure has to be taken with a grain of salt. Nevertheless, it shows how the evolution of the universe can be seen as resulting from the increase in tangledness of the strand that makes up nature.

It is conjectured that the evolution of the universal strand just after the big bang automatically leads to a homogeneous and isotropic matter distribution and to flat space. Also the scale invariance of early density fluctuations seems natural in the strand model. In short, the strand model looks like a promising alternative to *inflation*: the hypothesis of inflation becomes unnecessary in the strand model, because strand cosmology directly makes the predictions that seem puzzling in classical cosmology. This topic is still subject of research.

The cosmological constant

The cosmological constant is due to strands. When three mutually orthogonal strands come together at a point, they cannot be completely straight; they are slightly bent. Equivalently, because the strands of the vacuum touch each other, due to the statistics of the fluctuations, there is a slight effective repulsion between them. This is the strand model for the cosmological constant.

Page 204

In short, in the strand model, *vacuum energy*, or *dark energy*, is due to the cosmological constant, which itself is due to strand fluctuations. As we saw above, the strand model predicts that the cosmological constant Λ for infinitely extended flat space vanishes, because the vacuum energy density vanishes in that case. But the strand model also predicts that for *finite* extension, the cosmological constant does *not* vanish. Indeed, in the strand model, a finite size limits the fluctuations of the strands. Fluctuations with sizes larger than the size of space are frozen out; this leads to an effective repulsion of strands that in turn leads to a cosmological constant given by (the square of) the extension of space:

$$\Lambda = \frac{1}{R_{\text{max}}^2} \,. \tag{191}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In particular, the strand model predicts a small *positive* cosmological constant, i.e., a constant that leads to a small repulsion of masses.

The relation between the cosmological constant and the radius of the universe can be found also with another, more precise argument, based on holography, and given by Balázs and Szapudi. Bekenstein's holographic entropy bound states that for all systems of size R and energy E one has

Ref. 207

$$S \leqslant ER \frac{2\pi k}{\hbar c} \,. \tag{192}$$

For a spherical system, this yields

$$S \leqslant A \frac{kc^3}{4G\hbar} \,. \tag{193}$$

The application of this inequality to the universe is the Fischler–Susskind holographic conjecture. Using the energy–entropy relation $E = TS$ valid for any holographic system, and introducing the *energy* density ρ_E, we get the limit given by

Ref. 208

$$\rho_E \leqslant \frac{T}{R} \frac{3kc^3}{4\hbar G} \,. \tag{194}$$

Using the formula for temperature $T = \hbar c/2\pi kR$ for a horizon – deduced above from the strand model – we get

Page 281

$$\rho_E \leqslant \frac{1}{A} \frac{3c^4}{2G} = \frac{1}{4\pi R^2} \frac{3c^4}{2G} \,. \tag{195}$$

The strand model predicts that the universe *saturates* the entropy bound. In other words, assuming that R is c times the age of the universe t_0, the strand model predicts that the total energy density of the universe is equal to the so-called *critical* energy density.

The equality of the measured total energy density and the critical density is well known. These measurements show that the present total energy density of the universe is about

Ref. 209

$$\rho_{E\,\mathrm{vac}} \approx 8.5 \cdot 10^{-10}\,\mathrm{J/m^3} \quad \text{or} \quad \rho_{m\,\mathrm{vac}} = 0.94(9) \cdot 10^{-26}\,\mathrm{kg/m^3} \,. \tag{196}$$

In other words, the strand model, like the holographic argument, predicts that the cosmological constant is limited by

$$\Lambda \leqslant \frac{3}{c^2 t_0^2} \,. \tag{197}$$

The result confirms the result of expression (191). Modern measurements yield 74 % of the maximum possible value.

Ref. 209

The argument for the value of the cosmological constant can be made for any age of the universe. Therefore, the strand model predicts that the cosmological constant Λ *decreases* with increasing radius of the universe. In particular, there is no need for a scalar field that makes the cosmological constant decrease; the decrease is a natural result of the strand model. The strand model states that the cosmological constant appears in the field

Ref. 210

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

equations as a quantum effect due to the finite size of the universe. The strand model thus implies that there is no separate equation of motion for the cosmological constant, but that the constant appears as a large-scale average of quantum effects, as long as the size of the universe is limited.

In summary, the strand model predicts that not only the field equations of general relativity, but also the amount of dark energy, the expansion of the universe and its acceleration result from strand fluctuations. The cosmological constant changes roughly with the inverse square of time. In particular, the strand model implies that the effect proposed by Wiltshire – that the cosmological constant is an artefact of the inhomogeneity of matter distribution – is *not* fundamental, but may at most influence the value somewhat. (Could the difference between the maximum possible and the measured value of the cosmological constant be due to this effect?)

Ref. 211
Challenge 187 s

The value of the matter density

The strand model predicts that horizons emit particles. As a consequence, the strand model predicts an upper limit for the number N_b of baryons that could have been emitted by the cosmic horizon during its expansion. For a horizon shining throughout the age of the universe t_0 while emitting the maximum power $c^5/4G$, we get

$$N_{b0} \leqslant \frac{t_0 \, c^5/4G}{m_b c^2} = 2.6 \cdot 10^{79} \,. \tag{198}$$

Equality would hold only if the contributions of photons, electrons, neutrinos and dark matter could be neglected. In short, using the age $t_0 = 13.8$ Ga, the strand model predicts that at most $2.6 \cdot 10^{79}$ baryons exist in the universe at present. Modern measurements indeed give values around this limit.

Ref. 209

In other terms, the strand model states that the sum of all particle energies in the universe is at most $t_0 c^5/4G$, or 50 % of the critical density; this includes observable matter as well as dark matter. The experimental value for the total matter density is about 26 % of the critical density. In observations, 4 % of the matter density is observed, and 22 % is dark. We will discuss the nature of dark matter later on.

Ref. 209
Page 343

The strand model also makes a clear statement on the change of matter density with time. As just explained, the number of baryons is predicted to increase with time t, due to their appearance at the horizon. Also the radius will increase (roughly) with time; as a result,

▷ The strand model predicts that matter density decreases roughly as $1/t^2$.

This unexpected prediction contrasts with the usually assumed $1/t^3$ dependence in a matter-dominated universe. The prediction has yet to be tested with observations. We note that the strand arguments imply that the ratio between matter density and vacuum energy density is a quantity related to the details of the radius increase during the history of the universe.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Open challenge: What is dark matter?

In the arguments above, is there a factor of order 2 missing that induces incorrect conclu-
Challenge 188 ny sions about dark matter density? Might the prediction of dark matter increase, decrease or even disappear after correction of this missing numerical factor?

Conventionally, it is argued that *cold* dark matter exists for two reasons: First, it is necessary to grow the density fluctuations of the cosmic microwave background rapidly enough to achieve the present-day high values. Secondly, it is needed to yield the observed amplitudes for the acoustic peaks in the cosmic background oscillations. Can the strand model change these arguments?

How does the dark matter prediction of the strand model explain the galaxy rotation curves? A related issue is the following: Could tangle effects at the scale of a full galaxy
Challenge 189 ny be related to dark matter?

The topology of the universe

In the strand model, physical space-time, whenever it is defined, *cannot* be multiply connected. Also all quantum gravity approaches make this prediction, and the strand model confirms it: because physical space-time is a result of averaging strand crossing switches, non-trivial topologies (except black holes) do not occur as solutions. For example, the strand model predicts that wormholes do not exist. In regions where space-time is undefined – at and beyond horizons – it does not make sense to speak of space-time topology. In these regions, the fluctuations of the universal strand determine observations. In short, the strand model predicts that all searches for non-trivial *macroscopic* (and microscopic) topologies of the universe, at both high and low energies, will yield negative results. So far, this prediction agrees with all observations.

Predictions of the strand model about cosmology

In the domain of cosmology, the strand model makes the following testable predictions.

- The universe is not empty. (Agrees with observation.)
- Its integrated luminosity saturates the power limit $c^5/4G$. (Agrees with observation.)
- The energy density of the universe saturates the entropy bound. (Agrees with observation.)
- The are no singularities in nature. (Agrees with observation.)
- Dark energy exists and results from vacuum/strand fluctuations. (Agrees with observation.)
- *Dark energy, or vacuum energy, is completely described by a cosmological constant* Λ *that is positive and changes with the radius* R *of the universe as* $1/R^2$. (This prediction differs from the usual cosmological models, which assume that Λ is constant or changes with time in other ways. The strand prediction might be checked in the near future by testing whether the minimum acceleration around galaxies changes with distance – if this minimum is related to Λ.)
- The number of baryons in nature is limited by the maximum luminosity times the age of the universe. The present upper limit is $2.6 \cdot 10^{79}$ baryons. (Agrees with observation.)

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— The matter density of the universe decreases with age, roughly as $1/t^2$. (Checks are under way. This prediction differs from the usual cosmological models.)
— There is nothing behind the cosmic horizon. Matter, energy and space appear at the horizon. (Agrees with observations and requirements of logic.)
— Early density fluctuations are scale-invariant. (Agrees with observation.)
— The universe is flat and homogeneous. (Agrees with observation.)
— Apart from the cosmological constant Λ, there is all other fundamental constants of nature are constant over time and space. (Agrees with observation, despite regular claims of the contrary.)
— Inflation is unnecessary.
— The universe's topology is trivial. (Agrees with observation.)
— The above statements are independent of the precise fluctuation details. (Can be tested with mathematical investigations.)

All these predictions can and will be tested in the coming years, either by observation or by computer calculations.

Summary on millennium issues about relativity and cosmology

We have deduced special relativity, general relativity and cosmology from the strand model. The fundamental principle of the strand model implies the invariant Planck units, the Lagrangian and action of general relativity, the finiteness of the universe and, above all, it explains in simple terms the entropy of black holes.

Space-time foam is replaced by the strand model of the vacuum: empty space is the time-average of untangled strands. More precisely, space is the thermodynamic average of crossing switches that are due to shape fluctuations of untangled strands.

The strand model – and in particular, the strand model of the vacuum – explains the number of space-time dimensions, the vacuum energy density, the matter density and the finiteness of the universe. The cosmological constant is a consequence of the finite size of the universe. The issue of the initial conditions of the universe has been defused. The macroscopic and microscopic topology of the universe has been clarified. And dark matter is predicted to be, as shown in the next chapter, a combination of conventional matter and black holes.

Page 343

The most important predictions of the strand model are the decrease of the cosmological constant with time and the absence of inflation. Various experiments will test these predictions with increased precision in the coming years. So far, measurements do not contradict these predictions.

The strand model confirms that the speed of light c and the corrected Planck force $c^4/4G$ are *limit* values. The strand model also predicts that no variation in space and time of c, G, $\hbar$ and k can be detected, because they define all measurement units.

The strand model predicts that the cosmological constant and the masses of the elementary particles are the *only* quantum effects that will be observed in the study of gravitation. Strands strongly suggest that additional effects of quantum gravity cannot be measured. In particular, no effects of space-time foam will be observed.

Page 269

The strand model is, at present, the simplest – but not the only – known model of quantum gravity that allows deducing all these results. In particular, the strand explan-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

ation of black hole entropy is by far the simplest explanation known.

General relativity is an approximation of the strand model. The approximation appears when the quantum of action and, in particular, the strand diameter are neglected. Therefore, general relativity is predicted to be valid for all energies below the Planck energy. In other words, the strand model is not a generalization of general relativity, in contrast to other attempts at unification. This conforms to the list of requirements for the final theory.

Page 143

In the 'cube' structure of physics shown in Figure 1, the transition from the final, unified theory to general relativity occurs by neglecting quantum effects, i.e., by approximating $\hbar$ as 0. In the strand model, the transition is from the description with strands to a description with continuous variables: neglecting the strands in the strand model – more precisely, averaging over crossing switches of strands with zero diameter – leads to general relativity and cosmology.

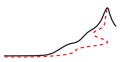
Page 7

If we look at the millennium list of open issues in physics, we see that – except for the issue of dark matter – all issues about general relativity and cosmology have been settled. The strand model explains the mathematical description of curved space-time and of general relativity. The strand model also provides a simple model – maybe the simplest known one – of quantum gravity. Above, we had already shown that the strand model explains all mathematical structures that appear in quantum theory and in particle physics. Together with the results from this chapter we can now say: *the strand model explains* all *mathematical structures that appear in physical theories.* In particular, strands explain the metric, curvature, wave functions, field intensities – and the probabilistic behaviour of all of them. They all result from averaging crossing switches.

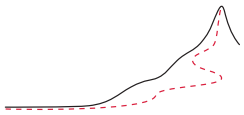
Page 157

Page 267

In summary, starting from the fundamental principle of the strand model, we have understood that strands are the origin of gravitation, general relativity, quantum gravity and cosmology. We have also understood the mathematical description of gravitation – and, before, that of quantum physics – found in all textbooks. These results encourage us to continue our quest. Indeed, we are not done yet: we still need to deduce the possible elementary particles and to explain their properties.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 11

THE PARTICLE SPECTRUM DEDUCED FROM STRANDS

> "No problem can withstand the assault of sustained thinking."
>
> Voltaire*

Ref. 212

Strands describe quantum theory, gauge interactions and general relativity. But do strands also settle all issues left open by twentieth-century physics? Do they settle the origin of all the elementary particles, their quantum numbers, their masses and their mixing angles? How does the infinite number of possible tangles lead to a finite number of elementary particles? And finally, do strands explain the coupling constants? In the millennium list of open issues in fundamental physics, these are the issues that remain. The strand model is correct only if these issues are resolved.

Page 157

In this chapter, we show that the strand model indeed explains the known spectrum of elementary particles, including the three generations of quarks and leptons. The strand model is the first approach of modern physics that can provide such an explanation.

It should be stressed that from this point onwards, the ideas are particularly speculative. In the chapters so far, the agreement of the strand model with quantum field theory and general relativity has been remarkable. The following chapters assign specific tangles to specific particles. Such assignments are, by nature, not completely certain. The speculative nature of the ideas now becomes particularly apparent.

Particles and quantum numbers from tangles

In nature, we observe three entities: vacuum, horizons and particles. Of these, (quantum) *particles* are *localized* entities with specific *intrinsic* properties, i.e., properties that do not depend on their motion.

In nature, all the intrinsic properties of every particle, every object and every image are completely described by three types of *basic* properties: (1) the elementary particles they contain, (2) their behaviour under space-time transformations, (3) their interactions. The full list of these basic intrinsic properties of particles is given in Table 12. Given the basic properties for each elementary particle, physicists can deduce *all* those intrinsic particle properties that are *not* listed; examples are the half life, decay modes, branching ratios, electric dipole moment, T-parity, gyromagnetic ratio or electric polarizability. Of course, the basic properties also allow physicists to deduce *every* property of every object or image, such as size, shape, colour, density, elasticity, brittleness, magnet-

* Voltaire (b. 1694 Paris, d. 1778 Paris) was an influential philosopher, politician and often satirical writer.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

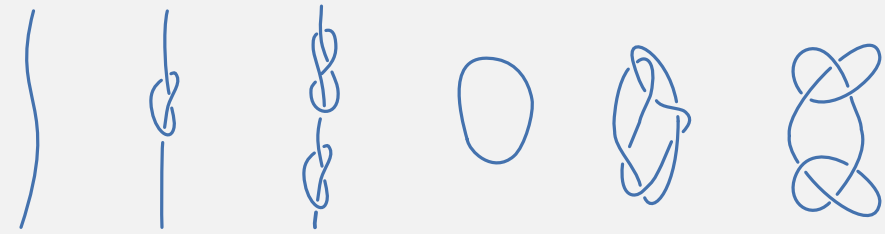


FIGURE 80 Examples for each class of tangles made of one strand.

ism or conductance.

In short, understanding *all* properties of matter and images thus only requires understanding the *basic* properties of quantum particles; and understanding the *basic* properties of quantum particles only requires understanding the *basic* properties of the *elementary* particles.

The strand model states that all elementary (and all composed) particles are tangles of strands. This leads us to ask: Which tangle is associated to each elementary particle? What kinds of elementary particles are possible? Do these tangles reproduce, for each elementary particle, the observed values of the basic properties listed in Table 12?

Page 167

It turns out that the strand model only allows a *limited number* of *elementary* particles. In addition, the tangles of these elementary particle have intrinsic properties that *match* the observed properties. To prove these strong statements, we first recall that all massive elementary particles are represented by an *infinite sequence* of tangles. We now explore tangles according to the number of strands they are made of.

PARTICLES MADE OF ONE STRAND

In the strand model, all particles made of *one* strand have spin 1, are elementary, and are bosons. Conversely, all massless elementary spin-1 bosons can only have two tails, and thus must be made of a single strand. Such one-stranded tangles return to the original strand after a core rotation by 2π. Massive elementary spin-1 bosons can have one or more strands. Tangles of more than one strand can only have spin 1 if they represent massive elementary or composed particles. In short, classifying one-stranded tangles allows classifying all elementary gauge bosons.

Page 169

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 12 The full list of *basic* intrinsic properties of quantum particles, from which all other observed intrinsic properties of particles, objects and images can be deduced.

Property	Possible Value	Determines
Quantum numbers due to space-time symmetries:		
Spin S or J	integer or half-integer multiple of $\hbar$	statistics, rotation behaviour, conservation
P parity	even (+1) or odd (−1)	behaviour under reflection, conservation
C parity	even (+1) or odd (−1)	behaviour under charge conjugation, conservation
Interaction properties:		
Mass M	between 0 and the Planck mass	gravitation, inertia
Electric charge Q	integer multiples of one third of electron or proton charge	Lorentz force, coupling to photons, conservation
Weak charge	rational multiple of weak coupling constant	weak scattering and decays, coupling to W and Z, partial conservation
Mixing angles	between 0 and $\pi/2$	mixing of quarks and neutrinos, flavour change
CP-violating phases	between 0 and $\pi/2$	degree of CP violation in quarks and neutrinos
Strong charge, i.e., colour	rational multiple of strong coupling constant	confinement, coupling to gluons, conservation
Flavour quantum numbers, describing elementary particle content:		
Lepton number(s) L'	integer(s)	conservation in strong and e.m. interactions
Baryon number B	integer times 1/3	conservation in all three gauge interactions
Isospin I_z or I_3	+1/2 or −1/2	up and down quark content, conservation in strong and e.m. interactions
Strangeness S'	integer	strange quark content, conservation in strong and e.m. interactions
Charmness C'	integer	charm quark content, conservation in strong and e.m. interactions
Bottomness B'	integer	bottom quark content, conservation in strong and e.m. interactions
Topness T'	integer	top quark content, conservation in strong and e.m. interactions

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Mathematicians have already classified one-stranded tangles; they are usually called *open knots* or *long knots*. To get an overview, we list an example for each class of one-stranded tangles on the left-hand side of Figure 80. For completeness, closed curves are shown on the right-hand side of the figure. We now explore each of these classes of curves.

Unknotted curves

The simplest type of tangle made of one strand is an *unknotted curve*, shown as example 1a in Figure 80. The study of gauge interactions has shown that unknotted strands are, Page 243 depending on their precise average shape, either vacuum strands or gauge bosons.

The time-average of a vacuum strand is straight. A single strand represents a particle if the time-averaged strand shape is not a straight line.

In the strand model, vacuum strands in flat space are, on average, *straight*. In this property, vacuum strands differ from gauge bosons, which, on average, have *curved* strands, and thus carry energy.

Gauge bosons – and Reidemeister moves

Gauge bosons are the carrier particles of the interactions. In the strand model, the gauge interactions are due to the three Reidemeister moves. The electromagnetic, the weak and the strong interaction correspond to respectively the first, second and third Reidemeister move. As we have seen above, when the three Reidemeister moves deform fermion tangle cores they generate U(1), SU(2) and SU(3) gauge symmetries. The detailed exploration Page 217 of the correspondence between tangle deformation and gauge theory led us to the gauge boson tangles shown in Figure 81. All gauge bosons – before symmetry breaking when applicable – are single curved strands.

A single strand represents a particle if the time-averaged strand shape is not a straight line. A particle strand can thus be a strand with a bulge or a strand whose tails are not aligned along a straight line.

Page 221 As explained above, the *first* Reidemeister move, the twist, leads to the modelling of photons as helical strands. Therefore, photons have vanishing mass and two possible polarizations. Photons do not have knotted family members; they are massless. Their specific unknotted and twisted strand shapes also imply that photons generate an Abelian gauge theory and that photons do not interact among themselves. Automatically, photons have no weak and no strong charge. The strand model further implies that photons have negative P-parity and C-parity, as is observed.

Page 237 The study of the *second* Reidemeister move, the *poke*, showed that deformations induced by pokes can also involve braiding of tangle tails; this leads to the symmetry breaking of the weak interaction. As a result, the observed W and the Z boson strands become massive. The tangle of the W is chiral, and thus it is electrically charged; the tangle of the Z is achiral and thus electrically neutral. Being knotted, the W and the Z also carry weak charge and thus interact among themselves, generating a *non-Abelian* gauge theory. The strand model also implies that the W and the Z have no P-parity, no C-parity and no colour charge, as is observed.

Page 250 The study of the *third* Reidemeister move, the slide, led us to the existence of eight gluons. The eight gluons are unknotted, thus they carry no mass, no electric charge and

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

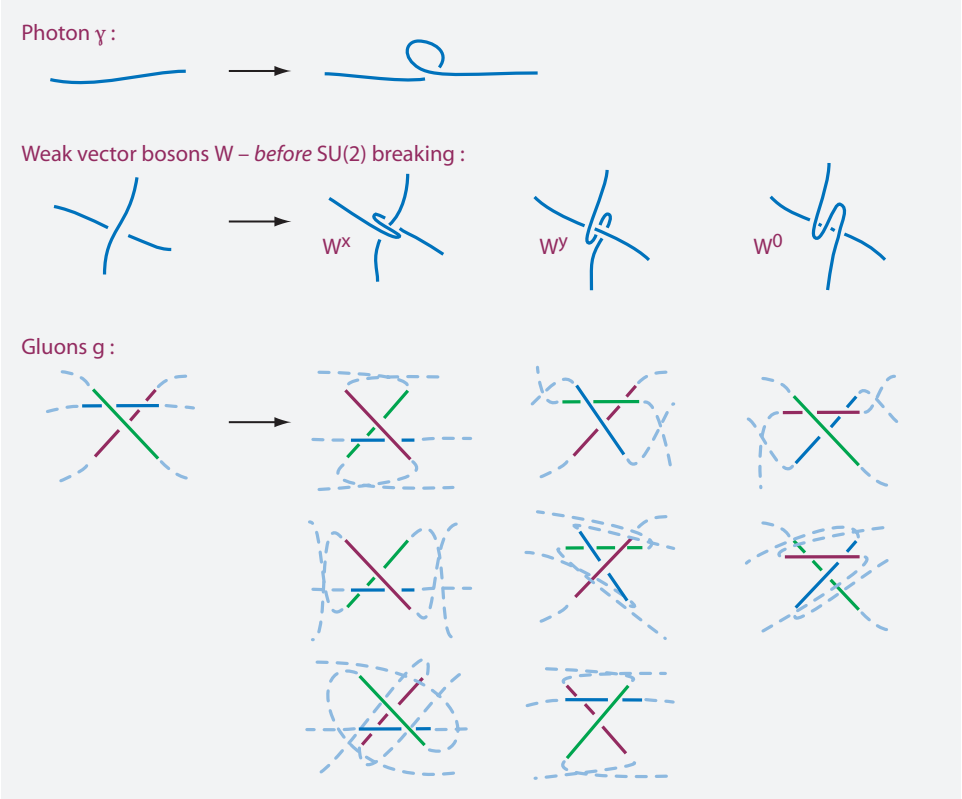


FIGURE 81 The gauge bosons in the strand model. All differ from vacuum by one curved strand – though, for clarity, the gluons are shown here using their complementary two-strand moves.

no weak charge. Each gluon tangle has two possible polarizations. The strand model of gluons also implies that they have negative P-parity and no C-parity, as is observed. Gluons tangles carry colour and interact among themselves, thus they generate a non-Abelian gauge theory. In contrast to the other two interactions, free, single gluons are short-lived, because their structure induces rapid hadronization: when gluons act on the vacuum, quark–antiquark pairs are produced. Gluons do not have knotted family members; they are massless in the high energy limit, when their tails are aligned.

For completeness we mention that by assignment, all gauge bosons differ from vacuum by a single curved strand, have vanishing lepton and baryon numbers, and thus also lack all flavour quantum numbers. All this is as observed.

The strand model explains the lack of *classical SU(2) field waves* as a consequence of the breaking of the SU(2) symmetry and the consequent mass of the weak bosons. Strands explain the lack of *classical SU(3) waves*, also called *gluonic waves*, as a consequence of the topological impossibility to produce such waves, which is related to the infinite mass of single free gluons.

In somewhat sloppy language we can say that the shape and the effects of photons are one-dimensional, those of the unbroken weak bosons are two-dimensional, and those

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of the gluons are three-dimensional. This is the essential reason that they reproduce the U(1), SU(2) and SU(3) groups, and that no higher gauge groups exist in nature.

In summary, Reidemeister's theorem implies that the list of known gauge bosons with spin 1 is complete. But the list of possible tangles made of a single strand is much more extensive; we are not done yet.

Open or long knots

Page 244 Strands could also contain knotted regions. We have explained earlier on that all such possibilities – mathematically speaking, all so-called *open knots* or *long knots* – have no relation to particles. In the strand model, they cannot appear and thus play no role. The original strand model from 2008 did include such configurations as particles (for example as W and Z bosons), but it now – i.e., after 2014 – seems that this inclusion is an unnecessary complication.

Closed tangles: knots

Figure 80 shows, on the right-hand side, examples for all classes of *closed* tangles of one strand, i.e., of tangles *without tails*. They are usually just called *knots* in mathematics. In the strand model knots may appear only in the early universe, and maybe near horizons. They do not seem to have physical relevance and we do not explore them here.

Summary on tangles made of one strand

In summary, a single strand represents a particle if the strand shape is, on average, not a straight line. This distinguishes a vacuum strand from a particle strand. A particle strand can thus be a strand with a bulge or a strand whose tails are not aligned along a straight line. All tangles made of *one strand* represent *elementary* particles of spin 1, thus elementary vector bosons.

Massless elementary spin-1 particles are made of one strand also because other tangles cannot reproduce both zero mass and the spin-1 behaviour under rotations: only one-stranded tangles return to the original strand after a core rotation by 2π and allow vanishing mass at the same time.

In the strand model, *all* tangles made of one curved strand are assigned to the *known* gauge bosons. The strand model correctly reproduces and thus explains the gauge boson spectrum and the quantum numbers for each gauge boson. In short, there is *no* room for additional elementary gauge bosons.

In other words, the strand model predicts that all gauge bosons and thus all interactions are already known. We have thus a second argument – after the non-existence of Page 267 other gauge groups – stating that no other gauge interaction exists in nature. (Both arguments against the existence of other gauge interactions are related; in particular, both are due to the three-dimensionality of space.) In particular, we find again that grand unification and supersymmetry are not allowed in nature.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

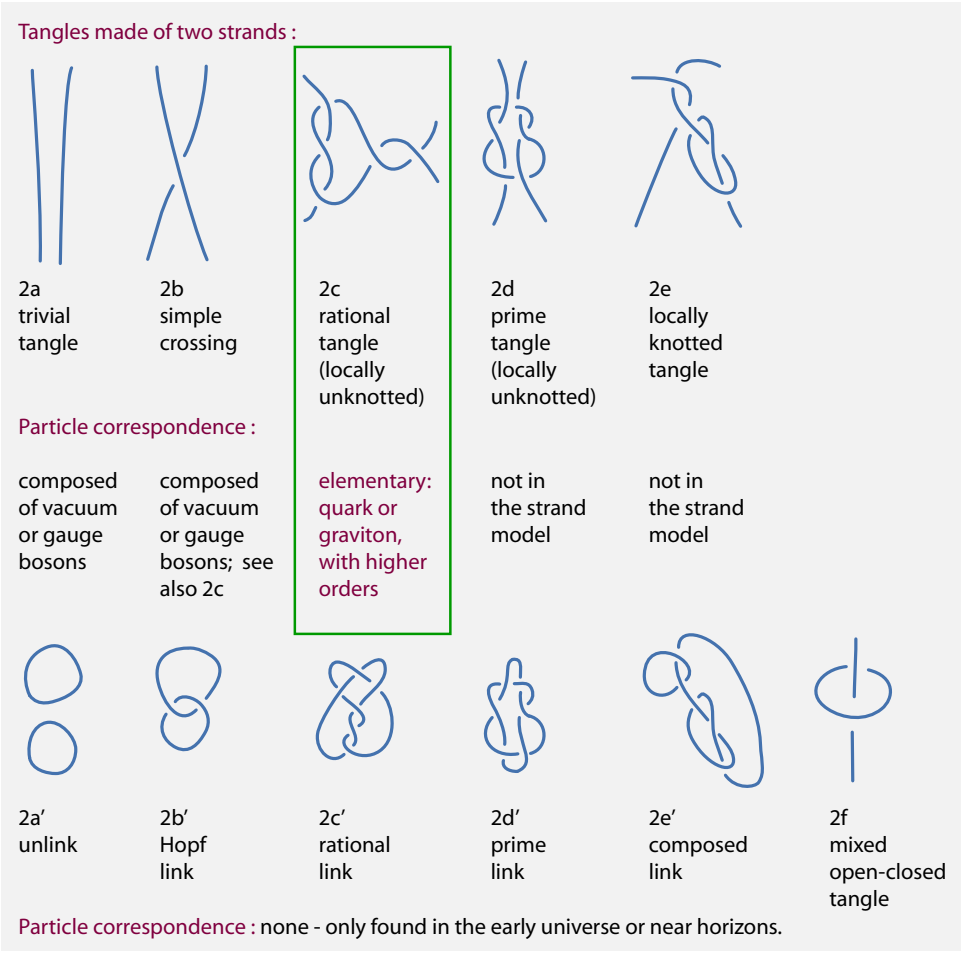


FIGURE 82 Possible tangles made of two strands.

PARTICLES MADE OF TWO STRANDS

In the strand model, particle tangles can also be made of *two* strands. Examples for all the classes of two-stranded tangles are given in Figure 82. Each class has a physical particle assignment.

— The simplest tangle made of two strands is the *trivial tangle*, shown as example 2a in Figure 82. In the strand model, the trivial tangle, like all *separable* tangles, is a *composite* system. Each of the two strands can represent either the vacuum or a gauge boson. Simply stated, the trivial tangle of two strands is not an elementary particle.
— The simplest non-trivial tangle made of two strands is the *crossing*, shown as 2b in Figure 82. In the strand model, the crossing appears as part of the W and Z bosons;

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

in addition, for certain tail configurations, it can represent a graviton or the simplest state of a down quark, as we will see below.

— A new class of tangles are the *rational tangles*, represented by example 2c in the figure. A rational tangle is a tangle that can be untangled by moving its tails *around*. (Also example 2b is a rational tangle.) Rational tangles are distinct from prime and from locally knotted tangles, shown as examples 2d and 2e, which require pulling the tail *through* the tangle to untangle it. Rational tangles are thus *weakly* tangled. As we will see, rational tangles represent the *graviton* and the *quarks*; we will discuss them in detail in the next two sections. More complicated rational tangles are higher-order propagating states of the simpler ones.

— Another class of tangles are *prime tangles*, for which the tangle 2d is an example. Like complicated one-stranded tangles, we conclude that prime tangles are not part of the strand model.

— Still another class of tangles are *locally knotted tangles*, shown as example 2e. Also this class is not part of the strand model.

— Finally, *closed tangles*, *links* and *mixed tangles*, shown in the lower row of Figure 82, have no role in the strand model – except maybe during the very early universe or near horizons.

In short, the only two-stranded tangles of interest in the strand model are the rational tangles. We now explore them in more detail.

Quarks

Page 262 The exploration of the strand model and of the strong interaction showed: the tangle of a coloured fermion, thus of a quark, must be rational, must reproduce the three possible colour options, and must break the three-belt symmetry.

The simplest tangles that realize these requirements are shown in Figure 83: quark tangles are *rational tangles* made of *two* strands. Higher quark generations have larger crossing numbers. The four tails form the skeleton of a tetrahedron. A particle with two strands tangled in this way automatically has spin 1/2. The electric charges of the quarks are 1/3 and −2/3, an assignment that is especially obvious for up and down quarks and that will become clearer later on, in the study of hadrons. Parity is naturally assigned as done in Figure 83. Baryon number and the other flavour quantum numbers – isospin, strangeness, charm, bottomness, topness – are naturally assigned as usual. The flavour quantum numbers simply 'count' the number of corresponding quark tangles. Like all localized tangles, quarks have weak charge. We will explore weak charge in more detail Page 366 below. Antiquarks are mirror tangles and have opposite quantum numbers. We will see Page 323, page 331 below that these assignments reproduce the observed quantum numbers of all mesons and baryons, as well as all their other properties.

We note that the simplest version of the down quark is a simple crossing; nevertheless, it differs from its antiparticle, because the simple crossing mixes with the braid with seven crossings, 13 crossings, etc.; this mixing is due to the leather trick, as shown below. Page 313 And for every quark type, these more complicated braids differ from those of their antiparticles.

For each quark, the four tails form the skeleton of a tetrahedron. In Figure 83 and

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

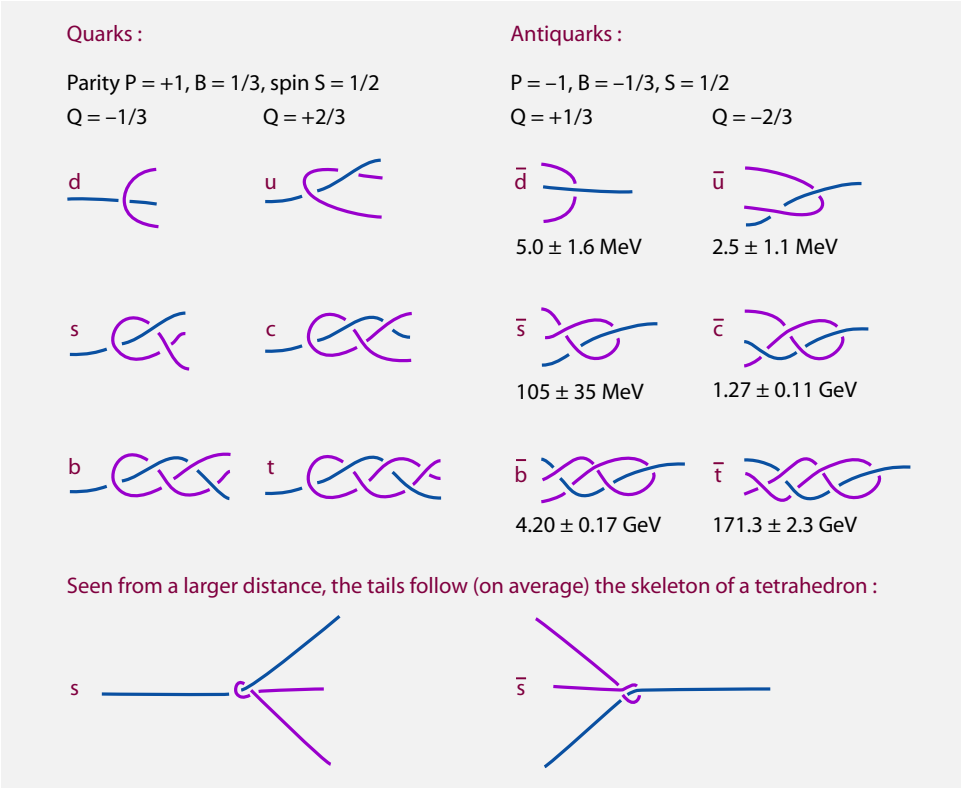


FIGURE 83 The simplest tangles assigned to the quarks and antiquarks. For reference, the experimental mass values are also given.

Figure 84, the tetrahedral skeletons are drawn with one tail in the paper plane; of the other three tails, the middle one is assumed to be *above* the paper plane, and the outer two tails to be *below* the paper plane. This is important for the drawing of quark compounds later on. The three tails allow us to reproduce the strong interaction and the colour charge of the quarks: each colour is one of three possible orientations in space; more precisely, the three colours result from the three possible ways to map a quark tangle to the three belt structure. Each colour corresponds to a different choice for the tail that lies above the paper plane, as shown in Figure 84. The colour interaction of quarks will be clarified in the section on mesons.

Page 258

Page 323

In the strand model, the quark tangles thus carry *colour*. In nature, no free coloured particle has been observed. The strand model reproduces this observation in several ways. First of all, all leptons and baryons are colour-neutral, as we will see shortly. Secondly, only free quark tangles, as shown in Figure 83, have a definite colour state, because they have a fixed orientation in space. Thirdly, free quark states, thus quark states in the tetrahedral configuration of Figure 83, do not fit into vacuum even at large distances from the core; thus free quarks carry infinitely high energy. In practice, this means that free quark states do not occur in nature. Indeed, a free, coloured quark tangle can reduce its energy by interacting with one or several other quarks. The result is a strong

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

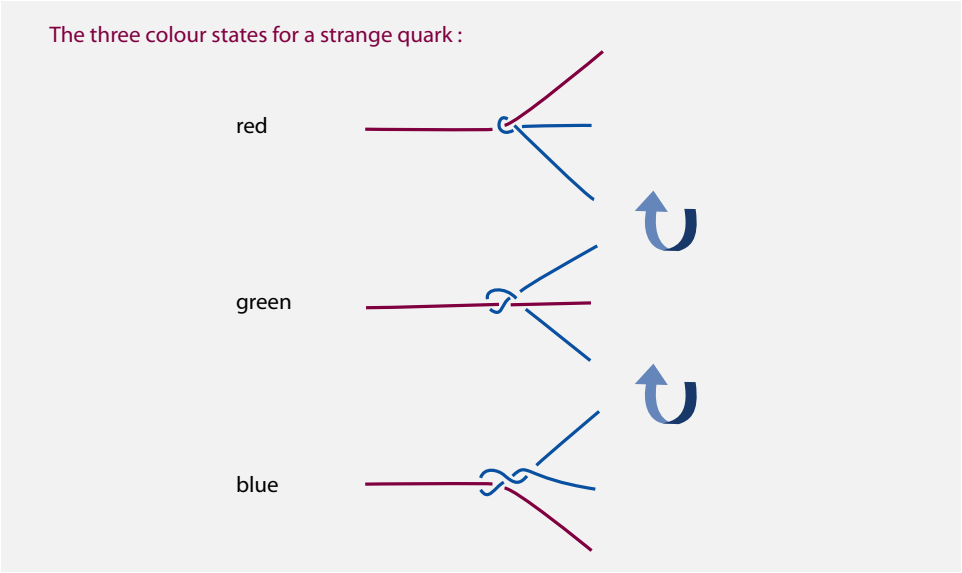


FIGURE 84 The three colour charges correspond to the three possible spatial orientations; the centre tail on the right is always above the paper plane, the other two tails on the right are below the paper plane.

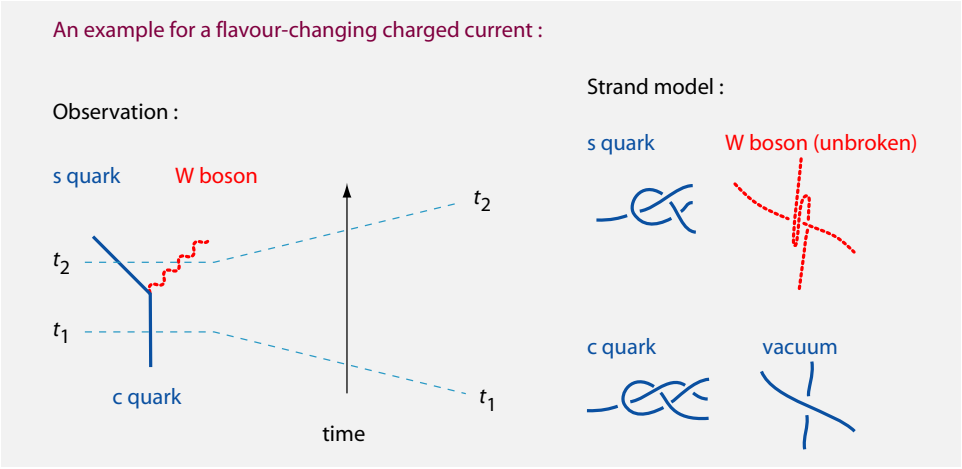


FIGURE 85 Absorption or emission of a W boson changes quark flavour.

colour attraction between quarks that leads to colourless composites.

In short, also in the strand model, only colourless composites of quarks exist as stable free particles. We will explore quark composites and the issue of confinement of quarks in more detail shortly.

Page 323
Page 328

In nature, quarks are weakly charged and interact with W bosons. In the strand model, the absorption or the emission of a W boson is the operation that takes a quark tangle and adds or subtracts a braiding step. This process is illustrated in Figure 85, which

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

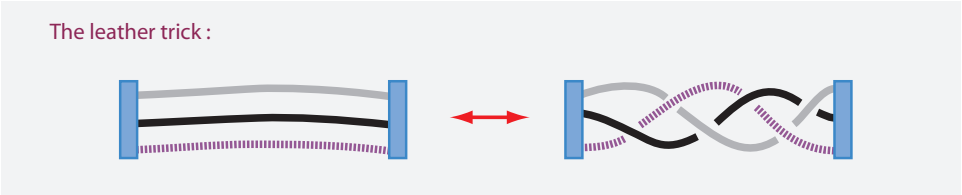


FIGURE 86 The leather trick is the deformation process that changes these two structures into each other. The leather trick limits structures made of three-stranded braids to six basic types.

shows that a braiding (unbraiding) operation corresponds to the emission (absorption) of an W boson before symmetry breaking. It is straightforward to check that this operation fulfils all conservation laws and properties that are observed for these so-called *flavour-changing charged currents*. The absorption or emission of an (unbroken) Z boson has no braiding effect. The strand model thus reproduces the result that only the charged weak bosons can change quark flavours, as is observed.

For completeness, we mention that quarks, being tangles of *two* strands, have vanishing lepton number. Indeed, as we will see below, lepton tangles are made of *three* strands. Page 316

In summary, all quantum numbers of quarks are reproduced by the strand model, as long as quarks are modelled as braids of two strands with ends directed along the corners of a tetrahedron.

Quark generations

We stress that the quark tangles shown Figure 83 represent only the *simplest* tangle for each quark. First of all, longer braids are mapped to each of the six quarks. This might seem related to the *leather trick* shown in Figure 86. This trick is well-known to all people in the leather trade: if a braid of three strands has $n \geqslant 6$ crossings, it can be deformed into a braid with $n-6$ crossings. We might conjecture that, due to the leather trick, there is no way to introduce more than 6 quarks in the strand model.

In fact, the leather trick argument assumes that the braid end – and thus the ends of the strands – can be moved *through* the braids. In the strand model, this can only happen at the horizon, the only region where space (and time) are not well-defined, and where such manipulations become possible. The low probability of such a process will be important in the determination of quark masses. Page 349

Instead of resting on the leather trick, it is simpler to assume that braids with large numbers of crossings are mapped modulo 6 to the braids with the smallest number of crossings. This is consistent, because in the strand model, a braid with six additional crossings is mapped to a particle together with a virtual Higgs boson. The modulo 6 rule thus represents the Yukawa mass generation mechanism in the strand model. Page 321

In summary, in the strand model, each quark is not only represented by the tangles shown in Figure 83, but also by tangles with 6 additional crossings, with 12 additional crossings, etc.

As a mathematical check, we can also ask whether *all* other rational tangles are mapped to quarks. Rational tangles of higher complexity arise by repeatedly twisting any pair of tails of a quark tangle. This process produces an infinite number of complex

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

FIGURE 87 The graviton in the strand model.

two-stranded tangles. In the strand model, these tangles are quarks surrounded by virtual particles. Equivalently, we can say that all the more complex rational tangles that do not appear in Figure 83 are higher-order propagators of quarks.

Challenge 190 e

The graviton

Page 287

One rational tangle made of two strands is special. This special tangle is shown (again) in Figure 87. It differs from a quark tangle in one property: the tails are parallel (and near) to each other, and thus lie in a plane. Its tangle core returns to its original state after rotation by π, and therefore models a spin-2 particle. The tangle is not knotted and not localized; thus it has no mass, no electric and no weak charge. It also has no colour charge, as expected from the graviton. Similar tangles with higher winding numbers represent higher orders in the perturbation theory of gravitation.

Page 271

The chapter on gravitation has already shown how gravitons lead to curvature, horizons and the field equations of general relativity.

Glueballs

Ref. 213, Ref. 214

There is no observational evidence for glueballs yet, even though simulations of QCD on the lattice predict the existence of several such states in the 1.5 GeV/c^2 mass range. The lack of experimental confirmation is usually explained by the strong background noise in the reaction that produces glueballs, and by the expected strong mixing with mesons of similar quantum numbers. The experimental search for glueballs is still ongoing.

The lowest-mass glueball is usually expected to be made of two gluons. In the strand model, a glueball made of two gluons would be made of two curved strands. However, the strand model of gluons does not seem to allow such a tangle.

Could a situation in which two gluons are linked in such a way that the four tails are perpendicular and span a plane lead, through averaging, to a zero spin value? The issue of glueballs needs a more precise investigation.

Challenge 191 ny

Ref. 215

Whatever the situation for glueballs might be, the strand model of gluons seems in contrast with the models of glueballs as knots that were proposed by Buniy and Kephart or by Niemi. These models are based on *closed* knots, not on tangles with tails. The strand model does not seem to allow real particles *of zero spin* that are composed of gluons. On the other hand, if closed knots were somehow possible in the strand model, they would imply the existence of glueballs.

Ref. 217

In summary, the issue of glueballs is not settled; a definitive solution might even lead to additional checks of the strand model.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The mass gap problem and the Clay Mathematics Institute

Ref. 216 The Clay Mathematics Institute offers a large prize to anybody who proves the following statement: *For any compact simple non-Abelian gauge group, quantum gauge theory exists in continuous, four-dimensional space-time and produces a mass gap.* This is one of their so-called *millennium problems*.

The strand model does not allow arbitrary gauge groups in quantum field theory. According to the strand model, the only compact simple non-Abelian gauge group of interest is SU(3), the gauge group of the strong nuclear interaction. And since the strand model does not seem to allow for glueballs, for SU(3) an effective mass gap of the order of the Planck mass is predicted. (If glueballs would exist in the strand model, the mass gap would still exist but be smaller.) Indeed, the strand model explains the short range of the strong interaction as a consequence of the details of Reidemeister III moves and the quark tangle topology.

The strand model further states that space-time and gauge groups are low-energy approximations, because neither points nor fields exist at a fundamental level; points and fields are approximations to strands. According to the strand model, the *quantum* properties of nature result from the extension of strands. As a consequence, the strand model denies the existence of *any quantum* gauge theory as a separate, exact theory on *continuous* space-time.

In summary, the strand model does predict a mass gap for SU(3); but the strand model also denies the existence of quantum gauge theory for any other compact simple non-Abelian gauge group. And even in the case of SU(3) it denies – like for any other gauge groups – the existence of a quantum gauge theory on continuous space-time. As deduced Page 267 above, the strand model allows only the three known gauge groups, and allows their existence only in the non-continuous strand model of space-time. In short, it is *impossible* to realize the wish of the Clay Mathematics Institute.

A puzzle

The topic of two-stranded tangles also requires to solve the puzzle of Figure 88. To which Challenge 192 s physical states do the three pictured tangles correspond?

Summary on two-stranded tangles

In summary, the strand model predicts that apart from the six quarks and the graviton, no other two-stranded elementary particle exists in nature. Concerning composite particles, the two-stranded glueball issue is not completely settled, but points towards non-existence.

Quarks and the graviton, the elementary particles made of two strands, are *rational* tangles. Their strand models are thus not tangled in a complicated way, but tangled in the *least complicated* way possible. This connection will be of importance in our search for elementary particles that are still undiscovered.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

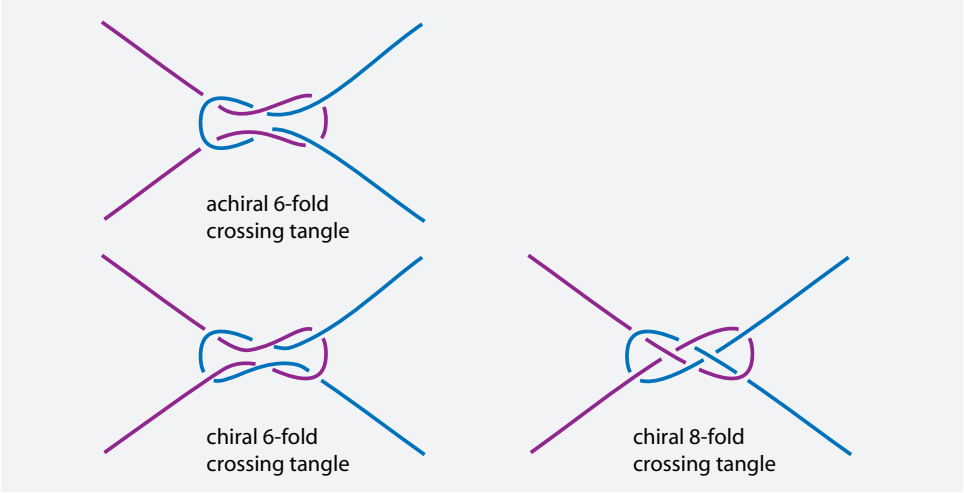


FIGURE 88 Which particle states are described by these tangles?

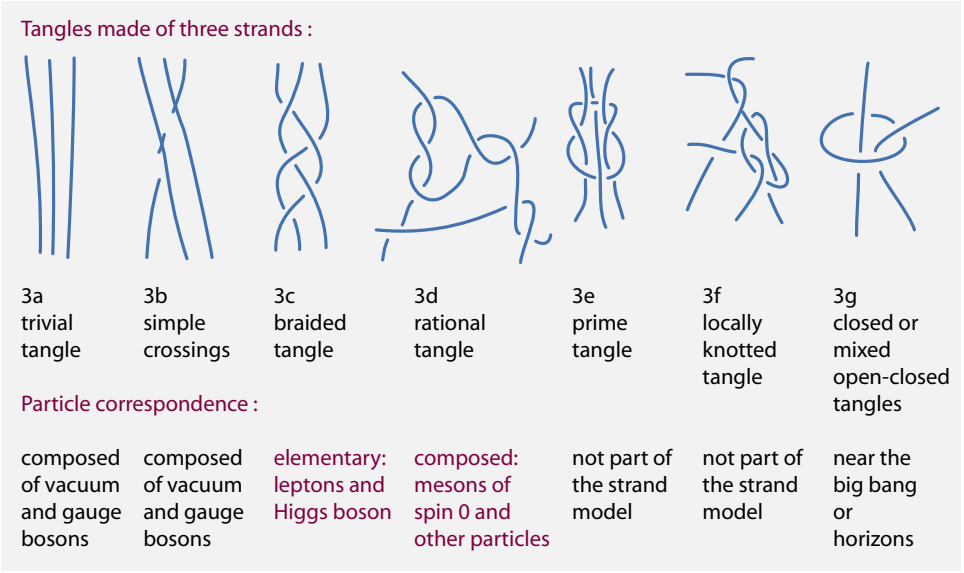


FIGURE 89 Examples for all the classes of tangles made of three strands.

PARTICLES MADE OF THREE STRANDS

In the strand model, the next group are particles made of *three* strands. Examples for all classes of three-stranded tangles are given in Figure 89. Several classes of three-stranded tangles turn out to be composites of two-stranded particles. However, a number of tangles are new and represent elementary particles.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

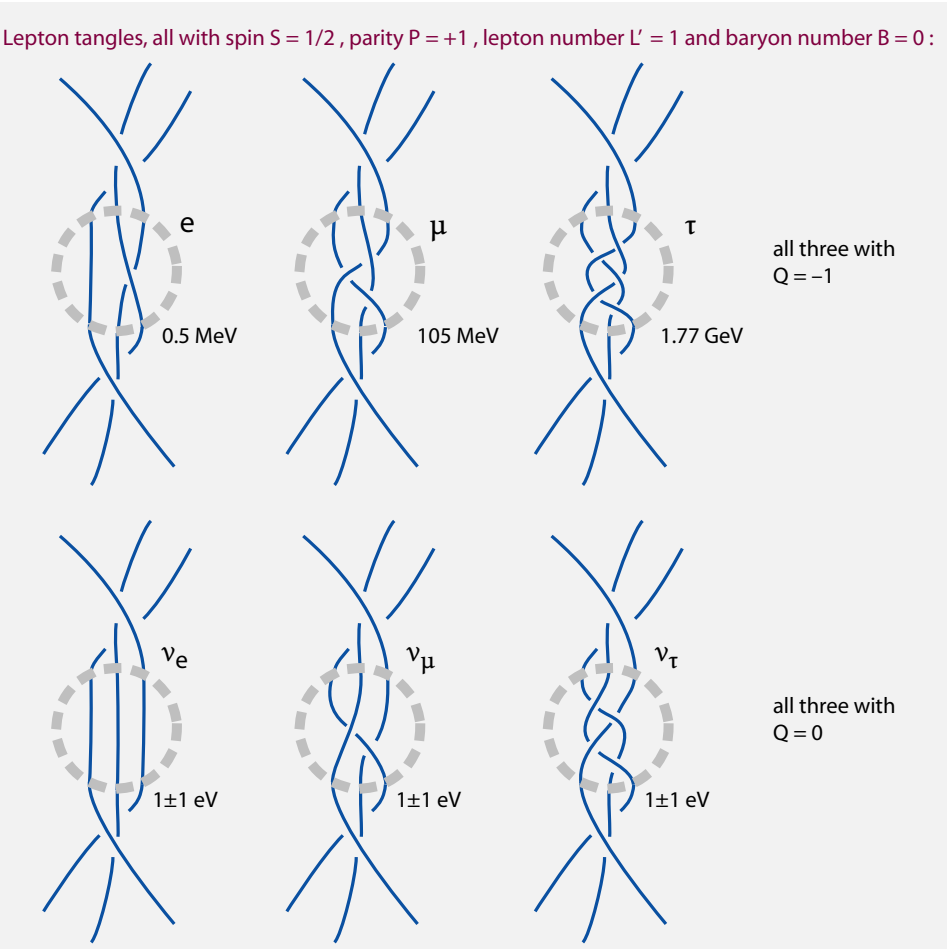

Lepton tangles, all with spin S = 1/2 , parity P = +1 , lepton number L' = 1 and baryon number B = 0 :
e
μ
τ
0.5 MeV
105 MeV
1.77 GeV
all three with
Q = –1
νe
νμ
ντ
1±1 eV
1±1 eV
1±1 eV
all three with
Q = 0
Seen from a larger distance, the tails follow (on average) the x, y and z axes of a coordinate system.

FIGURE 90 The simplest tangles of the leptons, with the experimental mass values. Antileptons are mirror tangles.

Leptons

The candidate tangles for the leptons shown in Figure 90 are the simplest possible non-trivial tangles with three strands. These lepton tangles are simple braids with tails reaching the border of space. The six tails probably point along the coordinate axes. These braided tangles have the following properties.

— Each lepton is localized. Each lepton has mass and has spin 1/2, two possible chiralities (spin orientations), and weak charge. Each lepton thus follows the Dirac equation.
— Leptons and antileptons differ. In particular, neutrinos and antineutrinos differ, and – again – both are predicted to show both chiralities.
— Three of the tangles are topologically chiral, thus electrically charged, and three other

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

tangles are topologically achiral, thus uncharged.
— The spatial parity P of the charged lepton tangles is opposite to that of their antiparticles.
— Being made of three strands, lepton tangles have vanishing colour charge and vanishing baryon number.
— In contrast to quarks, lepton tangles can be inserted in the vacuum using a localized, i.e., finite amount of energy and are thus predicted to exist as free particles.
— The three types of lepton (flavour) numbers can be assigned as usual; the lepton numbers are conserved in reactions, apart for neutrino mixing effects, as we will see below.
— The strand model predicts that the electron, the charged tangle with the lowest mass, is stable, as there is no way for it to decay and conserve charge and spin. The other two generations are predicted to be unstable, due to weak decays that simplify their topology.
— The number of generations is reproduced by the strand model, as every more complicated braid can be seen as equivalent to one of the first six braids, with the same leather trick/Higgs argument that limits the number of quarks.
— There is a natural mapping between the six quarks and the six leptons that appears if the final bend of the 'longer' quark strand is extended to the border of space, thus transforming a two-stranded quark braid into a three-stranded lepton braid. Thus we get three common generations for quarks and leptons.
— The neutrino strands differ by tail braiding; the strand model thus predicts that the weak interaction mixes neutrinos.
— All lepton tangles differ from each other. Thus the mass values are different for each lepton.
— Due to the small amount of tangling, the strand model predicts that the masses of the leptons are much smaller than those of the W and Z boson. This is indeed observed. (This also suggests a relation between the mass and the total curvature of a tight tangle.)
— The simplest tangle for the electron neutrino also suggests that the mass values for the electron neutrino is naturally small, as its tangle is almost not tangled.
— The strand model predicts that lepton masses increase with the generation number. Since the neutrino masses are not precisely known, this prediction cannot yet be checked.

In summary, tangles of three strands have precisely the quantum numbers and properties of leptons. In particular, the strand model predicts exactly three generations of leptons, and neutrinos are predicted to be Dirac particles. This implies that searches for the neutrino-less double beta decay should yield negative results, that the magnetic moments of the neutrinos should have the exceedingly small values predicted by the standard model of particle physics, and that rare muon and other decays should occur at the small rates predicted by the standard model.

Ref. 218

Ref. 219

Open challenge: Find better arguments for the lepton tangles

The argument that leads to the lepton tangles is vague. The tangle assignments might need corrections. (Improved tangles might solve the issue about the different charge

Page 370

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

FIGURE 91 A candidate tangle for the Higgs boson in the strand model: the open version (left) and the corresponding closed version (right). For the left version, the tails approach the six coordinate axes at infinity.

Challenge 193 ny definition for leptons that is mentioned below.) Can you improve the situation?

The Higgs boson – the mistaken section from 2009

The existence of the Higgs boson is predicted from the standard model of elementary particle physics using two arguments. First of all, the Higgs boson prevents unitarity violation in longitudinal W–W and Z–Z boson scattering. Secondly, the Higgs boson confirms the symmetry breaking mechanism of SU(2) and the related mass generation mechanism of fermions. Quantum field theory predicts that the Higgs boson has spin 0, has no electric or strong charge, and has positive C and P parity. In other words, the Higgs boson is predicted to have, apart from its weak charge, the same quantum numbers as the vacuum.

In the strand model, there seems to be only one possible candidate tangle for the Higgs boson, shown on the left of Figure 91. The tangle has positive C and P parity, and has vanishing electric and strong charge. The tangle also corresponds to the tangle added by the leather trick; it thus could be seen to visualize how the Higgs boson gives mass to the quarks and leptons. However, there are two issues with this candidate. First, the tangle is a deformed, higher-order version of the electron neutrino tangle. Secondly, the spin value is not 0. In fact, there is no way at all to construct a spin-0 tangle in the strand model. These issues lead us to reconsider the arguments for the existence of the Higgs boson altogether.

Page 243 We have seen that the strand model proposes a clear mechanism for mass generation:

▷ ***Mass*** is due to strand braiding.

This mechanism, due to the weak interaction, explains the W and Z boson mass ratio, Page 346 as we will see below. The leather trick that explains fermion masses can be seen as the addition of a sixfold tail braiding. In particular, the rarity of the braiding process explains why particle masses are so much smaller than the Planck mass. In short, the strand model explains mass *without* a Higgs boson.

If the Higgs boson does not exist, how is the unitarity of longitudinal W and Z boson scattering maintained? The strand model states that interactions of tangles in particle collisions are described by deformations of tangles. Tangle deformations in turn are de- Page 202 scribed by unitary operators. Therefore, the strand model predicts that unitarity is never violated in nature. In particular, the strand model automatically predicts that the scat-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

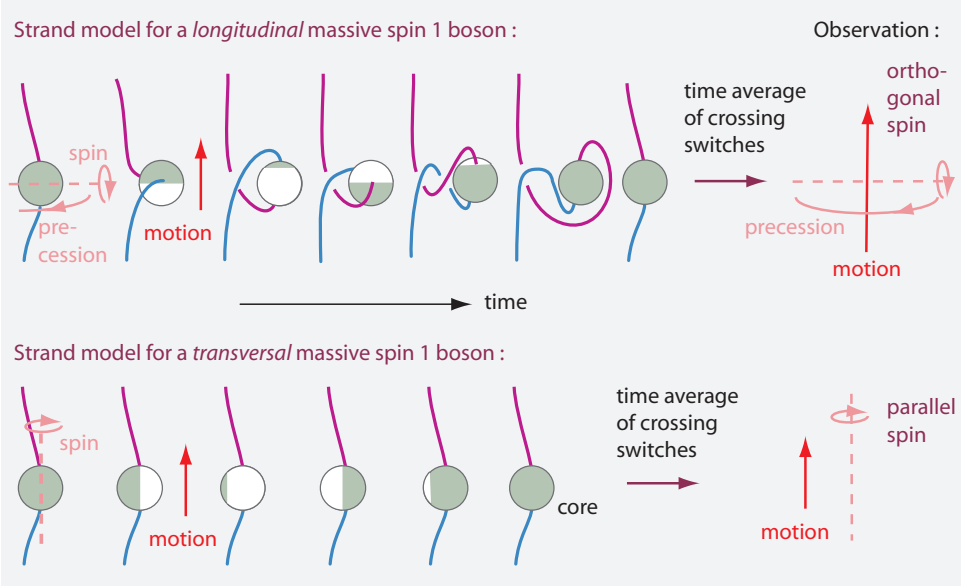


FIGURE 92 In the strand model, transverse and longitudinal W and Z bosons differ. (Note added in 2012: this statement is mistaken.)

tering of longitudinal W or Z bosons does *not* violate unitarity.

In other terms, the strand model predicts that the conventional argument about unitarity violation, which requires a Higgs boson, must be wrong. How can this be? There are at least two loopholes available in the research literature, and the strand model realizes them both.

Ref. 220

The first known loophole is the appearance of non-perturbative effects. It is known for a long time that non-perturbative effects can mimic the existence of a Higgs boson in usual, perturbative approximations. In this case, the standard model could remain valid at high energy without the Higgs sector. This type of electroweak symmetry breaking would lead to longitudinal W and Z scattering that does not violate unitarity.

Ref. 221

The other loophole in the unitarity argument appears when we explore the details of the longitudinal scattering process. In the strand model, longitudinal and transverse W or Z bosons are modelled as shown in Figure 92. For longitudinal bosons, spin and its precession leads to a different situation than transversal bosons: longitudinal bosons are *more delocalized* than transversal bosons. This is not the case for fermions, where the belt trick leads to the *same* delocalization for longitudinal and transverse polarization. Interestingly, it is also known for a long time that different delocalization for longitudinal and transversal bosons *maintains* scattering unitarity, and that in the case of delocalization the conventional argument for the necessity of the Higgs boson is wrong. These are well-known consequences of the so-called *non-local regularization* in quantum field theory. The strand model thus provides a specific model for this non-locality, and at the same time explains why it *only* appears for longitudinal W and Z bosons.

Ref. 222

The issue of different scattering behaviour for longitudinal and transverse weak bosons also raises the question whether the mass of the longitudinal and the transversal

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

bosons are precisely equal. The possibility, triggered by Figure 92, might seem appealing at first sight in order to solve the unitarity problem. However, the strand model forbids such a mass difference. In the strand model, mass is due to tangle fluctuations, but does not depend on spin direction.

In other words, the strand model predicts that the scattering of longitudinal W and Z bosons is the first system that will show effects specific to the strand model. Such precision scattering experiments might be possible at the Large Hadron Collider in Geneva. These experiments will allow checking the *non-perturbative effects* and the *regularization effects* predicted by the strand model. For example, the strand model predicts that the wave function of a longitudinal and a transversally polarized W or Z boson of the same energy differ in cross section.

In summary, the strand model predicts well-behaved scattering amplitudes for longitudinal W and Z boson scattering in the TeV region, together with the absence of the Higgs boson.* The strand model explains mass generation and lack of unitarity violations in longitudinal W or Z boson scattering as consequences of tail braiding, i.e., as non-perturbative and non-local effects, and not as consequences of an elementary spin-0 Higgs boson. The forthcoming experiments at the Large Hadron Collider in Geneva will test this prediction.

The Higgs boson – the corrected section of 2012

In July 2012, CERN researchers from two different experiments announced the observation of a new neutral boson with a mass of 125 GeV. Additional data analysis showed that the boson has spin 0 and positive parity. All experimental checks confirm that the boson behaves like the Higgs boson predicted in 1964 by Peter Higgs and a number of other researchers.

The results lead to question several statements made in 2009 in the previous section.

— Is the tangle on the left-hand side of Figure 91 really a higher order version of the electron neutrino? It seems that this statement is wrong: in contrast to the tangle of the neutrino, the tangle of Figure 91 is achiral.
— Does the tangle of Figure 93 have spin 1/2 or spin 0? As mentioned already in 2009, an effective spin 0 might be possible, in a similar way that it is possible for spin-0 mesons. Spin 0 behaviour appears because the tangle can be oriented in different directions; the time average of these orientations has spherical symmetry.
— Does the tangle of Figure 93 have the correct, positive, C and P values expected for a Higgs boson? It seems so.
— Is the mentioned non-locality effect for W and Z bosons real? If the effect were real, it should also appear for other spin-1 particles. In the strand model, mass values should not depend on spin orientation, but only on tangle core topology. The statements made in 2009 on delocalization and longitudinal scattering seem wrong in retrospect.

* If the arguments against the Higgs boson turn out to be wrong, then the strand model might be saved with a dirty trick: we could argue that the tangle on the left-hand side of Figure 91 might effectively have spin 0. In this case, the ropelength of the Borromean rings, 29.03, together with the ropelengths of the weak bosons, lead to a Higgs mass prediction, to first order, in the range from $(29.03/10.1)^{1/3} \cdot 80.4\,\text{GeV} = 114\,\text{GeV}$ to $(29.03/13.7)^{1/3} \cdot 91.2\,\text{GeV} = 117\,\text{GeV}$, plus or minus a few per cent.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

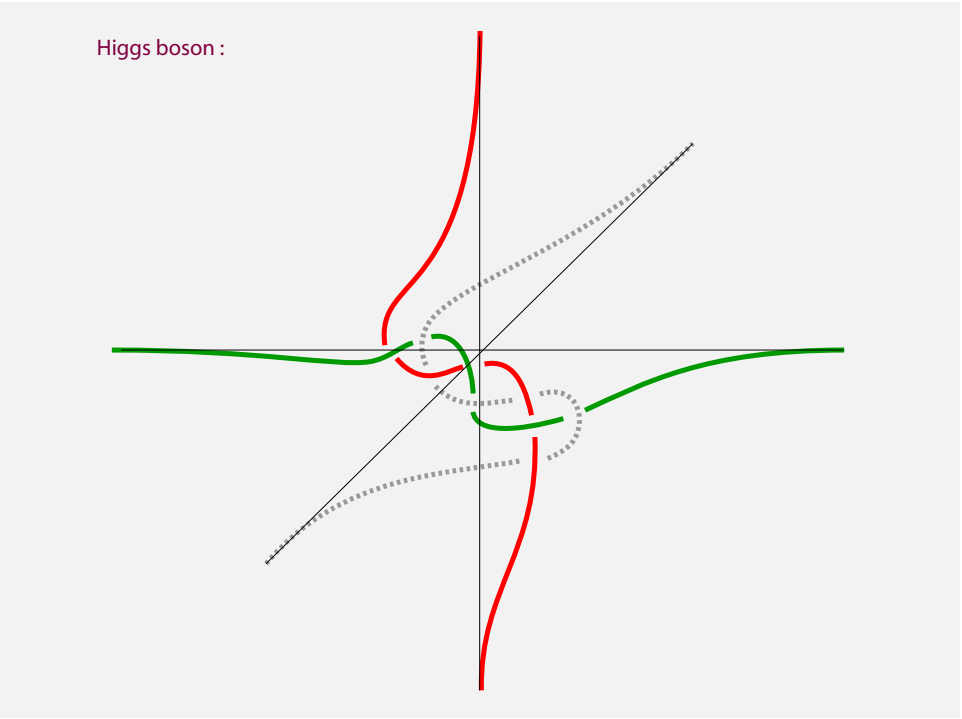


FIGURE 93 The tangle of the Higgs boson in the strand model. Spin 0 appears because the braid can be oriented in different directions, so that the time average has spherical symmetry. The tangle has 9 crossings: 3 crossings appear already in the vacuum configuration of three strands, and the additional 6 crossings are due to the Higgs boson.

— Would the Higgs boson tangle assignment of Figure 93 be testable? Yes; any tangle assignment must yield the observed mass value and the observed branching ratios and decay rates. This is a subject of research. But already at the qualitative level, the proposed tangle structure of the Higgs boson suggests decays into leptons that are similar to those observed at CERN.
— Is the tangle of Figure 93 elementary? Yes.
— Are there other possible Higgs boson tangles? This issue is open. The braid structure seems the most appealing structure, as it embodies the effect of tail braiding, an effect that is important for the appearance of mass.
Page 353
— Are knots and links, i.e., closed tangles, really forbidden? The discussion about the Higgs boson concerns the open tangle shown in Figure 93, not the Borromean link shown on the right-hand side of Figure 91. So far, there is no evidence for closed tangles in the strand model. Such evidence would mean a departure from the idea that nature is a single strand.
— Does the Higgs boson issue put into question the strand model as a whole? First of all, SU(2) breaking is unaffected. Secondly, a mistaken tangle–particle assignment can be accommodated in the strand model; new forces or symmetries cannot. Therefore the strand model is not put into question.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— Could several, possibly charged, Higgs bosons exist? No such tangles seem possible – as long as a tangle with *two* Figure 93 Higgs cores in sequence is not a separate particle.
— Has some other strand model effect been overlooked? Could other elementary or composed particles exist? For example, the structure of the Higgs boson might be seen to suggest that lepton families reappear (roughly) every 125 GeV. Is that the case? The issue is not completely settled. It seems more probable that those higher tangles simply yield corrections to the Higgs mass.

In short, the existence of the standard model Higgs boson seems compatible with the strand model. The 2009 mistake about the Higgs also shows that the exploration of the strand model is not yet complete. In any case, the strand model has not been falsified by the discovery of the Higgs boson.

Page 322 Assuming that the Higgs tangle shown in Figure 93 is correct, we have an intuitive proposal for the mechanism that produces mass, namely *tail braiding*. The proposed Higgs tangle also allows a number of experimental predictions.

2012 predictions about the Higgs

— The Higgs tangle implies a Higgs boson with vanishing charge, positive parity, being elementary – as is observed.
— The Higgs tangle allows us to estimate the Higgs/Z mass ratio. Using the original knotted model for the W and Z bosons, the estimates are in the region of the observed values. Determining the estimates is still subject of research.
— The Higgs tangle and the strand model imply that the standard model is correct up to Planck energy, and that the Higgs mass value should reflect this. The observed Higgs mass of 125 GeV complies also with this expectation.
— Therefore, the strand model suggests that no deviations between the standard model and data should ever be observed in any experiment.
— The strand model again and consistently predicts the lack of supersymmetry.
— In case that several Higgs bosons exist or that the Higgs tangle does not apply, the strand model is in trouble.
— In case that effects, particles or interactions beyond the standard model are observed, the strand model is in trouble.

Quark-antiquark mesons

In the strand model, all three-stranded tangles apart from the leptons, as well as all four-stranded tangles represent *composite* particles. The first example are *mesons*.

In the strand model, rational tangles of three strands are quark-antiquark mesons with spin 0. The quark tangles yield a simple model of these *pseudoscalar* mesons, shown on the left-hand sides of Figure 94, Figure 96 and Figure 97. The right-hand sides of the figures show *vector* mesons, thus with spin 1, that consist of *four* strands. All tangles are rational. Inside mesons, quarks and antiquarks 'bond' at three spots that form a triangle oriented perpendicularly to the bond direction and to the paper plane. To increase clarity, the 'bonds' are drawn as circles in the figures; however, they consist of two crossed (linked) tails of the involved strands that reach the border of space, as shown in Figure 95.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

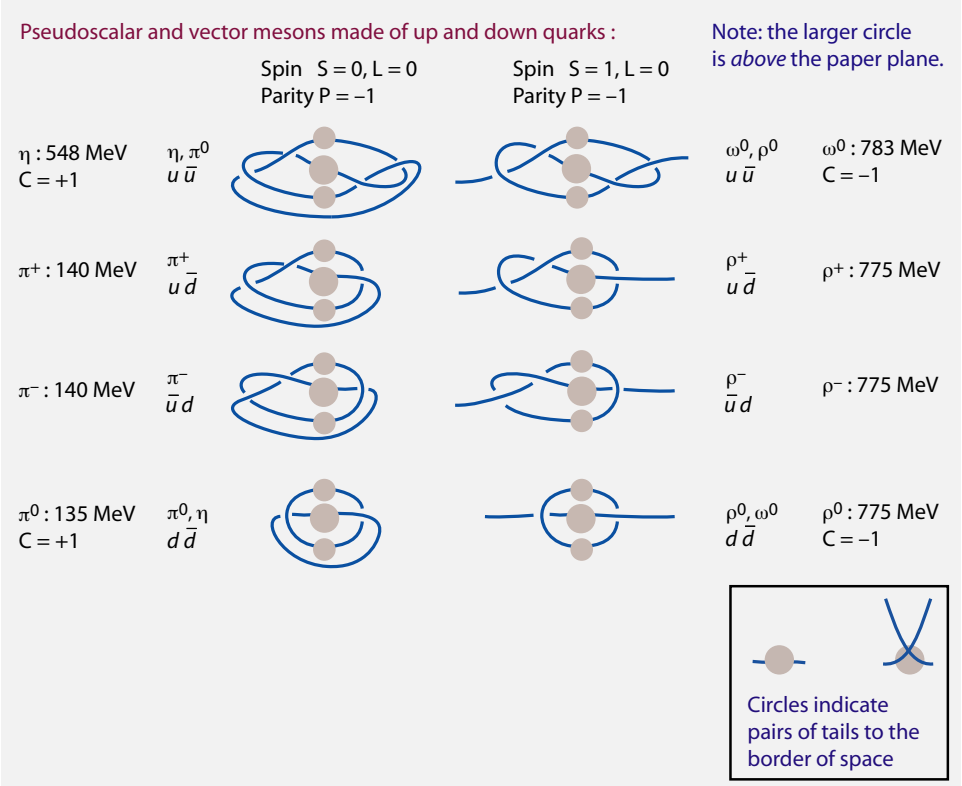


FIGURE 94 The simplest strand models for the light pseudoscalar and vector mesons (circles indicate crossed tail pairs to the border of space), with the observed mass values.

With this construction, mesons made of two quarks are only possible for the type $\overline{q}\,q$. Ref. 223 Other combinations, such as $q\,q$ or $\overline{q}\,\overline{q}$, turn out to be unlinked. We note directly that Ref. 224 this model of mesons resembles the original string model of hadrons from 1973, but also Ref. 225 the Lund string model and the recent QCD string model.

To compare the meson structures with experimental data, we explore the resulting quantum numbers. As in quantum field theory, also in the strand model the parity of a particle is the product of the intrinsic parities and of wave function parity. The states with orbital angular momentum $L = 0$ are the lowest states. Experimentally, the lightest mesons have quantum numbers $J^{PC} = 0^{-+}$, and thus are pseudoscalars, or have $J^{PC} = 1^{--}$, and thus are vector mesons. The strand model reproduces these observed quantum numbers. (We note that the spin of any composite particle, such as a meson, is low-energy quantity; to determine it from the composite tangle, the tails producing the bonds – drawn as circles in the figures – must be neglected. As a result, the low-energy spin of mesons and of baryons is correctly reproduced by the strand model.)

In the strand model, the meson states are colour-neutral, or 'white', by construction, because the quark and the antiquark, in all orientations, always have opposite colours that add up to white.

In the strand model, the electric charge is an integer for all mesons. Chiral tangles are

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

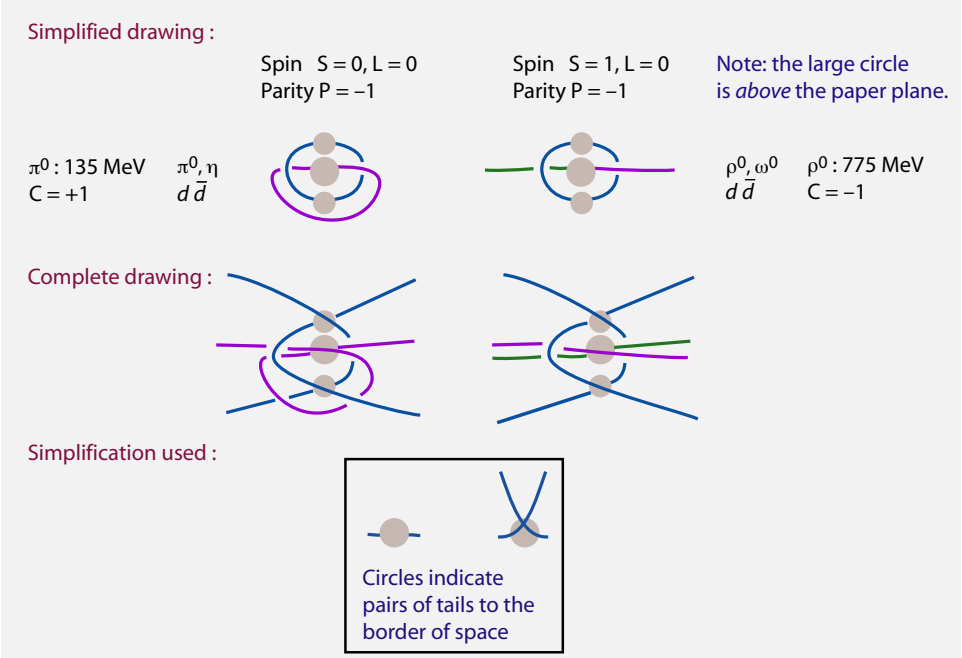

Simplified drawing :
Spin S = 0, L = 0
Parity P = –1
Spin S = 1, L = 0
Parity P = –1
Note: the large circle is *above* the paper plane.
π^0 : 135 MeV
C = +1
π^0, η
$d\,\bar{d}$
ρ^0, ω^0
$d\,\bar{d}$
ρ^0 : 775 MeV
C = –1
Complete drawing :
Simplification used :
Circles indicate pairs of tails to the border of space

FIGURE 95 The meaning of the circles used in the tangle graphs of mesons and baryons.

charged, achiral tangles uncharged. The charge values deduced from the strand model thus reproduce the observed ones.

In experiments, no mesons with quantum numbers 0^{--}, 0^{+-}, or 1^{-+} are observed. Also this observation is reproduced by the quark tangles, as is easily checked by direct inspection. The strand model thus reproduces the very argument that once was central to the acceptance of the quark model itself.

It is important to realize that in the strand model, each meson is represented by a *tangle family* consisting of *several* tangle structures. This has three reasons. First, the 'circles' can be combined in different ways. For example, both the $u\,\overline{u}$ and the $d\,\overline{d}$ have as alternate structure a line plus a ring. This common structure is seen as the underlying reason that these two quark structures *mix*, as is indeed observed. (The same structure is also possible for $s\,\overline{s}$, and indeed, a full description of these mesons must include mixing with this state as well.) The second reason that mesons have several structures are the mentioned, more complicated braid structures possible for each quark, namely with 6, 12, etc. additional braid crossings. The third reason for additional tangle structures is the occurrence of higher-order Feynman diagrams of the weak interaction, which add yet another group of more complicated topologies that also belong to each meson.

In short, the mesons structures of Figure 94, Figure 96 and Figure 97 are only the *simplest* tangles for each meson. Nevertheless, all tangles, both the simplest and the more complicated meson tangles, reproduce spin values, parities, and all the other quantum numbers of mesons. Indeed, in the strand model, the more complicated tangles automatically share the quantum numbers of the simplest one.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

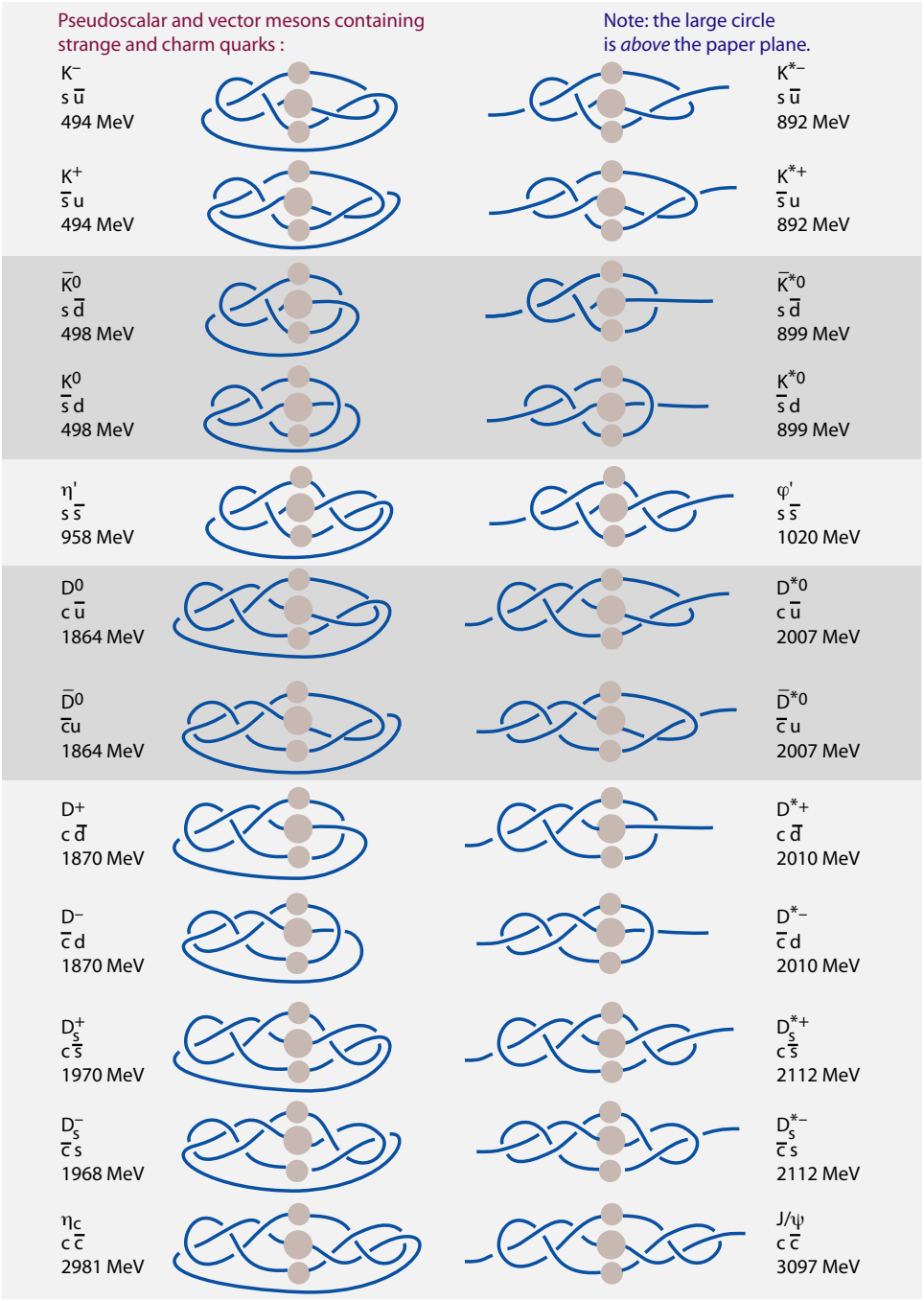

Pseudoscalar and vector mesons containing strange and charm quarks :
Note: the large circle is *above* the paper plane.
K^- $s\bar{u}$ 494 MeV
K^{*-} $s\bar{u}$ 892 MeV
K^+ $\bar{s}u$ 494 MeV
K^{*+} $\bar{s}u$ 892 MeV
$\bar{K}^0$ $s\bar{d}$ 498 MeV
$\bar{K}^{*0}$ $s\bar{d}$ 899 MeV
K^0 $\bar{s}d$ 498 MeV
K^{*0} $\bar{s}d$ 899 MeV
η' $s\bar{s}$ 958 MeV
φ' $s\bar{s}$ 1020 MeV
D^0 $c\bar{u}$ 1864 MeV
D^{*0} $c\bar{u}$ 2007 MeV
$\bar{D}^0$ $\bar{c}u$ 1864 MeV
$\bar{D}^{*0}$ $\bar{c}u$ 2007 MeV
D^+ $c\bar{d}$ 1870 MeV
D^{*+} $c\bar{d}$ 2010 MeV
D^- $\bar{c}d$ 1870 MeV
D^{*-} $\bar{c}d$ 2010 MeV
D_s^+ $c\bar{s}$ 1970 MeV
D_s^{*+} $c\bar{s}$ 2112 MeV
D_s^- $\bar{c}s$ 1968 MeV
D_s^{*-} $\bar{c}s$ 2112 MeV
η_c $c\bar{c}$ 2981 MeV
J/ψ $c\bar{c}$ 3097 MeV

FIGURE 96 The simplest strand models for strange and charmed mesons with vanishing orbital angular momentum. Mesons on the left side have spin 0 and negative parity; mesons on the right side have spin 1 and also negative parity. Circles indicate crossed tail pairs to the border of space; grey boxes indicate tangles that mix with their antiparticles and which are thus predicted to show CP violation.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

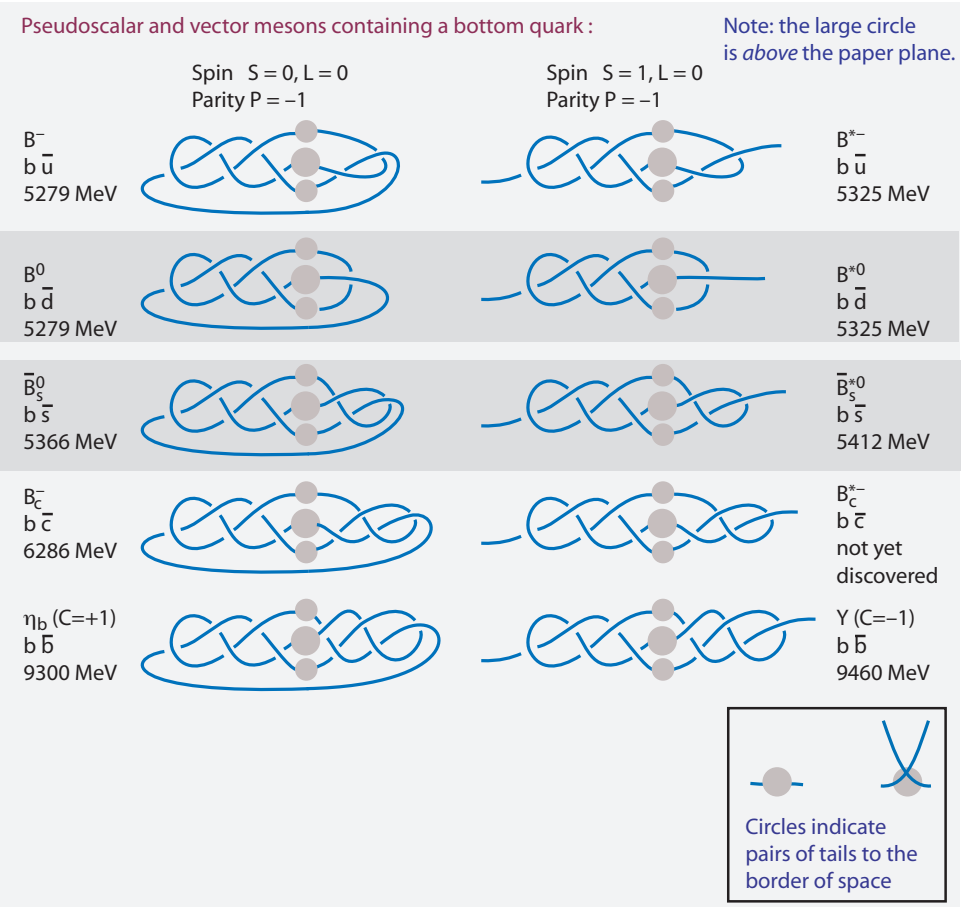


FIGURE 97 The simplest strand models for some heavy pseudoscalar and vector mesons, together with their experimental mass values. Antiparticles are not drawn; their tangles are mirrors of the particle tangles. Circles indicate crossed tail pairs to the border of space; grey boxes indicate tangles that mix with their antiparticles and which are thus predicted to show CP violation.

Meson form factors

The strand model also predicts directly that all mesons from Figure 94, Figure 96 and Figure 97, in fact all mesons with vanishing orbital momentum, are *prolate*. This (unsurprising) result is agreement with observations. Mesons with non-vanishing orbital momentum are also predicted to be prolate. This latter prediction about meson shapes is made also by all other meson models, but has not yet been checked by experiment. Ref. 226

There is another way to put what we have found so far. The strand model makes the following prediction: When the meson tangles are averaged over time, the crossing densities reproduce the measured spatial, quark flavour, spin and colour part of the meson wave functions. This prediction can be checked against measured form factors and against lattice QCD calculations.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Meson masses, excited mesons and quark confinement

The strand model also allows us to understand meson masses. We recall that a *topologically complicated* tangle implies a *large* mass. With this relation, Figure 94 predicts that the π^0, η and $\pi^{+/-}$ have different masses and follow the observed meson mass sequence $m(\pi^0) < m(\pi^{+/-}) < m(\eta)$. The other mass sequences can be checked with the help of Figure 94, Figure 96 and Figure 97; there are no contradictions with observations. However, there is one limit case: the strand model predicts different masses for the ρ^0, ω, and $\rho^{+/-}$. So far, observations only partly confirm the prediction. Recent precision experiments seem to suggest that ρ^0 and $\rho^{+/-}$ have different mass; this result has not been confirmed yet.

Ref. 227

More precise mass determinations will be possible with numerical calculations. This will be explored in more detail later on. In any case, the strand model for mesons suggests that the quark masses are not so important for the determination of meson masses, whereas the details of the quark-antiquark bond are. Indeed, the light meson and baryon masses are much higher than the masses of the constituent quarks.

Page 344

The relative unimportance of quark masses for many meson masses is also confirmed for the case of *excited* mesons, i.e., for mesons with orbital angular momentum L. It is well known that mesons of non-vanishing orbital angular momentum can be grouped into sets which have the same quark content, but different total angular momentum $J = L + S$. These families are observed to follow a well-known relation between total angular momentum J and mass m, called *Regge trajectories*:

$$J = \alpha_0 + \alpha_1 m^2 \tag{199}$$

Ref. 228

with an (almost) constant factor α_1 for all mesons, about 0.9 GeV/fm. These relations, the famous *Regge trajectories*, are explained in quantum chromodynamics as deriving from the linear increase with distance of the effective potential between quarks, thus from the properties of the relativistic harmonic oscillator. The linear potential itself is usually seen as a consequence of a fluxtube-like bond between quarks.

In the strand model, the fluxtube-like bond between the quarks is built-in automatically, as shown in Figure 98. All mesons have three connecting 'bonds' and these three bonds can be seen as forming one common string tube. In the simplified drawings, the bond or string tube is the region containing the circles. In orbitally excited mesons, the three bonds are expected to lengthen and thus to produce additional crossing changes, thus additional effective mass. The strand model also suggests a *linear* relation. Since the mechanism is expected to be similar for all mesons, which all have three bonding circles, the strand model predicts the *same* slope for all meson (and baryon) Regge trajectories. This is indeed observed.

In summary, the strand model reproduces meson mass sequences and quark confinement in its general properties.

CP violation in mesons

Ref. 229

In the weak interaction, the product CP of C and P parity is usually conserved. However, rare exceptions are observed for the decay of the K^0 meson and in various processes

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

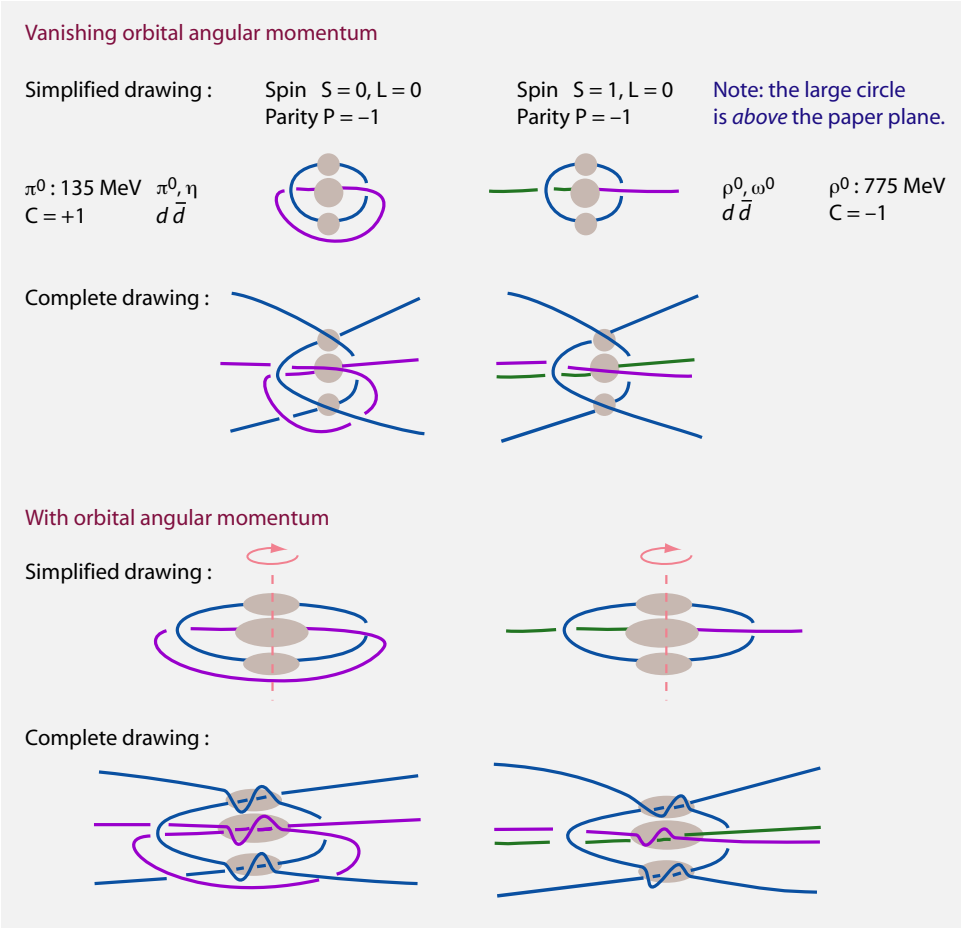


FIGURE 98 The strand model for mesons without (top) and with (bottom) orbital angular momentum.

that involve the B^0 and B_s^0 mesons. In each of these exceptions, the meson is found to mix with its own antiparticle. CP violation is essential to explain the matter–antimatter asymmetry of the universe.

Ref. 227

The strand model allows us to deduce whether the mixing of a meson with its own antiparticle is possible or not. As expected, only neutral mesons are candidates for such mixing, because of charge conservation. In the strand model, particle–antiparticle mixing is possible whenever the transition from a neutral meson to its antiparticle is possible in *two* ways: by taking the mirror of the meson tangle or by shifting the position of the binding strands. All mesons for which this is possible are shown in grey boxes in Figure 94, Figure 96 and Figure 97. The strand model also makes it clear that such mixing requires shifting of the bonds; this is a low-probability process that is due to the weak interaction. The strand model thus predicts that the weak interaction violates CP invariance in mesons that mix with their antiparticles.

Since the spin 1 mesons decay strongly and thus do not live long enough, the small

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

effect of CP violation is de facto only observed in pseudoscalar, spin-0 mesons. The strand model thus predicts observable mixings and CP violation for the mesons pairs $K^0 - \overline{K}^0$, $D^0 - \overline{D}^0$, $B^0 - \overline{B}^0$, $B_s^0 - \overline{B}_s^0$. The prediction by the strand model corresponds precisely to those systems for which CP violation is actually observed. (CP violation in *D* mesons was finally discovered at CERN in 2011, after it was predicted both by the standard model and the strand model, in earlier editions of this volume.)

Ref. 227

In the strand model, meson–antimeson mixing is possible because the various quarks are braided strands. Because of this braid structure, the existence of meson–antimeson mixing is a consequence of the existence of three quark generations. The meson structures also make it clear that such mixings would not be possible if there were no third quark generation. The strand model thus reproduces the usual explanation of CP violation as the result of three quark generations.

For the strong and the electromagnetic interaction, the strand model predicts that there is no mixing and no CP violation, because gluons and photons do not change particle topology. Therefore, the strand model suggests the absence of axions. The lack of a suitable tangle for axions, shown later on, then turns this suggestions into a prediction.

Page 342

In summary, the existence of CP violation in the weak interactions and the lack of CP violation in the strong interaction are natural consequences of the strand model.

Other three-stranded tangles and glueballs

In the strand model, the aditted complicated tangles made of three strands are either higher-order propagating versions of the tangles just presented or composites of one-stranded or two-stranded particles.

The often conjectured glueball could also be made of three gluons. In the strand model, such a structure would be a simple tangle made of three strands. However, the masslessness of gluons does not seem to allow such a tangle. The argument is not watertight, however, and the issue is, as mentioned above, still subject of research.

Page 314

Spin and three-stranded particles

Why do three strands sometimes form a spin 0 particle, such as the elementary Higgs boson, sometimes a spin 1/2 particle, such as the elementary electron, and sometimes a spin 1 particle, such as a composed meson? The answer depends on how the strands are free to move against each other. Can you specify the details?

Challenge 194 ny

Summary on three-stranded tangles

Compared to two-stranded tangles, one *new class* of *elementary* particles appears for three strands; the new class is somewhat less tangled than general rational tangles but still more tangled than the trivial vacuum tangle: the *braided tangles*. Braided tangles represent the Higgs boson and the leptons; the tangles reproduce all their observed quantum numbers. The braided tangles also imply that neutrinos and anti-neutrinos differ, are massive, and are Dirac particles.

The strand model (corrected in 2012) also predicts that, apart from the six leptons and one Higgs boson, no other elementary particle made of three strands exist in nature.

Page 321

In the case of *composite* particles made of three strands, the strand model proposes

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

tangles for all pseudoscalar mesons; the resulting quantum numbers and mass sequences match the observed values. In the spectrum of composite particles, the glueball issue is not completely settled.

TANGLES OF FOUR AND MORE STRANDS

If we add one or more strand to a three-strand tangle, no additional class of tangles appears. The tangle classes remain the same as in the three-strand case. In other words, *no additional elementary particles* arise in the strand model. To show this, we start our exploration with the *rational* tangles.

We saw above that the rational tangles made of four strands represent the vector mesons. We have already explored them together with the scalar mesons. But certain more complicated rational tangles are also important in nature, as we consist of them.

Baryons

In the strand model, rational tangles made of five or six strands are baryons. The quark tangles of the strand model yield the tangles for baryons in a natural way, as Figure 99 shows. Again, not all quark combinations are possible. First of all, quark tangles do not allow mixed $q\,q\,\overline{q}$ or $q\,\overline{q}\,\overline{q}$ structures, but only $q\,q\,q$ or $\overline{q}\,\overline{q}\,\overline{q}$ structures. In addition, the tangles do not allow (fully symmetric) spin 1/2 states for $u\,u\,u$ or $d\,d\,d$, but only spin 3/2 states. The model also naturally predicts that there are only two spin 1/2 baryons made of u and d quarks. All this corresponds to observation. The tangles for the simplest baryons are shown in Figure 99.

The electric charges of the baryons are reproduced. In particular, the tangle topologies imply that the proton has the same charge as the positron. Neutral baryons have topologically achiral structures; nevertheless, the neutron differs from its antiparticle, as can be deduced from Figure 99, through its three-dimensional shape. The Δ baryons have different electric charges, depending on their writhe.

Page 369

Baryons are naturally colour-neutral, as observed. The model also shows that the baryon wave function usually cannot be factorized into a spin and quark part: the nucleons need *two* graphs to describe them, and tangle shapes play a role. Baryon parities are reproduced; the neutron and the antineutron differ. All this corresponds to known baryon behaviour. Also the observed baryon shapes (in other words, the baryon quadrupole moments) are reproduced by the tangle model.

Ref. 226

The particle masses of proton and neutron differ, because their topologies differ. However, the topological difference is 'small', as seen in Figure 99, so the mass difference is small. The topological difference between the various Δ baryons is even smaller, and indeed, their mass difference is barely discernible in experiments.

The strand model naturally yields the baryon octet and decuplet, as shown in Figure 100 and Figure 101. In general, complicated baryon tangles have higher mass than simpler ones, as shown in the figures; this is also the case for the baryons, not illustrated here, that include other quarks. And like for mesons, baryon Regge trajectories are due to 'stretching' and tangling of the binding strands. Since the bonds to each quark are again (at most) three, the model qualitatively reproduces the observation that the Regge

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

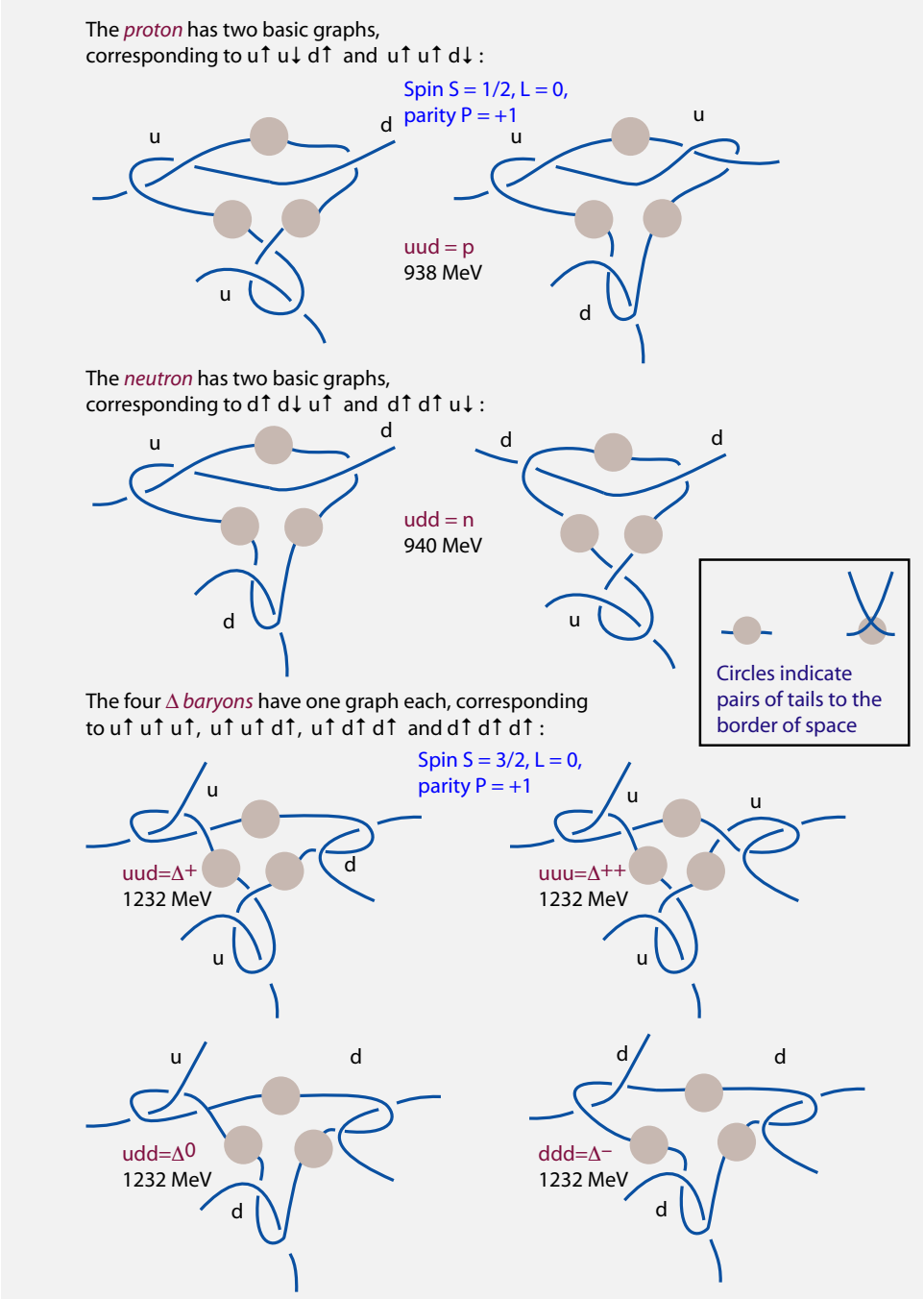


FIGURE 99 The simplest strand models for the lightest baryons made of up and down quarks (circles indicate linked tail pairs to the border of space), together with the measured mass values.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

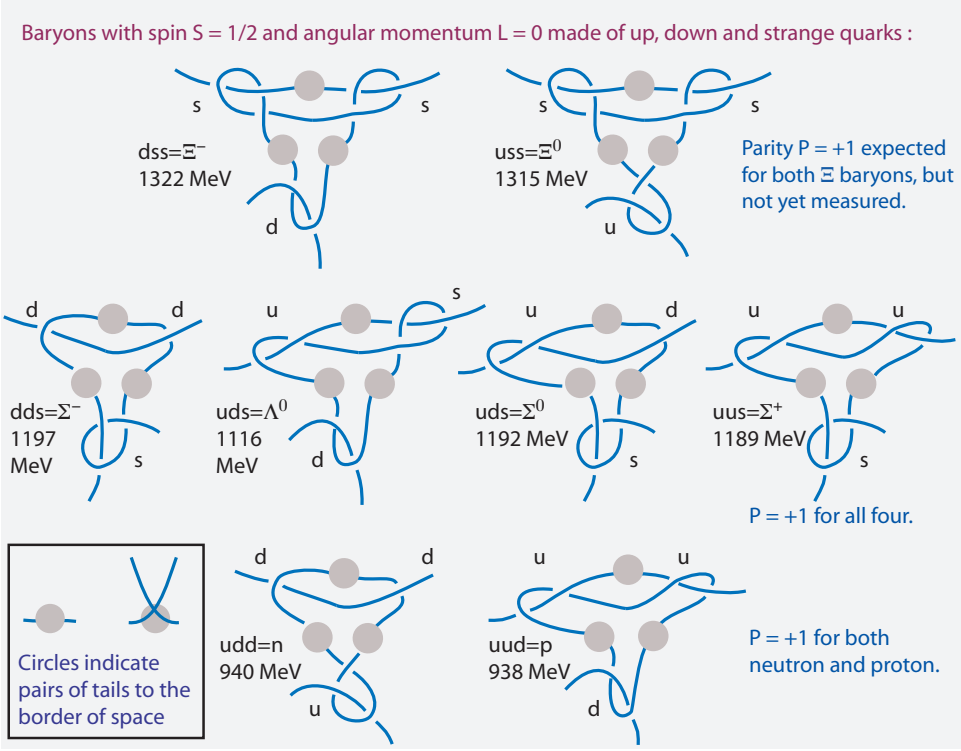


FIGURE 100 One tangle (only) for each baryon in the lowest J=L+S=1/2 baryon octet (circles indicate linked tail pairs to the border of space), together with the measured mass values.

slope for all baryons is the same and is equal to that for mesons. We note that this also implies that the quark masses play only a minor role in the generation of hadron masses; this old result from QCD is thus reproduced by the strand model.

The arguments presented so far only reproduce mass sequences, not mass values. Actual hadron mass calculations are possible with the strand model: it is necessary to compute the number of crossing changes each tangle produces. There is a chance, but no certainty, that such calculations might be simpler to implement than those of lattice QCD.

Tetraquarks and exotic mesons

Ref. 214 Ref. 230 Among the exotic mesons, tetraquarks are the most explored cases. It is now widely believed that the low-mass scalar mesons are tetraquarks. In the strand model, tetraquarks are possible; an example is given in Figure 102. This is a six-stranded rational tangle. Spin, parities and mass sequences from the strand model seem to agree with observations. If the arrangement of Figure 102 would turn out to be typical, the tetraquark looks more like a bound pair of two mesons and not like a state in which all four quarks are bound in equal way to each other. On the other hand, a tetrahedral arrangement of quarks might also be possible. The details of this topic are left for future exploration.

The strand model makes an additional statement: knotted (hadronic) strings in

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

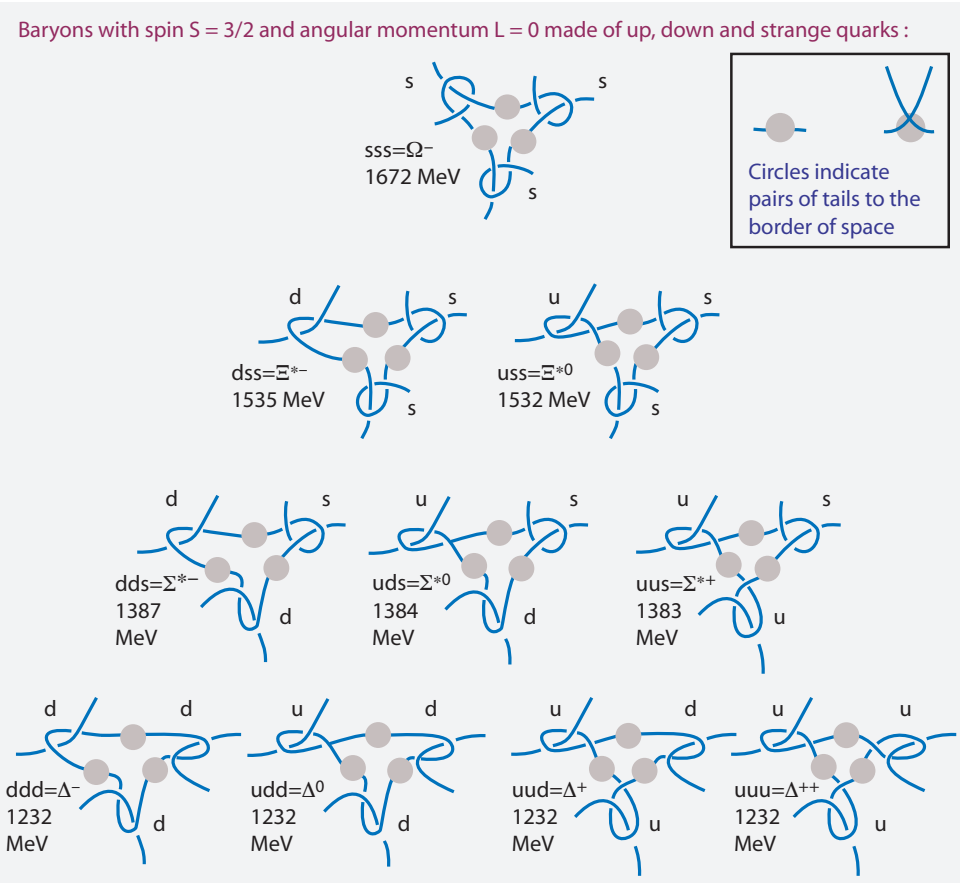


FIGURE 101 One tangle for each baryon in the lowest J=3/2 baryon decuplet (circles indicate linked tail pairs to the border of space), together with the measured mass values.

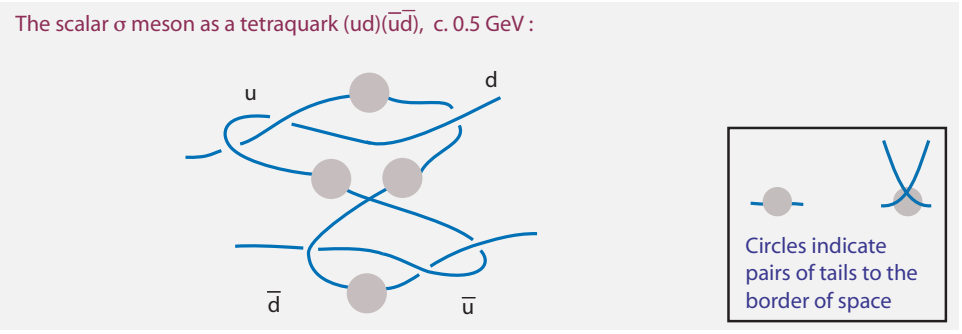


FIGURE 102 The strand model for a specific tetraquark (circles indicate linked tail pairs to the border of space).

Ref. 217 quark–antiquark states are impossible. Such states have been proposed by Niemi. In the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

strand model, such states would not be separate mesons, but usual mesons with one or several added virtual weak vector bosons. This type of exotic mesons is therefore predicted not to exist.

Page 314, page 330 The situation for glueballs, which are another type of exotic mesons, has already been discussed above.

Other tangles made of four or more strands

We do not need to explore other *prime* tangles or *locally knotted* tangles made of four or more strands. They are either not allowed or are higher-order versions of rational tangles, as explained already in the case of two and three strands. We also do not need to explore *separable* tangles. Separable tangles are composite of tangles with fewer strands.

One class of tangles remains to be discussed: *braided* tangles of four or more strands. Now, a higher-order perturbation of the weak interaction can always lead to the topological entanglement of some vacuum strand with a tangle of fewer strands. Braided tangles of four or more strands are thus higher-order propagating states of three-stranded leptons or hadrons.

We can also state this in another way. There are no tangles of four or more strands that are more tangled than the trivial tangle but less tangled than the lepton tangles. Therefore, no additional elementary particles are possible. In short, *the tangle model does not allow elementary particles with four or more strands.*

Summary on tangles made of four or more strands

By exploring all possible tangle classes in detail, we have shown that *every* localized structure made of strands has an interpretation in the strand model. In particular, the strand model makes a simple statement on any tangle made of four or more strands: such a tangle is *composite* of the elementary tangles made of one, two or three strands. In other terms, there are *no* elementary particles made of four or more strands in nature.

The strand model states that each possible tangle represents a physical particle system: an overview is given in Table 13. The mapping between tangles and particles is only possible because (infinitely) many tangles are assigned to each massive elementary particle.

The result of this exploration is that the strand model limits the number of elementary particles to those contained in the standard model of particle physics.

FUN CHALLENGES AND CURIOSITIES ABOUT PARTICLE TANGLES

In the strand model, mass appears due to tail braiding. But mass is also due to tangle rotation and fluctuation. How do the two definitions come together? Challenge 195 s

* *

In the strand model, only crossing switches are observable. How then can the specific tangle structure of a particle have any observable effects? In particular, how can

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 13 The match between tangles and particles in the strand model.

Strands	Tangle	Particle	Type
1	unknotted	elementary	vacuum, (unbroken) gauge boson
1	knotted	–	not in the strand model
2	unknotted	composed	composed of simpler tangles
2	rational	elementary	quark or graviton
2	prime, knotted	–	not in the strand model
3	unknotted	composed	composed of simpler tangles
3	braided	elementary	lepton
3	rational	elementary or composed	leptons
3	prime, knotted	–	not in the strand model
4 & more	like for 3 strands	all composed	composed of simpler tangles

quantum numbers be related to tangle structure, if the only observables are due to crossing changes? Challenge 196 e

* *

No neutral weak currents that change strangeness or other flavours are observed. In the strand model this observation is a consequence of the tangle shape of the Z boson.

* *

Ref. 231 In 2014, Marek Karliner predicted the existence of six-quark states. Can the strand model reproduce them? Can it settle whether they are molecules of three mesons or genuine six-quark states? Challenge 197 r

* *

Challenge 198 e Can you use the strand model to show that pentaquarks do not exist?

* *

Ref. 232 What is the relation of the model shown here to the ideas of Viro and Viro on skew lines?

* *

Ref. 233 The most prominent proponent of the idea that particles might be knots was, in 1868, William Thomson–Kelvin. He proposed the idea that different atoms might be differently 'knotted vortices' in the 'ether'. The proposal was ignored – and rightly so – because it did not explain anything: neither the properties nor the interactions of atoms were explained. The proposal simply had no relation to reality. In retrospect, the main reason for this failure was that elementary particles and quantum theory were unknown at the time.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

Purely topological models for elementary particles have been proposed and explored by various scholars in the past. But only a few researchers ever proposed specific topological structures for each elementary particle. Such proposals are easily criticized, so that it is easy to make a fool of oneself; any such proposal thus needs a certain amount of courage.

Ref. 234 — Herbert Jehle modelled elementary particles as closed knots already in the 1970s. However, his model did not reproduce quantum theory, nor does it reproduce all particles known today.

Ref. 143 — Ng Sze Kui has modelled mesons as knots. There is however, no model for quarks, leptons or bosons, nor a description for the gauge interactions.

— Tom Mongan has modelled elementary particles as made of three strands that each Ref. 235 carry electric charge. However, there is no connection with quantum field theory or general relativity.

— Jack Avrin has modelled hadrons and leptons as Moebius bands, and interactions Ref. 139 as cut-and-glue processes. The model however, does not explain the masses of the particles or the coupling constants.

Ref. 141 — Robert Finkelstein has modelled fermions as knots. This approach, however, does not explain the gauge properties of the interactions, nor most properties of elementary particles.

— Sundance Bilson-Thompson, later together with his coworkers, modelled elementary Ref. 140 fermions and bosons as structures of triple ribbons. The leather trick is used, like in the strand model, to explain the three generations of quarks and leptons. This is by far the most complete model from this list. However, the origin of particle mass, of particle mixing and, most of all, of the gauge interactions is not explained.

* *

Strands are *not* superstrings. In contrast to superstrings, strands have a fundamental principle. (This is the biggest conceptual difference.) The fundamental principle for strands is not fulfilled by superstrings. In contrast to superstrings, strands have no tension, no supersymmetry and no own Lagrangian. (This is the biggest physical difference.) Because strands have no tension, they cannot oscillate. Because strands have no supersymmetry, general relativity follows directly. Because strands have no own Lagrangian, particles are tangles, not oscillating superstrings, and quantum theory follows directly. In fact, the definitions of particles, wave functions, fields, vacuum, mass and horizons differ completely in the two approaches.

In contrast to superstrings, strands describe the number of gauge interactions and of particle generations. In contrast to superstrings, strands describe quarks, hadrons, confinement, Regge behaviour, asymptotic freedom, particle masses, particle mixing and coupling constants. In the strand model, in contrast to 'open superstrings', no important configuration has ends. In contrast to open or closed superstrings, strands move in three spatial dimensions, not in nine or ten; strands resolve the anomaly issue without higher dimensions or supersymmetry, because unitarity is automatically maintained, by construction; strands are not related to membranes or supermembranes. In the strand model, no strand is 'bosonic' or 'heterotic', there is no E(8) or SO(32) gauge group, there are no general 'pants diagrams' for all gauge interactions, there is no AdS/CFT duality,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

there is no 'landscape' with numerous vacuum states, and there is no 'multiverse'. In contrast to superstrings, strands are based on Planck units. And in contrast to superstrings, strands yield the standard model of elementary particles without any alternative. In fact, not a single statement about superstrings is applicable to strands.

Ref. 144

* *

Strands do not require higher dimensions. On the other hand, it can be argued that strands do produce an additional non-commutative structure at each point in space. In a sense, when strands are averaged over time, a non-commutative inner space is created at each point in space. As a result, when we focus at a specific spatial position over somewhat longer times scales than the Planck time, we can argue that, at that point of space, nature is described by a product of three-dimensional space with an internal, non-commutative space. Since many years, Alain Connes and his colleagues have explored such product spaces in detail. They have discovered that with an appropriately chosen non-commutative inner space, it is possible to reproduce many, but not all, aspects of the standard model of particle physics. Among others, choosing a suitable non-commutative space, they can reproduce the three gauge interactions; on the other hand, they cannot reproduce the three particle generations.

Ref. 236

Connes' approach and the strand model do not agree completely. One way to describe the differences is to focus on the relation of the inner spaces at different points of space. Connes' approach assumes that each point has its own inner space, and that these spaces are not related. The strand model, instead, implies that the inner spaces of neighbouring points are related; they are related by the specific topology and entanglement of the involved strands. For this very reason the strand model does allow to understand the origin of the three particle generations and the details of the particle spectrum.

There are further differences between the two approaches. Connes' approach assumes that quantum theory and general relativity, in particular, the Hilbert space and the spatial manifold, are given from the outset. The strand model, instead, deduces these structures from the fundamental principle. And, as just mentioned, Connes' approach is not unique or complete, whereas the strand model seems to be. Of the two, only the strand model seems to be unmodifiable, or 'hard to vary'.

* *

The strand model implies that there is *nothing new* at small distances. At small distances, or high energies, nature consists only of strands. Thus there are no new phenomena there. Quantum theory states that at small scales, nothing new appears: at small scales, there are *no* new degrees of freedom. For example, quantum theory states that there is no kingdom *Lilliput* in nature. The strand model thus confirms the essence of quantum theory. And indeed, the strand model predicts that between the energy scale of the heaviest elementary particle, the top quark, 173 GeV, and the Planck energy, 10^{19} GeV, nothing is to be found. There is a so-called *energy desert* – empty of interesting features, particles or phenomena – in nature.

* *

Most ropes used in sailing, climbing or other domains of everyday life are produced by braiding. Searching for 'braiding machine' on the internet yields a large amount of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

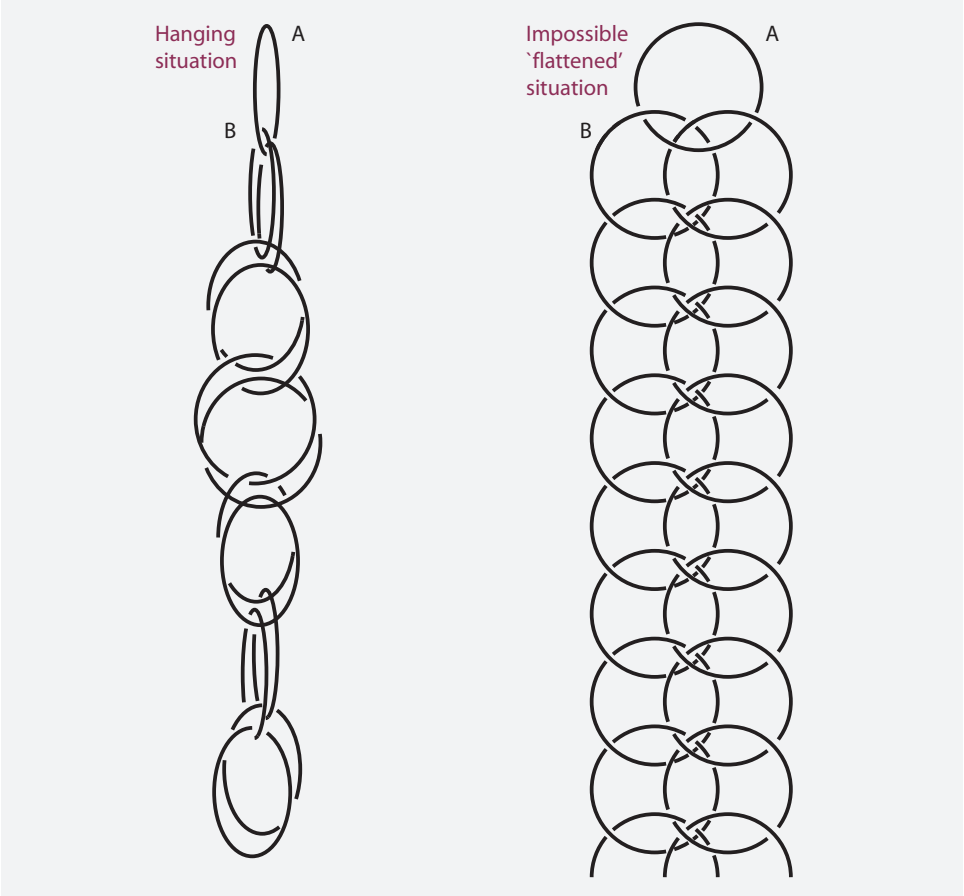


FIGURE 103 A ring chain gives an impression of motion along the chain, when holding ring B while dropping ring A.

videos. Searching for 'LEGO braiding machine' shows the most simple and beautiful examples and allows you to see how they work.

* *

Not all tangle assignments are self-evident at first sight. Figure 106 shows a tangle whose status in the strand model is not clear. Can you explain what the tangle represents?

Challenge 200 e

* *

Page 146
Challenge 201 ny

What is the effect of shivering on braiding, and thus on weak particle mixing, on particle tangle families and on the number of generations?

Motion through the vacuum – and the speed of light

Up to now, one problem was left open: How can a particle, being a tangle of infinite extension, move through the web of strands that makes up the vacuum? An old trick,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

FIGURE 104 The ring chain trick produces an illusion of motion (mp4 film © Franz Aichinger). Can more rings be added in horizontal directions?

Challenge 199 e

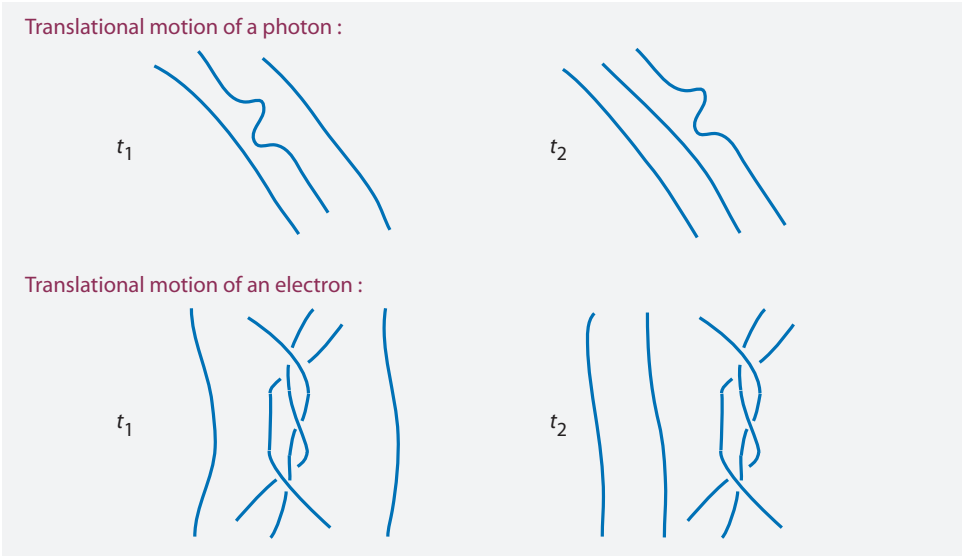


FIGURE 105 Motion of photons and electrons through strand hopping.

Ref. 237

known already in France in the nineteenth century, can help preparing for the idea of particle motion in space. Figure 103 shows a special chain that is most easily made with a few dozen key rings. If the ring B is grabbed and the ring A released, this latter ring seems to fall down along the whole chain in a helical path, as shown in the film of Figure 199. If you have never seen the trick, try it yourself; the effect is astonishing. In reality, this is

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

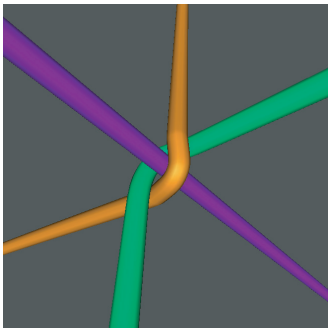


FIGURE 106 A discarded candidate tangle for the W boson.

an optical illusion. No ring is actually falling, but the sequence of rings moves in a way that creates the impression of ring motion. And this old trick helps us to solve a number of issues about particle motion that we swept under the carpet so far.

The main idea on particle motion in the strand model is the following:

▷ ***Translational particle motion*** is also due to strand substitution, or 'strand hopping'.

A schematic illustration of translational motion is given in Figure 105. In the strand model, contrary to the impression given so far, a tangle does not always need to move as a whole along the strand. This is seen most easily in the case of a photon. It is easy to picture that the tangle structure corresponding to a photon can also hop from strand to strand. At any stage, the structure is a photon; but the involved strand is never the same.

The idea of motion through strand hopping also works for massive particles. The motion of a massive particle, such as an electron, is shown schematically in Figure 105. The figure shows that through a tail unbraiding, the structure that describes an electron can get rid of one strand and grab a new one. This process has a low probability, of course. In the strand model, this is one reason that massive particles move more slowly than light, even if the first approximation yields a zero mass value.

We note that this explanation of motion is important also for the mapping from strand diagrams to Feynman diagrams. For many such diagrams, for example for the annihilation of particles and antiparticles in QED, strand hopping and tail unbraiding play a role. Without them, the mapping from strands to quantum field theory would not be possible.

In summary, tangles of massive particles *can* move through the vacuum using hopping – via tail unbraiding – and this naturally happens more slowly than the motion of photons, which do not need any process at the border of space to hop. The speed of photons is thus a limit speed for massive particles; special relativity is thus recovered.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

SUMMARY ON MILLENNIUM ISSUES ABOUT PARTICLES AND THE VACUUM

We have discovered that the strand model makes a strong statement: elementary particles can only be made of one, two or three strands. Each particle is represented by an infinite *family* of tangles of fixed strand number. The family members are related through various degrees of tangling, such as tail braiding or the leather trick.

For *one-stranded* particles, the strand model shows that the photon, the W, the Z and the gluons form the full list of spin-1 bosons. For *two-stranded* particles, the strand model shows that there are precisely three generations of quarks. For *three-stranded* elementary particles, the strand model shows that there is a Higgs boson and three generations of leptons. Neutrinos and antineutrinos differ and are massive Dirac particles. The strand model thus predicts that the neutrino-less double-beta decay will *not* be observed. Glueballs probably do not exist.

The strand model explains the origin of all quantum numbers of the observed elementary particles. Also all predicted quantum numbers for composed particles agree with observations. Therefore, we have also completed the proof that all observables in nature are due to crossing switches.

Page 149

The strand model reproduces the quark model, including all the allowed and all the forbidden hadron states. For mesons and baryons, the strand model predicts the correct mass sequences and quantum numbers. Tetraquarks are predicted to exist. A way to calculate hadron form factors is proposed.

In the strand model, all tangles are mapped to known particles. The strand model predicts that *no* elementary particles outside the standard model exist, because no tangles are left over. For example, there are no axions, no leptoquarks and no supersymmetric particles in nature. The strand model also predicts the lack of other gauge bosons and other interactions. In particular, the strand model – corrected in 2012 – reproduces the existence of the Higgs boson. In fact, any new elementary particle found in the future would contradict and invalidate the strand model.

Page 321

In simple words, the strand model explains why the known elementary particles exist and why others do not. We have thus settled two further items from the millennium list of open issues. In fact, the deduction of the elementary particle spectrum given here is, the first and, at present, also the *only* such deduction in the research literature.

Page 157

The omnipresent number 3

The strand model shows that the number 3 that appears so regularly in the standard model of particle physics – 3 generations, 3 interactions, 3 colours and SU(3) – is, in each case, a consequence of the three-dimensionality of space. In fact, the strand model adds a further, but related number 3 to this list, namely the maximum number of strands that make up elementary particles.

The three-dimensionality of space is, as we saw already above, a result of the existence of strands: only three dimensions allow tangles of strands. In short, all numbers 3 that appear in fundamental physics are explained by strands.

Page 201

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Predictions about dark matter, the LHC and the vacuum

Astrophysical observations show that galaxies and galaxy clusters are surrounded by large amounts of matter that does not radiate. This unknown type of matter is called *dark matter*.

In the strand model, the known elementary particles are the only possible ones. Therefore, the galactic clouds made of dark matter must consist of those particles mentioned up to now, or of black holes.

▷ The strand model thus predicts that dark matter is a mixture of particles of the standard model and black holes.

Page 157 This statement settles a further item from the millennium list of open issues.

The prediction from 2008 of a lack of new elementary particles in dark matter is at odds with the most favoured present measurement interpretations, but cannot yet be ruled out. The detection of black hole mergers in 2015 can even be seen as a partial confirmation. However, the issue is obviously not yet settled. In fact, the prediction provides another hard test of the model: if dark matter is found to be made of yet unknown particles, the strand model is in trouble.

We can condense all the results on particle physics found so far in the following statement:

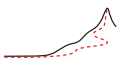
▷ There is nothing to be discovered about nature outside general relativity and the standard model of particle physics.

Strands predict that there is no hidden aspect of nature left. In particular, the strand model predicts a so-called high-energy *desert*: it predicts the lack of any additional elementary particle. Equivalently, the strand model predicts that apart from the Planck scale, there is no further energy scale in particle physics. Researchers blinded by beliefs sometimes call this the *nightmare scenario*.

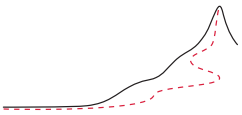
In other words, there is no room for discoveries beyond the Higgs boson at the Large Hadron Collider in Geneva, nor at the various dark matter searches across the world. If any new elementary particle is discovered, the strand model is wrong. More precisely, if any new elementary particle *that contradicts the strand model* is discovered, the strand model is wrong. That some unknown elementary particle has been missed in the present exploration of tangle classes is still a logical possibility.

Because the strand model confirms the standard model and general relativity, a further prediction can be made: *the vacuum is unique and stable.* There is no room for other options. For example, there are no domains walls between different vacuum states and the universe will not decay or change in any drastic manner.

In summary, the strand model predicts a lack of any kind of science fiction in modern physics.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 12

PARTICLE PROPERTIES DEDUCED FROM STRANDS

> Tutto quel che vedete, lo devo agli spaghetti.*
> Sophia Loren

The Planck units, via strands and the fundamental principle, explain almost all hat is known about motion: strands explain *what* moves and *how* it moves. But he strand model is only correct if it also explains every measured property of every elementary particle. So far, we only deduced the quantum numbers of the elementary particles. Three kinds of particle properties from the millennium list remain open: the *masses*, the *mixing angles* and the *couplings*. These measured quantities are important, because they determine the amount of change – or physical action – induced by the motion of each elementary particle.

As long as we do not understand the measured properties of elementary particles, we do not understand motion. And because the strand model makes no predictions that go beyond general relativity and the standard model, explaining the properties of elementary particles is the *only* way to confirm the strand model. Many ways to refute the strand model are possible; but only a calculation of the measured particle properties can confirm it.

THE MASSES OF THE ELEMENTARY PARTICLES

The mass describes the inertial and gravitational effects of a body. The strand model must reproduce all mass values observed in nature; if it doesn't, it is wrong.

To reproduce the masses of *all* bodies, it is sufficient that the strand model reproduces the measured masses, mixing angles and coupling strengths of the *elementary* particles. We start with their masses.

In nature, the *gravitational mass* of a particle results from the space curvature that it induces around it. In the strand model, this curvature is due to the fluctuations that result from the presence of a tangle core, in particular to the fluctuations of the particle tails and of the modified vacuum strand fluctuations around the particle position. The fluctuations produce a crossing switch distribution around the tangle core; the crossing switch distribution leads to spatial curvature; at sufficiently large distances, this curvature distribution is detected as a gravitational mass.

* 'Everything you see, I owe it to spaghetti.' Sofia Villani Scicolone is an Italian actress and Hollywood star.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In contrast, *inertial mass* appears in the Dirac equation. In the strand model, inertial mass is determined by the frequency and wavelength of the rotating phase vector. These quantities in turn are influenced by the type of tangledness, by the fluctuations induced by the particle charges, by the topology changes induced by the weak interaction, and, in the case of fermions, by the average frequency and size of the belt and leather tricks. Also these processes are all due to strand fluctuations.

In short, both gravitational and inertial particle mass are due to strand fluctuations and, more specifically, mainly to the fluctuations of the tails of a particle tangle. *The strand model thus suggests that gravitational and inertial mass are automatically equal.* In particular, the strand model suggests that every mass is surrounded by fluctuating crossing switches whose density decreases with distance and is proportional to the mass itself. As discussed above, this idea leads to universal gravity.

Page 272

General properties of particle mass values

So far, our adventure allows us to deduce several results on the mass values of elementary particles:

- The strand model implies that the masses of elementary particles are *not free parameters*, but that they are determined by the topology, or tangledness, of the underlying tangles and their tangle families. Particle masses are thus *fixed* and *discrete* in the strand model – as is observed. Of course, the issue of tangle families has to be taken into account.
- The strand model implies that masses are always *positive* numbers.
- The strand model implies that the *more complex* a tangle is, the *higher* its mass value is. This follows from the behaviour of tangle tail fluctuations around the tangle core.
- Because particle masses are due to strand fluctuations, the strand model also implies that all elementary particle masses are *much smaller than the Planck mass*, as is observed. Also this result follows from the behaviour of tangle tail fluctuations around the tangle core.
- Because particle masses are due to strand fluctuations, particle and antiparticle masses – their tangles are mirrors of each other – are always *equal*, as is observed.
- Because particle masses are due to strand fluctuations, particle masses do *not* depend on the age of the universe, nor on their position in the universe, nor on any other state variable: The strand model predicts that particle masses are constant and invariant, as is observed.

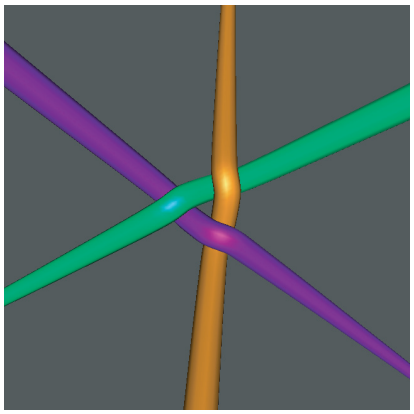
Page 357

- Because particle masses are due to strand fluctuations, and the fluctuations differ somewhat for tight and loose tangles of the same shape, the strand model predicts that particle masses change – or *run* – with energy, as is observed.

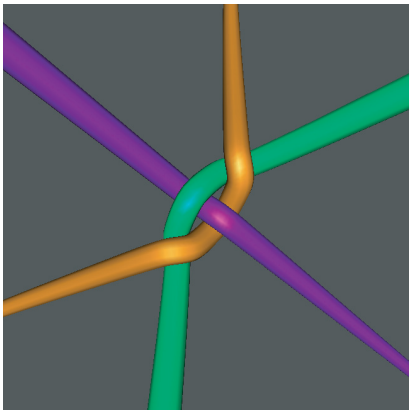
The general properties of particle masses are thus reproduced by the strand model. Therefore, continuing our exploration makes sense. We start by looking for ways to determine the mass values from the tangle structures. We discuss each particle class separately, and we first look at mass ratios, then at absolute mass values.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Tight W boson tangle candidate



Tight Z boson tangle candidate



Tight Higgs tangle candidate

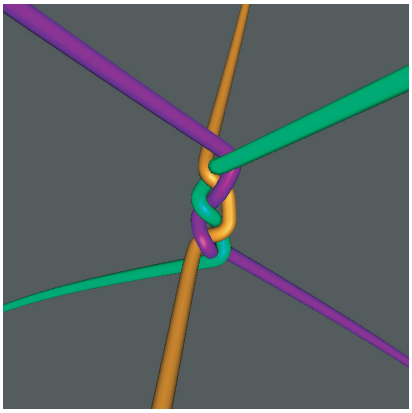


FIGURE 107 Tight tangle candidates (of 2015/2016) for the W, the Z and the Higgs boson.

Boson masses

Three elementary particles of integer spin have non-vanishing mass: the W boson, the Z boson and the Higgs boson. Mass calculations are especially simple for bosons, because in the strand model, they are *clean* systems: each boson is described by a relatively simple tangle family; furthermore, bosons do not need the belt trick to rotate continuously.

We expect that the induced curvature, and thus the gravitational mass, of an elementary boson is due to the disturbance it introduces into the vacuum. *At Planck energy*, this disturbance will be, to a large extent, a function of the *ropelength* introduced by the corresponding *tight* tangle. Let us clarify these concepts.

Tight or *ideal* tangles or knots are those tangles or knots that appear if we imagine strands as being made of a rope of *constant* diameter that is *infinitely flexible*, *infinitely slippery* and pulled as tight as possible. Examples of tight tangles are shown in Figure 107.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

With physical ropes from everyday life, tight knots and tangles can only be approximated, because they are not infinitely flexible and slippery; tight tangles are mathematical idealizations. But tight tangles of strands are of special interest: if we recall that each strand has an effective diameter of one Planck length, tight tangles realize the Planck limit of the strand model.

— The *ropelength* of a tight *closed knot* is the length of a perfectly flexible and slippery rope of constant diameter required to tie the tight knot. In other words, the ropelength is the smallest amount of idealized rope needed to tie a knot.
— The *ropelength* of a tight *open knot*, such as the simplest tangle of each weak boson, is the length by which a rope tied into a tight knot is shortened.
— With a bit of care, the concept of ropelength can be also be defined for tangles of several strands.

In the following, the ropelength is assumed to be measured in units of the rope *diameter*. Measuring ropelength in units of the rope radius is less common.

In the strand model, the ropelength measures, to a large extent, the amount by which a tight knot or tangle disturbs the vacuum around it. The ropelength fulfils all the proper-
Page 345 ties of particle mass mentioned above: the ropelength is discrete, positive, increases with tangle complexity, is equal for particles and antiparticles, and is a constant and invariant quantity. The ropelength will thus play an important role in any estimate of a particle mass.

It is known from quantum field theory that the masses of W and Z bosons do not change much between Planck energy and everyday energy, whatever renormalization
Ref. 239 scheme is used. This allows us, with a good approximation, to approximate the weak boson masses at low, everyday energy with their mass values at Planck energy. Thus we can use tight tangles to estimate boson masses.

In the strand model, the *gravitational mass* of a spin 1 boson is proportional to the radius of the disturbance that it induces in the vacuum. For a boson, this radius, and thus the mass, scales as the third root of the ropelength of the corresponding tight tangle.

W/Z boson mass ratio and mixing angle (in the 2016 knot model)

Page 346 The simplest tangles of the W boson and of the Z boson are shown in Figure 107. The corresponding ropelength values for tight tangles, determined numerically, are L_W =
Ref. 240 4.28 and L_Z = 7.25 rope diameters. The strand model estimates the W/Z mass ratio by the cube root of the ropelength ratio:

$$\frac{m_W}{m_Z} \approx \left(\frac{L_W}{L_Z}\right)^{1/3} = 0.84\,. \tag{200}$$

Ref. 227 This value has to be compared with the experimental ratio of 80.4 GeV/91.2 GeV=0.88.

The agreement between experiment and strand model is acceptable, for two reasons. On the one hand, the strand model reproduces the higher value of the neutral Z boson's mass: a tangle with spatial symmetry is more complex than one without. On the other hand, is also clear why the calculated mass ratio does not match the experimental result.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

First of all, the simple tangles represent and approximate W and Z bosons only to the
Page 243 first order. As mentioned above, in the strand model, every massive particle is represented by an infinite family of tangles. The strand model thus also predicts that the match between the calculated and the measured ratio m_W/m_Z should improve when higher-order Feynman diagrams, and thus more complicated tangle topologies, are taken into account. Improving the calculation is still a subject of research. Secondly, approximating the tight knot effects with an effective radius, thus just using the ropelength to determine the mass, implies neglecting the actual shape, and effectively approximating their shape by a sphere. Thirdly, as already mentioned, this calculation assumes that the low energy mass ratio and the mass ratio at Planck energy are equal.

Despite the used approximations, the tight tangle estimate for the W/Z mass ratio gives an acceptable agreement with experiment. The main reason is that we expect the strand fluctuations from the various family members to be similar for particles with the *same* number of strands. For these mass ratios, the tail braiding processes cancel out. Also the other two approximations are expected to be roughly similar for the two weak bosons. This similarity explains why determining the W/Z boson mass *ratio* is possible with acceptable accuracy.

The W/Z mass ratio also determines the weak mixing angle θ_w of the weak interaction Lagrangian, through the relation $\cos\theta_w = m_W/m_Z$. The strand model thus predicts the value of the weak mixing angle to the same accuracy as it predicts the W/Z mass ratio.

This argument leads to a puzzle: Can you deduce from the strand model how the W/Z
Challenge 202 ny mass ratio changes with energy?

Also the *inertial masses* of the W and Z bosons can be compared. In quantum theory, the inertial mass relates the wavelength and the frequency of the wave function. In the strand model, a quantum particle that moves through vacuum is a tangle core that
Page 189, page 207 rotates while advancing. The frequency and the wavelength of the helix thus generated determine the inertial mass. The process is analogous to the motion of a body moving at constant speed in a viscous fluid at small Reynolds numbers. Despite the appearance of friction, the analogy is possible. If a small body of general shape is pulled through a
Ref. 161 viscous fluid by a constant force, such as gravity, it follows a *helical* path. This analogy implies that, for spin 1 particles, the frequency and the wavelength are above all determined by the effective radius of the small body. The strand model thus suggests that the inertial mass – inversely proportional to the path frequency and the path wavelength squared – of the W or the Z boson is approximately proportional to its tight knot radius. This is the same result as for the gravitational mass.

Also the inertial mass is not exactly proportional to the average tight knot radius; the precise shape of the tight knot and the tangle family members play a role. The strand model thus predicts that a more accurate mass calculation has to take into account these effects.

In summary, the strand model predicts a W/Z mass ratio and thus a weak mixing angle close to the observed ratio, and explains the deviation of the approximation from the measured value – provided that the tangle assignments are correct.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Higgs/Z boson mass ratio

The observed mass value of the Higgs boson is 125(1) GeV. The observed mass value for the Z boson is 91.2(1) GeV. Like for the other bosons, the strand model suggests using the ropelength to estimate the mass of the Higgs boson tangle. The candidate tangle for the Higgs boson was given in Figure 93, and the tight version in Figure 107.

Page 322

Ref. 240

The ropelength of the tight Higgs tangle turns out to be 17.1, again determined by numerical approximation. This value yields a naive mass estimate for the Higgs boson of $(17.1/7.25)^{1/3} \cdot 91.2\,\text{GeV}$, i.e.,

$$m_{\text{Higgs}} \approx 121\,\text{GeV} \,. \tag{201}$$

Starting with the W boson yields an estimate for the Higgs mass of 128 GeV. Both estimates are acceptable, given that the non-sphericity of the W, Z and Higgs boson tangles have not been taken into account. (The strand model suggests that for a strongly non-spherical shape – such as the shape of the W, Z and Higgs tangle – the effective mass is higher than the value deduced from ropelength alone.) Deducing better mass ratio estimates for the W, Z and Higgs tangles is still a subject of research.

In summary, the strand model predicts a Higgs/Z, a Higgs/W and a W/Z mass ratio close to the observed values; and the model suggests explanations for the deviations of the approximation from the observed value – provided that the tangle assignments are correct.

A first approximation for elementary boson mass values

The tangles for the W, Z and Higgs bosons also provide a first approximation for their *absolute* mass values. Each tangle is made of strands that can be pulled straight. This implies no extra length and no net rotation. As a result, both the gravitational mass and the inertial mass *vanish* in the first approximation. In reality of course, the three mass values are of the order of 10^{-17} Planck masses.

A better approximation requires to determine, for each particle, the probability of crossing switches in and around its tangle core. This probability depends on the probability for tail braiding and for core rotation. These probabilities are low, because, sloppily speaking, the corresponding fluctuations are rare. This implies that boson masses, like all other elementary particle masses, are predicted to be much smaller than the Planck mass, but not exactly zero. This matches observation. We search for more precise estimates below.

Quark mass ratios

Quarks are fermions. In the strand model, mass estimates for fermions are more difficult than for bosons, because their propagation involves the belt trick. Still, using Figure 108, the strand model allows several predictions about the relations between quark masses.

— The quark masses are predicted to be the same for every possible colour charge. This is observed.
— Furthermore, the progression in ropelength of the tight basic tangles for the six quarks suggests a progression in their masses. This is observed, though with the ex-

Page 310

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

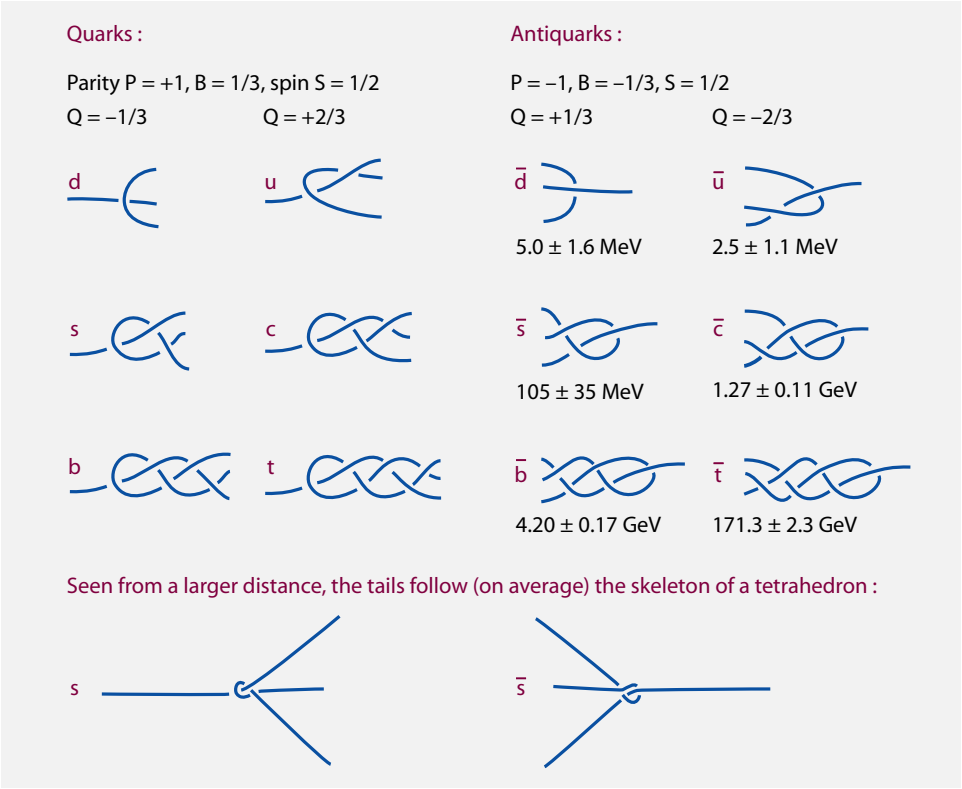


FIGURE 108 The simplest tangles assigned to the quarks and antiquarks. The experimental mass values are also given.

ception of the up quark mass. For this exceptional case, effects due to tail braiding and to quark mixing are expected to play a role, as argued below.

Page 360

Let us try to extract numerical values for the quark mass ratios. We start by exploring the tight quark tangles, thus Planck-scale mass values. For each quark number q, the quark mass will be the weighted average over the mass of its family tangles with q, $q+6$, $q+12$, ... crossings, where the period 6 is due to the leather trick. Each tight tangle has a certain ropelength. The mass of each tangle will be determined by the frequency of crossing changes at the core, including those due to the belt trick. The quark mass then is the average over all family tangles; it will be determined by the frequency of tail braiding and all other processes that generate crossing switches.

For determining mass ratios, the frequency of the crossing switches in the core are the most important. Given that the particles are fermions, not bosons, this frequency is expected to be an exponential of the ropelength L. Among quarks, we thus expect a general mass dependence of the type

$$m \sim \mathrm{e}^{aL} \tag{202}$$

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 14 Calculated ropelengths, in units of the rope *diameter*, of tight quark tangles of Figure 83 (Page 311) with tails oriented along the skeleton of a tetrahedron.

Tangle	Length	Ropelength	Difference
skeleton (vacuum)	138.564065	base value	
simplest d	139.919533	1.355468	1.355468
simplest u	142.627837	4.063773	2.708305
simplest s	146.175507	7.611443	3.547670
simplest c	149.695643	11.131578	3.520136
simplest b	153.250364	14.686299	3.554721
simplest t	157.163826	18.599761	3.913462

TABLE 15 Calculated quark masses at Planck energy. assuming that the standard model is correct up to that value.

Quark	Low energy mass	Planck energy mass
u ($q = 2/3e$)	2.5(1.1) MeV	0.45(0.16) MeV
d ($q = -1/3e$)	5.0(1.6) MeV	0.97(0.10) MeV
s ($q = -1/3e$)	105(35) MeV	19.4(1.2) MeV
c ($q = 2/3e$)	1270(110) MeV	213(8) MeV
b ($q = -1/3e$)	4200(170) MeV	883(10) MeV
t ($q = 2/3e$)	171300(2300) MeV	66993(880) MeV

where a is an unknown number of order 1. We note directly that such a relation promises general agreement with the observed quark mass ratios.

Ref. 241 Actual ropelength calculations by Eric Rawdon and Maria Fisher show that the ropelength of quark tangles increases roughly linearly with q, as expected from general knot theoretic arguments. Their results are given in Table 14. Comparing these calculated ropelength differences with the known low-energy quark masses confirms that the number a has an effective value in the range between 0.4 and 0.9, and thus indeed is of order one.

The results of Table 14 suggest that the top quark should be particularly heavy – as is observed. The results of Table 14 also suggest that something special is going on for the d quark, which is out of sequence with the other quarks. Indeed, the strand model predicts a very small mass, – i.e., Planck energy bare mass – for the down quark. However, in nature, the down mass is observed to be *larger* than the up mass. (We note that despite this issue, meson mass sequences are predicted correctly.) It could well be that the mirror symmetry of the simplest down quark tangle is the reason that the braiding, i.e., the mixing with more massive the family members with six and more additional crossings, is *higher* than that for the up quark.

Ref. 242 The experimental values for the quark masses are given in Table 15; the table also includes the values extrapolated to Planck energy for the pure standard model. The calculation of the strand model does not agree well with the data. The only encouraging aspect

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

is that the ropelength approximation provides an approximation for older speculations on approximately *fixed mass ratios* between the up-type quarks u, c, t and *fixed mass ratios* between down-type quarks d, s, b. The strand model estimate shows that ropelength alone is *not sufficient* to understand quark mass ratios. Research has to show whether the shape of the core or other effects can be included to improve the correspondence with data.

Ref. 243

In fact, the strand model predicts that everyday quark masses result from a combination of three effects: the effect of ropelength and of tangle core shape on rotation and the belt trick, the effect of sixfold tail braiding, and the effect of the energy dependence of mass between Planck energy and everyday energy, due to core loosening.

Even though an analytic calculation for quark masses seems difficult, better approximations are possible. With sufficient computer power, it is possible to calculate the effects of the core shape rotations, including the belt trick, and of the energy dependence of the quark masses. The most difficult point remains the calculation of the probabilities for tail braiding. More research is required on these points.

Lepton mass ratios

Mass calculations for leptons are as involved as for quarks. Each lepton, being a fermion, has a large family of associated tangles: there is a simplest tangle and there are the tangles that appear through repeated application of tail braiding. Despite this large tangle family, some results can be deduced from the simplest lepton tangles alone, disregarding the higher-order family members.

Both for neutrinos and for charged leptons, the progression in ropelength of the tight versions of the basic tangles predicts a progression in their masses. This is indeed observed.

For each lepton tangle with l crossings, knot theory predicts a ropelength L that increases roughly proportionally to l. Each lepton mass value will again be given by the frequency of crossing switches due to rotations, including the belt trick, and of tail braiding. We thus expect a general relation of the type

$$m_l \sim \mathrm{e}^{bL_l} \tag{203}$$

where b is a number of order 1 that takes into account the shape of the tangle core. Such a relation is in general agreement with the observed ratios between lepton masses. Research on these issues is ongoing; calculations of ropelengths and other geometric properties of the lepton tangles will allow a more detailed analysis. The most important challenge is to deduce the correct mass sequence among the muon neutrino and the electron. Indeed, estimating the mass effect due to electric charge is still a subject of research.

We note that the lepton mass generation mechanism of the strand model differs from other proposals in the research literature. It agrees with the Higgs mechanism but goes beyond it. For neutrinos, the mechanism contradicts the see-saw mechanism but confirms the Yukawa mechanism directly. From a distance, the mass mechanism of the strand model also somewhat resembles conformal symmetry breaking.

Page 321

Ref. 244

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

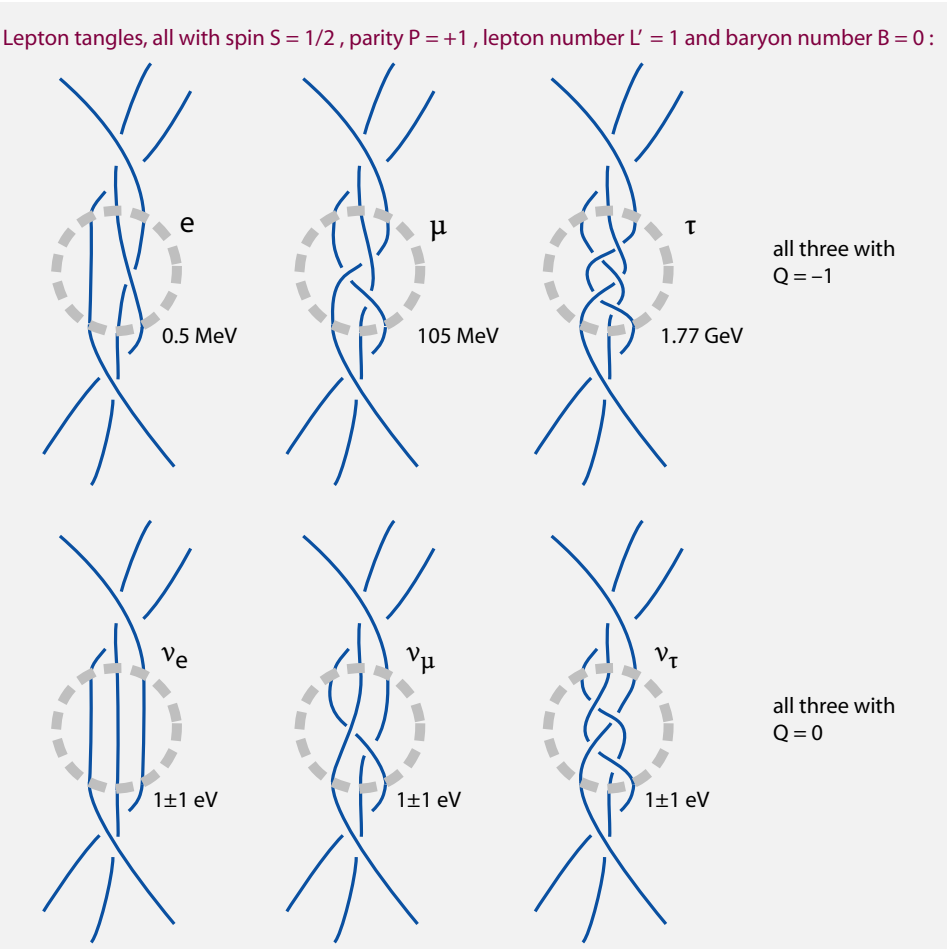

Lepton tangles, all with spin S = 1/2 , parity P = +1 , lepton number L' = 1 and baryon number B = 0 :
e
μ
τ
0.5 MeV
105 MeV
1.77 GeV
all three with
Q = –1
νe
νμ
ντ
1±1 eV
1±1 eV
1±1 eV
all three with
Q = 0
Seen from a larger distance, the tails follow (on average) the x, y and z axes of a coordinate system.

FIGURE 109 The simplest candidate tangles of the leptons. Antileptons are mirror tangles. The experimental mass values are also given.

Predictions about absolute mass values

In nature, the masses of elementary particles are much lower than the Planck mass: the observed values lie between about 10^{-30} for neutrinos and 10^{-17} for the top quark.

As we just saw, the strand model predicts mass *sequences* and *ratios* of masses that corroborate or at least do not contradict observations. The next step is to determine *absolute* mass values from the strand model. So far we only found that elementary particle masses are much smaller than a Planck mass. But to validate the strand model, we need more precise statements.

In general, the strand model reduces mass determination to the calculation of the details of a process: How often do shape changes of strands in a particle lead to crossing

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

switches? Strand shape change leads to the braiding of strand tails, to core rotation and to the belt trick. We note that in the past, various researchers have reached the conclusion that all elementary particle masses should be due to a common process or energy scale. Among theoretical physicists, the breaking of conformal symmetry has always been a candidate for the associated process. Among experimental physicists, the Higgs mechanism – now confirmed by experiment – is the favourite common explanation of all elementary particle masses. The strand model, with hindsight, agrees with both approaches.

Ref. 244, Ref. 245
Page 321

In the strand model, *absolute* mass values are *not* purely geometric quantities that can be deduced directly from the shapes of tangle knots. Particle masses are due to *dynamical* processes. Absolute mass values are due to strand fluctuations; and these fluctuations are influenced by the core ropelength and tightness, by tail braiding and by core rotation, including the belt trick. All these aspects lead to crossing switches that determine the mass.

To determine absolute particle mass values, we need to determine the ratio between the particle mass and the *Planck mass*. This means to determine the ratio between the crossing switch probability for a given particle and the crossing switch probability for a Planck mass, namely one switch per Planck time.*

Energy is action per time. Mass is a form of energy. In other words, the *absolute* mass of a particle is given by the average number of crossing switches it induces over time:

▷ Mass is crossing switch rate.

More precisely, the crossing switch rate of a particle at rest is its gravitational mass, and the crossing switch rate induced by accelerated motion is its inertial mass. Let us explore the consequences.

Assuming that mass is determined by the crossing switch rate, we deduce that particle mass values are determined by particle topology, are fixed, are discrete, are positive, increase with tangle core complexity, are identical for particle and antiparticles, and are constant over time. Because all these properties match observations, the crossing switch rate indeed realizes all qualitative requirements for absolute particle mass values. Thus we can proceed with the hope to learn more. In order to calculate particle masses, we thus need to determine the number of crossing switches per time that every particle tangle induces.

Page 345

One general way to perform a particle mass calculation is to use a large computer, insert a strand model of the vacuum plus the strand model of the particle, and count the

* What is a Planck mass? In the strand model, a Planck mass corresponds to a structure that produces one crossing switch for every Planck time, constantly, without interruption. But the strand model predicts that such structures do *not* appear as localized particles, because every localized particle – i.e., every tangle – has, by construction, a much smaller number of induced crossing switches per time. Following the strand model, elementary particles with Planck mass *do not exist*. This conclusion agrees with observation. But the strand model also implies that black holes with a Planck mass *do not exist*. Indeed, such Planck-scale black holes, apart from being extremely short-lived, have no simple strand structure. We can state that a Planck mass is never localized. Given these results, we cannot use a model of a *localized* Planck mass as a unit or a benchmark to determine particle masses.

The impossibility is also encountered in everyday life. Even though the Planck mass defines the mass unit in nature, no mass measurement in any laboratory is performed by using this unit as a standard.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

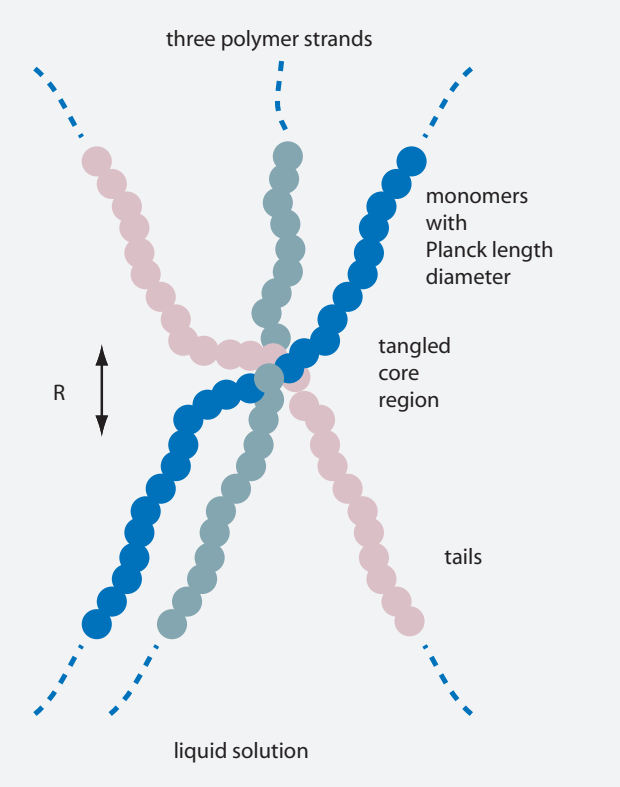


FIGURE 110 Determining lepton mass values with the help of a polymer analogy of strands. The probability of the belt trick for the tangle core yields an estimate for the mass of the elementary particle with the same topology.

number of crossing switches per time. The basis for such an approach, using the analogy of the evolution of a polymer in liquid solution, is shown in Figure 110. Also the change of strand length has to be taken into account. By determining, for a given core topology, the average frequency with which crossing switches appear for a tethered core, we can determine the masses of the leptons, quarks and bosons.Crossing switches can appear because of the belt trick and the related core rotation, or because of tail braiding. Other processes might also play a role. In such a calculation, the mass scale is set indirectly, through the time scale of the fluctuation spectrum. This is tricky but seems feasible. One would first need to find the parameter space and the fluctuation spectrum for which the polymer tangle follows the Schrödinger equation. Calculations with different tangles should then yield the different mass values. This *computer* approach to particle masses is still a topic of research.

Another general way to determine particle masses is to search for *analytical approximations*. This is a fascinating conceptual and mathematical challenge. The main issue is to clarify which crossing switches contribute most to particle mass.

A first analytical attempt is the following. We assume that the inertial mass for a moving fermion is mainly determined by the frequency of the belt trick, and only negligibly by tail braiding. If the core has a diameter of, say, three Planck lengths, the probability

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of the belt trick for a particle with six tails will easily be in the range

$$e^{-30} \tag{204}$$

or less. This value, about 10^{-13}, would also be the order of magnitude for the mass estimate in Planck units. Such an estimate is only very rough, and the exponent can be quite different. Nevertheless, we do get an explanation for the large difference between the Planck mass and the typical fermion mass. A more precise analytical approximation for the belt trick probability – not an impossible feat – could therefore solve the so-called *mass hierarchy problem*.

▷ What is the probability of the belt trick for a tethered core with fluctuating tails? Challenge 203 ny

So far, several experts on polymer evolution have failed to provide even the crudest estimate for the probability of the belt trick in a polymer-tethered ball. Can you provide one? And does this estimate yield a good approximation to inertial mass? Challenge 204 r

A second analytical approximation for the mass value arises when we explore the probability of tail braiding – i.e., the strand model of the Higgs mechanism. In this approximation, we assume that tail braiding is the main contribution to all the crossing switches that determine mass. Starting form this assumption yields the conclusion that the braiding probability will strongly depend on the relative angles among the tails. Of course, the braiding probability will *also* depend on the core of the tangle, as it determines a part of the crossing switches; but in a first approximation we concentrate at tail braiding.

▷ What is the probability of braiding for *three* tails with given directions to spatial infinity? Challenge 205 ny

That is the challenge to solve.

Let us start with the special case of three tails that are parallel and touching each other. The probability that a Higgs braid – with six crossings – will appear is given by the sixth power of the probability for a two-strand twist to appear, divided by three. And a two-strand twist would have a probability of about e^{-3} at most. That yields a Higgs braid probability estimate of $2 \cdot 10^{-11}$. Challenge 206 e

For diverging tails, in contrast to parallel ones, the probability can easily be the square or the cube of that value. Can you find a better estimate for the braiding probability in this situation? Challenge 207 r

These attempts lead us to the approximation that the particle mass is determined by two effects: the effects of core rotation and the related belt trick on the one hand, and the effects of the tails on the other hand. Are these two effects on particle mass *independent?* If so, particle mass values would be given by the *sum* of two probabilities: a switch probability due to core motion and a switch probability due to tail motion.

If the core and tail processes on mass are not independent, but both required to occur in combination – as seems to be the case – then the particle mass value is given by the *product* of two probabilities: a switch probability due to the core and a switch probability

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

due to the tails. In this case, we get the important conjecture that among particles that share the same tail structure and the same tail geometry, mass ratios can be estimated by comparing tangle cores only. This justifies the above discussions on mass ratios, where this conjecture was intuitively assumed.

In particular, particle mass is then proportional to the crossing switch rate of the core. Ref. 246 Generally speaking, there is a roughly linear relation between ropelength and (average) crossing number; thus a roughly linear or power relation between ropelength and crossing switch rate in the core is expected. Therefore, within a partcile family, particle mass should increase with core ropelength, with a linear or power relation.

In nature, neutrinos are light, electrons have higher mass, the light quarks a still higher one, and the W and Z bosons an even higher one. What is the origin of these mass differences? In other words, what is the origin of this so-called *mass hierarchy*?

In the strand model, the two influences on particle mass are the size and shape of the tangle core and the structure of the tails. So far, comparisons across particle types are possible only for those particles that share the same tail structure. Now, quarks, leptons and the massive bosons all differ in their tail structure. We thus find that simple hand-waving mass comparisons are only possible *within* particle families, thus only among different generations of the same particle type. We have no way yet to compare, with numerical estimates, particle masses from different particle families.

In short, the strand model implies that particle masses are much smaller than the Planck mass by many orders of magnitude. The strand model also implies that more complex knots lead to higher mass values. However, finding an accurate *numerical* or *analytical* approximation for absolute particle mass values is still an open issue. Obviously, this challenge is a subject of research. In summary, so far we can only state: the mass hierarchy is an unavoidable consequence of the tangles of the elementary particles.

Open issues about mass calculations

Calculating absolute particle masses from tangle fluctuations, either numerically or with an analytical approximation, will allow the final check of the statements in this section. Challenge 208 e The strand model predicts that the resulting values will match experiments.

* *

Because the strand model predicts a lack of new physics beyond the standard model of particle physics, the calculation of neutrino masses, and their mass ratios, is one of the few possible *predictions* – in contrast to retrodictions – that are left over in the strand model. The strand model suggests a conjecture about neutrino masses: assuming that the neutrino tangles of Figure 109 are correct, then the mass of the electron neutrino is influenced more strongly by tail braiding than by the belt trick.

* *

Challenge 209 s Is the mass of a tangle related to the vacuum density of strands?

* *

Challenge 210 s Do particle masses depend on the cosmological constant?

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

* *

The mass of elementary particles does not depend on the spin direction. In particular, the W and Z bosons have equal longitudinal and transversal mass. The strand model does not allow an influence of spin orientation on mass.

* *

Challenge 211 s Can the concept of *total curvature* help to calculate particle masses?

* *

Does the effect of tail braiding confirm the conjecture that every experiment is described by a small energy scale, determining the resolution or precision, and a large energy scale, Challenge 212 d less obvious, that determines the accuracy?

Fine-tuning and naturalness

It has become fashionable, since about a decade, to state that the standard model of elementary particle physics is 'fine-tuned'. The term expresses several ideas. Above all, the extremely low value of the vacuum energy is not obvious when all the zero-point field contributions from the various elementary particles of the standard model are included. A low vacuum energy seems only possible if the masses and the particle types of the standard model are somehow interrelated. In other words, the term 'fine tuning' expresses, above all, the lack of understanding of the origin of the masses, mixings and coupling constants of elementary particles.

The term 'fine tuning' is generally used to state that the universe would be very different if the fundamental constants would be different. Generally speaking, this statement has no deep content. The term 'fine tuning' just expresses that particle masses are *not* parameters that can be varied at will. In common usage, 'parameters' are variable constants; but the low value of the vacuum energy – as well as many other observations – shows that the masses of elementary particles *cannot* be varied without destroying the validity of the standard model of particle physics.

Some people suggest that 'fine-tuning' implies that the standard model of particle physics is 'unnatural'. The strand model – but also common sense – show that this suggestion is false. The strand model *naturally* has a low vacuum energy, because the unknotted strands of flat space *naturally* have a zero energy density.

In fact, the expression 'fine-tuning' means that the fundamental constants in the standard model are not a random choice, but that there is an explanation for these constants that is waiting to be discovered. And indeed, the strand model *naturally* explains that the values for the masses, mixings and coupling constants are not variable, but *fixed*. If the standard model would not be 'fine-tuned', it would not describe nature. Any correct description of the world must be 'fine-tuned'.

In summary, the term 'fine-tuned' is equivalent to the terms 'unmodifiable' or 'hard Page 159 to vary' that were discussed above. The term 'fine-tuning' highlights the complete lack of alternatives to the world as we observe it; this is one of the wonders of nature. And the strand model makes this wonder apparent in the microscopic domain.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Summary on elementary particle masses and millennium issues

The strand model implies that masses are dynamic quantities fixed by geometric and topological properties of specific tangle families. As a result, strands explain why the masses of elementary particles are not free parameters, but fixed constants, and why they
Page 355 are much smaller than the Planck mass by many orders of magnitude. Strands also reproduce all known qualitative properties of particle masses.

Strands provide estimates for a number of elementary particle mass ratios, such as m_W/m_Z and m_{Higgs}/m_W. Most quark and lepton mass sequences and first rough estimates of mass ratios agree with the experimental data. All hadron mass sequences are predicted correctly. The strand model also promises to calculate absolute mass values, including their change or 'running' with energy. Such future calculations will allow either improving the match with observations or refuting the strand model.

The results are encouraging for two reasons. First of all, no other unified model that agrees with experiment explains the qualitative properties of mass and the mass sequences. Secondly, no research on statistical tangles exists; this suggests that the understanding of the parameters of nature is missing because results in this research field are still missing.

In the millennium list of open issues we have thus seen how to proceed for settling
Page 157 several further items – though we have not settled them yet. Because a few even more interesting challenges are awaiting us, we continue nevertheless. In the next leg, we investigate the mixing of elementary particle states.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

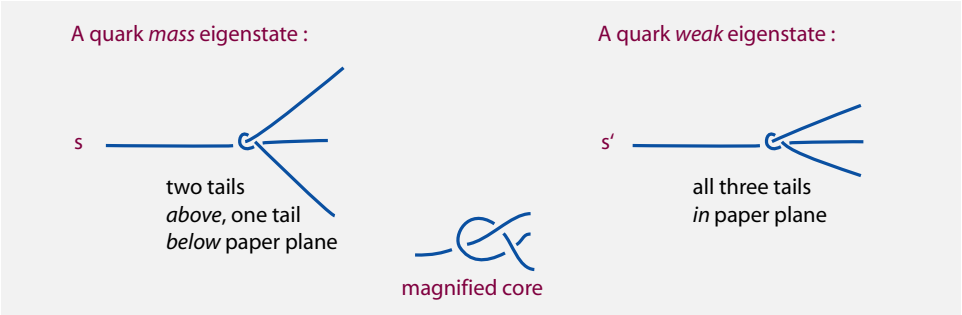


FIGURE 111 Tail shifting leads to quark mixing: mass eigenstates and weak eigenstates differ.

MIXING ANGLES

In nature, the *mass* eigenstates for fermions differ from their *weak* eigenstates: quarks mix among themselves, and so do neutrinos. Quarks also show CP violation. These effects are described by two so-called *mixing matrices*. The two mixing matrices thus contain fundamental constants of nature. For the strand model to be correct, it must allow calculating the measured values of all components of both mixing matrices.

Quark mixing – the experimental data

In nature, the quark mass eigenstates and their weak eigenstates differ. This difference was discovered in 1963 by Nicola Cabibbo and is called *quark mixing*. The values of the elements of the quark mixing matrix have been measured in many experiments, and more experiments aiming to increase the measurement precision are under way.

Ref. 227

Vol. V, page 248

The quark *mixing matrix* is defined by

$$\begin{pmatrix} d' \\ s' \\ b' \end{pmatrix} = (V_{ij}) \begin{pmatrix} d \\ s \\ b \end{pmatrix} . \tag{205}$$

where, by convention, the states of the +2/3 quarks u, c and t are unmixed. Unprimed quarks names represent strong (and electromagnetic) eigenstates, primed quark names represent weak eigenstates. In its standard parametrization, the mixing matrix reads

Ref. 227

$$V = \begin{pmatrix} c_{12}c_{13} & s_{12}c_{13} & s_{13}e^{-i\delta} \\ -s_{12}c_{23} - c_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{12}c_{23} - s_{12}s_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & s_{23}c_{13} \\ s_{12}s_{23} - c_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & -c_{12}s_{23} - s_{12}c_{23}s_{13}e^{i\delta} & c_{23}c_{13} \end{pmatrix} \tag{206}$$

where $c_{ij} = \cos\theta_{ij}$, $s_{ij} = \sin\theta_{ij}$ and i and j label the generation ($1 \leqslant i, j \leqslant 3$). The mixing matrix thus contains three mixing angles, θ_{12}, θ_{23} and θ_{13}, and one phase, δ_{13}. In the limit $\theta_{23} = \theta_{13} = 0$, i.e., when only *two* generations mix, the only remaining parameter is the angle θ_{12}, called the *Cabibbo angle*; this angle is Cabibbo's original discovery. The last parameter, the so-called *CP-violating phase* δ, lies between 0 and 2π, is measured to

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

be different from zero; it expresses the observation that CP invariance is violated in the case of the weak interactions. The CP-violating phase only appears in the third column of the matrix; therefore CP violation requires the existence of (at least) three generations. Challenge 213 e

The present 90 % confidence values for the measured *magnitude* of the complex quark mixing matrix elements are Ref. 227

$$|V| = \begin{pmatrix} 0.97427(14) & 0.22536(61) & 0.00355(15) \\ 0.22522(61) & 0.97343(15) & 0.0414(12) \\ 0.00886(33) & 0.0405(12) & 0.99914(5) \end{pmatrix} . \tag{207}$$

All these numbers are unexplained constants of nature, like the particle masses. Within experimental errors, the matrix V is unitary.

A huge amount of experimental work lies behind this short summary. The data have been collected over many years, in numerous scattering and decay experiments, by thousands of people. Nevertheless, this short summary represents all the data that any unified description has to reproduce about quark mixing.

Quark mixing – explanations

In the standard model of particle physics, the quark mixing matrix is usually seen as due to the coupling between the vacuum expectation value of the Higgs field and the left-handed quark doublets or the right handed quark singlets. However, this description does not lead to a numerical prediction.

A slightly different description of quark mixing is given in the strand model. In the strand model, the Higgs field and its role as mass generator and unitarity maintainer is Page 321 a special case of the process of tail braiding. And braiding is related to the weak interaction. Because the various quarks are differently tangled rational tangles, tail braiding can reduce or increase the crossings in a quark tangle, and thus change quark flavours. We thus deduce from the strand model that quark mixing is an automatic result of the strand model and related to the weak interaction. We also deduce that quark mixing is due to the *same* process that generates quark masses, as expected. But we can say more. Page 243

In the strand model, the *mass eigenstate* – and colour eigenstate – is the tangle shape in which colour symmetry is manifest and in which particle position is defined. The mass eigenstates of quarks correspond to tangles whose three colour-tails point in three directions that are equally distributed in space. The shape in which the tails point in three, equally spaced directions is the shape that makes the SU(3) representation under core slides manifest.

In contrast, the *weak eigenstates* are those shapes that makes the SU(2) behaviour of core pokes manifest. For a quark, the weak eigenstate appears to be that shape of a tangle for which all tails lie in a plane; for such plane configuration, the tails and the core mimic a belt and its buckle, the structure that generates SU(2) behaviour. The two types of eigenstates are illustrated in Figure 111.

In the strand model, masses are dynamical effects related to tangle shape. In the case of quarks, the two configurations just mentioned will thus behave differently. We call the transformation from a mass eigenstate to a weak eigenstate or back *tail shifting*. Tail shifting is a deformation: the tails as a whole are rotated and shifted. On the other hand,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

tail shifting can also lead to untangling of a quark tangle; in other words, tail shifting can lead to tail braiding and thus can transform quark flavours. The process of tail shifting can thus explain quark mixing. (Tail shifting also explains the existence of neutrino mixing, and the lack of mixing for the weak bosons.)

Tail shifting can thus be seen as a *partial* tail braiding; as such, it is due to the weak interaction. This connection yields the following predictions:

- Tail shifting, both with or without tail braiding at the border of space, is a generalized deformation. Therefore, it is described by a unitary operator. The first result from the strand model is thus that the quark mixing matrix is unitary. This is indeed observed. Page 202 Ref. 227
- For quarks, tail braiding is a process with small probability. As a consequence, the quark mixing matrix will have its highest elements on the diagonal. This is indeed observed.
- Tail shifting also naturally predicts that quark mixing will be higher between neighbouring generations, such as 1 and 2, than between distant generations, such as 1 and 3. This is also observed.
- The connection between mixing and mass also implies that the 1–2 mixing is stronger than the 2–3 mixing, as is observed.
- Finally, tail shifting predicts that the numerical values in the quark mixing matrix can be deduced from the difference between the shapes of the two kinds of tangles shown in Figure 111. In particular, tail shifting also predicts that the quark mixing angles change, or run, with energy. In addition, the effect is predicted to be small. On the other hand, so far there is no reliable experimental data on the effect.

Performing a precise calculation of mixing angles and their running with energy is still a subject of research.

A challenge

Ref. 247 Can you deduce the approximate expression

$$\tan\theta_{\mathrm{u\,mix}} = \sqrt{\frac{m_{\mathrm{u}}}{m_{\mathrm{c}}}} \tag{208}$$

Challenge 214 r for the mixing of the up quark from the strand model?

CP-violation in quarks

The CP violating phase δ for quarks is usually expressed with the *Jarlskog invariant*, defined as $J = \sin\theta_{12}\sin\theta_{13}\sin\theta_{23}^2\cos\theta_{12}\cos\theta_{13}\cos\theta_{23}\sin\delta$. This involved expression is independent of the definition of the phase angles and was discovered by Cecilia Jarlskog, an important Swedish particle physicist. Its measured value is $J = 3.06(21)\cdot 10^{-5}$. Ref. 227

Because the strand model predicts three quark generations, the quark model implies the possibility of CP violation. In the section on mesons we have seen that the strand model actually predicts the existence CP violation. In particular, Figure 96 shows that with the help of tail shifting, K^0 and $\overline{K}^0$ mesons mix, and that the same happens with certain other neutral mesons. Figure 97 shows a further example. As just mentioned, Page 328 Page 326

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

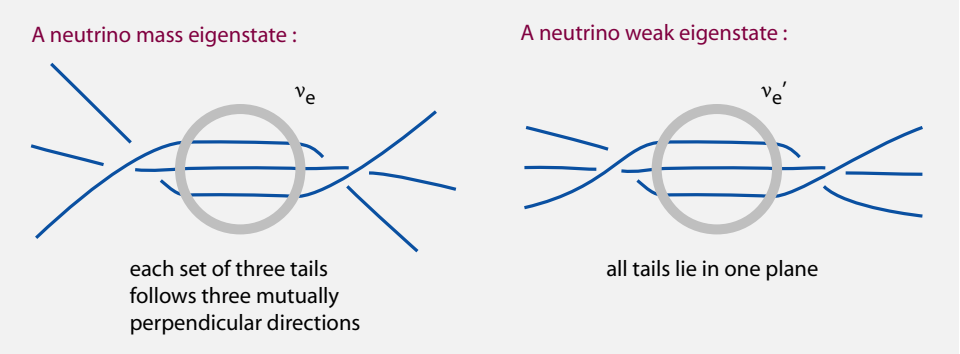


FIGURE 112 Tail shifting leads to neutrino mixing: mass eigenstates and weak eigenstates differ.

the possibility of tail shifting implies that CP violation is small, but non-negligible – as is observed.

The strand model thus predicts that the quark mixing matrix has a non-vanishing CP-violating phase. The value of this phase is predicted to follow from the geometry of the quark tangles, as soon as their shape fluctuations are properly accounted for. This topic is still a subject of research.

Neutrino mixing

The observation, in 1998, of neutrino mixing is comparably recent in the history of particle physics, even though the important physicist Bruno Pontecorvo predicted the effect already in 1957. Again, the observation of neutrino mixing implies that also for neutrinos the mass eigenstates and the weak eigenstates differ. The values of the mixing matrix elements are only known with limited accuracy so far, because the extremely small neutrino mass makes experiments very difficult. Neutrino masses are known to be positive. At present, measurements only yield values of the order of 1 ± 1 eV. In any case, it is definitely known that the mixing among the three neutrino states is strong, in contrast to the situation for quarks.

Ref. 248

Ref. 227

In the strand model, the lepton mass eigenstates correspond to tangles whose tails point along the three coordinate axes. In contrast, the weak eigenstates again correspond to tangles whose tails lie in a plane. The two kinds of eigenstates are illustrated in Figure 112. Again, the transition between the two eigenstates is due to tail shifting, a special kind of strand deformation.

We thus deduce that neutrino mixing, like quark mixing, is an automatic result of the strand model and is related to the weak interaction. Given that the neutrino masses are small and similar, and that neutrinos do not form composites, the strand model predicts that the mixing values are large. This is a direct consequence of the leather trick, which in the case of similar masses, mixes neutrino tangles with 0, 2, 4, 6, 8, 10 etc. crossings and thus leads to large mixings between *all* generations, and not only between neighbouring generations. In the strand model, the large degree of neutrino mixing is thus seen as a consequence of their low and similar masses, and of their existence as free particles.

Again, the strand model predicts a *unitary* mixing matrix for neutrinos. The strand

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

model also predicts that the geometry of the neutrino tangles and their fluctuations will allow us to calculate the mixing angles. More precise predictions are still subject of research.

CP-violation in neutrinos

The strand model predicts that the three neutrinos are massive Dirac particles, not Majorana particles. This has not yet been verified by experiment. The strand model thus predicts that the neutrino mixing matrix has *only one* CP-violating phase. (It would have three such phases if neutrinos were Majorana particles.) The value of this phase is predicted to follow from the neutrino tangles and a proper accounting of their fluctuations. Also this calculation is still a subject of research. On the other hand, it is unclear when the value of the CP-violating phase will be measured. This seems the hardest open challenge of experimental particle physics.

The mechanism of CP violation has important consequences in cosmology, in particular for the matter–antimatter asymmetry. Since the strand model predicts the absence of the see-saw mechanism, the strand model rules out leptogenesis, an idea invented to explain the lack of antimatter in the universe. The strand model is more on the line with electroweak baryogenesis.

Ref. 249
Ref. 250

Open challenge: Calculate mixing angles and phases ab initio

Calculating the mixing angles and phases ab initio, using the statistical distribution of strand fluctuations, is possible in various ways. In particular, it is interesting to find the relation between the probability for a tail shift and for a tail braiding. This will allow checking the statements of this section.

Challenge 215 ny

Because the strand model predicts a lack of new physics beyond the standard model of particle physics, the calculation of neutrino mixing angles is one of the few possible *predictions* that are left over in fundamental physics. Since the lepton tangles are still tentative, a careful investigation is necessary.

Summary on mixing angles and the millennium list

The strand model implies that mixing angles for quarks and neutrinos are properties of their tangle families. The existence of mixing is due to the shape of tangles and their fluctuations. As a result, strands explain why mixing angles are not free parameters, but discrete constants of nature. The strand model also predicts that mixing angles are constant during the evolution of the universe.

We have shown that tangles of strands predict non-zero mixing angles for quarks and neutrinos, as well as CP-violation in both cases. The strand model also predicts that the mixing angles of quarks and neutrinos can be calculated from strand fluctuations. Strands predict that mixing matrices are unitary and that they run with energy. Strands also predict a specific sequence of magnitudes among matrix elements; the few predictions so far agree with the experimental data. Finally, the strand model rules out leptogenesis.

We have thus partly settled four further items from the millennium list of open issues. All qualitative aspects and some sequences are reproduced correctly, but no hard quant-

Page 157

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

ities. The result is somewhat disappointing, but it is also encouraging. No other explanation for quark and neutrino mixing is known at present. Future calculations will allow either improving the checks or refuting the strand model. We leave this topic unfinished because we can now proceed to the most interesting topic left: understanding the coupling constants.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

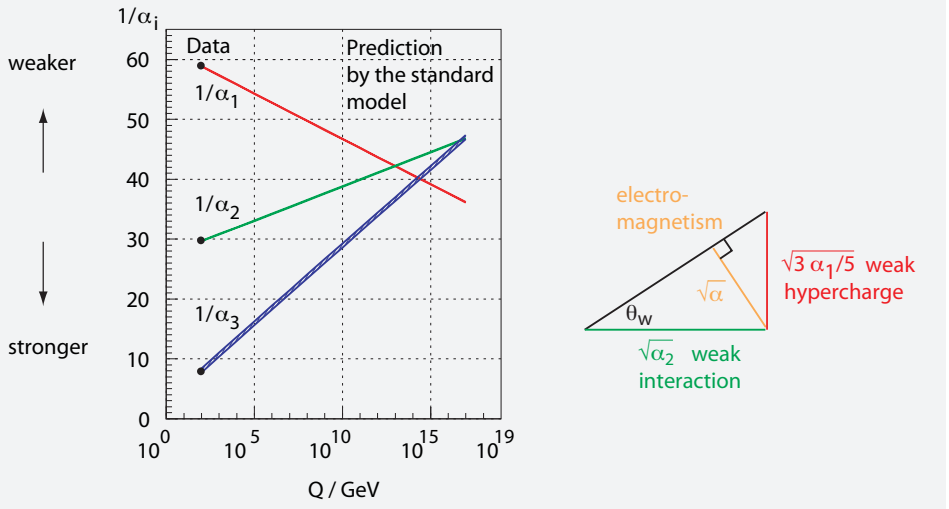


FIGURE 113 Left: How the three coupling constants (squared) change with energy, as predicted by the standard model of particle physics; the graph shows the constants $\alpha_1 = \frac{5}{3}\alpha/\cos^2\theta_W$ for the electromagnetic interaction (more precisely, the weak hypercharge – the factor 5/3 is useful in grand unification), $\alpha_2 = \alpha/\sin^2\theta_W$ for the weak interaction, and $\alpha_3 = \alpha_s$ for the strong coupling constant. The three points are the data points for the highest energies measured so far; at lower energies, data and calculation match within experimental errors (courtesy Wim de Boer). Right: The relation between the coupling constants α for the electromagnetic $U(1)_{EM}$, α_2 for the weak SU(2), α_1 for the weak hypercharge $U(1)_Y$ gauge group and the weak mixing angle θ_W.

COUPLING CONSTANTS AND UNIFICATION

In nature, the strength of a gauge interaction is described by its coupling constant. The coupling constant gives the probability with which a charge emits a virtual gauge boson, or, equivalently, the average phase change produced by the absorption of a gauge boson. There are three coupling constants, one for the electromagnetic, one for the weak and one for the strong interaction. The three coupling constants depend on energy. The known data and the change with energy predicted by the standard model of particle physics are shown in Figure 113. At the lowest possible energy, 0.511 MeV, the *fine structure constant* α, i.e., the electromagnetic coupling constant, has the well-known measured value 1/137.035 999 074(44). Explaining this number, which determines all colours and all material properties in nature, is the most famous millennium issue. If the strand model cannot reproduce all observations about coupling constants, it is wrong.

Ref. 5

In the strand model, all three gauge interactions are due to shape changes of tangle cores. We first classify the possible shape changes. Given a tangle core, the following shape changes can occur:

— *Small* changes of core shape do not produce any crossing switch. Small shape changes thus have no physical significance: for a given observer, they leave all observables unchanged.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— *Twist* shape changes of a strand segment in the core produce an electric field, if the particle is charged. More precisely, the electric field around a particle is the difference between the average number p_{tr} of right twists and the average number p_{tl} of inverse, left twists that a particle tangle produces per unit time.
— *Poke* shape changes of a strand segment in the core produce a weak interaction field. More precisely, the weak field is the asymmetry among the probabilities $p_{\text{p}x}$, $p_{\text{p}y}$ and $p_{\text{p}z}$ for the three fundamental poke types and their inverses.
— *Slide* shape changes of a strand segment in the core produce a colour field, if the particle has colour. More precisely, the colour field is the asymmetry among the probabilities $p_{\text{s}1}$ to $p_{\text{s}8}$ for the eight fundamental slide types and their inverses.

A combination of these moves can also appear. In the strand model, the fluctuation probabilities for each Reidemeister move – twist, poke or slide – determine the coupling constants. We thus need to determine these probability values. A number of conclusions can be deduced directly, without any detailed calculation.

— The coupling constants are not free parameters, but are specified by the geometric, three-dimensional shape of the particle tangles.
— By relating coupling constants to shape fluctuation probabilities, the strand model predicts that coupling constants are *positive* numbers and *smaller than 1* for all energies. This is indeed observed.
— A still stricter bound for coupling constants can also be deduced. The sum of all possible fluctuations for a particular tangle has unit probability. We thus have

$$1 = p_{\text{small}} + p_{\text{tr}} + p_{\text{tl}} + \sum_{w=x,y,z} (p_{\text{p}w} + p_{\text{p}-w}) + \sum_{g=1}^{8} (p_{\text{s}g} + p_{\text{s}-g}) p_{\text{combination}} \,. \tag{209}$$

The strand model thus predicts that the *sum* of the three coupling constants must be *strictly smaller than 1* for every energy value. This is easily checked, both with the data and with the prediction of quantum field theory. In quantum field theory, the (modified) *square* of the three coupling constants is given, as a function of energy, in the popular graph shown in Figure 113. The values are a combination of experimental data – for low energies – and theoretical extrapolations – for high energies. In this popular graph, the electromagnetic coupling is traditionally multiplied by $5/(3\cos^2\theta_{\text{W}})$. (This is done in order to test grand unification; we keep the traditional factor, even though grand unification is predicted by experiment and by the strand model not to apply to nature.) The graph allows us to confirm that the sum of the three unmodified couplings is indeed smaller than 1 for all energy values, as predicted by the strand model.
— The strand model also predicts that the three coupling constants are related by small numbers, as the corresponding fluctuations differ only in the number of involved strands. This is also observed, as Figure 113 shows – especially if we remember that the couplings are the square roots of the values shown in the graph, corrected for the traditional factor.
— The strand model further predicts that the coupling constants are independent of time and space, and that in particular, they do not depend on the age of the universe.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Ref. 251 This is also observed, despite occasional claims to the contrary.

— Finally, strand model predicts that the coupling constants are the same for particles and antiparticles, as is observed.

In summary, the strand model implies, like quantum field theory, that coupling constants are probabilities. The obvious consequences that the coupling constants must be smaller than one and sum to a number smaller than one are valid both in quantum field theory and in the strand model. Despite the encouraging agreement with experiment, we have not deduced any new result yet – except one.

Strands imply unification

In fact, one new point is made by the strand model. Each gauge interaction is due to a different Reidemeister move. However, given a specific tangle core deformation, different observers will classify the deformation as a different Reidemeister move. Indeed, *every* Reidemeister move can be realized by the *same* deformation of a single strand: it is sufficient to add a curved section to a straight strand segment. Such a deformation will look like a type I move for one observer, like a type II move for another, and like a type III move for a third one.

Page 267

Because all interactions follow from the same kind of strand deformation, the strand model thus provides *unification* of the interactions. This result is new: in fact, this kind of strand unification of the interactions differs completely from any other approach ever proposed. In particular, strand unification does *not* require that the three coupling constants have the same value at high energy.

A given shape deformation thus has five probabilities associated to it: the probabilities describe what percentage of observers sees this deformation as a type I move, as a type II move, as a type III move, as a combination of such moves or as no move at all, i.e., as a small move without any crossing switch. On the other hand, at energies measurable in the laboratory, the moves *can usually* be distinguished, because for a given reaction, usually all probabilities but one practically vanish, due to the time averaging and spatial scales involved.* In short, at energies measurable in the laboratory, the three interactions always clearly differ.

General expectations about coupling constants

The strand model predicts that the calculation of the three coupling constants is a problem of tangle geometry and fluctuation statistics. Thus it can be approached, at each energy scale, either *analytically* or with *computer calculations*. The calculations need to determine the probabilities of the corresponding Reidemeister moves. If the results do not agree with the experimental values, the strand model is false. We note that there is no freedom to tweak the calculations towards the known experimental results.

In order to match observations, all tangles with *unit* electric charge must have the *same* coupling, and thus the same probability for preferred fluctuations of twists, i.e., of Reidemeister I moves. For example, the preferred probabilities must be identical for the

* The strand model thus predicts that at extremely high energy, meaning near the Planck energy, for each gauge interaction, also particles with zero charge can interact. At Planck energy, the time averaging is not perfect, and interactions become possible even with zero charge.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

positron and the proton. *The twist probabilities thus must be quantized and must classify tangles into equivalence classes defined by their electric charge.*

So far, there do not seem to exist any analytical tool that permits the calculation of shape deformation probabilities. Thus, at present, computer calculations seem to be the only possible choice. Of all existing software programs, the most adapted to calculating fluctuation probabilities are the programs that simulate the dynamics of knotted polymers; but also the programs that simulate the dynamics of cosmic strings or the dynamics of helium vortices are candidates. The main issue, apart from a large computer time, is the correct and self-consistent specification of the shape fluctuation distribution at each energy scale.

Challenge 216 r

In summary, using the strand model we expect to be able to calculate the electromagnetic coupling constant and to understand its validity across all elementary particles. The same expectation obviously also holds for the two nuclear interactions. If any of the expectations on tangle interactions are found to be incorrect, the strand model is false. *The strand model must yield quantized tangle equivalence classes for the electromagnetic, weak and colour charge.* Even though the calculation issues are still subject of research, there are several hints that these expectations will be validated.

First hint: charge quantization and topological writhe

In nature, electric, weak and strong charge are *quantized*. No experiment has ever found even the smallest deviation from charge quantization. *All charges in nature are integer multiples of a smallest charge unit.* Specifically, the electric charge of every free particle is observed to be an integer multiple of the positron electric charge. We call the integer the *electric charge quantum number*. The electromagnetic coupling of the positron is best described by the number 1/11.706 237 6139(19) at low energy, i.e., at 0.511 MeV. This value – the *electric charge unit* at low energy – is the square root of the famous *fine structure constant* $\alpha = 1/137.035\,999\,074(44)$. Quantum electrodynamics also predicts the precise change with energy of this charge unit; the experiments performed so far, up to over 100 GeV, agree with this prediction. Extrapolating this change, quantum electrodynamics predicts that the charge unit, when extrapolated right up to the Planck energy, would have a value of 1/10.2(1), as shown in Figure 113. If the strand model does not reproduce these observations, it is wrong.

Ref. 5

We thus need to understand, using the strand model, the quantization of electric charge on the one hand, and the mysterious value of the charge unit – either at low energy or at Planck energy – on the other hand.

In the strand model, electric charge is related to the *chirality* of a tangle. Only chiral tangles are electrically charged. The strand model thus implies that a topological quantity for tangles – defined for each tangle in the tangle family corresponding to a specific elementary particle – must represent electric charge. Which quantity could this be?

The usual topological quantity to determine chirality of knots and tangles is the *topological writhe*. To determine it, we draw a *minimal projection*, i.e., a two-dimensional knot or tangle diagram with the smallest number of crossings possible. We then count the right-handed crossings and subtract the number of left-handed crossings. This difference, an integer, is the topological writhe. We note:

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— The topological writhe of the W boson tangles is +3 or −3, depending on which mirror image we look at; the topological writhe of the Z boson tangle vanishes. The topological writhe of any unknotted strand also vanishes. In this way, if we define the electric charge quantum number as *one third* of the topological writhe, we recover the correct electric charge quantum number of the weak and all other gauge bosons.

Page 311 — The tangles of the quarks show that if we define the electric charge quantum number as *one third* of the topological writhe, we recover the correct electric charge quantum number of all quarks. We note that the leather trick does not change this result.

Page 317 — The tangles of the leptons show that if we define the electric charge quantum number as the topological writhe of the *centre region* only, we recover the correct electric charge quantum number of all leptons. Again, the leather trick does not change this result.

In other terms, the electric charge quantum number can be reproduced with the help of topological writhe.

Let us sum up. In nature, electric charge is quantized. The strand model describes charged particles with the help of fluctuating alternating tangles, and charge quantization is a topological effect that results because all particles are made of strands. In particular,

▷ The *electric charge quantum number* behaves like topological writhe: it is quantized, has two possible signs, vanishes for achiral tangles, is a topological invariant – and thus is conserved.

In short, a topological quantity, namely topological writhe, reproduces the electric charge quantum number in the strand model. Three issues remain. First, given that every Challenge 217 e particle is described by a tangle family with an infinite number of members, how is the electric charge, i.e., the topological writhe of the other tangle family members accounted for? It is not hard to see that family members do not change topological writhe. The Challenge 218 ny second issue is more thorny: why is the charge definition different for leptons? We skip this problem for the time being and continue with the third issue: What is the origin of the peculiar value of the charge unit, whose square has the value 1/137.035 999 074(44) at low energy? We start by revisiting the change of charge with energy.

Second hint: the energy dependence of physical quantities

In nature, all effective charges, i.e., the coupling constants, change with energy. One also Page 366 says that they *run* with energy. Figure 113 shows the details. Running also occurs for masses and mixing angles. All other intrinsic particle properties, such as spin, parities and all other quantum numbers, are found *not* to change with energy. For the coupling constants, the measured changes between everyday energy and about 100 GeV agree with the prediction from quantum field theory.*

* In the standard model of particle physics, the running of the electromagnetic and weak coupling constants Ref. 223 – the slope in Figure 113 – depends on the number of existing Higgs boson types. The (corrected) strand Page 321 model predicts that this number is one. Measuring the running of the constants thus allows checking the number of Higgs bosons. Unfortunately, the difference is small; for the electromagnetic coupling, the slope changes by around 2 % if the Higgs number changes by one. But in future, such a measurement accuracy might be possible.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The strand model predicts

▷ Coupling constants, like masses and mixing angles, change with energy because they are quantities that *depend* on the average *geometrical shape* of the underlying particle tangles.

More precisely, the running quantities depend on the fluctuations of the geometric shapes, and these fluctuations depend somewhat on the energy scale under consideration. We note that the strand model predicts a running *only* for these three types of observables; all the other observables – spin, parities or other quantum numbers – are predicted to depend on the *topology* of the particle tangles, and thus to be *independent* of energy. This agrees with observation. Therefore, we now explore the details of the running.

Third hint: the running of the coupling constants at low energy

The strand model proposes a new view on the screening and antiscreening effects that are part of quantum field theory. Screening effects are consequences of the statistics of shape deformations for loose tangle cores that are embedded into the strands that form the vacuum. Since these statistical effects can in principle be calculated, it is expected that such calculations can be compared with the predictions of quantum field theory shown in Figure 113. This check is in progress. A few results, however, can be deduced without any calculations at all.

Page 366

In the strand model, the electromagnetic interaction is due to the first Reidemeister move, the twist. For a charged particle – thus one with a chiral tangle core – the average difference in the occurrence of right and left twists determines the effective charge. It is expected that this difference *decreases* when the strand core is loose, because the loose strands are more similar to those of the surrounding vacuum, so that the differences due to the chirality of the tangle will be washed out. In the language of quantum field theory, the virtual particle-antiparticle pairs – created by the fluctuations of the vacuum strands – screen the central, naked charge. The screening changes is reduced when the energy is increased, and thus the dimensions, including those of the fluctuations, are reduced. In other words, the strand model predicts that the electromagnetic coupling increases with energy, as is observed.

Also for the two nuclear interactions, the washing out effect for loose tangle cores by the vacuum does occur as predicted by quantum field theory. In the weak interaction, the antiscreening of the weak charge appears in this way. In the strong interaction, both virtual quark–antiquark pairs and virtual gluon pairs can appear from the strands that make up the vacuum. Virtual quark–antiquark pairs lead to screening, as virtual electron–antielectron pairs do for the electromagnetic interaction. In addition, however, we have seen that the strand model of mesons implies that virtual gluon pairs lead to antiscreening. (In contrast, virtual photon pairs do not lead to such an effect.) Because the strand model fixes the number of quark and gluons, the strand model is consistent with the result that the screening of the colour charge by quark pairs is overcompensated by the antiscreening of the virtual gluon pairs.

Page 323

In other words, the strand model reproduces the observed signs for the slopes of the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

coupling constants in Figure 113, for the same reason that it reproduces the quantum field theoretic description of the three gauge interactions. The predicted running could also be checked quantitatively, by taking statistical averages of tangle fluctuations of varying dimension. This is a challenge for future research.

Fourth hint: predictions at low energy, independent of particle content

As we saw, the complete explanation of the running of the couplings depends on the explicit boson and fermion content of nature and on the fact that the strand model reproduces quantum field theory. Interestingly, the strand model also proposes a simpler, though less precise explanation of the running.

At energies much smaller than the Planck energy, such as everyday energies, the strand model implies that the average size of the tangle core is of the order of the position uncertainty of a particle. In other words, any thickness of the strands – real or effective – can be neglected at low energies. Therefore, at low energies, the average strand length within a particle tangle core is also of the order of the de Broglie wavelength. Low, everyday energy thus implies *large*, *loose* and *spherical/ellipsoidal* tangle cores.

At low energies, shape fluctuations can lead to any of the three Reidemeister moves. The probabilities of such shape deformations will scale with some power of the average strand length within the tangle core. In other words, coupling constants depend on energy. But how exactly?

We note directly that *higher* Reidemeister moves, which involve larger numbers of strand segments, will scale with *larger* power values. In particular, the longer the strand in the core – i.e., the lower the energy – the more the relative probability for the higher Reidemeister moves will increase.

In summary, the strand model predicts that when a tangle is loose and long, i.e., when energies are low, the strong nuclear interaction, due to the third Reidemeister move, is the strongest gauge interaction, followed by the weak nuclear interaction, due to the second Reidemeister move, in turn followed by the electromagnetic interaction. The prediction matches observations. Unfortunately, this argument is not reliable. If the strand number were the *only* cause of the running, the argument would imply that the three slopes for the running of the three coupling constants should behave like 3:2:1. However, the graph of Figure 113 shows otherwise, even if the difference between the electromagnetic coupling and the weak hypercharge coupling is taken into account. Indeed, the running of the coupling constants is not due to strand number only, but also to the explicit boson and fermion content of nature, as we just saw.

Page 366

The running of the coupling constants near Planck energy

At energies near the Planck energy, quantum field theory is modified: effects due to the strand diameter start to play a role. Near Planck energy, tangles get tighter and tighter and fluctuations get weaker, because there is less room for them. In other words, near Planck energy tangles tend to approach the structure of horizons. Therefore, near the Planck energy, the strand model predicts deviations from the energy dependence of the coupling constants that is predicted by quantum field theory.

Estimating the Planck scale deviations between the strand model and quantum field

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

theory is possible: we need to calculate the coupling constants at Planck energy. Such a calculation might even allow us to estimate the low-energy coupling constants from their Planck energy values. However, so far, this approach has not led to success, despite a number of attempts. In fact, this approach to calculate the low-energy coupling constants must be considered unsatisfactory, due to the approximations and extrapolations involved.

On estimating the fine structure constant from knot shapes

Given the uncertainty of Planck energy behaviour, coupling constants are best determined or estimated at low energy. For example, in the strand model, the (square root of the) fine structure constant is the probability for the emission of twists by a fluctuating chiral tangle.

▷ The strand model predicts that the fine structure constant can be calculated by determining the probability of twists in the random tangle shapes of a given particle with nonzero electrical charge.

In other words, the strand model must show that the probability of the first Reidemeister move in chiral particle tangles is *quantized*. This probability must be an integer multiple of a unit that is common to all tangles; and this coupling unit must be the fine structure constant.

A check for the existence of a coupling unit requires the calculation of twist appearance probabilities for *each* chiral particle tangle. The strand model is only correct if all particles with the same electric charge yield the same twist emission probability. Simple estimates show that numerical simulations of random shapes require a large amount of computer time, due to the large number of configurations that must be explored. Could the twist emission probability be estimated with a simpler calculation? Can we check whether the probability is indeed quantized? There are a number of possibilities.

Fifth hint: 3d-writhe

A first, simple exploration of the fine structure constant is based on the *conjecture* that the twist emission probability is proportional, *approximately*, to the 3d writhe of a tangle.

Page 404

The *3d writhe* is the three-dimensional average of the topological writhe. To determine 3d writhe, we imagine to observe a knot or tangle from a random direction and draw the projection, i.e., the two-dimensional tangle diagram. We then count the right-handed crossings and subtract the number of left-handed crossings. If we average this difference over all possible observation directions, we get the 3d writhe of that knot or tangle. In short, the 3d writhe is a three-dimensional measure of chirality. The important point is that the value of 3d writhe, in contrast to topological writhe, *depends on the shape* of the tangle. To get a physically useful observable from the strand model, we must then also average, for a given wave function, over all possible tangle shapes.

3d writhe is a natural candidate to describe full electric charge, i.e., the product of the fine structure constant and the electric charge quantum number. 3d writhe is a generalization of topological writhe, and topological writhe behaves, as we just saw, like the electric charge quantum number. But there are additional arguments for the conjecture.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

FIGURE 114 A tight open overhand knot and a tight open figure-eight knot (© Piotr Pieranski, from Ref. 238).

Recent research on knot and tangle shape averaging has produced some important results about 3d writhe and related tangle properties. First, researchers discovered that several average properties of *random* knots and tangles correlate with properties of *tight* knots and tangles. Two examples of tight tangles are shown in Figure 114. To clarify the correlation, we take a set of fluctuating or random tangles, all with the same topology; these tangles show fluctuating or random values of the 3d writhe. Nevertheless, the *average* 3d writhe for all tangle shapes is found numerically to be indistinguishable from the 3d writhe of the *tight* tangle. This has been confirmed in various studies to a numerical precision of a few per cent. For example, both the average 3d writhe of any *random* achiral knot and the 3d writhe of the corresponding *tight* achiral knot vanishes. This numerical equality has been checked numerically for knots with minimal crossing numbers below 10. However, so far, there is no mathematical proof that the equality is exact.

Ref. 252 Ref. 252

A second result of modern knot research is even more interesting. In the years between 1996 and 1998 it was discovered that the 3d writhe for closed alternating *tight* knots is *quasi-quantized*. More specifically, many different closed knots share almost the same 3d writhe value; in particular, to within 1 %, the 3d writhe of all (small) closed alternating knots is the multiple of a 'writhe quantum', with the value 4/7. No simple argument for this surprising result is known yet.

Ref. 253

Let us combine these two results of modern research. If the full electric charge, i.e., the twist emission probability of chiral, i.e., charged particles, would be given by the value of the 3d writhe, then the charge unit would be related to the quasi-quantum of the 3d writhe.*

▷ If the conjectured relation between charge and 3d-writhe were correct, (quasi-) quantization of charge would follow.

Of course, we would need to check first that all mentioned results about knots also hold for tangles, and not only for knots. This does not seem too hard.

In short, if electric charge and the fine structure constant would be described by 3d writhe of particle tangles, charge would be almost quantized. Alas, the known value of

* We note that the issue of quasi-quantization – instead of an exact quantization – could be circumvented in the following way. In the strand model, at low energy, the strands effectively have negligible thickness. As a result, the average writhe of randomly shaped tangles could deviate somewhat from the writhe of tight tangles. This could imply that the average writhe of loose, randomly shaped tangles might be exactly quantized, whereas the writhe of tight tangles remains only approximately quantized.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the writhe quasi-quantum, 4/7, does *not* help us to deduce the value of the fine structure constant, because in this conjecture on the origin of the fine structure constant, the writhe quasi-quantum could be multiplied by any numerical factor to yield the particle coupling. Nevertheless, we are left with a fascinating conjecture that suggests a natural way in which electric charge could be quantized in nature. The conjecture that some quantity close to 3d writhe is quantized in integer multiples of a smallest value would explain why the fine structure constant exists.

We note that this conjecture also predicts that the 3d writhe of quark tangles must be either one third or two thirds times the writhe the W boson tangle. Such a calculation still needs to be preformed.

Sixth hint: torsion

We mentioned that each coupling constant gives the average probability of virtual boson emission. In the case of electromagnetism, it might be that the *total torsion* of a tight tangle is a more accurate measure for the probability of twist emission. Also this conjecture fulfils many expectations about the fine structure constant.

Exploring torsion is a subject of research. In any case, estimating the twist emission probability without computer calculations is not a problem that is easy to solve without deeper insight into tangle shapes. Unfortunately, the exact shape is unknown for all tight open or closed knots – even for the trefoil knot. (As mentioned already early on, this is one of the simplest and, at the same time, most difficult open problems of geometry.) The exact tight shape is also unknown for all particle tangles.

Vol. I, page 72

Seventh hint: linking number

One of the best *tentative* explanations for charge quantization relates electric charge and the *linking number* of ribbons. The conjecture consists of the following argument chain.

Page 404

— In knot theory, a *framing* is the ribbon associated to a tangle or knot when the strands are displaced in some predefined way. In nature, every particle tangle has an effective framing, because, due to time uncertainty, strands can be seen to be effectively ribbons. The framing fluctuates.
— In particle tangles, only curved ribbons should lead to (net) photon emission. Electric charge should therefore depend on the sum of *writhe* and *twist* of the (averaged) framing ribbon, because both these properties lead to virtual photon emission.
— The sum of writhe and twist of a ribbon is determined, through Calugareanu's theorem, by the linking number, which is a purely topological quantity and an integer. In more detail, the *linking number* of a ribbon is the number of times that the two edges of a ribbon wind around each other.
— The connection between photon emission and linking number, an integer, suggests charge quantization. This seems an appealing conjecture to explain the exact quantization of electric charge.
— Averaging the linking number over all possible tangle ribbons might even explain the value of the fine structure constant.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

If the conjectured relation between linking number and electric charge is correct, it might even lead to a partly analytical calculation of the fine structure constant, once the tangle shape is included in the proper way. This conjecture still is a topic of research.

Eighth hint: estimating coupling constants using random rotations (2013 version)

Another approach for the calculation of coupling constants is the following. As argued above, we assume that at low energy, particles are accurately described, on *average*, by loose tangles that have the shape of *scaled-up tight* tangles. We further assume that the *simplest* tangles are a good approximation for the whole tangle family that corresponds to a specific elementary particle. With these two assumptions, we can take the shape Page 346 of the tangles shown in Figure 107, though with strands of negligible diameter, as the average representatives for the W boson and Z boson. Using these boson representatives, we can try to estimate the U(1) and SU(2) couplings at Planck energy by calculating the probability in which a *random rotation* of the open tight trefoil knot yields a Reidemeister Ref. 254 I or a Reidemeister II move.

This calculation was first performed with the mistaken assignments of the long overhand knot and the long figure-eight knot for the W and Z bosons. These tangle assignments are not correct, but the results are still of interest.

Random knot orientations do lead to a value for the electromagnetic coupling constant. But the assumption that all knot orientations are equally probable does *not* yield Ref. 254 values for the coupling constants that agree with the known data: the discrepancy from data is around 50 %.

Where does the approximation break down? We might argue that random rotations of tight open knots are not possible in general, but that only rotation around the axis defined by the tails are allowed. Taking this point into account improves the situation for the U(1) coupling, but leads to a vanishing SU(2) coupling.

A slightly different view of the coupling constants is more promising. The fine structure constant can be viewed as the average angle value by which the phase of a wave function changes when a photon is absorbed (or emitted). The strand version of this view offers an interesting approach for calculations. We know that this view of the fine structure constant is correct, from QED, and that it is fruitful, because we used it above Page 233 to deduce Schwinger's expression for the anomalous magnetic moment from the strand model.

Again, the first calculations were performed with the incorrect and knotted W and Z tangles. The simplest case to explore is the open trefoil that describes the essential aspects of the weak W boson. Any absorption of a photon by a W boson is expected to lead, at low energy, to a rotation of the trefoil. We can thus average, over all orientations of the open trefoil, the rotation angle required to add an effective loop (or twist), i.e., to change the (2d) writhe by +1 and, at the same time, the crossing number by +1. Because such a specific process describes the absorption of a photon without subsequent reemission, the resulting average angle should be close to the square root of the fine structure constant.

The approach directly yields a very rough, but simple approximation. We imagine that the simplest effect of a photon is only to change the orientation of the W tangle in space, so that its crossing number and its (2d) writhe both change by 1. This probability

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

p is encoded in the 3d writhe w of the open trefoil. Of course, the 3d writhe also contains other changes, but we neglect them in this rough approximation. Thus we approximate the probability as $p = w - 3$, where w is the 3d writhe of the open trefoil. The value w has been determined by Jason Cantarella to be 3.394. In a further, very rough approximation, we estimate the average angle, i.e., the square root of the fine structure constant, as

$$\sqrt{\alpha} \approx \frac{p}{2\pi} = \frac{w-3}{2\pi} = 0.063 \,. \tag{210}$$

On the other hand, the measured value for $\sqrt{\alpha}$ is 0.085424(1). As expected, the approximation is not satisfying.

A better appoximation of rotation effects arises if we chose a random starting orientation of the W tangle and then determine the average angle needed to change both its (2d) writhe and its crossing number by +1. Then we again average this average over all possible starting orientations. For the simplest Z tangle in the original model, the figure eight knot, the average vanishes within the numerical precision of the knot shape data. This is as expected for a neutral particle. For the open overhand or trefoil knot, thus for the simplest W tangle in the original model, we get

$$\sqrt{\alpha} \approx 0.072(2) \,. \tag{211}$$

The result is somewhat closer to the experimental value 0.085424(1), but the accuracy is still not satisfying; the inverse square, about 192(10), misses the fine structure constant, 137.036(1), by 40 %.

These approximations assumed that (1) the tangle of the W is correct, that (2) absorbed photons only *rotate* the tangle core, and that (3) all possible rotation angles are equally probable. However, we know that the first assumption is not correct and that even if it had been, the last two approximations cannot yield an accurate result, because photon absorption includes and implies the *deformation* of tangle cores.

In summary, it is necessary to repeat the described estimates and calculations with the correct tangles for the W and Z boson.

Ninth hint: estimating the fine structure constant from deformation statistics

Fluctuations of tangles are random. A precise calculation of the fine structure constant must include shape fluctuations, as well as their actual spectrum covered by their randomness.

A simple approach is to add a random twist – i.e., a random photon – to a particle tangle. Such a random twist will influence both the phase and the 3d writhe of the tangle.

If we look at the 3d writhe, we can look at the average 3d writhe for left-handed twists and compare it to the average for right-handed twists. The calculation is under way.

If we explore the phase, we need to calculate the following: for a random twist added to the particle tangle, we determine the induced phase change. We average this phase change over all random tangles. The average phase change is the square root of the fine structure constant. The calculation is under way.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

These types of calculations can be improved by including a more detailed fluctuation spectrum, especially by taking into account how random virtual photons deform particle tangles. This is a subject of reserach.

Open challenge: Calculate coupling constants ab initio

Calculating *all three* coupling constants ab initio, by determining the statistics of strand fluctuations, will allow checking the statements of this section in an independent manner. The calculations should be performed at various energies, to confirm the energy dependence of the couplings.

Challenge 219 r

In order to reach high precision, the effects of the various tangle family members have to be taken into account, because in the strand model, each particle is described by a family of tangles. It seems, though, that family members have similar effects on electric charge q and on effective coupling $q\sqrt{\alpha}$, so that the family issue might be neglected in first order calculations. For the nuclear coupling constants, Arnold's results on plane curves may help in the calculations.

Page 342

Ref. 255

The calculations described in the previous sections are under way. We are eager to check the outcome with the measured values.

Electric dipole moments

The issue of the electric dipole moment merits a closer look. Does the strand model lead to electric dipole moments for elementary particles? One one hand, the charge quantum number is a topological quantity. On the other hand, the concept of dipole moment is based on a distribution of the electric charge in space.

In the strand model, the electric charge, being a topological quantity, is by definition a slightly non-local quantity. It is non-local on a scale of the order of a Planck length. At the same time, the strand model does not allow to define spatial distributions at Planck-scale dimensions.

In summary, we expect that up to a region close to a Planck length, the strand model should not yield dipole moments that differ from those predicted by the standard model of particle physics.

Summary on coupling constants and millennium issues

The strand model implies that coupling constants are geometric properties of specific tangle families. As a result, strands explain why the coupling constants are not free parameters in nature, but fixed constants. Strands predict that coupling constants run with energy and are constant during the macroscopic evolution of the universe, as is observed. Strands also predict the correct sequence of the coupling constants at low energy and the correct sign of their running with energy. Strands thus reproduce all qualitative properties of coupling constants. No other unified model achieves this.

Strand propose several ways to calculate coupling constants using knot shapes. The first estimates of the fine structure constant, based on knotted strands, deviate from experiment by 40 %. The accuracy and the particle models are not satisfying; however, the approximation can be improved. It was the first ever estimate of the fine structure constant from first principles. Improved calculations are ongoing and will allow to confirm

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

or to refute the strand model.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

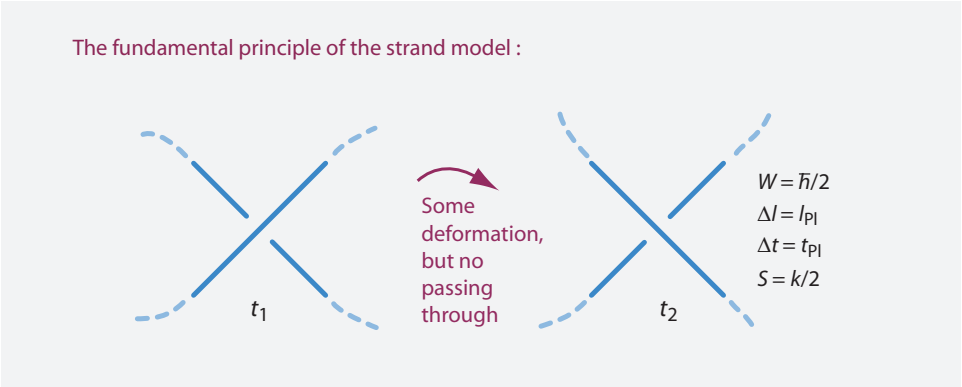


FIGURE 115 The fundamental principle of the strand model: *Planck units are defined by a crossing switch in three spatial dimensions.* The fundamental principle implies general relativity and the standard model of particle physics.

FINAL SUMMARY ABOUT THE MILLENNIUM ISSUES

In our adventure, we have argued that Planck's natural units should be modelled with the fundamental principle for strands, which is shown again in Figure 115. The fundamental principle explains the following measured properties of nature:

— Strands explain the principle of least action and the invariance of c, $\hbar$, G and k.
— Strands explain the three dimensions of space, the existence of gravitation and curvature, the equations of general relativity, the value of black hole entropy and the observations of modern cosmology.
— Strands explain all the concepts used in the Lagrangian of the standard model of particle physics, including wave functions, the Dirac equation and the finite, discrete and small mass of elementary particles.
— Strands explain the existence of electromagnetism and of the two nuclear interactions, with their gauge groups and all their other observed properties.
— Strands describe the observed gauge and Higgs bosons, their charges, their quantum numbers and their mass mass ranges.
— Strands explain the three generations of quarks and leptons, their charges and quantum numbers, their mixing, their mass sequences, as well as their confinement properties.
— Strands explain the quark model of hadrons, including CP violation, mass sequences, signs of quadrupole moments, the lack of unobserved hadrons, common Regge slopes and the existence of tetraquarks.
— Strands *do not allow* arbitrary values for masses, coupling constants, mixing angles and CP violating phases.
— Strands *enable* calculations of particle masses, their coupling constants, their mixing angles and the CP violating phases. First rough estimates of these values agree with the (much more precise) experimental data. Computer calculations will allow us to improve these checks in the near future.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— Finally, strands predict that nature *does not hide* any unknown fundamental interaction, fundamental symmetry, elementary particle or additional dimension. In particular, strands predict that no additional mathematical or physical concepts are required for a final theory.

All these results translate to specific statements on experimental observations. So far, there is no contradiction between the strand model and experiments. These results allow us to sum up our adventure in three statements:

1. *Strands solve all open issues.* With one simple fundamental principle, the strand model solves or at least proposes a way to solve *all* issues from the millennium list of
Page 18 open issues in fundamental physics. All fundamental constants can be calculated.
2. *Strands agree with all observations.* In particular, the strand model implies that general relativity, quantum theory and the standard model of elementary particles are a *precise* description of motion for all practical purposes.
3. *Nothing new will be discovered in fundamental physics.* Unexpectedly but convincingly, strands predict that general relativity, quantum theory and the standard model of elementary particles are a *complete* description of motion for all practical purposes.

We have not yet literally reached the top of Motion Mountain – because certain numerical predictions of the fundamental constants are not yet precise enough – but if no cloud has played a trick on us, we have seen the top from nearby. In particular, we finally know the origin of colours.

The last leg, the accurate calculation of the constants of the standard model of particle physics, is still under way. The drive for simplicity and the spirit of playfulness that we
Page 20 invoked at the start have been good guides.

EXPERIMENTAL PREDICTIONS OF THE STRAND MODEL

> “Es gibt viele Theorien,
> die sich jedem Test entziehen.
> Diese aber kann man checken,
> elend wird sie dann verrecken.*”
>
> Anonymous

Many experiments around the world are searching for effects that are unexplained by the standard model of particle physics. At the same time, all these experiments are testing the strand model presented here. In fact, most people working on these experiments have not heard about the strand model, so that there is not even the danger of unconscious bias.

The most important predictions of the strand model that we deduced in our adventure are listed in Table 16. One prediction is unique and unconfirmed: the possibility to calculate the constants in the standard model of particle physics.

* No adequate translation possible.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 16 The main predictions of the strand model that follow from the fundamental principle. The typeface distinguishes predictions that are unsurprising, that are *unconfirmed or unique* to the strand model, and those that are both **unconfirmed and unique**.

	Experiment	Prediction (most from 2008/2009)	Status (2016)
Page 35	Planck units (c, $\hbar$, k, $c^4/4G$)	are limit values.	None has been exceeded, but more checks are possible.
Page 319	Higgs boson	2008/9: does not exist.	Falsified.
Page 321		2012: does exist.	Verified.
Page 370	*Running of the coupling constants*	*2008/9: implies no Higgs.*	*No data yet.*
Page 370		*2012: implies one Higgs.*	*No data yet.*
Page 319	*Longitudinal W and Z boson scattering*	*2008/9: show non-local effects at the Large Hadron Collider.*	*No data yet.*
Page 321		*2012: show no non-local effects at the Large Hadron Collider.*	*None found yet.*
Page 319	*Longitudinal W and Z boson scattering*	*is unitary at the LHC.*	*Obvious.*
Page 342	*Unknown fermions (supersymmetric particles, magnetic monopoles, dyons, heavy neutrinos etc.)*	*do not exist.*	*None found yet.*
Page 304	*Unknown bosons (other gauge bosons, supersymmetric particles, axions etc.)*	*do not exist.*	*None found yet.*
Page 268, page 308	*Unknown interactions, energy scales and symmetries (grand unification, supersymmetry, quantum groups, technicolour etc.)*	*do not exist.*	*None found yet.*
Page 303	**Particle masses, mixing angles and coupling constants**	**are calculable by modifying existing software packages.**	**Most not yet calculated; approximations yield mostly correct value sequences and estimates.**
Page 303	Particle masses, mixing angles and coupling constants	are constant in time.	Is observed.
Page 360	Mixing matrix for quarks	is unitary.	Is observed.
Page 363	*Mixing matrix for neutrinos*	*is unitary.*	*No data yet.*
Page 330	*Neutrinos*	*are Dirac particles.*	*No data yet.*
Page 318	Neutrino-less double beta decay	does not exist.	Not yet found.
Page 268, page 318	Electric dipole moments of elementary particles, magnetic dipole moment of neutrinos	have extremely small, standard model values.	Agrees with experiment.
Page 333	Tetraquarks	exist.	Likely.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 16 (Continued) The main predictions of the strand model that follow from the fundamental principle. The typeface distinguishes predictions that are unsurprising, that are *unconfirmed or unique* to the strand model, and those that are both **unconfirmed and unique**.

	Experiment	Prediction (most from 2008/2009)	Status (2016)
Page 314, page 330	*Glueballs*	*probably do not exist; if they do, the spectrum can be compared to the strand model.*	*Not yet observed.*
Page 268, page 318	Proton decay and other rare decays, neutron-antineutron oscillations	occur at extremely small, standard model rates.	Not yet observed.
Page 331	Neutron decay	follows the standard model.	No deviations found.
Page 331	Neutron charge	vanishes.	None observed.
Page 327	*Hadron masses and form factors*	*can be calculated ab initio.*	*Not yet calculated; value sequences and signs correct.*
Page 343	Dark matter	is conventional matter plus black holes.	Partly confirmed by black hole merger and lack of other results.
Page 304	*Standard model of particle physics*	*2008/9: is essentially correct, with deviations for the scattering of longitudinal vector bosons at LHC energy.*	*Not yet falsified, but deviations not yet observed.*
		2012: is correct for all measurable energies.	*Not yet falsified.*
Page 142	Additional dimensions	do not exist.	Not observed.
Page 142	Non-commutative space-time	does not exist.	Not observed.
Page 284	General relativity	is correct at all accessible energies.	No deviation found.
Page 284	Short-distance deviations from universal gravitation and modified gravity	do not exist.	No deviation found.
Page 283	Space-time singularities, cosmic strings, wormholes, time-like loops, negative energy regions, domain walls	do not exist.	None observed.
Page 288, page 269	Quantum gravity effects	will not be found.	None observed yet.
Page 294	Behind a horizon	nothing exists.	Nothing observed.
Page 297	Cosmological constant (dark energy)	is small and positive.	Is observed.
Page 297	*Cosmological constant (dark energy)*	*decreases with time squared.*	*Data are inconclusive.*
Page 299	*Cosmic matter density*	*decreases with time squared.*	*Data are inconclusive.*
Page 297, page 364	Cosmic inflation and leptogenesis	did not occur.	Data are inconclusive.
Page 300	Cosmic topology	is trivial.	As observed.
Page 343	Vacuum	is stable.	As observed.
	In summary: all motion	**results from strands.**	**Not yet falsified.**

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

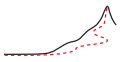
So far, the most interesting predictions of the strand model are the *numerical* predictions on the decay of the cosmological constant, the spectrum of possible elementary particles – including the existence of three generations – the various mass ratios and mass sequences – including the Z/W and Higgs/W mass ratios – and the relative strength of the three interactions. Above all, there is the possibility to calculate all fundamental constants in the foreseeable future.

The strand model reproduces the quark model, gauge theory, wave functions and general relativity and, at the same time, predicts the lack of measurable deviations. The strand model solves conceptual problems such as the dark matter problem, confinement, the strong CP problem and the anomaly issue; by doing so, the strand model predicts the lack of unknown effects in these domains.

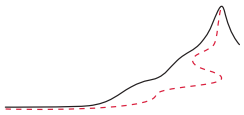
The strand model deduces all its experimental predictions from a single and simple fundamental principle: *events and Planck units are due to crossing switches of strands.* Provided there are no errors of reasoning, there is no way to change the predictions summarized here. The strand model is both simple and unmodifiable.

Naturally, errors of reasoning in the preceding chapters are well possible. A few have occurred in the past. The exploration was performed at high speed – possibly too high.

If any experiment ever contradicts a prediction of the strand model, the model is doomed. When the above experimental predictions were first deduced in 2008 and 2009, they were quite unpopular. Practically all other attempts at unification predicted the existence of yet undiscovered particles and effects. However, so far, experiment does not confirm these attempts; in fact, no prediction of the strand model has been falsified yet.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Chapter 13

THE TOP OF MOTION MOUNTAIN

> All things are full of gods.
>
> Thales*

Who am I? Where do I come from? What shall I do? Where does the world come from? Can the whole world really come to an end? What will happen in the future? What is beauty? All these questions have a common aspect: they are questions about motion. But what is motion? Our search for an answer led us to study motion in all its details. In this quest, every increase in the precision of our description of motion was a step towards the peak of Motion Mountain. Now that we arrived there, we can savour what we have achieved and recall the emotions that we have experienced.

In our ascent, we have learned how we move, how we experience our environment, how we grow, what parts we are made of, and how our actions and our convictions about them can be understood. We have learned a lot about the history and a bit about the future of matter, of radiation and of space. We have experienced and understood the many ways in which beauty appears in nature: as colours, as shapes, as rhythms and most of all: as simplicity.

Savouring our achievement means that first of all, we now can look back to where we came from. Then we enjoy the view we are offered and look out for what we could not see before. After that, we search for what is still hidden from our sight. And finally, we take a different path back down to where we live.

OUR PATH TO THE TOP

> The labour we delight in physics pain.
>
> William Shakespeare, *Macbeth*.

Our walk had a simple aim: to talk accurately about all motion. This 2500 year old quest drove us to the top of this mountain. We can summarize our path in three legs: everyday life, general relativity plus quantum theory, and unification.

* Thales of Miletus (*c.* 624 – *c.* 546 BCE) was the first known philosopher, mathematician and scientist.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Everyday life: the rule of infinity

Galilean physics is the description of everyday life. We learned Galilean physics between our birth and secondary school. Galilean physics is the exploration and description of the motion of stones, water, trees, heat, the weather, electricity and light. To achieve this description of our environment, our first and main act in life is to partition experience into experienceS. In other words, our first intellectual act is the invention of *parts*; we invented the *plural*.

Ref. 1, Ref. 3

The act of partitioning allows us to define sequences among our experiences, and thus to define the concept of *time*. The concept of *space* arises similarly by our possibility to distinguish observations that occur at the same time. By comparing parts with other parts, we define *measurement*. Using all of this, we become able to define *velocity*, *mass* and *electric charge*, among others. These allow us to introduce *action*, the quantity that quantifies change.

For a simple description of observations, we assume that division is possible without end: thus we introduce the infinitely small. We also assume that widening our scope of observation is possible without end. Thus we introduce the infinitely large. Defining parts thus leads us to introduce infinity.

Using parts and, with them, the infinitely small and the infinitely large, we found, in volumes I and III, that everyday motion has six main properties: it is continuous, conserved, relative, reversible, mirror-invariant and lazy. Motion is lazy because it produces as little change as possible.

Nature minimizes change. This is Galilean physics, the description of everyday motion, in one statement. It allows us to describe all our everyday experiences with stones, fluids, stars, electric current, heat and light. The idea of change-minimizing motion is based on a concept of motion that is continuous and predictable, and a concept of nature that contains the infinitely small and the infinitely large.

Relativity and quantum theory: the absence of infinity

> “Vorhin haben wir gesehen, daß in der Wirklichkeit das Unendliche nirgends zu finden ist, was für Erfahrungen und Beobachtungen und welcherlei Wissenschaft wir auch heranziehen.*”
>
> David Hilbert

The idea that nature offers an infinite range of possibilities is often voiced with deep personal conviction. However, the results of relativity and quantum theory show the opposite. In nature, speeds, forces, sizes, ages and actions are limited. No quantity in nature is infinitely large or infinitely small. No quantity in nature is defined with infinite precision. There never are infinitely many examples of a situation; the number of possibilities is always finite. The world around us is not infinite; neither its size, nor its age, nor its content. *Nature is not infinite.* This is general relativity and quantum theory in one statement.

Ref. 2, Ref. 4

* ‘Above we have seen that in reality, the infinite is nowhere to be found, whatever experiences and observations and whatever knowledge we appeal to.’ Ref. 256

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Relativity and quantum theory show that the idea of infinity appears only in *approximate* descriptions of nature; it disappears when talking with precision. Nothing in nature is infinite. For example, we found in volume II that the sky is dark at night (also) because space is not infinite. And we found, in volumes IV and V, that quantum theory contains probabilities because there is a smallest action value in nature. In fact, the statement that a quantity is infinitely large or infinitely small cannot be confirmed or reproduced by any experiment. Worse, such a statement is falsified by every measurement. In short, we found that infinity is a fantasy of the human mind. In nature, it does not appear. *Infinity about nature is always a lie.*

The number of particles, their possible positions, the states they can have, our brain, our creativity, our possible thoughts: all this is not infinite. Nevertheless, quantum theory and relativity changed the world: they allowed building ultrasound imaging, magnetic resonance imaging, satellite navigation systems, music players and the internet.

Ref. 4

Despite the vast progress due to modern physics and the related technologies, one result remains: nothing in our environment is infinite – neither our life, nor our experiences, nor our memories, not even our dreams or our fantasies. Neither the information necessary to describe the universe, nor the paper to write down the formulae, nor the necessary ink, nor the time necessary to understand the formulae is infinite. Nature is not infinite. On the other hand, we also know that the illusion of the existence of infinity in nature is one the most persistent prejudices and myths ever conceived. Why did we use it in the first place?

The habit to use infinity to describe the world has many emotional reasons. For some, it reflects the deep-rooted experience of smallness that we carry within us as a remnant our personal history, when the world seemed so large and powerful. For others, the idea of our smallness allows us to deny somehow the responsibility for our actions or the existence of death. For others again, the idea of a finite universe often, at a first glance, produces deception, disbelief and discouragement. The absence of infinity means that we cannot achieve everything we want, and that our dreams and our possibilities are limited. Clinging to the idea of infinity is a way to avoid confronting this reality.

However, once we face and accept the absence of infinity, we make a powerful experience. We gain in strength. We are freed from the power of those who use this myth to put themselves above others. It is an illuminating experience to reread all those sentences on nature, on the world and on the universe containing the term 'infinite', knowing that they are incorrect, and then clearly experience the manipulations behind them. The desire to make others bow to what is called the infinite is a common type of human violence.

Challenge 220 e

At first, the demise of infinity might also bring panic fear, because it can appear as a lack of guidance. But at closer inspection, the absence of infinity brings strength. Indeed, the elimination of infinity takes from people one of the deepest fears: the fear of being weak and insignificant.

Moreover, once we face the limits of nature, we react like in all those situations in which we encounter a boundary: the limit becomes a challenge. For example, the experience that all bodies unavoidably fall makes parachuting so thrilling. The recognition that our life is finite produces the fire to live it to the full. The knowledge of death gives meaning to our actions. In an infinite life, every act could be postponed without any consequence. The disappearance of infinity generates creativity. A world without lim-

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

its is discouraging and depressing. Infinity is empty; limits are a source of strength and pour passion into our life. Only the limits of the world ensure that every additional step in life brings us forward. Only in a limited universe is progress possible and sensible. Who is wiser, the one who denies limits, or the one who accepts them? And who lives more intensely?

Unification: the absence of finitude

> Pray be always in motion. Early in the morning go and see things; and the rest of the day go and see people. If you stay but a week at a place, and that an insignificant one, see, however, all that is to be seen there; know as many people, and get into as many houses as ever you can.
>
> Philip Stanhope,* *Letters to his Son on the Fine Art of Becoming a Man of the World and a Gentleman.*

The last part of our adventure, described in this volume, produced an unexpected result. Not only is nature not infinite; nature is not finite either. None of the quantities which were supposed to be finite turn out to be so. Finitude turns out to be an approximation, or better, an illusion, though a subtle one. *Nature is not finite.* This is the unification of physics in one statement.

Precise observation shows that nothing in nature can be counted. If nature were finite it would have to be (described by) a set. However, the exploration of Planck scales shows that such a description is intrinsically incomplete and inaccurate. Indeed, a description of nature by a set can never explain the number of its elements, and thus cannot explain finitude itself. In other words, any approach that tries to describe nature as finite is a belief, and is never correct. *Finitude is a lie.*

Page 124

We thus lost our security of thought a second time. Nature is neither infinite nor finite. We explored the possibilities left over and found that only one option is left: *Nature is indivisible.* In other words, all parts that we experience are approximations. Both finitude and infinity are approximation of nature. All distinctions are approximate. This central conclusion solved the remaining open issues about motion. *Nature has no parts.*

The impossibility to count and the lack of parts imply that nature is not a computer, not an automaton, nor a physical system. *Nature is not discrete.*

Recognizing all distinctions as being approximate abolishes the distinction between the permanent aspects of nature ('objects', described by mass, charge, spin, etc.) and the changing aspects ('states', described by position, momentum, energy). Taking all distinctions as approximate introduces extended constituents: fluctuating strands. Looking even closer, these extended constituents are all the same one. Space, formally only used to describe states, also acquires changing aspects: it is made from fluctuating strands. Also properties like mass or charge, which formally were seen as static, become aspects of the ever changing interplay between these fundamental constituents. Describing nature as one fluctuating strand allows us to avoid finitude and to answer all questions left open by quantum theory and general relativity.

* Philip D. Stanhope (b. 1694 London, d. 1773 London) was a statesman and writer.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In a sense, the merging of objects and states is a resolution of the contrasting views on motion of the Greek thinkers Parmenides – 'there is no motion', i.e., in physical language, 'there are no states, there is only permanence' – and Heraclitus – 'everything moves', i.e., in physical language 'there is no permanence, there are only states'. Both turn out to be right.

We can thus sum up the progress during our adventure of physics in the following table:

TABLE 17 The progress of physics.

Step 1	Galilean Physics	Nature is continuous.	We live in Galilean space.
Step 2	Relativity	Nature has no infinitely large.	We live in Riemannian space.
Step 3	Quantum field theory	Nature has no infinitely small.	We live in a Hilbert/Fock space.
Step 4	Unification	Nature is not finite. Nature has no parts.	We do not live in any space; we are space.

In summary, we are made of space. More precisely, we are made of the same constituents as space. In fact, the fascination of this result goes further than that.

NEW SIGHTS

> "Nel suo profondo vidi che s'interna,
> legato con amore in un volume,
> ciò che per l'universo si squaderna:
>
> sustanze e accidenti e lor costume
> quasi conflati insieme, per tal modo
> che ciò ch'i' dico è un semplice lume.
>
> La forma universal di questo nodo
> credo ch'i' vidi, perché più di largo,
> dicendo questo, mi sento ch'i' godo."*
>
> Dante, *La (Divina) Commedia*, Paradiso, XXXIII, 85-93.

Modelling nature as a complicated web of fluctuating strands allowed us to describe at the same time empty space, matter, radiation, horizons, kefir, stars, children and all our

* 'In its depth I saw gathered, bound with love into one volume, that which unfolds throughout the universe: substances and accidents and their relations almost joined together, in such a manner that what I say is only a simple image. The universal form of that knot, I think I saw, because, while I am telling about it, I feel deep joy.' This is, in nine lines, Dante's poetic description of his deepest mystical experience: the vision of god. For Dante, god, at the depth of the light it emanates, is a knot. That knot spreads throughout the universe, and substances and accidents – physicists would say: particles and states – are aspects of that knot. Dante Alighieri (b. 1265 Florence, d. 1321 Ravenna) was one of the founders and the most important poet of the Italian language. Most of the Divine Comedy, his magnum opus, was written in exile, after 1302, the year when he had been condemned to death in Florence.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

other observations. All everyday experiences are consequence of everything in nature being made of one connected strand. This result literally widens our horizon.

The beauty of strands

> Someday, surely, we will see the principle underlying existence itself as so simple, so beautiful, so obvious, that we will all say to each other, "Oh, how could we all have been so blind, so long."
>
> John Wheeler, *A Journey Into Gravity And Spacetime.*

Describing everything as connected does not come natural to us humans. After all, in our life, we perform only one act: to partition. We define pluralities. There is no way we can avoid doing this. To observe, to think, to talk, to take a decision, to move, to suffer, to love or to enjoy life is impossible without partitioning.

Our walk showed us that there are limits to the ability to distinguish. Any kind of partitioning is always approximate. In fact, most people can summarize their personal experience by saying that they learned to make finer and finer distinctions. However, talking with highest precision about a part of the world inevitably leads to talk about the whole universe. The situation resembles a person who gets a piece of rope in his hand, and by following it, discovers a large net. He continues to pull and finally discovers that everything, including himself, is part of the net.

For the strand model, the term 'theory of everything' is therefore not acceptable. Nature cannot be divided into 'things'. In nature, things are never separable. There is no way to speak of 'every' thing; there are no sets, no elements and no parts in nature. A theory describing all of nature cannot be one of 'everything', as 'things' are only approximate entities: properly speaking, they do not exist. The strand model is not a theory of everything; it is the *final theory*.

The strand model shows that nature is not made of related parts. Nature is made of relations only. Parts only exist approximately. The strand model also shows: being in motion is intrinsic to being a part. Parts, being approximate, are always in motion. As soon as we divide, we observe motion. The act of dividing, of partitioning, of defining parts is the very one which produces order out of chaos. Strands force us to rethink this habit.

Despite being so tough to grasp, strands yield a precise description of motion that unifies quantum field theory and general relativity. The strand model for the unification of motion is both simple and powerful. There are no free parameters. There are no questions left. Our view from the top of the mountain is thus complete. No uncertainty, no darkness, no fear and no insecurity are left over. Only wonder remains.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Can the strand model be generalized?

> Die Natur kann besser Physik als der beste Physiker.*
>
> Carl Ramsauer

Page 159 As mentioned above, mathematical physicists are fond of *generalizing* models. Despite this fondness, we required that any final, unified description must be unique: any final, unified description must be impossible to reduce, to modify or to generalize. In particular, a final theory must neither be a generalization of particle physics nor of general relativity. Let us check this.

The strand model is not a generalization of general relativity: the definitions of curvature, of gravitons and of horizons differ radically from general relativity's approach. The strand model is also not a generalization of particle physics: the definitions of particle and of interactions differ radically from the concepts of quantum field theory. Indeed, we have shown that quantum field theory and general relativity are *approximations* to the strand model; they are neither special cases nor reductions of the strand model.

But what about the other requirements for a unified theory? Can the strand model be modified or generalized? We have seen that the model does not work in more spatial dimensions, does not work with more families of quarks, does not work with more interactions, and does not work with other evolution equations in general relativity or particle physics. The strand model does not work with other fundamental constituents, such as bifurcating entities, membranes, bands, or networks. (Though it does work with *funnels*, as explained earlier on, but that description is equivalent to the one with strands.)

Page 164

The strand model does not work with any modified fundamental principle. Obviously, exploring all possible variations and modifications remains a challenge for the years to come. If an actual modification of the strand model can be found, the strand model instantly loses its value: in that case, it would need to be shelved as a failure. Only a *unique* unified model can be correct.

Challenge 221 r

In summary, one of the beautiful aspects of the strand model is its radical departure from twentieth-century physics in its basic concepts, combined with its almost incredible uniqueness. No generalization, no specialization and no modification of the strand model seems possible. In short, the strand model qualifies as a unified, final theory.

Ref. 154

What is a requirement to one person, is a criticism to another. A number of researchers deeply dislike the strand model precisely because it doesn't generalize previous theories and because it cannot be generalized. This attitude deserves respect, as it is born from the admiration for several ancient masters of physics. However, the strand model points into a different direction.

What is nature?

> Nature is what is whole in each of its parts.
>
> Hermes Trismegistos, *Book of Twenty-four Philosophers*.

Ref. 257

* 'Nature knows physics better than the best physicist.' Carl Ramsauer (b. 1879 Oldenburg, d. 1955 Berlin), influential physicist, discovered that electrons behave as waves.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

At the end of our long adventure, we discovered that nature is not a set: everything is connected. Nature is only *approximately* a set. The universe has no topology, because space-time is not a manifold. Nevertheless, the approximate topology of the universe is that of an open Riemannian space. The universe has no definite particle number, because the universe is not a container; the universe is made of the same stuff of which particles are made. Nevertheless, the approximate particle density in the universe can be deduced.

In nature, everything is connected. This observation is reflected in the conjecture that all of nature is described by a single strand.

We thus arrive at the (slightly edited) summary given around the year 1200 by the author who wrote under the pen name Hermes Trismegistos: *Nature is what is whole in each of its parts.* But in contrast to that author, we now also know how to draw testable conclusions from the statement.

Quantum theory and the nature of matter

> "In everything there is something of everything."
> Anaxagoras of Clazimenes (500 –428 BCE Lampsacus)

The strand model shows that as soon as we separate the universe into space-time and the rest, i.e., as soon as we introduce the coordinates x and t, quantum mechanics appears automatically. More precisely, *quantum effects are effects of extension*. Quantum theory appears when we realize that observations are composed of smallest events due to crossing switches, each with a change given by the quantum of action. All events and observations appear through the fluctuations of the strand that composes nature.

We found that *matter is made of tangled strands*. In fact, the correct way would be to say: matter is made of tangled strand *segments*. This connection leads to Schrödinger's equation and to Dirac's equation.

Insofar as matter is of the same fabric as the vacuum, we can rightly say: *matter is made of nothing*. But the most appropriate answer arises when we realize that matter is not made from something, but that matter is a certain aspect of the *whole* of nature. Unification showed that every single elementary particle results from an arrangement which involves the whole of nature, or, if we prefer, the entire universe. In other words, we can equally say: *matter is made of everything*.

Cosmology

The strand model also showed us how to deduce general relativity. The strand model clarified the fabric of horizons and explained the three dimensions of space. Most fascinating is the idea of a universe as the product of a single strand. A single strand implies that there was nothing before the big bang, and that there is nothing outside the night sky. For example, the strand model implies that there is no 'multiverse' and that there are no hidden worlds of any kind. And the fluctuating strand explains all observations of our universe.

The cosmological constant is not constant; it only measures the present age and size of the universe. Therefore, the constant does not need to appear in Figure 1. In other words,

Page 7

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the cosmological constant simply measures the time from the big bang to the present.

The 'big bang' is the name for what we observe if we try to make observations approaching the limits of nature. The 'big bang' appears automatically from the strand model whenever we observe nature at the most distant times, the largest distances or at the largest energies: 'big bang' is the name for Planck scale physics.

The universe consists of a single strand. There are many particles in nature, because the strand is tangled up in complicated ways. What we call the 'horizon' of the universe is the place where new tangles appear.

The belief that the big bang or the horizon are examples of creation is incorrect. What happened at the big bang still happens at the horizon today. Both the black sky at night and the big bang are nature's way to tell us: 'Galilean physics is approximate! Quantum theory is approximate! General relativity is approximate!'

Musings about unification and strands

> "Continuing motion masters coldness.
> Continuing rest masters heat.
> Motion based on rest:
> Measure of the all-happening for the single one."
> Lao Tse,* *Tao Te King*, XXXXV.

All is made from one sort of thing: all is one substance. This idea, *monism*, sounds a lot like what the influential philosopher Baruch Spinoza (b. 1632 Amsterdam, d. 1677 The Hague) held as conviction. Monism, though mixed up with the idea of god, is also the basis of the philosophical ideas that Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz (b. 1646 Leipzig, d. 1716 Hannover) presents in his text *La Monadologie*.

* *

Any complete theory of motion, also the strand model, is built on a single statement about nature: The *many* exists only approximately. Nature is approximately multiple. The etymological meaning of the term 'multiple' is 'it has many folds'; in a very specific sense, nature thus has many folds.

Ref. 258

* *

Any precise description of nature is free of arbitrary choices, because the divisions that we have to make in order to think are all common to everybody, and logically inescapable. Because physics is a consequence of this division, it is also 'theory-free' and 'interpretation-free'. This consequence of the final theory will drive most philosophers up the wall.

* *

Any unified model of nature encompasses a lot of ideas, issues and knowledge. Due to the sheer amount of material, publishing it in a journal will be hard.

* *

For over a century, physics students have been bombarded with the statement:

* Lao Tse (sixth century BCE) was an influential philosopher and sage.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

'Symmetries are beautiful.' Every expert on beauty, be it a painter, an architect, a sculptor, a musician, a photographer or a designer, fully and completely disagrees, and rightly so. Beauty has no relation to symmetry. Whoever says the contrary is blocking out his experiences of a beautiful landscape, of a beautiful human figure or of a beautiful work of art.

The correct statement is: 'Symmetries simplify descriptions.' Symmetries simplify physical theories. That is the background for the statement of Werner Heisenberg: 'In the beginning there was symmetry.' On the other hand, the strand model shows that even this statement is incorrect. In fact, neither the search for beauty nor the search for symmetry were the right paths to advance towards unification. Such statements have always been empty marketing phrases. In reality, the progress of fundamental theoretical physics was always driven by the search for *simplicity*.

Ref. 259

* *

Strands unify physics. In particular, strands extend our views on quantum theory and mathematical physics, on particle physics and field theory, on axiomatic physics and algebraic physics, on polymer physics and gauge theory, on general relativity and cosmology. It will take several years before all these extensions will have been explored.

* *

Could the diagram of Figure 1 *lack* some red point, i.e., lack some physical theory? An interesting argument shows that this is not the case. When we start from the bottom, i.e., from everyday life, the next level of theories is reached when we include one of the known limitations of motion: speed, action or force. Conversely, when we start from the unified theory, we reach the theories below it when we *take away* one of the limitations of motion. Now, no other limitations than the known ones exist or are possible. Thus, no other theories on the level below the unified theory are possible. This applies at every level of the diagram. And therefore, no theory is missing from the diagram. Is this intriguing argument water-tight?

Page 7

Challenge 222 e

* *

The description of nature with strands is surprisingly simple, mainly because it uses so few basic concepts. Is this result astonishing? In our daily life, we describe our experiences with the help of a few thousand words, e.g. taking them from the roughly 350 000 words which make up the English language, or from a similar number from another language. This set is sufficient to talk about everything, from love to suffering, from beauty to happiness. And these terms are constructed from no more than about 35 basic concepts, as we have seen already. We should not be too surprised that we can in fact talk about the whole universe using only a few basic concepts: the act and the results of (approximate) distinction, or more specifically, a basic event – the crossing switch – and its observation.

Vol. III, page 271

* *

Almost all discoveries in physics were made at least 30 years too late. The same is true for the strand model. If we compare the strand model with what many physicists believed in the twentieth century, we can see why: researchers had too many wrong ideas about

Page 21

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

FIGURE 116 Motion Mountain does not resemble Cerro Torre, but a gentle hill (© Davide Brighenti, Myriam70)

unification. All these wrong ideas can be summarized in the following statement:

— 'Unification requires generalization of existing theories.'

This statement is subtle: it was rarely expressed explicitly but widely believed. But the statement is wrong, and it led many astray. On the other hand, the development of the strand model also followed a specific guiding idea, namely:

— 'Unification requires simplification.'

Hopefully this guiding idea will not become a dogma itself: in many domains of life, simplification means not to pay attention to the details. This attitude does a lot of harm.

* *

The strand model shows that achieving unification is not a feat requiring difficult abstraction. Unification was not hidden in some almost inaccessible place that can reached only by a few select, well-trained research scientists. No, unification is accessible to everyone who has a basic knowledge of nature and of physics. No Ph.D. in theoretical physics is needed to understand or to enjoy it. The knowledge presented in the previous volumes of this series is sufficient.

When Andrew Wiles first proved Fermat's last theorem after three centuries of attempts by the brightest and the best mathematicians, he explained that his search for a proof was like the exploration of a dark mansion. And seen the conceptual difficulties he had to overcome, the analogy was fitting. Recalling how many more people have already searched for unification without success, the first reaction is to compare the search for unification to the exploration of something even bigger, such as a complex dark cave system. But that analogy was not helpful. In contrast to the proof of Fermat's theorem, the goal of the quest for unification turned out to be simple and lying out in the open. Researchers had simply overlooked it, because they were convinced that the goal was complex, hidden in the dark and hard to reach. It was not.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The adventure of climbing Motion Mountain is thus not comparable to climbing Cerro Torre, which might be the toughest and most spectacular challenge that nature offers to mountain climbers. Figure 116 gives an impression of the peak. Motion Mountain does not resemble this peak at all. Neither does Motion Mountain resemble the Langtang Lirung peak in the Nepalese Himalayas shown on the cover of this volume. Climbing Motion Mountain is more like walking up a gentle green hill, alone, with a serene mind, on a sunny day, while enjoying the surrounding beauty of nature.

* *

Page 82 The strand model settles all questions about *determinism*. Quantum theory and general relativity are deterministic. Nevertheless, when both descriptions are combined, time turns out to be an approximate, low-energy concept. The same applies to determinism. Even though nature is deterministic for all practical purposes and shows no surprises, determinism shares the fate of all its conceivable opposites, such as fundamental randomness, indeterminism of all kinds, existence of wonders, creation out of nothing, or divine intervention: determinism is an *incorrect* description of nature at the Planck scale – like all its alternatives.

* *

Ref. 260 The strand model is so simple that it fits on a T-shirt – and on a tombstone.

* *

Historically, the strand model evolved from an exploration, started in the 1990s, of the maximum force in nature, the belt trick and the entropy of black holes. After the first six chapters of the present volume were completed in 2002, meditating on their implications led to the strand model and its fundamental principle.

Above all, it was the description of general relativity with the help of the maximum force that triggered the search for a unified description that was purely based on Planck units. Another essential point was the drive to search for a final theory directly, from its Page 7 requirements ('top down' in Figure 1), and *not* from the unification of quantum theory and general relativity ('bottom up'). In the years from 2002 to 2007, most of the ideas of the strand model took shape, mainly in Munich's underground trains, while commuting between home and work. In those years, it appeared that strands could explain the Dirac equation, the entropy of black holes, general relativity and the particle spectrum with the three particle generations. While walking in the woods and fields around Munich during 2008 and 2009, it appeared that strands explain the three gauge interactions, predict (with almost complete certainty) the lack of a Higgs boson – a big mistake due to faulty Page 321 reasoning, as turned out in 2012 – and of any new physical effects beyond the standard model, and allow calculating the unexplained constants of particle physics. The model thus yielded all its main predictions before the accelerator experiments at the Large Hadron Collider at CERN in Geneva were switched on in autumn 2010. So much of the work was done in a haste – future will show what is of lasting value.

* *

Many researchers believed during all their life that the final theory is something useful, important and valuable. This common belief about the importance and seriousness of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

the quest has led, over the past decades, to an increasingly aggressive atmosphere among these researchers. This unprofessional atmosphere, combined with the dependence of researchers on funding, has delayed the discovery of the final theory by several decades.

In fact, the final theory is not useful: it adds nothing of practical relevance to the combination of the standard model and general relativity. The final theory is also not important: it has no application in everyday life or in industry and does not substantially change our view of the world; it just influences teaching somewhat. Finally, the final theory is not valuable: it does not help people in their life or make them happier. In short, the final theory is what all fundamental theoretical research is: entertaining ideas.

Even if the strand model were to be replaced by another model, the conclusion remains: the final theory is not useful, not important and not valuable. But it is enjoyable.

* *

The strand model will take a long time to get accepted. The first reason is obvious: *The strand model contradicts thinking habits* in many research fields. Researchers working on the foundations of quantum theory, on general relativity, on cosmic strings, on mathematical physics, on classical and quantum field theory, on polymer physics, on shape deformations, on quantum gravity, on strings, on the visualization of quantum mechanics, on knot theory, on higher dimensions, on supersymmetry, on the axiomatization of physics, on group theory, on the foundation of physics, on quantum optics and on particle physics have to give up many life-long thinking habits. So do all other physicists. *Strands supersede particles and points.*

There is also a second reason for the slow acceptance: *The strand model, in its simplicity, is only a small step away from present research.* Many researchers are finding out how close they have been to the ideas of the strand model, and for how long they were overlooking or ignoring such a simple option. The simplicity of the fundamental principle contrasts with the expectation of most researchers, namely that the final theory is complicated, difficult and hard to discover. In fact, the opposite is true. *Strands are based on Planck units and provide a simple, almost algebraic description of nature.*

Page 83

In summary, for many researchers and for many physicists, there is a mixture of confusion, anger and disappointment. It will take time before these feelings subside and are replaced by the fascination provided by the strand model.

> Only boring people get bored.
>
> Anonymous

The elimination of induction

> Cum iam profeceris tantum, ut sit tibi etiam tui reverentia, licebit dimittas pedagogum.*
>
> Seneca

The final theory of motion has a consequence worth mentioning in detail: its lack of infinity and its lack of finitude eliminate the necessity of induction. This conclusion is of importance for general discussions on man's grasp of nature.

* 'When you have profited so much that you respect yourself you may let go your tutor.' Seneca, the influential Roman poet and philosopher, writes this in his *Epistulae morales ad Lucilium*, XXV, 6.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

In physics, as in the other natural sciences, there is a tradition to state that a certain description of nature – once confusingly called 'law' – is valid in *all* cases. In these statements, 'all' means 'for all values of the quantities appearing'. As a concrete example, the 'law' of universal gravitation is always claimed to be the same here and today, as well as at *all* other places and times, such as on the other end of the universe and in a few thou-
Page 157
sand years. The full list of such all-claims is part of the millennium list of open issues in twentieth-century physics. For many decades, the habit of claiming general validity from a limited and finite number of experiences, also called *induction*, has been seen, and rightly so, as a logically dubious manoeuvre, tolerated only because it works. But the developments described in this text show that this method is indeed justified.

First of all, a claim of generality is not that enormous as it may seem, because the number of events that can be distinguished in nature is finite, not infinite. The preceding sections showed that the maximal number N of events that can be distinguished in the universe is of the order of $N = (T_0/t_{\mathrm{Pl}})^4 = 10^{244\pm2}$, T_0 being the age of the universe and t_{Pl} the Planck time. This is a big, but certainly finite number.

The unified description of nature has thus first reduced the various all-claims from an apparently infinite to a finite number of cases, though still involving astronomically large numbers. This reduction results from the recognition that infinities do not appear in the description of nature. We now know that when talking about nature, 'all' cases never means an infinite number.

A second, important result is achieved by the description of nature with strands. In any all-claim about fundamental motion, the checking of each of the large number of possibilities is not necessary any more, because all events result from a single entity, in which we introduce distinctions with our senses and our brain. And the distinctions we introduce imply automatically that the symmetries of nature – the 'all-claims' or 'inductions' – that are used in the description of motion are correct. Nature does not contain separate parts. Therefore, there is no way that separate parts can behave differently. Induction is a consequence of the unity of nature.

Ultimately, the possibility to *verify* statements of nature is due to the fact that all the aspects of our experience are *related*. Complete separation is impossible in nature. The verification of all-claims is possible because the strand model achieves the full description of how all 'parts' of nature are related.

The strand model shows that we can talk and think about nature because we are a part of it. The strand model also shows that induction works because everything in nature is related to everything else: nature is one.

What is still hidden?

> "That which eludes curiosity can be grasped in action."
>
> Traditional saying.

Where do we come from? Where does the world come from? What will future bring? What is death? All these questions are questions about motion – and its meaning. And like all mountain climbers, we also have to ask: why are we climbing? Like all mountain climbers, we have to admit that climbing, like every other passion, is also a symbolic activity. Climbing can be a search for meaning, for our mother or father, or for ourselves.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

To all such questions, the strand model does not provide answers. We are a collection of tangled strands. We are everything and nothing. The strand(s) we are made of will continue to fluctuate. Birth, life and death are aspects of tangled strands. The universe is a folded strand that grows in complexity.

Obviously, such abstract statements do not help in any human quest. Indeed, in order to achieve a precise description of motion, we only explored the details of moving particles and of bending space. Studying them was a sequence of riddles; but solving these riddles does not provide meaning, not even at the top of Motion Mountain. From the top we cannot see the evolution of complicated systems; in particular, we cannot see or describe the evolution of life, the biological evolution of species, or the growth of a human beings. From the top we cannot see the details down in the valleys of human relations or experiences. In short, strands do not provide advice or meaning. Remaining too long on the top of Motion Mountain is not useful. To find meaning, we have to descend back down to real life.

Vol. I, page 15

A RETURN PATH: JE RÊVE, DONC JE SUIS

> "I hate reality. But it is the only place where one can get a good steak."
>
> Woody Allen

Enjoying life and giving it meaning requires to descend from the top of Motion Mountain. The return path can take various different directions. From a mountain, the most beautiful and direct descent might be the use of a paraglider. After our adventure, we take an equally beautiful way: we leave reality.

The usual trail to study motion, also the one of this text, starts from our ability to talk about nature to somebody else. From this ability we deduced our description of nature, starting from Galilean physics and ending with the strand model. The same results can be found by requiring to be able to talk about nature to ourselves. Talking to oneself is an example of thinking. We should therefore be able to derive all physics from René Descartes' sentence 'je pense, donc je suis' – which he translated into Latin as 'cogito ergo sum'. Descartes stressed that this is the only statement of which he is completely sure, in opposition to his observations, of which he is not. He had collected numerous examples in which the senses provide unreliable information.

Ref. 261

However, when talking to ourselves, we can make more mistakes than when asking for checks from others. Let us approach this issue in a radically different way. We directly proceed to that situation in which the highest freedom is available and the largest number of mistakes are possible: the world of dreams. If nature would only be a dream, could we deduce from it the complete set of physical knowledge? Let us explore the issue.

— Dreaming implies the use of distinctions, of memory and of sight. Dreams contain *parts* and *motion*.
— Independently on whether dreams are due to previous observations or to fantasies, through memory we can define a sequence among them. The order relation is called *time*. The dream aspects being ordered are called *events*. The set of all (dream) events forms the (dream) *world*.

Ref. 262

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— In a dream we can have several independent experiences at the same time, e.g. about thirst and about hunger. Sequences thus do not provide a complete classification of experiences. We call the necessary additional distinction *space*. Dream space has three dimensions.* Dreaming thus means to use space and time.
— We can distinguish between dream contents. Distinguishing means that we can count items in dreams. Counting means that we have a way to define measurements. Dreams are thus characterized by something which we can call 'observables'. Dream experiences at a given instant of time are characterized by a *state*.
— Because we can describe dreams, the dream contents exist independently of dream time. We can also imagine the same dream contents at different places and different times in the dream space. There is thus an invariance of dream concepts in space and time. There are thus symmetries in dream space.
— Dream contents can interact. Dreams appear to vary without end. Dreams seem to be infinite.

In other words, a large part of the world of dreams is described by a modified form of *Galilean physics*. We note that the biggest difference between dreams and nature is the lack of conservation. In dreams, observations can appear, disappear, start and stop. We also note that instead of dreams, we could equally explore cinema *films*. Films, like dreams, are described by a modified form of Galilean physics. And films, like dreams, do not follow conservation laws. But dreams teach us much more.

— Dreams show that space can warp.
Challenge 223 s — Dream motion, as you may want to check, shows a maximum speed.
— Dreams show a strange limit in distance. There is a boundary to our field of vision, even though we do not manage to see it.

Pondering these issues shows that there are *limits* to dreams. In summary, the world of dreams has a maximum size, a maximum speed and three dimensions that can warp. The world of dreams and of films is described by a simple form of *general relativity*.

— Both the number of items we can dream of at the same time and the memory of previous dreams is finite.
— Dreams have colours.
— There are pixels in dreams, though we do not experience them directly. But we can do so indirectly: The existence of a highest number of things we can dream of at the same time implies that dream space has a smallest scale.

In summary, the world of dreams has something similar to a minimum change. The world of dreams and that of films is described by a simple form of *quantum theory*. The difference with nature is that in dreams and films, space is discrete from the outset. But there is still more to say about dreams.

— There is no way to say that dream images are made of mathematical points, as there is nothing smaller than pixels.

* Though a few mathematicians state that they can *think* in more than three spatial dimensions, all of them *dream* in three dimensions.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

— In dreams, we cannot clearly distinguish objects ('matter') and environment ('space'); they often mix.
— In dreams, fluctuations appear both for images as well as for the background.
— In dreams, sharp distinctions are impossible. Dream space-time cannot be a set.
— Dream motion appears when approximate constancy (over time) is observed.
— In dreams, dimensionality at small distances is not clear; two and three dimensions are mixed up there.

In summary, the world of dreams seems to behave as if it is described by extended constituents. We thus conclude this short exploration of the physics of dreams with a fascinating *conjecture*: even if nature would be a dream, an illusion or a fantasy, we might still get most of the results that we discovered in our ascent of Motion Mountain. (What differences with modern physics would be left?) Speaking with tongue in cheek, the fear of our own faults of judgement, so rightly underlined by Descartes and many others after him, might not apply to fundamental physics.

Challenge 224 s

WHAT IS THE ORIGIN OF COLOURS?

All colours around us are determined by the fine structure constant α – the coupling constant for the electromagnetic interaction at low energy – with its measured value 1/137.035 999 074(44). The fine structure constant is also essential to describe most everyday devices and machines, as well as all human thoughts and movements. The constant is an aspect of every electric charge in nature.

Ref. 5

The strand model showed us that electrical charge is a property of tangles of strands:

▷ The fine structure constant describes the probability that a fluctuation adds a twist to the chiral tangles of electrically charged particles.

Page 376

We have not yet deduced an accurate value for the fine structure constant, but we seem to have found out how to do so.

In short, we seem to glimpse the origin of all colours and of all beauty around us.

SUMMARY: WHAT IS MOTION?

> "Deep rest is motion in itself. Its motion rests in itself."
>
> Lao Tse, *Tao Te King*, VI.

We can now answer the question that drove us through our adventure:

▷ ***Motion*** is the observation of crossing switches of the one, unobservable, tangled and fluctuating strand that describes nature.

Nature's strand forms particles, horizons and space-time: these are the parts of nature. Particles are tangles of strands; horizons and space-time are weaves of strands. Parts –

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

including matter, radiation and vacuum curvature – move because their strands fluctuate.

Motion appears as soon as we divide the world into parts and then follow these parts. Dividing nature into parts is not a conscious act; our human nature – our senses and our brain – *forces* us to perform it. And whenever we experience or talk about parts of the universe, we find motion. All parts of nature move.

We experience motion because we are limited: our senses and our brain are made and need to distinguish. We can't do otherwise. We need to distinguish in order to survive, to think and to enjoy life. In a sense, we can say that motion appears as a logical consequence of our limitations; the fundamental limitation is the one that makes us introduce parts, including points and sets.

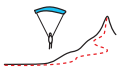
Motion also appears because all parts in nature are approximate. In more detail, the observation of crossing switches and the description of strand segments fluctuating in a background space result and are possible because we approximate from one strand to many parts. The one strand (approximately) forms the many elementary particles inside us. Strand segments and particles (approximately) lead us to introduce background space, matter and radiation. Introducing background space implies observing motion. Motion thus appears automatically when approximate parts of nature, such as humans, animals or machines, describe other approximate parts of nature, such as other bodies.

The observation of motion is due to our introduction of the plural. Motion results from of our forced use of *approximate parts* to describe the *unity* of nature. The observation of motion results from approximations. All these approximate distinctions are unavoidable and are due to the limitations of our human nature.

Motion is an 'artefact' of locality. Because locality is an approximation and due to our human nature, we can say, in a certain sense, that motion is an illusion. We seem to Vol. I, page 14 confirm what Zeno of Elea stated 2500 years ago. But in contrast to Zeno's pessimistic view, we now have a fascinating spectrum of results and tools at our disposition. They allow us to describe motion and nature with high precision. Most of all, these tools allow us to change ourselves and our environment for the better.

Ref. 263

> "All the great things that have happened in the world first took place in a person's imagination, and how tomorrow's world will look like will largely depend on the power of imagination of those who are just learning to read right now."
>
> Astrid Lindgren*



* Astrid Lindgren (b. 1907 Näs, d. 2002 Stockholm) was a beloved writer of children books.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

POSTFACE

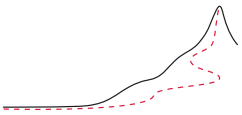
Perhaps once you will read Plato's *Phaedrus*, one of the beautiful philosophical Greek texts. In it, Socrates is made to say that he almost never left the city walls because to him, as a 'lover of learning, trees and the open country do not teach anything, whereas men in the town do.' This is a veiled critique of Democritus, the most important and famous philosopher in Greece during Plato's time. Democritus was the natural philosopher par excellence, and arguably had learned from nature – with its trees and open country – more than anybody else after him.

After this adventure you can decide for yourself which of these two approaches is more congenial to you. It might be useful to know that Aristotle refused to choose and cultivated them both. There is no alternative in life to following one's own mind, and to enjoy doing so. If you enjoyed this particular trip, show it to your friends. For yourself, after this walk, sense intensively the pleasure of having accomplished something important. Many before you did not have the occasion. Enjoy the beauty of the view offered. Enjoy the vastness of horizon it provides. Enjoy the impressions that it creates inside you. Collect them and rest. You will have a treasure that will be useful in many occasions. Then, when you feel the desire of going further, get ready for another of the adventures life has to offer.

Plato's *Phaedrus*, written around 380 BCE, is available in many pocket editions. Do not waste your time learning ancient Greek to read it; the translated versions are as beautiful as the original.

Plato's lifelong avoidance of the natural sciences had two reasons. First of all, he was jealous of Democritus. Plato never even cites Democritus in his texts. Democritus was the most prolific, daring, admired and successful philosopher of his time (and maybe of all times). Democritus was a keen student of nature. His written works did not survive, because his studies were not congenial to the followers of christianity, and thus they were not copied by the monks in the Middle Ages. The loss of these texts is related to the second reason that kept Plato away from the natural sciences: he wanted to save his life. Plato had learned one thing from men in the town: talking about nature is dangerous. Starting around his lifetime, for over 2000 years people practising the natural sciences were regularly condemned to exile or to death for impiety. Fortunately, this is only rarely the case today. But such violence still occurs, and we can honour the dangers that those preceding us had to overcome in order to allow us enjoying this adventure.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



Appendix A

KNOT GEOMETRY

The following table provides a terse summary of the mathematics of knot shapes.

TABLE 18 Important properties of knot, links and tangles.

Concept	Defining property	Other properties
Knot / link / tangle	one closed / several closed / one or several open curves, all in 3d without intersections	ropelength is integral of arclength; ropelength is shape-dependent.
Ideal knot, link, tangle (shapes)	tightest possible knot, link or tangle (shapes) assuming a rope of constant diameter that is infinitely flexible and infinitely slippery	at present, all non-trivial ideal shapes are only known approximately; most ideal knots (almost surely) have kinks.
Ribbon or *framing*	short perpendicular (or non-tangent) vector attached at each point of a curve	
Curvature of a curve	inverse curvature radius of 'touching' circle	measures departure from straightness, i.e., local bending of a curve.
Normal vector or curvature vector	local vector normal to the curve, in direction of the centre of the 'touching' circle, with length given by the curvature	is given by the second and first derivatives of the curve.
Binormal vector	local unit vector normal to the tangent and to the normal/curvature vector	
Torsion	local speed of rotation of the binormal vector; positive (negative) for right-handed (left-handed) helix	measures departure from flatness, i.e., local twisting or local handedness of a curve; essentially a third derivative of the curve.
Frenet frame at a curve point	'natural' local orthogonal frame of reference defined by *unit* tangent, *unit* normal/curvature and binormal vector	the Frenet frame differs at each curve point, the Frenet frame is *not* uniquely defined if the curve is locally straight.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

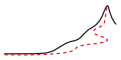
TABLE 18 (Continued) Important properties of knot, links and tangles.

CONCEPT	DEFINING PROPERTY	OTHER PROPERTIES
'Natural' framing or *Frenet ribbon*	defined by the local normal, i.e., local curvature vector	for a closed curve, it is always closed and two-sided, and thus never a Moebius band.
Linking number between two closed curves	sloppily, number of times that two curves wind around each other, or, equivalently, half the number of times that the curves 'swap' position	topological invariant, i.e., shape-independent; $\mathrm{Lk}(K1, K2) = \frac{1}{4\pi} \oint_{K2} \oint_{K1} \frac{\boldsymbol{r}_{12}\,(\mathrm{d}\boldsymbol{r}_1 \times \mathrm{d}\boldsymbol{r}_2)}{\boldsymbol{r}_{12}^3}$.
Linking number for a closed two-sided ribbon	number of times that the edges wind around each other	topological invariant, i.e., shape-independent; always an integer.
Self-linking number or 'natural' linking number for a knot	number of times that the edges of the natural/Frenet ribbon wind around each other	not a topological invariant, because of existence of inflection points.
Link integral for an open curve	generalization of the linking number for knots to open curves	usually not an integer.
Twist of a ribbon, open or closed	total angle (in units of 2π) by which the ribbon rotates around the central axis of the ribbon; sloppily said, measures the *local* helicity	vanishes for ribbons that are everywhere flat.
Twist of a curve or knot	total angle (in units of 2π) by which the Frenet frame rotates around the tangent direction, or equivalently, (total) twist of the Frenet ribbon, also called the *total torsion* of the curve	not an integer even in case of knots; depends on curve/knot shape; is different from zero for chiral curves/knots; is zero for achiral curves/knots that have a rigid reflective symmetry; twist and torsion are only equal if the twist is defined with the Frenet ribbon – with other framings they differ; this type of twist has no relation to the first Reidemeister move.
Signed crossing number	sum of positive minus sum of negative crossings in a given oriented 2d projection of a curve or knot (sometimes called '2d-writhe')	always an integer; depends on shape.
2d-writhe of a knot, or *topological writhe*, or *Tait number*	signed crossing number for a *minimal* crossing number diagram/projection (sometimes the term '2d-writhe' is used for the signed crossing number of *any* configuration)	is shape-invariant; is always an integer; differs from 0 for all chiral knots; has the value 3 for the trefoil, 0 for the figure-eight knot, 5 for the 5_1 and 5_2 knots, 2 for the 6_1 knot, 7 for the 7_1 and 7_2 knots, 4 for the 8_1 knot, and 9 for the 9_2 knot.

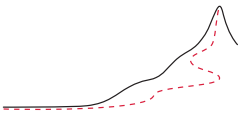
Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

TABLE 18 (Continued) Important properties of knot, links and tangles.

CONCEPT	DEFINING PROPERTY	OTHER PROPERTIES
Writhing number or 3d-*writhe* of a knot	average, over all projection directions, of the signed crossing number; sloppily said, measures how wrapped, coiled and chiral a knot is, i.e., measures its *global* helicity	depends on knot shape; usually is not an integer; is different from zero for chiral knots; is zero for achiral knots that have a rigid reflective symmetry; $\mathrm{Wr}(K) = \frac{1}{4\pi} \oint_K \oint_K \frac{\boldsymbol{r}_{12}\,(\mathrm{d}\boldsymbol{r}_1 \times \mathrm{d}\boldsymbol{r}_2)}{\boldsymbol{r}_{12}^3}$; uses no ribbon and thus is independent of the ribbon shape attached to the knot.
Writhe of ideal, alternating knots and of odd-component links	the value is quasi-quantized for alternating knots with small crossing numbers (< 11) in values that differ from $m4/7$ by only a few per cent	is additive under knot addition for knots with small crossing numbers (< 11) within less than 1 %.
Writhe of ideal, alternating even-component links	the value is quasi-quantized for alternating links with small crossing numbers (< 11) in values that differ from $2/7 + m4/7$ by only a few per cent	
Writhe of a ribbon	sloppily said, measures how wrapped, coiled and chiral a ribbon is, i.e., measures its *global* helicity	
Writhe of an open curve		vanishes for plane curves.
Calugareanu's theorem	for any knot K and any ribbon G attached to it, $\mathrm{Lk}(K, G) = \mathrm{Tw}(K, G) + \mathrm{Wr}(K)$	for applying the theorem to *open* curves, a (standardized) closing of curves is required.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



CHALLENGE HINTS AND SOLUTIONS

Challenge 2, page 27: Take $\Delta f \; \Delta t \geqslant 1$ and substitute $\Delta l = c/\Delta f$ and $\Delta a = c/\Delta t$.

Challenge 16, page 41: Yes. But we can also argue its opposite, namely that matter appears when space is compressed too much. Both viewpoints are correct.

Challenge 22, page 47: To my knowledge, no such limits have been published. Do it yourself!

Challenge 23, page 47: The system limits cannot be chosen in other ways; after the limits have been corrected, the limits given here should still apply.

Challenge 26, page 48: Just insert numbers to check this.

Challenge 28, page 48: No.

Challenge 29, page 49: This is a trick question due to two issues. First, is cosmological constant the same for all observers in the universe that are, like ourselves, more or less at rest with respect to the background radiation? Most researchers would agree that this is the case. Secondly, is the cosmological constant the same for extremely rapid observers, observers that move at extremely high energy with respect to the background radiation?

Challenge 33, page 63: Sloppily speaking, such a clock is not able to move its hands in a way that guarantees precise time reading.

Challenge 37, page 80: The final energy E produced by a proton accelerator increases with its radius R roughly as $E \sim R^{1.2}$; as an example, CERN's LHC achieved about 13 TeV for a radius of 4.3 km. Thus we would get a radius of more than 100 light years for a Planck energy accelerator. Building an accelerator achieving Planck energy is impossible.

Nature has no accelerator of this power, but gets near it. The maximum measured value of cosmic rays, 10^{22} eV, is about one millionth of the Planck energy. The mechanism of acceleration is still obscure. Neither black holes nor the cosmic horizon seem to be sources, for some yet unclear reasons. This issue is still a topic of research.

Challenge 38, page 80: The Planck energy is $E_{\text{Pl}} = \sqrt{\hbar c^5/G} = 2.0\,\text{GJ}$. Car fuel delivers about 43 MJ/kg. Thus the Planck energy corresponds to the energy of 47 kg of car fuel, about a tankful.

Challenge 39, page 80: Not really, as the mass error is equal to the mass only in the Planck case.

Challenge 40, page 81: It is improbable that such deviations can be found, as they are masked by the appearance of quantum gravity effects. However, if you do think that you have a prediction for a deviation, publish it, and send the author an email.

Page 271

Challenge 41, page 81: The minimum measurable distance is the same for single particles and systems of particles.

Challenge 42, page 81: There is no gravitation at those energies and there are no particles. There is thus no paradox.

Challenge 43, page 82: The issue is still being debated; a good candidate for a minimum momentum of a single particle is given by $\hbar/R$, where R is the radius of the universe. Is this answer satisfying?

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Challenge 44, page 82: All mentioned options could be valid at the same time. The issue is not closed and clear thinking about it is not easy.

Challenge 45, page 83: The precise energy scale is not clear. The scale is either the Planck energy or within a few orders of magnitude from it; the lowest possible energy is thus around a thousandth of the Planck energy.

Challenge 47, page 84: If you can think of an experiment, publish the proposal, and send the author an email.

Vol. I, page 254 **Challenge 48**, page 87: The table of aggregates shows this clearly.

Challenge 49, page 88: The cosmic background radiation is a clock in the widest sense of the term.

Challenge 50, page 89: The way to deduce cosmological limits is presented in detail in the section starting on page 43.

Challenge 61, page 97: Also measurement errors at Planck scales prevent the determination of topology at those scales.

Challenge 63, page 99: The measurement error is as large as the measurement result.

Challenge 67, page 101: You will not find one.

Challenge 69, page 102: If you find one, publish it, and send the author an email.

Challenge 71, page 103: For the description of nature this is a contradiction. Nevertheless, the term 'universe', 'set of all sets' and other mathematical terms, as well as many religious concepts are of this type.

Challenge 72, page 104: No, for the reasons mentioned earlier on: fundamental measurement errors for horizon measurements, as well as many other effects, prevent this. The speculation is another example of misguided fantasy about extremal identity.

Challenge 73, page 105: The physical concepts most related to 'monad' are 'strand' and 'universe', as shown in the second half of this text.

Challenge 74, page 105: The macroscopic content of the universe may be observer-dependent. But to speak about many universes (many 'everythings'?) or a 'multiverse' (why only one? what Vol. II, page 256 is more than everything?) is pure nonsense.

Challenge 77, page 105: True only if it were possible to do this. Because particles and space are indistinguishable, removing particles means to remove everything. (The strand model visualizes this connection most clearly.)

Vol. III, page 314 **Challenge 79**, page 105: True. Existence is the ability to interact. If the ability disappears, existence disappears. In other words, 'existence' is a low-energy concept.

Challenge 80, page 107: If you find a sensible statement about the universe, publish it! And send it to the author as well. The next challenge shows one reason why this issue is interesting. In addition, such a statement would contradict the conclusions on the combined effects of general relativity and quantum theory.

Challenge 81, page 107: Plotinus in the *Enneads* has defined 'god' in exactly this way. Later, Augustine in *De Trinitate* and in several other texts, and many subsequent theologians have taken up this view. (See also Thomas Aquinas, *Summa contra gentiles*, 1, 30.) The idea they propose is simple: it is possible to clearly say what 'god' is *not*, but it is impossible to say what 'god' *is*. This statement is also part of the official *Roman Catholic Catechism*: see part one, section one, chapter one, IV, 43, found at www.vatican.va/archive/ENG0015/__PC.HTM. Similar statements are found in Judaism, Hinduism and Buddhism.

In other terms, theologians admit that 'god' cannot be defined, that the term has no properties or content, and that therefore the term cannot be used in any positive sentence. The aspects

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

common to 'universe' and to 'god' suggest the conclusion that both are the same. Indeed, the analogy between the two concepts can be expanded to a proof: both concepts have the same content, the same boundary, and the same domain of application. (This is an intriguing and
Challenge 225 e fascinating exercise.) In fact, this might be the most interesting of all proofs of the existence of 'god', as it lacks all the problems that the more common 'proofs' have. Despite its interest, this proof of equivalence is not found in any book on the topic yet. The reason is twofold. First, the results of modern physics – showing that the concept of universe has all these strange properties – are not common knowledge yet. Secondly, the result of the proof, the identity of 'god' and 'universe' – also called *pantheism* – is a heresy for most religions. It is an irony that the catholic catechism, together with modern physics, can be used to show that pantheism is correct, because any catholic who defends pantheism (or other heresies following from modern physics) incurs automatic excommunication, latae sententiae, without any need for a formal procedure.

If one is ready to explore the identity of universe and 'god', one finds that a statement like 'god created the universe' translates as 'the universe implies the universe'. The original statement is thus not a lie any more, but is promoted to a tautology. Similar changes appear for many other – but not all – statements using the term 'god'. (The problems with the expression 'in the beginning' remain, though.) In fact, one can argue that statements about 'god' are only sensible and true if they remain sensible and true after the term has been exchanged with 'universe'.
Challenge 226 e Enjoy the exploration of such statements.

Challenge 83, page 109: If you find one, publish it and send it also to me. The conjecture is that no such effects exist.

Challenge 85, page 110: In fact, no length below the Planck length itself plays any role in nature.

Challenge 87, page 111: You need quantum humour, because the result obviously contradicts a previous one given on page 90 that includes general relativity.

Challenge 90, page 119: The number of spatial dimensions must be given first, in order to talk about spheres.

Challenge 91, page 123: This is a challenge to you to find out. It is fun, it may yield a result in contradiction with the arguments given so far (publish it in this case), or it may yield an independent check of the results of the section.

Challenge 93, page 127: This issue is open and still a subject of research. The conjecture of the author is that the answer is negative. If you find an alternative, publish it, and send the author an email.

Challenge 95, page 132: The lid of a box must obey the indeterminacy relation. It cannot be at perfect rest with respect to the rest of the box.

Challenge 97, page 132: No, because the cosmic background is not a Planck scale effect, but an effect of much lower energy.

Challenge 98, page 132: Yes, at Planck scales all interactions are strand deformations; therefore collisions and gravity are indistinguishable there.

Challenge 99, page 132: No. Time is continuous only if *either* quantum theory and point particles *or* general relativity and point masses are assumed. The argument shows that only the combination of *both* theories with continuity is impossible.

Challenge 100, page 133: You should, because at Planck scales nature's inherent measurement errors cannot clearly distinguish between different measurement results.

Challenge 101, page 133: We still have the chance to find the best approximate concepts possible. There is no reason to give up.

Challenge 102, page 133: Here are a few thoughts. A beginning of the big bang does not exist; something similar is given by that piece of continuous entity which is encountered when going

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

backwards in time as much as possible. This has several implications.

— Going backwards in time as far as possible – towards the 'beginning' of time – is the same as zooming to smallest distances: we find a single strand of the amoeba.
— In other words, we speculate that the whole world is one single piece, fluctuating, and possibly knotted or branched.
— Going far away into space – to the border of the universe – is like taking a snapshot with a short shutter time: strands everywhere.
— Whenever we sloppily say that extended entities are 'infinite' in size, we only mean that they reach the horizon of the universe.

In summary, no starting point of the big bang exists, because time does not exist there. For the same reason, no initial conditions for particles or space-time exist. In addition, this shows there was no creation involved, because without time and without possibility of choice, the term 'creation' makes no sense.

Challenge 103, page 133: The equivalence follows from the fact that all these processes require Planck energy, Planck measurement precision, Planck curvature, and Planck shutter time.

Page 353 **Challenge 104**, page 133: No, as explained later on in the text.

Challenge 106, page 133: If not, force yourself. Brainstorming is important in life, as is the subsequent step: the checking of the speculations.

Challenge 111, page 145: The author would like to receive a mail on your reasons for disagreement.

Challenge 112, page 147: Let the author know if you succeed. And publish the results.

Challenge 113, page 147: Energy is action per time. Now, the Planck constant is the unit of action, and is defined by a crossing switch. A system that continuously produces a crossing switch for every Planck time running by thus has Planck energy. An example would be a tangle that is rotating extremely rapidly, once per Planck time, producing a crossing switch for every turn.

Momentum is action per length. A system that continuously produces a crossing switch whenever it advances by a Planck length has Planck momentum. An example would be a tangle configuration that lets a switch hop from one strand to the next under tight strand packing.

Force is action per length and time. A system that continuously produces a crossing switch for every Planck time that passes by and for every Planck length it advances through exerts a Planck force. A tangle with the structure of a screw that rotates and advances with sufficient speed would be an example.

Challenge 118, page 156: Yes; the appearance of a crossing does not depend on distance or on the number of strands in between.

Challenge 119, page 156: No; more than three dimensions do not allow us to define a crossing switch.

Challenge 120, page 156: If so, let the author know. If the generalization is genuine, the strand model is not correct.

Challenge 132, page 183: The magnitude at a point should be related to the vectorial sum of all inverse shortest crossing distances at that point.

Challenge 138, page 194: This algebraic transformation is shown in all textbooks that treat the Pauli equation. It can also be checked by writing the two equations out component by component.

Challenge 141, page 213: Yes, as can easily be checked by rereading the definitions with the spinor tangle description in mind.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Challenge 144, page 214: No contradiction is known.

Challenge 145, page 214: In the relativistic case, local space curvature is also taken into account.

Challenge 147, page 214: Find out, publish the result, and let the author know.

Challenge 148, page 214: If the strand interpenetration is allowed *generally*, quantum theory is impossible to derive, as the spinor behaviour would not be possible. If strand interpenetration were allowed only *under certain conditions* (such as only for a strand with itself, but not among two different strands), quantum theory might still possible. A similar process lies at the basis of mass generation, as shown in the section on the weak interaction.

Challenge 150, page 214: The belt trick would imply that a wheel rolls over its own blood supply at every second rotation.

Challenge 158, page 235: If you find one, publish it!

Challenge 169, page 265: No slide is possible, thus no crossing change appears; thus the situation has no observable effects. If one deforms one slide before the slide – which is possible – one gets back the situation already discussed above.

Challenge 174, page 266: For the Wightman axioms, this seems to be the case; however, a formal proof is still missing. The same is expected for the Haag–Kastler axioms.

Challenge 184, page 292: A black hole has at least one crossing, thus at least a Planck mass.

Challenge 187, page 299: The present consensus is no.

Challenge 192, page 315: These tangles are not rational. In the renewed strand model of 2015, they cannot form; they are not allowed and do not represent any particle.

Challenge 195, page 335: Tail braiding leads to knottedness or tangledness, which in turn is the basis for core rotation.

Challenge 197, page 336: The issue is topic of research; for symmetry reasons it seems that a state in which each of the six quarks has the same bound to the other five quarks cannot exist.

Challenge 204, page 356: If you find such an estimate, publish it and send it to the author. A really good estimate also answers the following question: why does particle mass increase with core complexity? A tangle with a complex core, i.e., with a core of large ropelength, has a large mass value. Any correct estimate of the mass must yield this property. But a more complex knot will have a smaller probability for the belt trick. We seem to be forced to conclude that particle mass is not due to the belt trick alone.

Challenge 207, page 356: If you find such an estimate, publish it and send it to the author.

Challenge 209, page 357: Probably not.

Challenge 210, page 357: Probably not.

Challenge 211, page 358: Probably not.

Challenge 212, page 358: Find out – and let the author know.

Challenge 214, page 362: This would be an interesting result worth a publication.

Challenge 216, page 369: If you plan such a calculation, the author would be delighted to help.

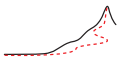
Challenge 219, page 378: Take up the challenge!

Challenge 221, page 391: There is a good chance, however, that such alternatives can be eliminated rather quickly. If you cannot do so, do publish the argument, and let the author know about it.

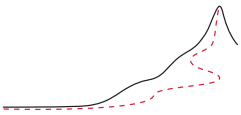
Challenge 223, page 400: Also in dreams, speeds can be compared; and also in dreams, a kind of causality holds (though not a trivial one). Thus there is an invariant and therefore a maximum speed.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Challenge 224, page 401: Probably none. The answer depends on whether the existence of strands can be deduced from dreams. If strands can be deduced from dreams, all of physics follows. The conjecture is that this deduction is possible. If you find an argument against or in favour of this conjecture, let the author know.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



BIBLIOGRAPHY

> The only end of writing is to enable the readers better to enjoy life, or better to endure it.
> Samuel Johnson*

1 See the first volume of the Motion Mountain series, *Fall, Flow and Heat*, available as free download at www.motionmountain.net. Cited on pages 16 and 386.

2 See the second volume of the Motion Mountain series, *Relativity*, available as free download at www.motionmountain.net. Cited on pages 16, 17, 386, and 415.

3 See the third volume of the Motion Mountain series, *Light, Charges and Brains*, available as free download at www.motionmountain.net, as well as the mentioned fourth and fifth volumes. Cited on pages 16 and 386.

4 See the fourth and fifth volumes of the Motion Mountain series, *The Quantum of Change* and *Pleasure, Technology and the Stars*, available as free download at www.motionmountain.net. Cited on pages 17, 386, 387, and 414.

5 The most precise value of the fine structure constant is determined from a weighted world average of high-precision measurements by a special international scientific committee called CODATA. Its (ugly) website is www.codata.org, but the actual value, called the 2010 CODATA value of the fine structure constant, is, as of early 2012, only published at physics.nist.gov/cgi-bin/cuu/Value?alph. The forthcoming publication is P. J. Mohr, B. N. Taylor & D. B. Newell, *CODATA recommended values of the fundamental physical constants: 2010*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1203.5425. See also physics.nist.gov/cuu/Constants/papers.html. Cited on pages 17, 366, 369, and 401.

6 See for example, the book by Robert Laughlin, *A Different Universe: Reinventing Physics from the Botton Down* Basic Books, 2005. Of the numerous books that discuss the idea of a final theory, this is the only one worth reading, and the only one cited in this bibliography. The opinions of Laughlin are worth pondering. Cited on page 20.

7 Many physicists, including Steven Weinberg, regularly – and incorrectly – claim in interviews that the measurement problem is not solved yet. Cited on page 20.

8 Undocumented sentences to this effect are regularly attributed to Albert Einstein. Because Einstein was a pantheist, as he often explained, his statements on the 'mind of god' are not really to be taken seriously. They were all made – if at all – in a humorous tone. Cited on page 20.

9 For an example for the inappropriate fear of unification, see the theatre play *Die Physiker* by the Swiss author Friedrich Dürrenmatt. Several other plays and novels took over this type of disinformation. Cited on page 20.

* This is a statement from the brilliant essay by the influential writer Samuel Johnson, *Review of Soame Jenyns' "A Free Enquiry Into the Nature and Origin of Evil"*, 1757. See www.samueljohnson.com.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

10 Exploring the spirit of play is the subject of research of the famous National Institute for Play, founded by Stuart Brown, and found at www.nifplay.org. Cited on page 20.

11 See e.g. the 1922 lectures by Lorentz at Caltech, published as H. A. Lorentz, *Problems of Modern Physics*, edited by H. Bateman, Ginn and Company, 1927, page 99. Cited on page 26.

12 Bohr explained the indivisibilty of the quantum of action in his famous Como lecture, printed in N. Bohr, *Atomtheorie und Naturbeschreibung*, Springer, 1931. It was translated into English language as N. Bohr, *Atomic Theory and the Description of Nature*, Cambridge University Press, 1934. More statements about the indivisibility of the quantum of action can be found in N. Bohr, *Atomic Physics and Human Knowledge*, Science Editions, New York, 1961. For summaries of Bohr's ideas by others see Max Jammer, *The Philosophy of Quantum Mechanics*, Wiley, first edition, 1974, pp. 90–91, and John Honner, *The Description of Nature – Niels Bohr and the Philosophy of Quantum Physics*, Clarendon Press, 1987, p. 104. Cited on page 27.

13 For an overview of the quantum of action as a basis of quantum theory, see the first chapter of the fourth volume of the Motion Mountain series, Ref. 4. Cited on page 28.

Vol. IV, page 14

Vol. IV, page 180 **14** An overview of EBK quantization can be found in the volume on quantum theory. Cited on page 28.

15 Minimal entropy is discussed by L. Szilard, *Über die Entropieverminderung in einem thermodynamischen System bei Eingriffen intelligenter Wesen*, Zeitschrift für Physik **53**, pp. 840–856, 1929. This classic paper can also be found in English translation in his collected works. Cited on page 29.

16 See for example A. E. Shalyt-Margolin & A. Ya. Tregubovich, *Generalized uncertainty relation in thermodynamics*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0307018, or J. Uffink & J. van Lith-van Dis, *Thermodynamic uncertainty relations*, Foundations of Physics **29**, pp. 655–692, 1999. Cited on page 29.

17 See also the fundamental paper by A. DiSessa, *Momentum flow as an alternative perspective in elementary mechanics*, **48**, p. 365, 1980, and A. DiSessa, *Erratum: "Momentum flow as an alternative perspective in elementary mechanics" [Am. J. Phys. 48, 365 (1980)]*, **48**, p. 784, 1980. Cited on page 30.

18 The observations of black holes at the centre of galaxies and elsewhere are summarised by R. Blandford & N. Gehrels, *Revisiting the black hole*, Physics Today **52**, June 1999. Their existence is now well established. Cited on page 30.

19 It seems that the first published statement of the maximum force as a *fundamental principle* was around the year 2000, in this text, in the chapter on gravitation and relativity. The author discovered the maximum force principle, not knowing the work of others, when searching for a way to derive the results of the last part of this adventure that would be so simple that it would convince even a secondary-school student. In the year 2000, the author told his friends in Berlin about his didactic approach.

Page 54

The *concept* of a maximum force was first proposed, most probably, by Venzo de Sabbata and C. Sivaram in 1993. Also this physics discovery was thus made much too late. In 1995, Corrado Massa took up the idea. Independently, Ludwik Kostro in 1999, Christoph Schiller just before 2000 and Gary Gibbons in the years before 2002 arrived at the same concept. Gary Gibbons was inspired by a book by Oliver Lodge; he explains that the maximum force value follows from general relativity; he does not make a statement about the converse, nor do the other authors. The statement of maximum force as a fundamental principle seems original to Christoph Schiller.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

The temporal order of the first papers on maximum force seems to be V. de Sabbata & C. Sivaram, *On limiting field strengths in gravitation*, Foundations of Physics Letters **6**, pp. 561–570, 1993, followed by C. Massa, *Does the gravitational constant increase?*, Astrophysics and Space Science **232**, pp. 143–148, 1995, and by L. Kostro & B. Lange, *Is c^4/G the greatest possible force in nature?*, Physics Essays **12**, pp. 182–189, 1999. The next references are the paper by G. W. Gibbons, *The maximum tension principle in general relativity*, Foundations of Physics **32**, pp. 1891–1901, 2002, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0210109 – though he developed the ideas before that date – and the older versions of the present text Christoph Schiller, *Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics*, free pdf available at www.motionmountain.net. Then came C. Schiller, *Maximum force and minimum distance: physics in limit statements*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/physics/0309118, and C. Schiller, *General relativity and cosmology derived from principle of maximum power or force*, International Journal of Theoretical Physics **44**, pp. 1629–1647, 2005, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/physics/0607090. See also R. Beig, G. W. Gibbons & R. M. Schoen, *Gravitating opposites attract*, Classical and Quantum Gravity **26**, p. 225013, 2009. preprint at arxiv.org/abs/09071103.

A detailed discussion of maximum force and power is given in the volume on general relativity, Ref. 2. Cited on pages 31, 41, and 285.

Vol. II, page 105

20 Maximal luminosity is often mentioned in connection with gravitational wave detection; nevertheless, the general power maximum has never been mentioned before. See for example L. Ju, D. G. Blair & C. Zhao, *Detection of gravitational waves*, Reports on Progress in Physics **63**, pp. 1317–1427, 2000. See also C. W. Misner, K. S. Thorne & J. A. Wheeler, *Gravitation*, Freeman, 1973, page 980. Cited on page 31.

21 See for example Wolfgang Rindler, *Relativity – Special, General and Cosmological*, Oxford University Press, 2001, p. 70 ss, or Ray d'Inverno, *Introducing Einstein's Relativity*, Clarendon Press, 1992, p. 36 ss. Cited on page 32.

22 T. Jacobson, *Thermodynamics of spacetime: the Einstein equation of state*, Physical Review Letters **75**, pp. 1260–1263, 1995, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9504004; this deep article remains fascinating to this day. Even the author was scared to draw all the possible conclusions. The general concepts are explained, almost without formulae, in L. Smolin, *On the nature of quantum fluctuations and their relation to gravitation and the principle of inertia*, Classical and Quantum Gravity **3**, pp. 347–359, 1986. Cited on pages 32 and 284.

23 Indeterminacy relations in general relativity are discussed in C. A. Mead, *Possible connection between gravitation and fundamental length*, Physical Review B **135**, pp. 849–862, 1964. The generalized indeterminacy relation is implicit on page 852, but the issue is explained rather unclearly. Probably the author considered the result too simple to be mentioned explicitly. (That paper took 5 years to get published; comments on the story, written 37 years later, are found at C. A. Mead, *Walking the Planck length through history*, Physics Today **54**, p. 15 and p. 81, 2001, with a reply by Frank Wilczek.) See also P. K. Townsend, *Small-scale structure of space-time as the origin of the gravitational constant*, Physical Review D **15**, pp. 2795–2801, 1977, or the paper by M. -T. Jaekel & S. Renaud, *Gravitational quantum limit for length measurement*, Physics Letters A **185**, pp. 143–148, 1994. Cited on pages 34, 64, 65, 66, 69, and 115.

24 M. Kramer & al., *Tests of general relativity from timing the double pulsar*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/060941. Cited on page 34.

25 Minimal length and minimal time intervals are discussed, for example, by G. Amelino-Camelia, *Limits on the measurability of space-time distances in (the semiclassical approximation of) quantum gravity*, Modern Physics Letters A **9**, pp. 3415–3422, 1994, preprint at

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9603014, and by Y. J. Ng & H. van Dam, *Limit to space-time measurement*, Modern Physics Letters A **9**, pp. 335–340, 1994. Many other authors have explored the topic. Cited on pages 36 and 65.

26 Maximal curvature, as well as area and volume quantization, are discussed in A. Ashtekar, *Quantum geometry and gravity: recent advances*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0112038 and in A. Ashtekar, *Quantum geometry in action: big bang and black holes*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/math-ph/0202008. Cited on pages 36, 73, and 424.

27 Maximons, elementary particles of Planck mass, are discussed by A. D. Sakharov, *Vacuum quantum fluctuations in curved space and the theory of gravitation*, Soviet Physics – Doklady **12**, pp. 1040–1041, 1968. Cited on pages 38, 76, and 118.

28 Wolfgang Rindler, *Relativity – Special, General and Cosmological*, Oxford University Press, 2001, p. 230. Cited on page 40.

29 This relation was pointed out by Achim Kempf. The story is told in A. D. Sakharov, General Relativity and Gravitation **32**, pp. 365–367, 2000, a reprint of his paper Doklady Akademii Nauk SSSR **177**, pp. 70–71, 1967. Cited on pages 33 and 41.

30 Several incorrect counterclaims to the entropy limit were made in R. Bousso, *The holographic principle*, Review of Modern Physics **74**, pp. 825–874, 2002, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0203101. However, this otherwise good review has some errors in its arguments, as explained on page 144 in volume V. Bousso has changed his position in the meantime; he now accepts the entropy limit. Cited on pages 42, 46, 422, and 424.

31 Gamma-ray bursts are discussed by G. Preparata, R. Ruffini & S.-S. Xue, *The dyadosphere of black holes and gamma-ray bursts*, Astronomy and Astrophysics **338**, pp. L87–L90, 1998, and C. L. Bianco, R. Ruffini & S.-S. Xue, *The elementary spike produced by a pure e^+e^- pair-electromagnetic pulse from a black hole: the PEM pulse*, Astronomy and Astrophysics **368**, pp. 377–390, 2001. Cited on page 43.

32 See for example the review in C.W.J. Beenakker & al., *Quantum transport in semiconductor nanostructures*, pp. 1–228, in H. Ehrenreich & D. Turnbull editors, *Solid State Physics*, volume 44, Academic Press, 1991. Cited on page 43.

33 A discussion of a different electrical indeterminacy relation, between current and charge, can be found in Y-Q. Li & B. Chen, *Quantum theory for mesoscopic electronic circuits and its applications*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/cond-mat/9907171. Cited on page 43.

34 Hans C. Ohanian & Remo Ruffini, *Gravitation and Spacetime*, W.W. Norton & Co., 1994. Cited on pages 44 and 429.

35 The entropy limit for black holes is discussed by J. D. Bekenstein, *Entropy bounds and black hole remnants*, Physical Review D **49**, pp. 1912–1921, 1994. See also J. D. Bekenstein, *Universal upper bound on the entropy-to-energy ratio for bounded systems*, Physical Review D **23**, pp. 287–298, 1981. Cited on pages 45 and 128.

36 The statement is also called the *Kovtun-Son-Starinets conjecture*. It was published as P. Kovtun, D. T. Son & A. O. Starinets, *A viscosity bound conjecture*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0405231. See also P. Kovtun, D. T. Son & A. O. Starinets, *Viscosity in strongly interacting quantum field theories from black hole physics*, Physical Review Letters **44**, p. 111601, 2005. For an experimental verification, see U. Hohm, *On the ratio of the shear viscosity to the density of entropy of the rare gases and H2, N2, CH4, and CF4*, Chemical Physics **444**, pp. 39–42, 2014. Cited on page 46.

37 Brian Greene, *The Elegant Universe – Superstrings, Hidden Dimensions, and the Quest for the Ultimate Theory*, Jonathan Cape 1999. Cited on page 51.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

38 S. Weinberg, *The cosmological constant problem*, Reviews of Modern Physics **61**, pp. 1–23, 1989. Cited on page 55.

39 Steven Weinberg, *The Quantum Theory of Fields*, Cambridge University Press, volumes I, 1995, and II, 1996. Cited on page 55.

40 See the excellent presentation on the cosmological constant in general relativity by E. Bianchi & C. Rovelli, *Why all these prejudices against a constant?*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1002.3966 Cited on page 55.

41 The difficulties are summarised by B. S. DeWitt, *Quantum field theory in curved spacetime*, Physics Reports **19**, pp. 295–357, 1975. Cited on page 55.

42 C. W. Misner, K. S. Thorne & J. A. Wheeler, *Gravitation*, Freeman, 1973. Cited on pages 56, 57, and 65.

43 J. A. Wheeler, in *Relativity, Groups and Topology*, edited by C. DeWitt & B. S. DeWitt, Gordon and Breach, 1994. See also J. A. Wheeler, *Physics at the Planck length*, International Journal of Modern Physics A **8**, pp. 4013–4018, 1993. However, his claim that spin 1/2 *requires* topology change is *refuted* by the strand model of the vacuum. Cited on page 56.

44 J. L. Friedman & R. D. Sorkin, *Spin 1/2 from gravity*, Physical Review Letters **44**, pp. 1100–1103, 1980. Cited on page 56.

45 A. P. Balachandran, G. Bimonte, G. Marmo & A. Simoni, *Topology change and quantum physics*, Nuclear Physics B **446**, pp. 299–314, 1995, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9503046. Cited on page 56.

46 J. Ehlers, *Introduction – Survey of Problems*, pp. 1–10, in J. Ehlers, editor, *Sistemi gravitazionali isolati in relatività generale*, Rendiconti della scuola internazionale di fisica "Enrico Fermi", LXVII° corso, Società Italiana di Fisica/North Holland, 1979. Cited on page 56.

47 See C. Schiller, *Le vide diffère-t-il de la matière?* in E. Gunzig & S. Diner editors, *Le Vide – Univers du tout et du rien – Des physiciens et des philosophes s'interrogent*, Les Éditions de l'Université de Bruxelles, 1998. An older, English-language version is available as C. Schiller, *Does matter differ from vacuum?* preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9610066. Cited on pages 56, 115, 117, 118, 119, and 130.

48 See for example Richard P. Feynman, Robert B. Leighton & Matthew Sands, *The Feynman Lectures on Physics*, Addison Wesley, 1977. Cited on page 57.

49 Steven Weinberg, *Gravitation and Cosmology*, Wiley, 1972. Cited on pages 57, 63, and 65.

50 The argument is given e.g. in E. P. Wigner, *Relativistic invariance and quantum phenomena*, Reviews of Modern Physics **29**, pp. 255–258, 1957. Cited on page 62.

51 The starting point for the following arguments is taken from M. Schön, *Operative time definition and principal indeterminacy*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9304024, and from T. Padmanabhan, *Limitations on the operational definition of space-time events and quantum gravity*, Classical and Quantum Gravity **4**, pp. L107–L113, 1987; see also Padmanabhan's earlier papers referenced there. Cited on page 62.

52 W. Heisenberg, *Über den anschaulichen Inhalt der quantentheoretischen Kinematik und Mechanik*, Zeitschrift für Physik **43**, pp. 172–198, 1927. Cited on page 62.

53 E. H. Kennard, *Zur Quantenmechanik einfacher Bewegungstypen*, Zeitschrift für Physik **44**, pp. 326–352, 1927. Cited on page 62.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

54 M. G. Raymer, *Uncertainty principle for joint measurement of noncommuting variables*, American Journal of Physics **62**, pp. 986–993, 1994. Cited on page 62.

55 H. Salecker, & E. P. Wigner, *Quantum limitations of the measurement of space-time distances*, Physical Review **109**, pp. 571–577, 1958. Cited on pages 63, 90, and 111.

56 E. J. Zimmerman, *The macroscopic nature of space-time*, American Journal of Physics **30**, pp. 97–105, 1962. Cited on pages 63, 90, and 111.

57 J. D. Bekenstein, *Black holes and entropy*, Physical Review D **7**, pp. 2333–2346, 1973. Cited on pages 63, 128, and 281.

58 S. W. Hawking, *Particle creation by black holes*, Communications in Mathematical Physics **43**, pp. 199–220, 1975; see also S. W. Hawking, *Black hole thermodynamics*, Physical Review D **13**, pp. 191–197, 1976. Cited on pages 63, 128, and 281.

59 P. Gibbs, *The small scale structure of space-time: a bibliographical review*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9506171. Cited on pages 63 and 81.

60 The impossibility of determining temporal ordering in quantum theory is discussed by J. Oppenheimer, B. Reznik & W. G. Unruh, *Temporal ordering in quantum mechanics*, Journal of Physics A **35**, pp. 7641–7652, 2001, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0003130. Cited on page 64.

61 M. -T. Jaekel & S. Renaud, *Gravitational quantum limit for length measurement*, Physics Letters A **185**, pp. 143–148, 1994. Cited on page 65.

62 D. V. Ahluwalia, *Quantum measurement, gravitation and locality*, Physics Letters B **339**, pp. 301–303, 1994, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9308007. Cited on page 65.

63 L. Garay, *Quantum gravity and minimum length*, International Journal of Modern Physics A **10**, pp. 145–165, 1995, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9403008. This paper also includes an extensive bibliography. See also R. J. Adler & D. I. Santiago, *On gravity and the uncertainty principle*, Modern Physics Letters A **14**, pp. 1371–1381, 1999, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9904026. Cited on page 65.

64 C. Rovelli & L. Smolin, *Discreteness of area and volume in quantum gravity*, Nuclear Physics B **442**, pp. 593–619, 1995. R. Loll, *The volume operator in discretized quantum gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9506014. See also C. Rovelli, *Notes for a brief history of quantum gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0006061. Cited on page 66.

65 D. Amati, M. Ciafaloni & G. Veneziano, *Superstring collisions at Planckian energies*, Physics Letters B **197**, pp. 81–88, 1987. D. J. Gross & P. F. Mende, *The high energy behavior of string scattering amplitudes*, Physics Letters B **197**, pp. 129–134, 1987. K. Konishi, G. Paffuti & P. Provero, *Minimum physical length and the generalized uncertainty principle*, Physics Letters B **234**, pp. 276–284, 1990. P. Aspinwall, *Minimum distances in non-trivial string target spaces*, Nuclear Physics B **431**, pp. 78–96, 1994, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9404060. Cited on page 66.

66 M. Maggiore, *A generalised uncertainty principle in quantum mechanics*, Physics Letters B **304**, pp. 65–69, 1993. Cited on page 66.

67 A simple approach is S. Doplicher, K. Fredenhagen & J. E. Roberts, *Space-time quantization induced by classical gravity*, Physics Letters B **331**, pp. 39–44, 1994. Cited on pages 66 and 81.

68 A. Kempf, *Uncertainty relation in quantum mechanics with quantum group symmetry*, Journal of Mathematical Physics **35**, pp. 4483–4496, 1994. A. Kempf, *Quantum groups and quantum field theory with nonzero minimal uncertainties in positions and momenta*, Czechoslovak Journal of Physics **44**, pp. 1041–1048, 1994. Cited on page 66.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

69 E. J. Hellund & K. Tanaka, *Quantized space-time*, Physical Review **94**, pp. 192–195, 1954. Cited on page 66.

70 This intriguing extract from a letter by Einstein was made widely known by John J. Stachel, in his paper *The other Einstein: Einstein contra field theory*, that is best found in his book *Einstein from 'B' to 'Z'*, Birkhäuser, 2002. The German original of the letter is found in Robert Schulmann, A. J. Knox, Michel Janssen & József Illy, *The Collected Papers of Albert Einstein, Volume 8A – The Berlin Years: Correspondence, 1914–1917*, letter 299, Princeton University Press, 1998. Barbara Wolff helped in clarifying several details in the German original. The letter is now available online, at einsteinpapers.press.princeton.edu/vol8a-doc/463. Cited on page 67.

71 A. Peres & N. Rosen, *Quantum limitations on the measurement of gravitational fields*, Physical Review **118**, pp. 335–336, 1960. Cited on page 69.

72 It is the first definition in Euclid's *Elements*, *c.* 300 bce. For an English translation see T. Heath, *The Thirteen Books of the Elements*, Dover, 1969. Cited on page 69.

73 A beautiful description of the Banach–Tarski paradox is the one by Ian Stewart, *Paradox of the spheres*, New Scientist, 14 January 1995, pp. 28–31. Cited on page 70.

74 H. S. Snyder, *Quantized space-time*, Physical Review **71**, pp. 38–41, 1947. H. S. Snyder, *The electromagnetic field in quantized space-time*, Physical Review **72**, pp. 68–74, 1947. A. Schild, *Discrete space-time and integral Lorentz transformations*, Physical Review **73**, pp. 414–415, 1948. E. L. Hill, *Relativistic theory of discrete momentum space and discrete space-time*, Physical Review **100**, pp. 1780–1783, 1950. H. T. Flint, *The quantization of space-time*, Physical Review **74**, pp. 209–210, 1948. A. Das, *Cellular space-time and quantum field theory*, Il Nuovo Cimento **18**, pp. 482–504, 1960. Cited on page 72.

75 D. Finkelstein, *'Superconducting' causal nets*, International Journal of Theoretical Physics **27**, pp. 473–519, 1985. Cited on page 72.

76 N. H. Christ, R. Friedberg & T. D. Lee, *Random lattice field theory: general formulation*, Nuclear Physics B **202**, pp. 89–125, 1982. G. 't Hooft, *Quantum field theory for elementary particles – is quantum field theory a theory?*, Physics Reports **104**, pp. 129–142, 1984. Cited on page 72.

77 For a discussion, see R. Sorabji, *Time, Creation and the Continuum: Theories in Antiquity and the Early Middle Ages*, Duckworth, 1983. Cited on page 72.

78 See, for example, L. Bombelli, J. Lee, D. Meyer & R. D. Sorkin, *Space-time as a causal set*, Physical Review Letters **59**, pp. 521–524, 1987. G. Brightwell & R. Gregory, *Structure of random space-time*, Physical Review Letters **66**, pp. 260–263, 1991. Cited on page 72.

79 The false belief that particles like quarks or electrons are composite is slow to die out. See for example: S. Fredriksson, *Preon prophecies by the standard model*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0309213. Preon models gained popularity in the 1970s and 1980s, in particular through the papers by J. C. Pati & A. Salam, *Lepton number as the fourth "color"*, Physical Review D **10**, pp. 275–289, 1974, H. Harari, *A schematic model of quarks and leptons*, Physics Letters B **86**, pp. 83–86, 1979, M. A. Shupe, *A composite model of leptons and quarks*, Physics Letters B **86**, pp. 87–92, 1979, and H. Fritzsch & G. Mandelbaum, *Weak interactions as manifestations of the substructure of leptons and quarks*, Physics Letters B **102**, pp. 319–322, 1981. Cited on page 73.

80 N. F. Ramsey & A. Weis, *Suche nach permanenten elektrischen Dipolmomenten: ein Test der Zeitumkehrinvarianz*, Physikalische Blätter **52**, pp. 859–863, 1996. See also W. Bernreuther & M. Suzuki, *The electric dipole moment of the electron*, Reviews of

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Modern Physics **63**, pp. 313–340, 1991, and the musings in Hans Dehmelt, *Is the electron a composite particle?*, Hyperfine Interactions **81**, pp. 1–3, 1993. Cited on page 74.

81 K. Akama, T. Hattori & K. Katsuura, *Naturalness bounds on dipole moments from new physics*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0111238. Cited on page 74.

82 The paper by J. Baron & al., *Order of magnitude smaller limit on the electric dipole moment of the electron*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1310.7534 gives an upper experimental limit to the dipole moment of the electron of $8.7 \cdot 10^{-31}\, e$ m. Cited on page 74.

83 C. Wolf, *Upper limit for the mass of an elementary particle due to discrete time quantum mechanics*, Il Nuovo Cimento B **109**, pp. 213–218, 1994. Cited on page 76.

84 W. G. Unruh, *Notes on black hole evaporation*, Physical Review D **14**, pp. 870–875, 1976. W. G. Unruh & R. M. Wald, *What happens when an accelerating observer detects a Rindler particle*, Physical Review D **29**, pp. 1047–1056, 1984. Cited on page 79.

85 The first example was J. Magueijo & L. Smolin, *Lorentz invariance with an invariant energy scale*, Physical Review Letters **88**, p. 190403, 2002, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0112090. They propose a modification of the mass energy relation of the kind

$$E = \frac{c^2 \gamma m}{1 + \frac{c^2 \gamma m}{E_{\text{Pl}}}} \quad \text{and} \quad p = \frac{\gamma m v}{1 + \frac{c^2 \gamma m}{E_{\text{Pl}}}} \,. \tag{212}$$

Another, similar approach of recent years, with a different proposal, is called 'doubly special relativity'. A recent summary is G. Amelino-Camelia, *Doubly-special relativity: first results and key open problems*, International Journal of Modern Physics **11**, pp. 1643–1669, 2002, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0210063. The paper shows how conceptual problems hinder the advance of the field. Another such discussion R. Aloisio, A. Galante, A. F. Grillo, E. Luzio & F. Méndez, *Approaching space-time through velocity in doubly special relativity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0410020. The lesson from these attempts is simple: special relativity *cannot* be modified to include a limit energy without also including general relativity and quantum theory. Cited on pages 81 and 271.

86 W. Jauch, *Heisenberg's uncertainty relation and thermal vibrations in crystals*, American Journal of Physics **61**, pp. 929–932, 1993. Cited on page 81.

87 H. D. Zeh, *On the interpretation of measurement in quantum theory*, Foundations of Physics **1**, pp. 69–76, 1970. Cited on page 81.

88 See Y. J. Ng, W. A. Christiansen & H. van Dam, *Probing Planck-scale physics with extragalactic sources?*, Astrophysical Journal **591**, pp. L87–L90, 2003, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/0302372; D. H. Coule, *Planck scale still safe from stellar images*, Classical and Quantum Gravity **20**, pp. 3107–3112, 2003, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/0302333. Negative experimental results (and not always correct calculations) are found in R. Lieu & L. Hillman, *The phase coherence of light from extragalactic sources – direct evidence against first order Planck scale fluctuations in time and space*, Astrophysical Journal **585**, pp. L77–L80, 2003, and R. Ragazzoni, M. Turatto & W. Gaessler, *The lack of observational evidence for the quantum structure of spacetime at Planck scales*, Astrophysical Journal **587**, pp. L1–L4, 2003. Cited on page 84.

89 B. E. Schaefer, *Severe limits on variations of the speed of light with frequency*, Physical Review Letters **82**, pp. 4964–4966, 21 June 1999. Cited on page 85.

90 A.A. Abdo & al., (Fermi GBM/LAT collaborations) *Testing Einstein's special relativity with Fermi's short hard gamma-ray burst GRB090510*, preprint at arxiv.org/0908.1832. Cited on page 85.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

91 G. Amelino-Camelia, J. Ellis, N. E. Mavromatos, D. V. Nanopoulos & S. Sakar, *Potential sensitivity of gamma-ray-burster observations to wave dispersion in vacuo*, Nature **393**, pp. 763–765, 1998, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/9712103. Cited on page 85.

92 G. Amelino-Camelia, *Phenomenological description of space-time foam*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0104005. The paper includes a clearly written overview of present experimental approaches to detecting quantum gravity effects. See also his update G. Amelino-Camelia, *Quantum-gravity phenomenology: status and prospects*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0204051. Cited on page 85.

93 G. Amelino-Camelia, *An interferometric gravitational wave detector as a quantum gravity apparatus*, Nature **398**, pp. 216–218, 1999, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9808029. Cited on page 85.

94 F. Karolyhazy, *Gravitation and quantum mechanics of macroscopic objects*, Il Nuovo Cimento **A42**, pp. 390–402, 1966. Y. J. Ng & H. van Dam, *Limit to space-time measurement*, Modern Physics Letters A **9**, pp. 335–340, 1994. Y. J. Ng & H. van Dam, Modern Physics Letters A *Remarks on gravitational sources*, **10**, pp. 2801–2808, 1995. The discussion is neatly summarised in Y. J. Ng & H. van Dam, *Comment on 'Uncertainty in measurements of distance'*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0209021. See also Y. J. Ng, *Spacetime foam*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0201022. Cited on pages 85 and 90.

95 L. J. Garay, *Spacetime foam as a quantum thermal bath*, Physics Review Letters **80**, pp. 2508–2511, 1998, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9801024. Cited on page 85.

96 G. Amelino-Camelia & T. Piran, *Planck-scale deformation of Lorentz symmetry as a solution to the UHECR and the TeV-γ paradoxes*, preprint at arxiv.org/astro-ph/0008107, 2000. Cited on page 85.

97 R. P. Woodard, *How far are we from the quantum theory of gravity?*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0907.4238. For a different point of view, see L. Smolin, *Generic predictions of quantum theories of gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0605052. Cited on pages 86 and 294.

98 A similar point of view, often called monism, was proposed by Baruch Spinoza, *Ethics Demonstrated in Geometrical Order*, 1677, originally in Latin; an affordable French edition is Baruch Spinoza, *L'Ethique*, Folio-Gallimard, 1954. For a discussion of his ideas, especially his monism, see Don Garret editor, *The Cambridge Companion to Spinoza*, Cambridge University Press, 1996, or any general text on the history of philosophy. Cited on page 86.

99 See the lucid discussion by G. F. R. Ellis & T. Rothman, *Lost horizons*, American Journal of Physics **61**, pp. 883–893, 1993. Cited on pages 90, 94, and 95.

100 See, for example, the Hollywood film *Contact*, based on the book by Carl Sagan, *Contact*, Simon & Schuster, 1985. Cited on page 95.

101 See, for example, the international bestseller by Stephen Hawking, *A Brief History of Time – From the Big Bang to Black Holes*, 1988. Cited on page 98.

102 L. Rosenfeld, *Quantentheorie und Gravitation*, in H. -J. Treder, editor, *Entstehung, Entwicklung und Perspektiven der Einsteinschen Gravitationstheorie*, Springer Verlag, 1966. Cited on page 100.

103 Holography in high-energy physics is connected with the work of 't Hooft and Susskind. See for example G. 't Hooft, *Dimensional reduction in quantum gravity*, pp. 284–296, in A. Ali, J. Ellis & S. Randjbar-Daemi, *Salaamfeest*, 1993, or the much-cited paper by L. Susskind, *The world as a hologram*, Journal of Mathematical Physics **36**, pp. 6377–

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

6396, 1995, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9409089. A good modern overview is Ref. 30. Cited on pages 102 and 110.

104 D. Bohm & B. J. Hiley, *On the intuitive understanding of nonlocality as implied by quantum theory*, Foundations of Physics **5**, pp. 93–109, 1975. Cited on page 103.

105 S. Lloyd, *Computational capacity of the universe*, Physical Review Letters **88**, p. 237901, 2002. Cited on page 104.

106 Gottfried Wilhelm Leibniz, *La Monadologie*, 1714. Written in French, it is available freely at www.uqac.uquebec.ca/zone30/Classiques_des_sciences_sociales and in various other languages on other websites. Cited on page 105.

107 See, for example, H. Wussing & P. S. Alexandrov editors, *Die Hilbertschen Probleme*, Akademische Verlagsgesellschaft Geest & Portig, 1983, or Ben H. Yandell, *The Honours Class: Hilbert's Problems and their Solvers*, A.K. Peters, 2002. Cited on page 105.

108 A large part of the study of dualities in string and M theory can be seen as investigations into the detailed consequences of extremal identity. For a review of dualities, see P. C. Argyres, *Dualities in supersymmetric field theories*, Nuclear Physics Proceedings Supplement **61**, pp. 149–157, 1998, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9705076. A classical version of duality is discussed by M. C. B. Abdalla, A. L. Gadelka & I. V. Vancea, *Duality between coordinates and the Dirac field*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0002217. Cited on page 110.

109 See L. Susskind & J. Uglum, *Black holes, interactions, and strings*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9410074, or L. Susskind, *String theory and the principle of black hole complementarity*, Physical Review Letters **71**, pp. 2367–2368, 1993, and M. Karliner, I. Klebanov & L. Susskind, *Size and shape of strings*, International Journal of Modern Physics A **3**, pp. 1981–1996, 1988, as well as L. Susskind, *Structure of hadrons implied by duality*, Physical Review D **1**, pp. 1182–1186, 1970. Cited on pages 114 and 129.

110 M. Planck, *Über irreversible Strahlungsvorgänge*, Sitzungsberichte der Kaiserlichen Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin pp. 440–480, 1899. Today it is commonplace to use Dirac's $\hbar = h/2\pi$ instead of Planck's h, which Planck originally called b. Cited on page 115.

111 P. Facchi & S. Pascazio, *Quantum Zeno and inverse quantum Zeno effects*, pp. 147–217, in E. Wolf editor, *Progress in Optics*, **42**, 2001. Cited on page 118.

112 Aristotle, *Of Generation and Corruption*, book I, part 2. See Jean-Paul Dumont, *Les écoles présocratiques*, Folio Essais, Gallimard, p. 427, 1991. Cited on page 118.

113 See for example the speculative model of vacuum as composed of Planck-size spheres proposed by F. Winterberg, Zeitschrift für Naturforschung **52a**, p. 183, 1997. Cited on page 119.

114 The Greek salt-and-water argument and the fish argument are given by Lucrece, in full Titus Lucretius Carus, *De natura rerum*, *c.* 60 bce. Cited on pages 120 and 135.

115 J. H. Schwarz, *The second superstring revolution*, Colloquium-level lecture presented at the Sakharov Conference in Moscow, May 1996, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9607067. Cited on pages 121 and 122.

116 Simplicius, *Commentary on the Physics of Aristotle*, 140, 34. This text is cited in Jean-Paul Dumont, *Les écoles présocratiques*, Folio Essais, Gallimard, p. 379, 1991. Cited on page 121.

117 D. Olive & C. Montonen, *Magnetic monopoles as gauge particles*, Physics Letters **72B**, pp. 117–120, 1977. Cited on page 122.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

118 A famous fragment from Diogenes Laërtius (IX 72) quotes Democritus as follows: 'By convention hot, by convention cold, but in reality, atoms and void; and also in reality we know nothing, since truth is at the bottom.' Cited on page 124.

119 This famous statement is found at the beginning of chapter XI, 'The Physical Universe', in Arthur Eddington, *The Philosophy of Physical Science*, Cambridge, 1939. Cited on page 124.

120 Plato, *Parmenides*, *c.* 370 bce. It has been translated into most languages. Reading it aloud, like a song, is a beautiful experience. A pale reflection of these ideas is Bohm's concept of 'unbroken wholeness'. Cited on page 125.

121 P. Gibbs, *Event-symmetric physics*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9505089; see also his website www.weburbia.com/pg/contents.htm. Cited on page 125.

122 J. B. Hartle, & S. W. Hawking, *Path integral derivation of black hole radiance*, Physical Review D **13**, pp. 2188–2203, 1976. See also A. Strominger & C. Vafa, *Microscopic origin of Bekenstein–Hawking entropy*, Physics Letters B **379**, pp. 99–104, 1996, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9601029. For another derivation of black hole entropy, see G. T. Horowitz & J. Polchinski, *A correspondence principle for black holes and strings*, Physical Review D **55**, pp. 6189–6197, 1997, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9612146. Cited on pages 128 and 137.

123 J. Maddox, *When entropy does not seem extensive*, Nature **365**, p. 103, 1993. The issue is now explored in all textbooks discussing black holes. John Maddox (b. 1925 Penllergaer, d. 1999 Abergavenny) was famous for being one of the few people who was knowledgeable in most natural sciences. Cited on page 128.

124 L. Bombelli, R. K. Koul, J. Lee & R. D. Sorkin, *Quantum source of entropy of black holes*, Physical Review D **34**, pp. 373–383, 1986. Cited on page 128.

125 The analogy between polymers and black holes is due to G. Weber, *Thermodynamics at boundaries*, Nature **365**, p. 792, 1993. Cited on page 128.

126 See the classic text by Pierre-Gilles de Gennes, *Scaling Concepts in Polymer Physics*, Cornell University Press, 1979. Cited on page 128.

127 See for example S. Majid, *Introduction to braided geometry and q-Minkowski space*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9410241, or S. Majid, *Duality principle and braided geometry*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9409057. Cited on page 130.

128 The relation between spin and statistics has been studied recently by M. V. Berry & J. M. Robbins, *Quantum indistinguishability: spin–statistics without relativity or field theory?*, in R. C. Hilborn & G. M. Tino editors, *Spin–Statistics Connection and Commutation Relations*, American Institute of Physics, 2000. Cited on page 132.

129 A. Gregori, *Entropy, string theory, and our world*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0207195. Cited on page 133.

130 String cosmology is a pastime for many. Examples include N. E. Mavromatos, *String cosmology*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0111275, and N. G. Sanchez, *New developments in string gravity and string cosmology – a summary report*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0209016. Cited on page 133.

131 On the present record, see en.wkipedia.org/wiki/Ultra-high-energy_cosmic_ray and fr.wkipedia.org/wiki/Zetta-particule. Cited on page 134.

132 P. F. Mende, *String theory at short distance and the principle of equivalence*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9210001. Cited on page 134.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

133 An example is given by A. A. Slavnov, *Fermi–Bose duality via extra dimension*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9512101. See also the standard work by Michael Stone editor, *Bosonization*, World Scientific, 1994. Cited on page 135.

134 A weave model of space-time appears in certain approaches to quantum gravity, such as Ref. 26. On a slightly different topic, see also S. A. Major, *A spin network primer*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9905020. Cited on page 135.

135 L. Smolin & Y. Wan, *Propagation and interaction of chiral states in quantum gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0710.1548, and references therein. Cited on page 135.

136 A good introduction into his work is the paper D. Kreimer, *New mathematical structures in renormalisable quantum field theories*, Annals of Physics **303**, pp. 179–202, 2003, erratum ibid. **305**, p. 79, 2003, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0211136. Cited on page 135.

137 Introductions to holography include E. Alvarez, J. Conde & L. Hernandez, *Rudiments of holography*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0205075, and Ref. 30. The importance of holography in theoretical high-energy physics was underlined by the discovery of J. Maldacena, *The large N limit of superconformal field theories and supergravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9711200. Cited on page 135.

138 X.-G. Wen, *From new states of matter to a unification of light and electrons*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0508020. Cited on page 136.

139 J. S. Avrin, *A visualizable representation of the elementary particles*, Journal of Knot Theory and Its Ramifications **14**, pp. 131–176, 2005. Cited on pages 136 and 337.

140 The well-known ribbon model is presented in S. Bilson-Thompson, *A topological model of composite preons*, preprint at arxiv.org/hep-ph/0503213; S. Bilson-Thompson, F. Markopoulou & L. Smolin, *Quantum gravity and the standard model*, preprint at arxiv.org/hep-th/0603022; S. Bilson-Thompson, J. Hackett, L. Kauffman & L. Smolin, *Particle identifications from symmetries of braided ribbon network invariants*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0804.0037; S. Bilson-Thompson, J. Hackett & L. Kauffman, *Particle topology, braids, and braided belts*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0903.1376. Cited on pages 136, 161, and 337.

141 R. J. Finkelstein, *A field theory of knotted solitons*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0701124. See also R. J. Finkelstein, *Trefoil solitons, elementary fermions, and* $SU_q(2)$, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0602098, R. J. Finkelstein & A. C. Cadavid, *Masses and interactions of q-fermionic knots*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0507022, and R. J. Finkelstein, *A knot model suggested by the standard electroweak theory*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0408218. Cited on pages 136 and 337.

142 Louis H. Kauffman, *Knots and Physics*, World Scientific, 1991. A wonderful book. Cited on pages 136 and 267.

143 S. K. Ng, *On a knot model of the* π^+ *meson*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0210024, and S. K. Ng, *On a classification of mesons*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0212334. Cited on pages 136 and 337.

144 For a good introduction to superstrings, see the lectures by B. Zwiebach, *String theory for pedestrians*, agenda.cern.ch/fullAgenda.php?ida=a063319. For an old introduction to superstrings, see the famous text by M. B. Green, J. H. Schwarz & E. Witten, *Superstring Theory*, Cambridge University Press, volumes 1 and 2, 1987. Like all the other books on superstrings, they contain no statement that is applicable to or agrees with the strand model. Cited on pages 136 and 338.

145 See A. Sen, *An introduction to duality symmetries in string theory*, in *Les Houches Summer School: Unity from Duality: Gravity, Gauge Theory and Strings (Les Houches, France, 2001)*,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Springer Verlag, **76**, pp. 241–322, 2002. Cited on page 136.

146 Brian Greene regularly uses the name *string conjecture*. For example, he did so in a podium discussion at TED in 2009; the video of the podium discussion can be downloaded at www.ted.org. Cited on page 136.

147 L. Susskind, *Some speculations about black hole entropy in string theory*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9309145. G. T. Horowitz & J. Polchinski, *A correspondence principle for black holes and strings*, Physical Review D **55**, pp. 6189–6197, 1997, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9612146. Cited on pages 137 and 429.

148 F. Wilczek, *Getting its from bits*, Nature **397**, pp. 303–306, 1999. Cited on page 138.

149 M. R. Douglas, *Understanding the landscape*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0602266; his earlier papers also make the point. Cited on page 138.

150 The difficulties of the string conjecture are discussed in the well-known internet blog by Peter Woit, *Not even wrong*, at www.math.columbia.edu/~woit/blog. Several Nobel Prize winners for particle physics dismiss the string conjecture: Martin Veltman, Sheldon Glashow, Burton Richter, Richard Feynman and since 2009 also Steven Weinberg are among those who did so publicly. Cited on pages 139 and 161.

151 Searches for background-free approaches are described by E. Witten, *Quantum background independence in string theory*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9306122 and E. Witten, *On background-independent open string theory*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9208027. Cited on page 139.

152 In fact, no other candidate model that fulfils all requirements for the final theory is available in the literature so far. This might change in the future, though. Cited on page 145.

153 S. Carlip, *The small scale structure of spacetime*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1009.1136. This paper deduces the existence of fluctuating lines in vacuum from a number of arguments that are completely independent of the strand model. Steven Carlip has dedicated much of his research to the exploration of this issue. A recent summary is S. Carlip, *Spontaneous dimensional reduction in quantum gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1605.05694. Cited on pages 157 and 291.

154 David Deutsch states that any good explanation must be 'hard to vary'. This must also apply to a unified model, as it claims to explain everything that is observed. See D. Deutsch, *A new way to explain explanation*, video talk at www.ted.org. Cited on pages 160 and 391.

155 L. Bombelli, J. Lee, D. Meyer & R. D. Sorkin, *Space-time as a causal set*, Physical Review Letters **59**, pp. 521–524, 1987. See also the review by J. Henson, *The causal set approach to quantum gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0601121. Cited on pages 161 and 290.

156 D. Finkelstein, *Homotopy approach to quantum gravity*, International Journal of Theoretical Physics **47**, pp. 534–552, 2008. Cited on pages 161 and 290.

157 L. H. Kauffman & S. J. Lomonaco, *Quantum knots*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0403228. See also S. J. Lomonaco & L. H. Kauffman, *Quantum knots and mosaics*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/quant-ph/0805.0339. Cited on page 161.

158 Immanuel Kant, *Critik der reinen Vernunft*, 1781, is a famous but long book that every philospher pretends to have read. In his book, Kant introduced the 'a priori' existence of space and time. Cited on page 163.

159 The literature on circularity is rare. For two interesting exceptions, see L. H. Kauffman, *Knot logic* downloadable from www2.math.uic.edu/~kauffman, and L. H. Kauffman, *Reflexivity and eigenform*, Constructivist Foundations **4**, pp. 121–137, 2009. Cited on page 164.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

160 Information on the belt trick is scattered across many books and few papers. The best source of information on this topic are websites. For belt trick visualizations see www.evl.uic.edu/hypercomplex/html/dirac.html, www.evl.uic.edu/hypercomplex/html/handshake.html, or www.gregegan.net/APPLETS/21/21.html. For an excellent literature summary and more movies, see www.math.utah.edu/~palais/links.html. None of these sites or the cited references seem to mention that there are *many* ways to perform the belt trick; this seems to be hidden knowledge. In September 2009, Greg Egan took up my suggestion and changed his applet to show an additional version of the belt trick. Cited on pages 171 and 173.

161 There is an interesting exploration behind this analogy between a non-dissipative system – a free quantum particle moving in vacuum – and a dissipative system – a macroscopic body drawn through a viscous liquid, say honey. The first question is to discover why this analogy is possible at all. (A careful distinction between the cases with spin 0, spin 1 and spin 1/2 are necessary.) The second question is the exploration of the motion of bodies of general shape in viscous fluids at low Reynolds numbers and under constant force. For the best overview of this question, see the beautiful article by O. Gonzalez, A. B. A. Graf & J. H. Maddocks, *Dynamics of a rigid body in a Stokes fluid*, Journal of Fluid Mechanics **519**, pp. 133–160, 2004. Cited on pages 190 and 348.

Challenge 227 e

162 D. Bohm, R. Schiller & J. Tiomno, *A causal interpretation of the Pauli equation (A)*, Supplementi al Nuovo Cimento **1**, pp. 48 – 66, 1955, and D. Bohm & R. Schiller, *A causal interpretation of the Pauli equation (B)*, Supplementi al Nuovo Cimento **1**, pp. 67–91, 1955. The authors explore an unusual way to interpret the wavefunction, which is of little interest here; but doing so, they give and explore the description of Pauli spinors in terms of Euler angles. Cited on page 193.

163 Richard P. Feynman, *QED – The Strange Theory of Light and Matter*, Princeton University Press 1988. This is one of the best summaries of quantum theory ever written. Every physicist should read it. Cited on pages 194, 199, 211, 217, and 426.

164 A. Aspect, J. Dalibard & G. Roger, *Experimental tests of Bell's inequalities using time-varying analyzers*, Physical Review Letters **49**, pp. 1804–1807, 1982, Cited on page 199.

165 L. Kauffman, *New invariants of knot theory*, American Mathematical Monthly **95**, pp. 195–242, 1987. See also the image at the start of chapter 6 of Louis H. Kauffman, *On Knots*, Princeton University Press, 1987. Cited on page 202.

166 S. Kochen & E. P. Specker, *The problem of hidden variables in quantum mechanics*, **17**, pp. 59–87, 1967. This is a classic paper. Cited on page 197.

167 The details on the speed of photons are explained in any textbook on quantum electrodynamics. The issue is also explained by Feynman in Ref. 163 on page 89. Cited on page 206.

168 J.-M. Lévy-Leblond, *Nonrelativitic particles and wave equations*, Communications in Mathematical Physics **6**, pp. 286–311, 1967. See also A. Galindo & C. Sánchez del Río, *Intrinsic magnetic moment as a nonrelativistic phenomenon*, American Journal of Physics **29**, pp. 582–584, 1961, and V. I. Fushchich, A. G. Nikitin & V. A. Salogub, *On the non-relativistic motion equations in the Hamiltonian form*, Reports on Mathematical Physics **13**, pp. 175–185, 1978. Cited on page 207.

169 L. Lerner, *Derivation of the Dirac equation from a relativistic representation of spin*, European Journal of Phyics **17**, pp. 172–175, 1996. Cited on pages 207 and 209.

170 E. P. Battey-Pratt & T. J. Racey, *Geometric model for fundamental particles*, International Journal of Theoretical Physics **19**, pp. 437–475, 1980. Without knowing this work, C. Schiller had deduced the same results in 2008. Cited on pages 208, 209, and 437.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

171 A. Abraham, *Prinzipien der Dynamik des Elektrons*, Annalen der Physik **10**, pp. 105–179, 1903, J. Frenkel, *Die Elektrodynamik des rotierenden Elektrons*, Zeitschrift für Physik **37**, pp. 243–262, 1926, L. H. Thomas, *The motion of a spinning electron*, Nature April 10, p. 514, 1926, and L. H. Thomas, *The kinematics of an electron with an axis*, Philosophical Magazine **3**, pp. 1–22, 1927. See also W. E. Baylis, *Surprising symmetries in relativistic charge dynamics*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/physics/0410197. See also W. E. Baylis, *Quantum/classical interface: a geometric approach from the classical side*, pp. 127–154 and W. E. Baylis, *Geometry of paravector space with applications to relativistic physics*, pp. 363–387 in *Computational Noncommutative Algebra and Applications*, Proceedings of the NATO Advanced Study Institute, NATO Science Series II, vol. 136, ed. J. Byrnes, Kluwer Academic 2004. W. E. Baylis, R. Cabrera & D. Keselica, *Quantum/classical interface: fermion spin*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0710.3144. D. Hestenes, *Zitterbewegung Modelling*, Foundations of Physics **23**, pp. 365–386, 1993. D. Hestenes, *Zitterbewegung in quantum mechanics – a research program*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0802.2728. See also D. Hestenes, *Reading the electron clock*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0802.3227 and his webpage modelingnts.la.asu.edu/html/GAinQM.html. A. Loinger & A. Sparzani, *Dirac equation without Dirac matrices*, Il Nuovo Cimento **39**, pp. 1140–1145, 1965. D. Bohm, P. Hillion, T. Takabayasi & J. - P. Vigier, *Relativistic rotators and bilocal theory*, Progress of Theoretical Physics **23**, pp. 496–511, 1960. A. Challinor, A. Lasenby, S. Gill & C. Doran, *A relativistic, causal account of a spin measurement*, Physics Letters A **218**, pp. 128–138, 1996. E. Santamato, *The role of Dirac equation in the classical mechanics of the relativistic top*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0808.3237. Cited on pages 210 and 211.

172 The concept of Zitterbewegung was formulated in E. Schrödinger, *Über die kräftefreie Bewegung in der relativistischen Quantenmechanik*, Berliner Berichte pp. 418–428, 1930, and *Zur Quantendynamik des Elektrons*, Berliner Berichte pp. 63–72, 1931. Numerous subsequent papers discuss these publications. Cited on page 211.

173 See for example the book by Martin Rivas, *Kinematic Theory of Spinning Particles*, Springer, 2001. Cited on page 211.

174 The basic papers in the field of stochastic quantization are W. Weizel, *Ableitung der Quantentheorie aus einem klassischen, kausal determinierten Modell*, Zeitschrift für Physik A **134**, pp. 264–285, 1953, W. Weizel, *Ableitung der Quantentheorie aus einem klassischen Modell – II*, Zeitschrift für Physik A **135**, pp. 270–273, 1954, W. Weizel, *Ableitung der quantenmechanischen Wellengleichung des Mehrteilchensystems aus einem klassischen Modell*, Zeitschrift für Physik A **136**, pp. 582–604, 1954. This work was taken up by E. Nelson, *Derivation of the Schrödinger equation from Newtonian mechanics*, Physical Review **150**, pp. 1079–1085, 1969, and in Edward Nelson, *Quantum Fluctuations*, Princeton University Press 1985, also downloadable at www.math.princeton.edu/~nelson/books.html, and the book Edward Nelson, *Stochastic Quantization*, Princeton University Press 1985. See also L. Fritsche & M. Haugk, *A new look at the derivation of the Schrödinger equation from Newtonian mechanics*, Annalen der Physik **12**, pp. 371–402, 2003. A summary of Nelson's approach is also given in F. Markopoulou & L. Smolin, *Quantum theory from quantum gravity*, Physical Review D **70**, p. 124029, 2004, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0311059. See also the important criticism by T. C. Wallstrom, *Inequivalence between the Schrödinger equation and the Madelung hydrodynamic equation*, Physical Review A **49**, pp. 1613–1617, 1994, and T. C. Wallstrom, *The stochastic mechanics of the Pauli equation*, Transactions of the American Mathematical Society **318**, pp. 749–762, 1990. A proposed answer is L. Smolin, *Could quantum mechanics be an approximation to another theory?*, preprint at arxiv.org/quant-ph/abs/0609109. See also S. K. Srinivasan &

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

E. C. G. Sudarshan, *A direct derivation of the Dirac equation via quaternion measures*, Journal of Physics A **29**, pp. 5181–5186, 1996. Cited on page 211.

175 Julian Schwinger, *Quantum Mechanics – Symbolism of Atomic Measurements*, Springer, 2001. Cited on page 214.

176 H. Nikolić, *How (not) to teach Lorentz covariance of the Dirac equation*, European Journal of Physics **35**, p. 035003, 2014, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1309.7070. Cited on page 214.

177 For such an attempt, see the proposal by M. Rainer, *Resolution of simple singularities yielding particle symmetries in space-time*, Journal of Mathematical Physics **35**, pp. 646–655, 1994. Cited on page 217.

178 C. Schiller, *Deducing the three gauge interactions from the three Reidemeister moves*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0905.3905. Cited on pages 217 and 219.

179 G. T. Horowitz & J. Polchinski, *Gauge/gravity duality*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0602037. Note also the statement in the introduction that a graviton might be a composite of two spin-1 bosons, which is somewhat reproduced by the strand model of the graviton. A more concrete approach to gauge–gravity duality is made by M. van Raamsdonk, *Building up spacetime with quantum entanglement*, preprint at arxiv.org/1005.3035. This approach to gauge–gravity duality is close to that of the strand model. Cited on page 219.

180 K. Reidemeister, *Elementare Begründung der Knotentheorie*, Abhandlungen aus dem Mathematischen Seminar der Universität Hamburg **5**, pp. 24–32, 1926. Cited on pages 219 and 267.

181 Sheldon Glashow, confirmed this to the author in an email; Richard Feynman, makes the point in James Gleick, *Genius: The Life and Science of Richard Feynman*, Vintage Books, 1991, page 288 and also in Robert Crease & Charles Mann, *The Second Creation: Makers of the Revolution in Twentieth-Century Physics*, Macmillan Publishing, page 418; Martin Veltman, writes this in his Nobel Prize Lecture, available on www.nobel.org. Cited on page 248.

182 For some of the background on this topic, see F. Wilczek & A. Zee *Appearance of gauge structures in simple dynamical systems*, Physical Review Letters **52**, pp. 2111–2114, 1984, A. Shapere & F. Wilczek, *Self-propulsion at low Reynolds number*, Physical Review Letters **58**, pp. 2051–2054, 1987, and A. Shapere & F. Wilczek, *Gauge kinematics of deformable bodies*, American Journal of Physics **57**, pp. 514–518, 1989. Cited on page 265.

183 R. Britto, F. Cachazo, B. Feng & E. Witten, *Direct proof of tree-level recursion relation in Yang–Mills theory*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0501052. Cited on page 266.

184 D. V. Ahluwalia-Khalilova, *Operational indistinguishability of double special relativity from special relativity*, Classical and Quantum Gravity **22**, pp. 1433–1450, 2005, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0212128; see also N. Jafari & A. Shariati, *Doubly special relativity: a new relativity or not?*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0602075. Cited on page 272.

185 E. Verlinde, *On the origin of gravity and the laws of Newton*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1001.0785. Cited on page 273.

186 G.-L. Lesage, *Lucrèce Newtonien*, Nouveaux mémoires de l'Académie Royale des Sciences et Belles Lettres pp. 404–431, 1747, or www3.bbaw.de/bibliothek/digital/struktur/03-nouv/1782/jpg-0600/00000495.htm. See also en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Le_Sage's_theory_of_gravitation. In fact, the first to propose the idea of gravitation as a result of small particles pushing masses was Nicolas Fatio de Duillier in 1688. Cited on page 274.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

187 G. 't Hooft, *Dimensional reduction in quantum gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/9310026. Many of the ideas of this paper become easier to understand and to argue when the strand model is used. Cited on page 280.

188 S. Carlip, *Logarithmic corrections to black hole entropy from the Cardy formula*, Classical and Quantum Gravity **17**, pp. 4175–4186, 2000, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/gr-qc/0005017. Cited on page 281.

189 On the limit for angular momentum of black holes, see Ref. 34. Cited on page 282.

190 F. Tamburini, C. Cuofano, M. Della Valle & R. Gilmozzi, *No quantum gravity signature from the farthest quasars*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1108.6005. Cited on page 287.

191 B.P. Abbott & al., (LIGO Scientific Collaboration and Virgo Collaboration) *Observation of gravitational waves from a binary black hole merger*, Physical Review Letters **116**, p. 061102, 2016, also available for free download at journals.aps.org/prl/pdf/10.1103/PhysRevLett.116.061102. More about this discovery is told in volume II of the Motion Mountain series. Cited on page 288.

192 On torsion, see the excellent review by R. T. Hammond, *New fields in general relativity*, Contemporary Physics **36**, pp. 103–114, 1995. Cited on page 290.

193 H. Kleinert, & J. Zaanen, *World nematic crystal model of gravity explaining the absence of torsion*, Physics Letters A **324**, pp. 361–365, 2004. Cited on page 290.

194 The analogy between the situation around line defects and general relativity is explained in Ekkehart Kröner, *Kontinuumstheorie der Versetzungen und Eigenspannungen*, Springer, 1958, These ideas have been taken up and pursued by J. D. Eshelby, B. A. Bilby, and many others after them. Cited on page 290.

195 Loop quantum gravity is a vast research field. The complete literature is available at arxiv.org/archive/gr-qc. Cited on page 290.

196 G. 't Hooft, *Crystalline Gravity*, International Journal of Modern Physics A **24**, pp. 3243–3255, 2009, and also G. 't Hooft, *A locally finite model of gravity*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0804.0328. Cited on page 290.

197 L. Susskind, *New concepts for old black holes*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1311.3335, and also reference Ref. 147. Cited on page 291.

198 M. Botta Cantcheff, *Spacetime geometry as statistic ensemble of strings*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1105.3658. Cited on page 291.

199 N. Arkani-Hamed, L. Motl, A. Nicolis & C. Vafa, *The string landscape, black holes and gravity as the weakest force*, preprint at arXiv.org/hep-th/060100. Cited on page 291.

200 M. van Raamsdonk, *Comments on quantum gravity and entanglement*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0907.2939. Cited on page 292.

201 W. H. Zurek & K. S. Thorne, *Statistical mechanical origin of the entropy of a rotating, charged black hole*, Physical Review Letters **54**, pp. 2171–2175, 1985. Cited on page 292.

202 M. Shaposhnikov & C. Wetterich, *Asymptotic safety of gravity and the Higgs boson mass*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0912.0208. Cited on page 293.

203 M. M. Anber & J. F. Donoghue, *On the running of the gravitational constant*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1111.2875. Cited on page 293.

204 C. H. Lineweaver & T. M. Davis, *Misconceptions about the big bang*, Scientific American pp. 36–45, March 2005. Cited on page 296.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

205 Supernova Search Team Collaboration, A.G. Riess & al., *Observational evidence from supernovae for an accelerating universe and a cosmological constant*, Astronomical Journal **116**, pp. 1009–1038, 1998, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/9805201. Cited on page 296.

206 Stephen Hawking & Roger Penrose, *The Nature of Space and Time*, Princeton University Press, 1996. Cited on page 296.

207 C. Balázs & I. Szapudi, *Naturalness of the vacuum energy in holographic theories*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0603133. See also C. Bambi & F. R. Urban, *Natural extension of the generalised uncertainty principle*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0709.1965. The same point is made by D. A. Easson, P. H. Frampton & G. F. Smoot, *Entropic accelerating universe*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1002.4278. Cited on page 298.

208 W. Fischler & L. Susskind, *Holography and Cosmology*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9806039. Cited on page 298.

209 For a review of recent cosmological data, see D. N. Spergel, R. Bean, O. Doré, M. R. Nolta, C. L. Bennett, G. Hinshaw, N. Jarosik, E. Komatsu, L. Page, H. V. Peiris, L. Verde, C. Barnes, M. Halpern, R. S. Hill, A. Kogut, M. Limon, S. S. Meyer, N. Odegard, G. S. Tucker, J. L. Weiland, E. Wollack & E. L. Wright, *Wilkinson Microwave Anisotropy Probe (WMAP) three year results: implications for cosmology*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/0603449. Cited on pages 298 and 299.

210 There is a large body of literature that has explored a time-varying cosmological constant, especially in relation to holography. An example with many references is L. Xu, J. Lu & W. Li, *Time variable cosmological constants from the age of the universe*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0905.4773. Cited on page 298.

211 D. Wiltshire, *Gravitational energy and cosmic acceleration*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0712.3982 and D. Wiltshire, *Dark energy without dark energy*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0712.3984. Cited on page 299.

212 The attribution to Voltaire could not be confirmed. Cited on page 303.

213 V. Crede & C. A. Meyer, *The experimental status of glueballs*, Progress in Particle and Nuclear Physics **63**, pp. 74–116, 2009. Cited on page 314.

214 E. Klempt & A. Zaitsev, *Glueballs, hybrids, multiquarks. Experimental facts versus QCD inspired concepts*, Physics Reports **454**, 2007, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0708.4016. Cited on pages 314 and 333.

215 R. V. Buniy & T. W. Kephart, *A model of glueballs*, preprint at arxiv.org/pdf/hep-ph/0209339; R. V. Buniy & T. W. Kephart, *Universal energy spectrum of tight knots and links in physics*, preprint at arxiv.org/pdf/hep-ph/0408025; R. V. Buniy & T. W. Kephart, *Glueballs and the universal energy spectrum of tight knots and links*, preprint at arxiv.org/pdf/hep-ph/0408027. See also J. P. Ralston, *The Bohr atom of glueballs*, preprint at arxiv.org/pdf/hep-ph/0301089. Cited on page 314.

216 See the one million dollar prize described at www.claymath.org/millennium/Yang-Mills_Theory. Cited on page 315.

217 A. J. Niemi, *Are glueballs knotted closed strings?*, pp. 127–129, in H. Suganuma, N. Ishii, M. Oka, H. Enyo, T. Hatsuda, T. Kunihiro & K. Yazaki editors, *Color confinement and hadrons in quantum chromodynamics*, World Scientific, 2003, preprint at arxiv.org/pdf/hep-th/0312133. See also Y. M. Cho, B. S. Park & P. M. Zhang, *New interpretation of Skyrme theory*, preprint at arxiv.org/pdf/hep-th/0404181; K. Kondo, A. Ono, A. Shibata, T. Shinohara & T. Murakami, *Glueball mass from quantized*

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

knot solitons and gauge-invariant gluon mass, Jornal of Physics A **39**, pp. 13767–13782, 2006, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/0604006. Cited on pages 314 and 334.

218 For a clear review on the topic and the planned experiments, see E. Fiorini, *Measurement of neutrino mass in double beta decay*, Europhysics News **38**, pp. 30–34, 2007, downloadable at www.europhysicsnews.org. Cited on page 318.

219 For example, see the detailed discussion of neutrino properties at pdg.web.cern.ch or, in print, in Ref. 227. Cited on page 318.

220 For a possible third approach, see A. F. Nicholson & D. C. Kennedy, *Electroweak theory without Higgs bosons*, International Journal of Modern Physics A **15**, pp. 1497–1519, 2000, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/9706471. Cited on page 320.

221 M. Veltman, *The Higgs system*, lecture slides at www.nikhef.nl/pub/theory/academiclectures/Higgs.pdf. See also his CERN Yellow Report 97-05, *Reflections on the Higgs system*, 1997, and the paper H. Veltman & M. Veltman, *On the possibility of resonances in longitudinally polarized vector boson scattering*, Acta Physics Polonica B **22**, pp. 669–695, 1991. Cited on page 320.

222 J. W. Moffat & V. T. Thot, *A finite electroweak model without a Higgs particle*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0812.1991. The ideas go back to D. Evens, J. W. Moffat, G. Kleppe & R. P. Woodard, *Nonlocal regularizations of gauge theories*, Physical Review D **43**, pp. 499–519, 1991. For more details on how to introduce non-locality while maintaining current conservation and unitarity, see G. Kleppe & R. P. Woodard, *Non-local Yang-Mills*, Nuclear Physics B **388**, pp. 81–112, 1992, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-th/9203016. For a different approach that postulates no specific origin for the W and Z masses, see J. W. Moffat, *Ultraviolet complete electroweak model without a Higgs particle*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1006.1859. Cited on page 320.

223 H. B. Nielsen & P. Olesen, *A vortex line model for dual strings*, Nuclear Physics B **61**, pp. 45–61, 1973. Cited on pages 324 and 370.

224 B. Andersson, G. Gustafson, G. Ingelman & T. Sjöstrand, *Parton fragmentation and string dynamics*, Physics Reports **97**, pp. 31–145, 1983. Cited on page 324.

225 C. B. Thorn, *Subcritical string and large N QCD*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0809.1085. Cited on page 324.

226 A. J. Buchmann & E. M. Henley, *Intrinsic quadrupole moment of the nucleon*, Physical Review C **63**, p. 015202, 2000. Alfons Buchmann also predicts that the quadrupole moment of the other, strange $J = 1/2$ octet baryons is positive, and predicts a prolate structure for all of them (private communication). For the decuplet baryons, with $J = 3/2$, the quadrupole moment can often be measured spectroscopically, and is always negative. The four Δ baryons are thus predicted to have a negative intrinsic quadrupole moment and thus an oblate shape. This explained in A. J. Buchmann & E. M. Henley, *Quadrupole moments of baryons*, Physical Review D **65**, p. 073017, 2002. For recent updates, see A. J. Buchmann, *Charge form factors and nucleon shape*, pp. 110–125, in C. N. Papanicolas & Aron Bernstein editors, *Shape of Hadrons Workshop Conference*, Athens, Greece, 27-29 April 2006, AIP Conference Proceedings 904. Cited on pages 327 and 331.

227 K. Nakamura & al., *The Review of Particle Physics*, Journal of Physics G **37**, p. 075021, 2010, or pdg.web.cern.ch. Cited on pages 328, 329, 330, 347, 360, 361, 362, 363, 431, and 433.

228 A review on Regge trajectories and Chew-Frautschi plots is W. Drechsler, *Das Regge-Pol-Modell*, Naturwissenschaften **59**, pp. 325–336, 1972. See also the short lecture on courses.washington.edu/phys55x/Physics557_lec11.htm. Cited on page 328.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

229 Kurt Gottfried & Victor F. Weisskopf, *Concepts of Particle Physics*, Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1984. Cited on page 328.

230 G. 't Hooft, G. Isidori, L. Maiani, A. D. Polosa & V. Riquer, *A theory of scalar mesons*, Physics Letters B **662**, pp. 424–430, 2008, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0801.2288. However, other researchers, such as arxiv.org/abs/1404.5673, argue against the tetraquark interpretation. The issue is not closed. Cited on page 333.

231 M. Karliner, *Doubly heavy tetraquarks and baryons*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1401.4058. Cited on page 336.

232 J. Viro & O. Viro, *Configurations of skew lines*, Leningrad Mathematical Journal **1**, pp. 1027–1050, 1990, and updated preprint at arxiv.org/abs/math.GT/0611374. Cited on page 336.

233 W. Thomson, *On vortex motion*, Transactions of the Royal Society in Edinburgh pp. 217–260, 1868. This famous paper stimulated much work on knot theory. Cited on page 336.

234 H. Jehle, *Flux quantization and particle physics*, Physical Review D **6**, pp. 441–457, 1972, and H. Jehle, *Flux quantization and fractional charge of quarks*, Physical Review D **6**, pp. 2147–2177, 1975. Cited on page 337.

235 T. R. Mongan, *A holographic charged preon model*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0801.3670. Cited on page 337.

236 The arguments can be found in A. H. Chamseddine, A. Connes & V. Mukhanov, *Geometry and the quantum: basics*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1411.0977 and in A. H. Chamseddine & A. Connes, *Why the standard model*, Journal of Geometry and Physics **58**, pp. 38–47, 2008, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0706.3688. Cited on page 338.

237 Jacob's rings are shown, for example, in the animation on www.prestidigitascience.fr/index.php?page=anneaux-de-jacob. They are already published in the book by Tom Tit, *La science amusante*, 1870, and the images were reprinted the popular science books by Edi Lammers, and, almost a century later on, even in the mathematics column and in one of the books by Martin Gardner. See also www.lhup.edu/~dsimanek/scenario/toytrick.htm. Cited on page 340.

238 P. Pieranski, S. Przybyl & A. Stasiak, *Tight open knots*, European Physical Journal E **6**, pp. 123–128, 2001, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/physics/0103016. Cited on pages 374 and 437.

239 R. Boughezal, J. B. Tausk & J. J. van der Bij, *Three-loop electroweak corrections to the W-boson mass and* $\sin^2\theta_{\text{eff}}$ *in the large Higgs mass limit*, Nuclear Physics B **725**, pp. 3–14, 2005, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0504092. Cited on page 347.

240 The calculations have been performed in August 2016 by Eric Rawdon. Cited on pages 347 and 349.

241 The calculations have been performed by Eric Rawdon and Maria Fisher. Cited on page 351.

242 The quark masses at Planck energy are due to a private communication by Xing Zhizhong and Zhou Shun. They are calculated following the method presented in *Quark mass hierarchy and flavor mixing puzzles*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/1411.2713 and Zhizhong Xing, He Zhang & Shun Zhou, *Updated values of running quark and lepton masses*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0712.1419. Cited on page 351.

243 See H. Fritzsch, A.D. Özer, *A scaling law for quark masses*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0407308. Cited on page 352.

244 K. A. Meissner & H. Nicolai, *Neutrinos, axions and conformal symmetry*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0803.2814. Cited on pages 352 and 354.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

245 M. Shaposhnikov, *Is there a new physics between electroweak and Planck scale?*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0708.3550. Cited on page 354.

246 Y. Diao, C. Ernst, A. Por & U. Ziegler, *The roplength of knots are almost linear in terms of their crossing numbers*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/0912.3282. Cited on page 357.

247 H. Fritzsch & Z.-Z. Xing, *Lepton mass hierarchy and neutrino mixing*, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/hep-ph/0601104 Cited on page 362.

248 The effects of neutrino mixing, i.e., neutrino oscillations, were measured in numerous experiments from the 1960s onwards; most important were the experiments at Super-Kamiokande in Japan and at the Sudbury Neutrino Observatory in Canada. See Ref. 227. Cited on page 363.

249 M. Fukugita & T. Yanagida, *Baryogenesis without grand unification*, Physics Letters B **174**, pp. 45–47, 1986. Cited on page 364.

250 J. M. Cline, *Baryogenesis*, preprint at axiv.org/abs/0609145. Cited on page 364.

251 Several claims that the coupling constants changed with the age of the universe have appeared in the literature. The first claim was by J. K. Webb, V. V. Flambaum, C. W. Churchill, M. J. Drinkwater & J. D. Barrow, *A search for time variation of the fine structure constant*, Physical Review Letters **82**, pp. 884–887, 1999, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/astro-ph/9803165. None of these claims has been confirmed by subsequent measurements. Cited on page 368.

252 That tight tangles correlate with random tangles was first shown by V. Katritch, J. Bednar, D. Michoud, R. G. Sharein, J. Dubochet & A. Stasiak, *Geometry and physics of knots*, Nature **384**, pp. 142–145, 1996. It was confirmed by E. J. Janse van Rensburg, E. Orlandini, D. W. Sumners, M. C. Tesi & S. G. Whittington, *The writhe of knots in the cubic lattice*, Journal of Knot Theory and its Ramifications **6**, pp. 31–44, 1997. Cited on page 374.

253 The quasi-quantization of writhe was discovered by V. Katritch, J. Bednar, D. Michoud, R. G. Sharein, J. Dubochet & A. Stasiak, *Geometry and physics of knots*, Nature **384**, pp. 142–145, 1996. See also P. Pieranski, *In search of ideal knots*, pp. 20–41, and A. Stasiak, J. Dubochet, V. Katritch & P. Pieranski, *Ideal knots and their relation to the physics of knots*, pp. 1–19, both found in A. Stasiak, V. Katritch & L. H. Kauffman, editors, *Ideal Knots*, World Scientific, 1998. Most pedagogic is P. Pieranski & S. Przybyl, *Quasi-quantization of writhe in ideal knots*, European Physical Journal E **6**, pp. 117–121, 2001, preprint at arxiv.org/abs/physics/0102067. See also C. Cerf & A. Stasiak, *Linear behavior of the writhe versus the number of crossings in rational knots and links*, pp. 111–126, in M. I. Monastyrsky editor, *Topology in Molecular Biology*, 2007. The quasi-quantization, and in particular the lack of precise quantization, was confirmed in 2010 by T. Ashton, J. Cantarella, M. Piatek & E. Rawdon, private communication. Cited on page 374.

254 The probabilities for random orientations have been calculated with the help of Tyler Spaeth and Ronan Lamy, using ideal knot shapes provided by Jason Cantarella. The calculations yield the following relative sizes of regions with different crossing numbers and writhes for the open trefoil and the open figure-eight knot.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Writhe	2	3	4	5
Crossing number				
3	0	0.485	0	0
4	0.00046	0	0.392	0
5	0	0.045	0	0
6	0	0	0.076	0
7	0	0.00022	0	0
8	0	0	0.00011	0
9	0	0.000007	0	0
10	0	0	0.000002	0
11	0	0	0	0.000004
12	0	0	0	0
13	0	0	0	0.000002

These are the probabilities of knot orientations with a given writhe and crossing number for the tight open trefoil knot 3_1. The smaller numbers are expected to be calculation artefacts.

Writhe	- 1	0	1
Crossing number			
4	0	0.561	0
5	0.001	0	0.00083
6	0	0.296	0
7	0.0004	0	0.00065
8	0	0.083	0
9	0.00038	0	0.00038
10	0	0.043	0
11	0.000087	0	0.0001
12	0	0.013	0
13	0	0	0.00004
14	0	0.00008	0
15	0	0	0
16	0	0.000005	0

These are the probabilities of knot orientations with a given writhe and crossing number for the tight open figure-eight knot 4_1. The limits to the precision of the calculation are clearly noticeable.

The lack of precision is due to the lack of precision of the available tight knot shapes. The probabilities for random *changes* in orientation are then deduced from the values in these tables. Because the knots are tight, it is a good approximation to assume that Reidemeister I and Reidemeister II moves can be distinguished without ambiguity – in contrast to the loose knot case, where this is not possible – from the writhe and crossing numbers of the start and end orientation. Cited on page 376.

255 V. Arnold, *Topological Invariants of Plane Curves and Caustics*, American Mathematical Society, 1994. Cited on page 378.

256 D. Hilbert, *Über das Unendliche*, Mathematische Annalen **95**, pp. 161–190, 1925. Cited

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

on page 386.

257 The *Book of Twenty-four Philosophers*, *c.* 1200, is attributed to the god Hermes Trismegistos, but was actually written in the middle ages. The text can be found in F. Hudry, ed., *Liber viginti quattuor philosophorum*, Turnholt, 1997, in the series *Corpus Christianorum, Continuatio Mediaevalis*, CXLIII a, tome III, part 1, of the Hermes Latinus edition project headed by P. Lucentini. There is a Spinozian cheat in the quote: instead of 'nature', the original says 'god'. The reason why this substitution is applicable is given above. Cited on page 391.

Page 408

258 As a disappointing example, see Gilles Deleuze, *Le Pli – Leibniz et le baroque*, Les Editions de Minuit, 1988. In this unintelligible, completely crazy book, the author pretends to investigate the implications of the idea that the *fold* (in French 'le pli') is the basic entity of matter and 'soul'. Cited on page 393.

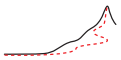
259 Werner Heisenberg, *Der Teil und das Ganze*, Piper, 1969. The text shows well how boring the personal philosophy of an important physicist can be. Cited on page 394.

260 John Barrow wrote to the author saying that he might have been the first to have used the T-shirt image, in the 1988 Gifford Lectures at Glasgow that were a precursor to his book John D. Barrow, *Theories of Everything: The Quest for Ultimate Explanation*, 1991. He added that one can never be sure, though. Cited on page 396.

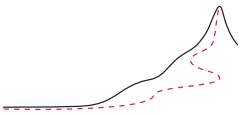
261 René Descartes, *Discours de la méthode*, 1637. He used and discussed the sentence again in his *Méditations métaphysiques* 1641, and in his *Les principes de la philosophie* 1644. These books influenced many thinkers in the subsequent centuries. Cited on page 399.

262 D. D. Kelly, *Sleep and dreaming*, in *Principles of Neural Science*, Elsevier, New York, 1991. The paper summarises experiments made on numerous humans and shows that even during dreams, people's estimate of time duration corresponds to that measured by clocks. Cited on page 399.

263 Astrid Lindgren said this in 1977, in her speech at the fiftieth anniversary of Oetinger Verlag, her German publisher. The German original is: 'Alles was an Großem in der Welt geschah, vollzog sich zuerst in der Phantasie eines Menschen, und wie die Welt von morgen aussehen wird, hängt in großem Maß von der Einbildungskraft jener ab, die gerade jetzt lesen lernen.' The statement is found in Astrid Lindgren, *Deshalb brauchen Kinder Bücher*, Oetinger Almanach Nr. 15, p. 14, 1977. Cited on page 402.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



CREDITS

Acknowledgments

This volume was first published in 2009. Until 2014, no other person helped developing or exploring the strand model. In 2014, Sergei Fadeev suggested to rethink the strand models for the W and Z bosons. The results of this improvement were first included in 2015, in edition 28. His suggestion triggered many improvements, including a much clearer relation between the three Reidemeister moves and the intermediate gauge bosons of the three gauge interactions. The calculation of the fine structure constant became more involved, but is still possible.

A few other people helped to achieve progress on specific issues or provided encouragement. In the first half of the text, stimulating discussions in the 1990s with Luca Bombelli helped structuring the chapter on the contradictions between general relativity and quantum theory, as well as the chapter on the difference between vacuum and matter. In the years up to 2005, stimulating discussions with Saverio Pascazio, Corrado Massa and especially Steven Carlip helped shaping the chapter on limit values.

The second half of the text, on the strand model, owes much to Louis Kauffman. The ideas found in his books and in his papers inspired the ideas of this text long before we met and exchanged mails. His papers – available on www2.math.uic.edu/~kauffman – and his books are all worth reading; among them is the fascinating paper *Knot Logic* and the wonderful book *Knots and Physics*, World Scientific, 1991. His ideas on knots, on quantum theory, on measurement, on particle physics, on set theory and on foundational issues convinced me that strands are a promising direction in the search for a final theory. The breadth of Louis's knowledge and interests, the depth of his passion and his warm humanity are exemplary.

I thank Eric Rawdon and Maria Fisher for their ropelength calculations. I also thank Claus Ernst, Andrzej Stasiak, Ralf Metzler and Jason Cantarella for their input and the fruitful discussions we had.

Hans Aschauer, Roland Netz, Gerrit Bauer, Stephan Schiller, Richard Hoffmann, Axel Schenzle, Reinhard Winterhoff, Alden Mead, Franca Jones-Clerici, Damoon Saghian, Frank Sweetser, Franz Aichinger, Marcus Platzer, Miles Mutka, and a few people who want to remain anonymous provided valuable help. My parents, Isabella and Peter Schiller, strongly supported the project. I thank my mathematics and physics teachers in secondary school, Helmut Wunderling, for the fire he has nurtured inside me.

The typesetting and book design is due to the professional consulting of Ulrich Dirr. The typography was much improved with the help of Johannes Küster and his Minion Math font. The design of the book and its website also owe much to the suggestions and support of my wife Britta.

I also thank the lawmakers and the taxpayers in Germany, who, in contrast to most other countries in the world, allow residents to use the local university libraries.

From 2007 to 2011, the electronic edition and distribution of the Motion Mountain text was generously supported by the Klaus Tschira Foundation.

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Film credits

The animations of the belt trick on page 171 are copyright and courtesy of Greg Egan; they can be found on his website www.gregegan.net/APPLETS/21/21.html. I am also grateful to Greg Egan for expanding his applet so as to show a second option out of the many possible ones for the belt trick.

The beautiful animation of the belt trick on page 172 and the wonderful and so-far unique animation of the fermion exchange on page 177 are copyright and courtesy of Antonio Martos. He made them for this text. They can be found at vimeo.com/62228139 and vimeo.com/62143283.

The animation of the rotating blue ball attached to a sheet on page 173 was made for this book and is part of the software found at www.ariwatch.com/VS/Algorithms/DiracStringTrick.htm.

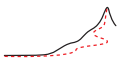
The colourful animations of the belt trick with many tails on page 174 and page 175 are copyright and courtesy of Jason Hise at www.entropygames.net, and were made for this text and for the Wikimedia Commons website.

The film of the chain ring trick on page 340 is copyright and courtesy of Franz Aichinger.

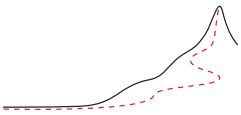
Greg Egan's animations and the film of the falling chain ring trick were included into the pdf file with the help of a copy of the iShowU software sponsored by Neil Clayton from www.shinywhitebox.com.

Image credits

The photograph of the east side of the Langtang Lirung peak in the Nepalese Himalayas, shown on the front cover, is courtesy and copyright by Kevin Hite and found on his blog thegettingthere.com. The photograph of the Ultra Deep Field project on page 15 is courtesy of NASA. The drawing by Maurits Escher on page 60 is copyright by the M.C. Escher Heirs, c/o Cordon Art, Baarn, The Netherlands, who kindly gave permission for its use. The passport photograph of Andrei Sakharov on page 75 is copyright by himself. The photograph of an apheresis machine on page 174 is courtesy of Wikimedia. The drawing by Peter Battey-Pratt and Thomas Racey of the belt trick on page 208, taken from Ref. 170, is courtesy and copyright by Springer Verlag. The images of the tight open knots on page 374 are courtesy and copyright by Piotr Pieranski, and found in Ref. 238. The graph of the running coupling constants on page 366 is courtesy and copyright by Wim de Boer and taken from his home page at www-ekp.physik.uni-karlsruhe.de/~deboer. On page 395, the photograph of Cerro Torre is copyright and courtesy of Davide Brighenti, and found on Wikimedia; the photograph of the green hill on the same page is copyright and courtesy of Myriam70, and found on her site www.flickr.com/photos/myriam70. The photograph on the back cover, of a basilisk running over water, is courtesy and copyright by the Belgian group TERRA vzw and found on their website www.terravzw.org. All drawings are copyright by Christoph Schiller.



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net



NAME INDEX

A
Abbott, B.P. 429
Abdalla, M.C.B. 422
Abdo, A.A. 420
Abraham, A. 426
Adams, Douglas 103
Adler, R.J. 418
Ahluwalia, D.V. 418, 428
Aichinger, Franz 340, 436, 437
Akama, K. 420
Alexandrov, P.S. 422
Ali, A. 421
Allen, Woody 399
Aloisio, R. 420
Alvarez, E. 424
Amati, D. 418
Amelino-Camelia, G. 415, 420, 421
Anaxagoras of Clazimenes
  on unification 392
Anber, M.M. 429
Andersson, B. 431
Antonio Martos 177
Argyres, P.C. 422
Aristotle 162, 163, 422
  on learning 403
  on points 118
  on vacuum 81
Arkani-Hamed, N. 429
Arnold, V. 434
Aschauer, Hans 436
Ashtekar, A. 416
Ashton, T. 433
Aspect, A. 426
Aspinwall, P. 418
Augustine of Hippo 408
Avrin, Jack 424
  on particles as Moebius bands 337

B
Balachandran, A.P. 417
Balázs, C. 430
Bambi, C. 430
Barnes, C. 430
Baron, J. 420
Barrow, J.D. 433
Barrow, John D. 435
Bateman, H. 414
Battey-Pratt, Peter 426, 437
Bauer, Gerrit 436
Baylis, W.E. 427
Bean, R. 430
Bednar, J. 433
Beenakker, C.W.J. 416
Beig, R. 415
Bekenstein, Jacob 416, 418
  on the entropy bound 128
Bennett, C.L. 430
Berlin, Isaiah 135
Bernreuther, W. 419
Bernstein, Aron 431
Berry, M.V. 423
Besso, Michele 66
Bianchi, E. 417
Bianco, C.L. 416
Bij, J.J. van der 432
Bilby, B.A. 429
Bilson-Thompson, Sundance 424
  on particles as triple ribbons 337
Bimonte, G. 417
Blair, D.G. 415
Blandford, R. 414
Boer, Wim de 366, 437
Bohm, David 422, 423, 426, 427
  on entanglement 199
  on wholeness 103
Bohr, Niels 414
  on minimum action 27
  on thermodynamic indeterminacy 29
Bombelli, Luca 290, 419, 423, 425, 436
Bonner, Yelena 76
Botta Cantcheff, Marcelo 429
  on fluctuating strings 291
Boughezal, R. 432
Bousso, R. 416
Brighenti, Davide 395, 437
Brightwell, G. 419
Britto, R. 428
Brown, Stuart 414
Buchmann, A.J. 431
Buchmann, Alfons 431
Buniy, R.V. 430
Byrnes, J. 427

C
Cabibbo, Nicola 360
Cabrera, R. 427
Cachazo, F. 428
Cadavid, A.C. 424
Cantarella, Jason 377, 433, 436
Carlip, Steven 425, 429, 436
  on fluctuating lines 157, 291
Cerf, C. 433
Challinor, A. 427
Chamseddine, A.H. 432

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

C
CHEN

Chen, B. 416
Cho, Y.M. 430
Christ, N.H. 419
Christiansen, W.A. 420
Churchill, C.W. 433
Ciafaloni, M. 418
Cicero, Marcus Tullius
life 102
Clay Mathematics Institute 315
Clayton, Neil 437
Cline, J.M. 433
CODATA 413
Conde, J. 424
Connes, A. 432
Connes, Alain 338
Cordon Art 437
Coule, D.H. 420
Crease, Robert 428
Crede, V. 430
Cuofano, C. 429

D
Dalibard, J. 426
Dam, H. van 90, 416, 420, 421
Dante Alighieri
on the basic knot 389
Das, A. 419
Davis, T.M. 429
Dehmelt, Hans 420
Deleuze, Gilles 435
Della Valle, M. 429
Democritus
on learning 403
on particles and vacuum 124
Descartes, René 399, 435
Deutsch, David 156, 425
on explanations 160
DeWitt, B.S. 417
DeWitt, C. 417
Diao, Y. 433
Diner, S. 417
Dirac, Paul 209
on unification 21
Dirr, Ulrich 436
DiSessa, A. 414
Donoghue, J.F. 429
Doplicher, S. 418
Doran, C. 427
Doré, O. 430
Douglas, M.R. 425
Drechsler, W. 431
Drinkwater, M.J. 433
Dubochet, J. 433
Dumont, Jean-Paul 422
Dällenbach, Werner 67
Dürrenmatt, Friedrich 413

E
Easson, D.A. 430
Eddington, Arthur 423
on particle number 124
Egan, Greg 171, 426, 437
Ehlers, Jürgen 417
on point particles 56
Ehrenfest, Paul
on spinors 193
Ehrenreich, H. 416
Einstein, Albert
last published words 84
on continuity 84
on dropping the continuum 66, 67, 83
on gods 413
on his deathbed 37
on mathematics 104
on modifying general relativity 159
on thinking 54
on ultimate entities 67
on unification 21
Ellis, G.F.R. 421
Ellis, J. 421
Enyo, H. 430
Ernst, Claus 224, 433, 436
Escher, Maurits 437
Heirs 60
illustrating circularity 59
Eshelby, J.D. 429
Euclid
on points 69
Evens, D. 431

F
Facchi, P. 422
Fadeev, Sergei 244, 436
Fatio de Duillier, Nicolas 428
Faust 107
Feng, B. 428
Feynman, Richard 248, 417, 425, 426, 428
on many-particle wave functions 199
Finkelstein, David 72, 290, 419, 425
Finkelstein, Robert 424
on fermions as knots 337
Fiorini, E. 431
Fischler, W. 430
Fisher, Maria 351, 432, 436
Flambaum, V.V. 433
Flint, H.T. 419
Frampton, P.H. 430
Fredenhagen, K. 418
Fredriksson, S. 419
Frenkel, J. 427
Friedberg, R. 419
Friedman, J.L. 417
Fritsche, L. 427
Fritzsch, H. 419, 432, 433
Fukugita, M. 433
Fushchich, V.I. 426

G
Gadelka, A.L. 422
Gaessler, W. 420
Galante, A. 420
Galindo, A. 426
Garay, L. 418, 421
Gardner, Martin 432
Garret, Don 421
Gehrels, N. 414
Gell-Mann, Murray
on strings 139
Gennes, Pierre-Gilles de 423
Gibbons, Gary 414, 415
Gibbs, Phil 418, 423
on event symmetry 81, 125
Gill, S. 427
Gilmozzi, R. 429
Glashow, Sheldon 248, 425, 428
Gleick, James 428
Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von
on searching 107
Gonzalez, O. 426

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

G

GOTTFRIED

Gottfried, Kurt 432
Graf, A.B.A. 426
Green, M.B. 424
Greene, Brian 416, 425
  on popularization 51
  on superstrings 136
Gregori, Andrea 423
  on particle mass 133
Gregory, R. 419
Grillo, A.F. 420
Gross, D.J. 418
Gunzig, E. 417
Gustafson, G. 431

H

Hackett, J. 424
Halpern, M. 430
Hammond, R.T. 429
Harari, H. 419
Hartle, J.B. 423
Hatsuda, T. 430
Hattori, T. 420
Haugk, M. 427
Hawking, Stephen 418, 421, 423, 430
Heath, T. 419
Hegel, Friedrich 139
Heisenberg, Werner 417, 435
  on symmetry 394
  on thermodynamic indeterminacy 29
  on unification 21
Hellund, E.J. 419
Henley, E.M. 431
Henson, J. 425
Hermes Trismegistos 391, 435
Hernandez, L. 424
Hestenes, D. 427
Higgs, Peter 321
Hilbert, David 434
  famous mathematical problems 105
  his credo 139
  on infinity 386
  on unification 21
Hilborn, R.C. 423
Hildebrandt, Dieter
  life 213
Hiley, B.J. 422
Hill, E.L. 419
Hill, R.S. 430
Hillion, P. 427
Hillman, L. 420
Hinshaw, G. 430
Hise, Jason 174, 175, 437
Hite, Kevin 437
Hoffer, Eric 64
Hoffmann, Richard 436
Hohm, U. 416
Honner, John 414
't Hooft, Gerard 72, 290, 419, 421, 429, 432
Hooke, Robert 274
Horowitz, G.T. 423, 425, 428
Hudry, F. 435

I

Illy, József 419
Ingelman, G. 431
Inverno, Ray d' 415
Ishii, N. 430
Isidori, G. 432

J

Jacobson, T. 32, 415
Jaekel, M.-T. 415, 418
Jafari, N. 428
Jammer, Max 414
Janssen, Michel 419
Jarlskog, Cecilia 362
Jarosik, N. 430
Jauch, W. 81, 420
Jehle, Herbert 432
  on particles as knots 337
Johnson, Samuel 413
Jones-Clerici, Franca 436
Ju, L. 415

K

Kaluza, Theodor
  on unification 21
Kant, Immanuel 163, 425
Karliner, M. 422, 432
Karliner, Marek 336
Karolyhazy, F. 421
Katritch, V. 433
Katsuura, K. 420
Kauffman, Louis 424–426, 433, 436
  on commutation relations 202
Kelly, D.D. 435
Kempf, Achim 416, 418
Kennard, E.H. 417
Kennedy, D.C. 431
Kephart, T.W. 430
Keselica, D. 427
Klaus Tschira Foundation 436
Klebanov, I. 422
Kleinert, Hagen 290, 429
Klempt, E. 430
Kleppe, G. 431
Knox, A.J. 419
Kochen, S. 426
Kogut, A. 430
Komatsu, E. 430
Kondo, K. 430
Konishi, K. 418
Kostro, L. 415
Kostro, Ludwik 414
Koul, R.K. 423
Kovtun, P. 416
Kramer, M. 415
Kreimer, Dirk 424
  on knots in QED 135
Kronecker, Leopold
  life 104
Kröner, Ekkehart 290, 429
Kunihiro, T. 430
Küster, Johannes 436

L

Lammers, Edi 432
Lamy, Ronan 433
Lange, B. 415
Lao Tse
  on motion 393, 401
Lasenby, A. 427
Laughlin, Robert 413
Laërtius, Diogenes 423
Lee Tsung Dao 241, 419
Lee, J. 419, 423, 425
Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm 393, 422
  on parts 105
  on relations in nature 296
Leighton, Robert B. 417

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

L

LENIN

Lenin (Vladimir Ilyich Ulyanov) 79
Lerner, L. 426
Lesage, Georges-Louis 428
  on universal gravitation 274
Li, W. 430
Li, Y-Q. 416
Lichtenberg, Georg Christoph
  on truth 24
Lieu, R. 420
Limon, M. 430
Lindgren, Astrid 402, 435
Lineweaver, C.H. 429
Lith-van Dis, J. van 414
Lloyd, Seth 422
  on information 104
Loinger, A. 427
Loll, R. 418
Lomonaco, S.J. 425
Loren, Sophia
  on everything 344
Lorentz, Hendrik Antoon 414
  on the speed limit 26
Lu, J. 430
Lucentini, P. 435
Lucrece, in full Titus Lucretius Carus 422
Luzio, E. 420
Lévy-Leblond, J.-M. 426

M

Maddocks, J.H. 426
Maddox, John 423
  life 423
Maggiore, M. 418
Magueijo, J. 420
Maiani, L. 432
Maimonides 62
Majid, S. 423
Major, S.A. 424
Maldacena, J. 424
Mandelbaum, G. 419
Mann, Charles 428
Markopoulou, F. 424, 427
Marmo, G. 417
Marsden, Jerry 265
Martos, Antonio 172, 437
Marx, Groucho
  on principles 37
Massa, Corrado 414, 415, 436
Mavromatos, N.E. 421, 423
Mead, Alden 265, 415, 436
Meissner, K.A. 432
Mende, P.F. 418, 423
Mende, Paul
  on extension checks 134
Metzler, Ralf 436
Meyer, C.A. 430
Meyer, D. 419, 425
Meyer, S.S. 430
Michoud, D. 433
Mills, Robert 241
Misner, C.W. 415, 417
Moffat, J.W. 431
Mohr, P.J. 413
Monastyrsky, M.I. 433
Mongan, Tom 432
  on particles as tangles 337
Montonen, C. 422
Motl, L. 429
Mukhanov, V. 432
Murakami, T. 430
Mutka, Miles 436
Myriam7o 395, 437
Méndez, F. 420

N

Nakamura, K. 431
Nanopoulos, D.V. 421
NASA 16, 437
Nelson, Edward 427
Netz, Roland 436
Newell, D.B. 413
Newton, Isaac 274
Ng Sze Kui 337, 424
Ng, Y.J. 90, 416, 420, 421
Nicholson, A.F. 431
Nicolai, H. 432
Nicolis, A. 429
Nielsen, H.B. 431
Niemi, A.J. 430
Nikitin, A.G. 426
Nikolić, H. 428
Nikolić, Hrvoje 214
Nolta, M.R. 430

O

Occam, William of 124
Odegard, N. 430
Ohanian, Hans 416
Oka, M. 430
Olesen, P. 431
Olive, D. 422
Ono, A. 430
Oppenheimer, J. 418
Orlandini, E. 433
Özer, A.D. 432

P

Padmanabhan, T. 417
Paffuti, G. 418
Page, L. 430
Papanicolas, C.N. 431
Park, B.S. 430
Parmenides 125
Pascazio, Saverio 422, 436
Pati, J.C. 419
Pauli, Wolfgang
  on gauge theory 241
Peiris, H.V. 430
Penrose, Roger 430
Peres, A. 419
Phaedrus 403
Piatek, M. 433
Pieranski, Piotr 374, 432, 433, 437
Piran, T. 421
Pittacus 115
Planck, M. 422
Plato 91, 423
  on love 403
  on nature's unity 125
Platzer, Marcus 436
Plotinus 408
Polchinski, J. 423, 425, 428
Polosa, A.D. 432
Pontecorvo, Bruno 363
Por, A. 433
Preparata, G. 416
Provero, P. 418
Przybyl, S. 432, 433

R

Raamsdonk, Mark van 292, 428, 429

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

R

RACEY

Racey, Thomas 426, 437
Ragazzoni, R. 420
Rainer, M. 428
Ralston, J.P. 430
Ramsauer, Carl
  life 391
Ramsey, N.F. 419
Randjbar-Daemi, S. 421
Rawdon, Eric 351, 432, 433, 436
Raymer, Michael 418
  on the indeterminacy relation 62
Reidemeister, Kurt 428
  on knot deformations 219, 267
Renaud, S. 415, 418
Rensburg, E.J. Janse van 433
Reznik, B. 418
Richter, Burton 425
Riemann, Bernhard
  on geometry 36
Riess, A.G. 430
Rindler, Wolfgang 415, 416
Riquer, V. 432
Rivas, Martin 427
Robbins, J.M. 423
Roberts, J.E. 418
Roger, G. 426
Rosen, N. 419
Rosenfeld, L. 100, 421
Rothman, T. 421
Rovelli, C. 417, 418
Ruffini, Remo 416
Rutherford, Ernest 142

S

Sabbata, V. de 415
Sabbata, Venzo de 414
Sagan, Carl 421
Saghian, Damoon 436
Sakar, S. 421
Sakharov, Andrei 416
  life 76
  on matter constituents 118
  on maximum particle mass 38
  on minimum length 41
  portrait 75
Salam, Abdus 419
  on unification 21
Salecker, H. 111, 418
Salogub, V.A. 426
Sanchez, N.G. 423
Sands, Matthew 417
Santamato, E. 427
Santiago, D.I. 418
Schaefer, B.E. 420
Schenzle, Axel 436
Schild, A. 419
Schiller, Britta 436
Schiller, Christoph 414, 415, 417, 428, 437
Schiller, Isabella 436
Schiller, Peter 436
Schiller, R. 426
Schiller, Stephan 436
Schoen, R.M. 415
Schrödinger, Erwin 427
  on thinking 113
Schulmann, Robert 419
Schulz, Charles 132
Schwarz, J.H. 422, 424
Schwinger, Julian 233, 428
Schön, M. 417
Sen, A. 424
Seneca, Lucius Annaeus 397
Shakespeare, William 121, 136, 385
Shalyt-Margolin, A.E. 414
Shapere, Alfred 265, 428
Shaposhnikov, M. 429, 433
Shaposhnikov, Mikhail 293
Sharein, R.G. 433
Shariati, A. 428
Shibata, A. 430
Shinohara, T. 430
Shupe, M.A. 419
Simoni, A. 417
Simplicius 422
Simplicius of Cilicia 121
Sivaram, C. 414, 415
Sjöstrand, T. 431
Slavnov, A.A. 424
Smolin, L. 415, 418, 420, 421, 424, 427
Smoot, G.F. 430
Snyder, H.S. 419
Socrates 403
Son, D.T. 416
Sorabji, R. 419
Sorkin, R.D. 417, 419, 423, 425
Spaeth, Tyler 433
Sparzani, A. 427
Specker, E.P. 426
Spergel, D.N. 430
Spinoza, Baruch 393, 421
Springer Verlag 208, 437
Srinivasan, S.K. 427
Stachel, John J. 419
Stanhope, Philip 388
Starinets, A.O. 416
Stasiak, Andrzej 432, 433, 436
Stewart, Ian 419
Stone, Michael 424
Strominger, A. 423
Sudarshan, E.C.G. 428
Suganuma, H. 430
Sumners, D.W. 433
Supernova Search Team Collaboration 430
Susskind, L. 429
Susskind, Leonard 291, 421, 422, 425, 430
  on Planck scale scattering 114
Suzuki, M. 419
Sweetser, Frank 436
Szapudi, I. 430
Szilard, Leo 414
  on minimum entropy 29
Sánchez del Río, C. 426

T

Takabayasi, T. 427
Tamburini, F. 429
Tanaka, K. 419
Tausk, J.B. 432
Taylor, B.N. 413
Taylor, Gareth 172
Terence, in full Publius Terentius Afer
  life 112
Tesi, M.C. 433
Thales of Miletus 385
Thomas Aquinas 408
Thomas, L.H. 427

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

Thomson–Kelvin, William 432
on atoms as knotted vortices 336
Thorn, C.B. 431
Thorne, K.S. 415, 417, 429
Thot, V.T. 431
Tillich, Paul 87
Tino, G.M. 423
Tiomno, J. 426
Tit, Tom 432
Townsend, P.K. 415
Treder, H.-J. 421
Tregubovich, A.Ya. 414
Tschira, Klaus 436
Tucker, G.S. 430
Turatto, M. 420
Turnbull, D. 416

U
Uffink, J. 414
Uglum, J. 422
Unruh, W.G. 418, 420
Urban, F.R. 430

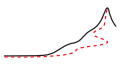
V
Vafa, C. 423, 429
Vancea, I.V. 422
Veltman, H. 431
Veltman, Martin 248, 425, 428, 431
Veneziano, G. 418
Verde, L. 430
Verlinde, Erik 428
on universal gravitation 273
Vigier, J.-P. 427
Viro, Julia 336, 432
Viro, Oleg 336, 432
Voltaire
life 303

W
Wald, R.M. 420
Wallstrom, T.C. 427
Wan, Y. 424
Webb, J.K. 433
Weber, G. 423
Weiland, J.L. 430
Weinberg, Steven 100, 413, 417, 425
on unification 21
Weis, A. 419
Weisskopf, Victor F. 432
Weizel, W. 427
Wen, X.-G. 424
Wetterich, C. 429
Wetterich, Christof 293
Wheeler, John A. 153, 155, 287, 415, 417
life 56
on nature's principles 390
on topology change 56
on unification 21
Whittington, S.G. 433
Wigner, Eugene 111, 417, 418
Wikimedia 174, 437
Wilczek, Frank 265, 415, 425, 428
Wilde, Oscar 89, 90
life 88
Wiles, Andrew
on research 395
William of Occam 124
Wiltshire, D. 299, 430
Winterberg, F. 422
Winterhoff, Reinhard 436
Witten, Edward 424, 425, 428
on duality 134
on infinities 137
on unification 21
Woit, Peter 425
Wolf, C. 420
Wolf, E. 422
Wolff, Barbara 419
Wollack, E. 430
Woodard, R.P. 421, 431
Wright, E.L. 430
Wunderling, Helmut 436
Wussing, H. 422

X
Xing Zhi-zhong 432
Xing, Z.-Z. 433
Xing, Zhi-zhong 432
Xu, L. 430
Xue, S.-S. 416

Y
Yanagida, T. 433
Yandell, Ben H. 422
Yang Chen Ning 241
Yazaki, K. 430

Z
Zaanen, J. 429
Zaitsev, A. 430
Zee, A. 428
Zeh, H.D. 420
Zeno of Elea 68, 116, 118, 125, 213
on motion as an illusion 402
on size 121
Zhang, He 432
Zhang, P.M. 430
Zhao, C. 415
Zhou Shun 432
Zhou, Shun 432
Ziegler, U. 433
Zimmerman, E.J. 111, 418
Zurek, W.H. 429
Zwiebach, B. 424



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

SUBJECT INDEX

Numbers

3
omnipresence in the standard model 342

A

acceleration
indeterminacy 27
upper limit, or Planck 35
accelerator, Planck 80
accuracy, maximum 91
action
as fundamental quantity 386
defined with strands 154, 203
is change 25
lower limit 27–28
no lower limit for virtual particles 38
principle of least 202
upper limit 44
action, quantum of, $\hbar$
as lower limit 35
from strands 146
ignored by relativity 55–56
lower limit 27–28
physics and 7
Planck scales and 58–59
quantum theory implied by 17, 27
addition
of states 184
addition of states 183
ADM mass 100
AdS/CFT correspondence 219
aether
useless 68, 153
vortices in 336
amoeba and nature 126–127, 165
Anaxagoras of Clazimenes
on unification 392
angle
weak mixing 348
angular frequency
upper limit, or Planck 35
angular momentum
limit for black holes 282
lower limit and spin 39
upper limit 44
anomaly issue 137, 337
anti-twister mechanism 175
antimatter
belt trick and 173
indistinguishability from matter 51, 75, 101
antiparticle *see* antimatter
apheresis machine 174
illustration of 174
aphorism, a physical 111
apple counting 104
area
lower limit, or Planck 35
argument
encouraging 21
Aristotle
on learning 403
on points 118
on vacuum 81
arrow
Feynman's rotating 211
Zeno's flying 118, 213
Aspect experiment 199
asymptotic safety 293
atoms 113
averaging of strands 181
Avrin, Jack
on particles as Moebius bands 337
axioms
in a final theory 144
in physics 105, 162–164
axion 266

B

background
continuous 150
dependence 144
differs from physical space 275, 277
illustration of 163
independence 164
space 201, 277
space-time 162
Balinese candle dance 171
ball
tethered 355
Banach–Tarski
paradox/theorem 68, 70
band models 136, 161
Barbero–Immirzi parameter 280
bare quantity 232
baryogenesis 364
baryon
density in universe 299
form factor 331
masses 328
number 305
number conservation 244,

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

B

BATH

260, 305
number limit 300
number of leptons 318
number of quarks 310
observed number of 18, 98, 158
quadrupole moment 431
Regge trajectories 328
shape 331
spin 324
strand illustration of 332–334
strand model of 289, 331–333
bath
gluon 262
measurement and 194
perfect 81
photon 223
vacuum as a 151
weak boson 239
beauty
in physics 54
of strands 390
symmetry is not 394
beginning of time 89
Bekenstein's entropy bound 42, 45–47, 282
Bekenstein, Jacob
on the entropy bound 128
beliefs
about unification 21
in finitude 388
Occam and 124
belt trick 257
and Dirac equation 209
antimatter and 173
Dirac equation and 207–212
illustration of 208
fermions and 320
illustration of 170
parity violation and 173, 240
particle mass and 190, 350, 352
phase and 191
quantum theory and 215
saving lives 174
space-time symmetries and 219
spin 1/2 and 169–175
spin and 131
SU(2) and 238–241
torsion and 290
two options 173
wheels and 214
with 96 tails 175
beta decay, neutrinoless double 318
big bang
creation and 393
distance in time 90
initial conditions and 133
lack of 144
not a singularity 98
not an event 89
precision and 51
size of 96
strand illustration of 297
strands and the 296–297
Bilson-Thompson, Sundance
on particles as triple ribbons 337
biology 164
black hole
see also Schwarzschild radius
as size limit 34
as smallest systems 37
cannot have Planck mass 292, 354
charge limit 282
charged 40
clock limits and 62
definition 30
entropy 127, 279–281
strand illustration of 279
entropy limit 45–46
evaporation 41, 44, 282
falling into a 291
limits 282
lower power limit 45
lower temperature limit 48
magnetic field limit and 43
mass 278
maximum force and 30, 31, 40, 41
microstates 279
no microscopic 292, 354
radiation 281
Schwarzschild 30
shape of 283
size limit 34
sphericity of 283
strand definition 277
universe as inverted 296
universe lifetime and 50
upper power limit 41
blood platelets 174
blurring of tangle 180, 189
Bohm, David
on entanglement 199
on wholeness 103
Bohr, Niels
on minimum action 27
on thermodynamic indeterminacy 29
Bohr–Einstein discussion 28
Boltzmann constant k 29, 146
physics and 7
book
perfect, on physics 106
boost *see* Lorentz boost
border of space 149
Bose–Einstein condensates 48
boson
mass 346
bosonization 135
bosons
as radiation particles 17
definition 169
gauge 306
illustration of 178
illustration of exchange 178
in millennium description 17
masses of W and Z 346
none at Planck scales 75
strand model 178
weak gauge 241
weak intermediate 241
Botta Cantcheff, Marcelo
on fluctuating strings 291
bound *see* limit
boundary
of objects 114

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

of point particles 115
of space 97
boxes, limits to 113
braid 130
braid symmetry 130
braiding 338
and mass 341
and mass 356
braiding of tails 361, 362
braiding of tails, and mass 353
brain, and circularity 164
breaking of SU(2) 243
Broglie, de, wavelength
lower limit 65
bucket experiment, resolution 213

B
BOXES

C
Cabibbo angle 360
calculations
non-perturbative 231
perturbative 231
Calugareanu's theorem 375, 406
capacitors 43
capacity
indeterminacy of 43
Carlip, Steven
on fluctuating lines 157, 291
Casimir effect 55
catechism, catholic 408
categories 103
centre of group 253
Cerro Torre 396
chain
film of falling ring 340
illustration of falling ring 339
chain ring trick 340
challenge
classification 8
change
is action 25
nature minimizes 25, 386
charge
see also electromagnetism
conjugation 235
electric 223
electric, from strands 148
elementary *e*, physics and 7
fractional 43
limit for black holes 282
magnetic, no 225
quantization 370
unit, electric 369
weak 239–241
illustration of 240
chirality 224, 369
circularity
contradictions and 108
fundamental 162–164, 182
in classical physics 57
resolution 213
in modern physics 59
in physics 106
resolution 125
classical gravitation 33–34, 272
classicality
of measurement apparatus 194
climbing
a green hill 396
Motion Mountain 396
symbolism of 398
clocks
limits and Planck time 62–64
CODATA 413
cogito ergo sum 399
Coleman–Mandula theorem 266
collapse of wave function 196
colour charge 262, 263
strand illustration of 312
three types 263
colours in nature, origin of 17, 401
complex numbers 265
compositeness and strand number 335
Compton wavelength
as displacement limit 28
elementarity and 73, 75
final theory and 143
lower limit 65
mass and vacuum 121
particle rotation and 274
quantum effects and 58–59, 103, 211
table with examples 58
upper limit 49
vacuum and 78
computer
nature is not a 388
conditions
initial, of universe 98, 296
confinement 312
conformal invariance 137
conjecture, no avail 292
consciousness
and final theory 20
constant
cosmological *see* cosmological constant
coupling *see* coupling constant
constants
values of fundamental 146
constituents
common, of particles and space 84
extended 290
fundamental 143
continuity 68, 154
as time average 166
discreteness and 153
lack of 37, 66–68, 83, 84, 122
of motion 386
of space and time 66
continuum
see continuity
contradictions between
relativity and quantum theory 55–61
coordinates
fermionic 130
Grassmann 130
core, tangle
deformation of 219
rotation 217
rotation of 219
thethered 355
corpuscules ultra-mondains 275
cosmic background radiation

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

C
COSMIC

patterns in 104
cosmic string 288, 289, 294
strand illustration of 288
cosmological constant Λ 297–299
as millennium issue 18, 158
cosmological limits and 49
cosmology and 295
cosmology implied by 17
for flat vacuum 205
from thermodynamics 33
general relativity 50
implies cosmology 49
is dark energy 297
minimum length and 41
problem 139
time variation 301
vacuum density and 49
cosmological limit
see also system-dependent limit
lowest force 50
to observables 43, 49–50
cosmological scales 87
cosmology 294–302
in one statement 49
Coulomb's inverse square relation deduced from strands 225
counting objects 104
coupling constant
calculation of 368–378
comparison of 372
definition 366
electromagnetic, and Planck limits 42
illustration of running 366
running and the Higgs boson 370
covering, topological 69
CP problem, strong 260, 266
CP violation 328, 361, 362, 364
in neutrinos 364
CP-violating phase 360
CPT symmetry 71, 85, 109
not valid 101
creation 103, 104, 410
is impossible 98
cross sections at Planck scales 114
crossing
as simplest tangle 309
density 182
illustration of 179
illustration of definition 148
in knot theory 149
number 357
of strands 148
position density 182
switch 146
switch as event 148
switch is observable 335
switch, definition 149, 179
switch, illustration of 147
crossing number, signed 405
crossing orientation
average 183
crossing switch
in space-time 147
crystal, nematic world 290
crystals and vacuum 34
curiosity 6
current
indeterminacy 43
curvature
see also space-time
around spherical masses 283
of curve 404
space, from strands 275, 283
strand illustration of 275
total 318, 358
upper limit, or Planck 35, 36
curve
rotation, of stars in galaxies 293
curve, unknotted 306
cutting matter 117

D

D-branes 165
dance 171
dangers of a final theory 20
Dante Alighieri
on the basic knot 389
dark energy *see* cosmological constant, 18, 158, 295, 297
dark matter 17, 295, 299, 343
challenge 300
is conventional matter 343
death 398
decay
neutrino-less double-beta 342
decoherence 197
defects in vacuum 275, 276, 288
definition
circular 163
deformation
gauge groups and 265
of core 219
of tails 219
degrees of freedom
and boundary 137
and entropy 117
and quantum theory 338
and system surface 47
and volume 81
entropy limit and 39
fundamental 145
in universe 47
of space-time 46
delocalization of W and Z bosons 320, 321
Democritus
on learning 403
on particles and vacuum 124
denseness 68
density limit for black holes 283
desert
high-energy 338, 343
determinism 82, 396
Deutsch, David
on explanations 160
devils 20
diffeomorphism invariance 68, 72, 122, 127
differences are approximate 124
dimensions
higher 136, 156

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

D

DINNER

higher, and the final theory 140
no higher 140, 268, 269, 338
none and superstrings 83
none at Planck scales 51, 69
of space undefined 144
orgin of three 201
origin of spatial 201
dinner parties, physics for 25
dipole moment, electric 74
Dirac equation 71, 207
and belt trick 209
explanation 212, 215
from strands 167
from tangles 207–212
ingredients 211
visualizing the 210
Dirac, Paul
on unification 21
discreteness
continuity and 153
none in nature 108, 388
displacement
indeterminacy 28
displacement limit
quantum 27
distance
defined with strands 154
lower limit, or Planck 35
distinction
none in nature 108
divergence
none in the strand model 268
of QED 232
of vacuum energy 204
dogmas about unification 21
domain walls 288, 294
donate
for this free pdf 8
to this book 8
double beta decay, neutrinoless 318
double-slit
experiment and gravity 290
with strands 194, 195
doubly special relativity 271, 420
dreams 399–401
duality 162
as an argument for extension 123
between large and small 121, 122
gravity/gauge 219
space-time *see* space-time duality
strings and 422
superstrings and 136

E

Eddington, Arthur
on particle number 124
Eddington–Finkelstein coordinates 69
Ehlers, Jürgen
on point particles 56
Ehrenfest, Paul
on spinors 193
Einstein's field equations
see field equations
Einstein's hole argument 56
Einstein, Albert
last published words 84
on continuity 84
on dropping the continuum 66, 67, 83
on gods 413
on his deathbed 37
on mathematics 104
on modifying general relativity 159
on thinking 54
on ultimate entities 67
on unification 21
Einstein–Bohr discussion 28
Einstein–Brillouin–Keller quantization 28
electric charge quantum number 369, 370
electric dipole moment 74, 268, 378
electric field
illustration of 226
lower limit 48
upper limit 42, 226
electric potential 191
electrodynamics
from strands 221–236
electromagnetic coupling constant
see fine structure constant
electromagnetic energy
from strands 225
electromagnetism
cosmological limits 48
from strands 221–236
illustration of 224
Planck limits 42–43, 226
electron
g-factor 194, 231, 236
tangle of 317
electroweak interaction 243
elementary charge *see* fine structure constant
elementary particle
see also particle
action limit and 27
cannot be point particle 73
cannot have Planck mass 354
definition 38
properties 303, 344
shape of 113, 116, 117
size limit and 27, 28, 34, 37
size of 114
speed limit and 26
upper energy limit 38
upper mass limit 38
upper momentum limit 38
virtual particles and 38
elements of sets
none in nature 51, 103
elongation 128
emotions
beautiful 6
end
of strand 165
energy
dark *see* cosmological constant
density, critical 298
electromagnetic, from strands 225
from strands 187, 203, 276

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

indeterminacy 29, 34, 62
kinetic 203
of horizons 278
potential 203
quanton definition 187
speed 26
system-dependent limits and 43
upper limit for elementary particles 38, 80
energy–momentum tensor 32
ensembles 103
entangled state 197–199
entanglement 197–199, 214
quantum gravity and 292
entropy
at Planck scales 82
Bekenstein's bound 45–47, 128, 282, 298
Bekenstein–Hawking 280
black hole 45–46
defined with strands 154
lower limit, or Boltzmann constant k 29, 35
of black holes 279–281
of gravity 273
of horizons 279–281
of vacuum 46
particle shape and 117
upper limit 282
upper limit to 45–46
equations
non-existence of evolution 144
Escher, Maurits
illustrating circularity 59
essence of universe 107
Euclid
on points 69
Euler angles 193
event
definition 57, 149
from strands 148
fundamental 146
fundamental, illustration of 143
horizon 296
in dreams 399
symmetry 81, 125
exchange
extension and 129, 131
existence and Planck scales 105
exotic manifold 165
experiment
hard challenge 364
explanation
definition of 160
extension
essential for spin 1/2 172
exchange and 129, 131
final theory and 140
importance of 145
in superstrings 136
of constituents 290
spin and 131
tests of 134
unification and 142
extinction 191
extremal identity 109–110

F

Faust 107
featureless
strands are 149
Fermat's theorem 395
fermion
as matter particle 17
definition 168, 169, 175
exchange and extension 129–130
from strands 169
illustration of 154
illustration of exchange 176
illustration of wave function 168
in general relativity 56, 293
in millennium description 17
none at Planck scales 75
spin and extension 131–132
fermionic coordinates 130
Feynman diagram
QED, illustration of 230–232
and braiding 341
high-order QED 135
mechanism for 217–270
strands and 230
strong, strand illustration of 263
weak 246
weak, illustration of 246
weak, strand illustration of 247
Feynman's rotating arrow 210
Feynman, Richard
on many-particle wave functions 199
fiction, no science 343
field
without field 155
field equations
deduced from a drawing 285
from maximum force 31–33
from strands 284–286
field, electric 225
field, magnetic 225
films
dreams and 400
final theory 390, 413
arguments against 19–20
candidates 21, 136, 161, 290, 337
dangers 20
disinformation 413
extension and 140
higher dimensions and 140, 338
list of testable predictions 23, 381
modification 143
of motion 19
requirements of 143
steps of the search for a 23
supersymmetry and 140
table of requirements 143
unmodifiable 159
fine structure constant 17, 148, 366
see also coupling constant, electromagnetic
charge unit and 48, 369
electrodynamics and 221

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

estimation of 373–378
Planck limits and 42
fine-tuning
none 358
finitude
absence of 388
Finkelstein, Robert
on fermions as knots 337
fish in water 120, 135
flavour quantum numbers 305
flavour-changing charged currents 313
fluctuating lines 291
fluctuations of strands 151, 155
fluid
tangle motion in 190, 348
foam
quantum *see* foam, space-time
space-time 301
foam, space-time 153, 287
folds 127, 393, 435
fool
making one of oneself 337
foolishness 20, 337
force
is momentum flow 16, 29
lower limit 45, 50
maximum *see* force limit, maximum
Planck *see* force limit, maximum
surface and 30
unlimited for virtual particles 38
upper limit 41
force limit, maximum $c^4/4G$ 35
4-force and 41
black hole and 40, 41
electric charge and 40
general relativity implied by 16, 29–35
principle 33
quantum effects and 36
size limit and 37
why gravitational 40
form factor
of baryons 331
of mesons 327
framing of tangle 375, 404
freedom
asymptotic 265
Frenet frame 404
Frenet ribbon 405
Fulling–Davies–Unruh effect 79, 273
fundamental principle 146
illustration of 380
funnels 164, 391
illustration of 165

G

g-factor 194, 231, 236
Galilean physics 25, 57, 386, 400
Galilean physics's circular reasoning: resolution 213
gamma-ray bursters 226
gamma-ray bursts 43, 84
gasoline 80
gauge
choice 227–229
covariant derivative 230
freedom, illustration of 227
group, no other 308
interaction 229
interaction antiscreening 371
interaction screening 371
interactions 217–270
interactions, summary 267
symmetry 18, 158, 217, 227–229
symmetry and cores 219
symmetry, not valid 71, 101
theory, non-Abelian 241, 260, 306–307, 315
transformation 227
U(1) freedom, illustration of 228
gauge boson
no other types 308
role of 306
strand illustration of 307
weak, illustration of 242
weak, illustration of incorrect 245
Gedanken experiment *see* thought experiment
Gell-Mann matrices 251
Gell-Mann, Murray
on strings 139
gender and physics 133
general relativity
see also field equations
contradicts quantum theory 55–61
deviations from 293
from maximum force 31–33
from strands 271
horizons and 31
in one statement 29
indeterminacy relation 34
millennium issues and 18–19, 158
minimum force 50
non-locality 73
size limit 34
generalizations of the strand model 159, 391
generalized indeterminacy principle *see* indeterminacy relation, generalized
generalized uncertainty principle *see* indeterminacy relation, generalized
generations of quarks 313
generators
of SU(3) and slides 255
geometry
hardest open problem 375
Gibbs, Phil
on event symmetry 81, 125
Glashow, Sheldon
on fake unification 248
global coordinate systems 66
glueballs 314–315, 330, 335
gluon
as slide 260
Lagrangian 261–262
self-interaction
illustration of 261
waves 307

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

G

GLUONIC

gluonic waves 307
gluons 250, 259
Gödel's incompleteness
theorem 19, 103, 163
gods
and Dante 389
and Einstein 68, 413
and integers 104
and Kronecker 104
and Leibniz 393
and Thales 385
and Trismegistos 435
definition of 408
existence proof 409
final theory and 20
intervention of 396
things and 385
Goethe, Johann Wolfgang von
on searching 107
grand unification 367, 382
does not exist 236, 248, 266, 268, 308
not final 160
Grassmann coordinates 130
gravitation 272
see also general relativity, quantum gravity
and double-slit experiment 290
classical 272
entropic 273–275
entropy and 273
from strands 276
maximum force and 29–33
of superposition 289
quantum 288
strand illustration of 272
strands and 272, 279
surface 30–32, 45
universal 33–34, 272–275
gravitational constant *G* 29
see also force limit, maximum, *see also* power, upper limit
absence from quantum theory 56
as conversion constant 57
physics and 7
gravitational wave
emitted from atoms 292
gravitational waves 85
graviton 287, 310, 314
illustration of 314
strand illustration of 287
gravity
see gravitation
gravity wave detectors 85
gravity, weak, conjecture 291
Greene, Brian
on popularization 51
on superstrings 136
Gregori, Andrea
on particle mass 133
group
slide 255
GUT *see* grand unification

H

Haag's theorem 266
Haag–Kastler axioms 266
hadron
see meson, baryon
heat and horizons 32
Heisenberg picture 202
Heisenberg, Werner
on symmetry 394
on thermodynamic indeterminacy 29
on unification 21
heresy, religious 409
hidden variables 182
hierarchy
of particle masses 190, 345, 353–357
Higgs boson
2012 update 321
mass 349
mass prediction 321
predictions about 319
strand illustration of 319, 322
Higgs mechanism 352
Hilbert
action 286
Hilbert action
definition 286
Hilbert space 187
Hilbert's problems 105
Hilbert's sixth problem 52, 105–106
Hilbert, David
famous mathematical problems 105
his credo 139
on infinity 386
on unification 21
hill, gentle green 396
hole argument 56
Einstein's 276
Hollywood films 95
holography 102, 110, 135–137, 296, 298, 416, 421, 424, 430, 432
't Hooft, Gerard 290
hopping
from strand to strand 341
horizon 97, 276
see also black hole
and Planck scales 109
behind a 277
cosmic 49
cosmic, diameter of 97, 99–101
cosmic, distance 94–97
cosmic, none 101–102
cosmic, shape of 97–98
electric charge 40
energy 278
entropy 279–281
entropy limit 45–46
heat flow 32
maximum force 30–33, 40–41
maximum power 30–33, 40–41
nature of 296
no space beyond 69
nothing behind 383
nothing behind a 69
puzzle 278
quantum effects at 88
radius 31
relation 32
singularities and 56
strand illustration of 276
symmetries at the 101
temperature 281

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

temperature limit 40
thermodynamic properties 284
types 296
Hubble radius 95
Hubble time 92
hydrogen atom 212
illustration of 212
hypercharge, weak 235, 366

I

idea, Platonic
of observables 91
identity, extremal 109–110, 134
impenetrability of strands 147, 214
incompleteness theorem, Gödel's 19, 103, 163
indeterminacy principle
see indeterminacy relation
indeterminacy relation
all together 35
equivalence to Planck limits 35
for capacitors 43
for current 43
for temperature 29
generalized 66
Heisenberg's 28, 62, 66, 81
in general relativity 34
in quantum theory 28
in special relativity 27
in thermodynamics 29
indeterminacy relations 189
indivisibility of nature 388
induction: not a problem 397
infinity
absence of 19, 386
as a lie 387
inflation
and strands 297
lack of 297, 301, 383
information
in the universe 103
no loss 282
initial conditions
of the universe 98, 296
integers 104
interaction
definition 218
electroweak 243
from tangles 219
gauge 217
inversion and 110
mixing 243
interference
from strands 191, 194
illustration of 192, 194, 195
visualized with strands 194
invariant
see also action, quantum of, *see also* force limit, *see also* Lorentz invariance, *see also* Planck units, *see also* speed of light
knot 224
maximum force as 16
Planck unit as 23, 25–43
quantum of action as 17
speed of light as 16
topological 224
inversion 110
irreducibility
computational 19
isotropy of the vacuum 66
issue
open: ending funnels 165
open: funnel diameter behaviour under boosts 165
open: lepton tangles 318
open: W and Z tangles 244

J

Jarlskog invariant 362
Jehle, Herbert
on particles as knots 337

K

Kaluza, Theodor
on unification 21
kaons and quantum gravity 85
Kauffman, Louis
on commutation relations 202
Killing vector field 32
Klein–Gordon equation 207
knife, limitations of 113
knot
closed 308
definition 308
hardest open problem 375
long 306, 308
models of mesons 335
models of nature 161
models of particles 136
open 306, 308
table of properties 404
topological invariant 224
writhe probabilities 434
knots
dimensionality and 69
in strands 165
Kochen–Specker theorem 197
Kovtun-Son-Starinets conjecture 416
Kreimer, Dirk
on knots in QED 135
Kronecker, Leopold 104
Kruskal–Szekeres coordinates 69

L

Lagrangian
description of physics 54
Dirac 215
electromagnetic field 226
electroweak 245
from strands 203
gluon 261–262
none for strands 337
of QED 229
of general relativity 301
of the standard model 269
of the strong interaction 264
of the weak interaction 242
properties 231
strands and 152, 202–204
superstrings and 137, 138
Lagrangian density *see* Lagrangian
Lamb shift, gravitational 85
Landau pole 232
Lao Tse
on motion 393, 401
Large Hadron Collider

H

HUBBLE

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

no discoveries 343
no Higgs boson 321
strand model and 396
W and Z scattering 321, 382
large number hypothesis 100
lattice space-time 72
laziness of nature 25
least action principle
from strands 167, 202–204
in nature 16, 25, 54
valid for strands 269, 286
leather trick 310, 313, 350
illustration of 313
Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm
on parts 105
on relations in nature 296
length
defined with strands 154
definition 57
indeterminacy 27
intrinsic 119
lower limit, or Planck 35
maximum 95
minimum 154
Lenin (Vladimir Ilyich Ulyanov) 79
leptogenesis, none 364
lepton
mass ratios 352
number 305
strand illustration of 317, 353
tangle of 317
Lesage, Georges-Louis
on universal gravitation 274
LHC *see* Large Hadron Collider
Lichtenberg, Georg Christoph
on truth 24
lie, infinity as a 387
life
meaning 398
origin of 20
saving with belt trick 174
light
see also speed of light
deflection by the Sun 57
onion 94
propagation and quantum gravity 84
scattering of 66
Lilliput
no kingdom 338
lily, beauty of 16
limit
cosmological *see* cosmological limit
Planck *see* Planck limits
limits
in nature, summary 52
our human 402
physics in 25
Planck units as 25
size-dependent 43
system-dependent 43
to cutting 114
to measurements 65
to motion 25
to observables, additional 45
to precision *see* precision
linear combination 183
lines, skew 336
linking number 375–376, 405
liquid, tangle motion in 190, 348
list
millennium 17, 157
lists
three important 23
Lloyd, Seth
on information 104
locality
lack of 144
need to abandon 72
none at Planck scales 114
quantum theory vs. general relativity 56
long knots 306
loop quantum gravity 135
loop, twisted
electromagnetism and 221
Loren, Sophia
on everything 344
Lorentz boosts
maximum force and 30
quantum theory and 210
Lorentz invariance
fluctuations and 73
none at Planck scales 68, 80, 85
of strand model 153
quantum gravity and 85
quantum theory and 209
Lorentz symmetry
see Lorentz invariance
Lorentz transformations
from invariance of c 206
lattices and 72
minimum length and 68
temperature 48
Lorentz, Hendrik Antoon
on the speed limit 26
Lorentz-invariance
of the vacuum 204

M

machine, braiding 338
magnetic
monopole, none 225
magnetic charge 225
magnetic field
lower limit 48
upper limit 42, 226
magnetic moment
anomalous 233–234
neutrino 318
magnetic vector potential 191
man-years of work in superstrings 139
manifold
exotic 165
manifolds
see also space, space-time
as prejudice 21
definition 70
lack of 68
none at Planck scales 37
many-particle state 197
Marx, Groucho
on principles 37
mass
absolute value for particles 353
ADM 100
and braiding of tails 353

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

M

MATCHBOXES

black hole 278
calculation for neutrinos 357
calculation of 344
crossing switch rate as 354
eigenstate of quark 361
elementary particle 301, 345
flow, upper limit 39
from strands 189, 275, 319, 335
gap 315
generation 243
gravitational 76, 78, 100, 344, 347
hierarchy 190, 345, 353–357
in universe 99
inertial 78, 344, 348
inverse of 122
maximum density 35
measurement 75–79
negative 80
of bosons 346
rate limit 282
ratios of leptons 352
ratios of quarks 349
sequences of mesons 328
upper limit for elementary particles 38, 75–76
W and Z bosons 346
without mass 155
matchboxes and universe 96
mathematics
of nature, simplicity of 37, 52
matter
density in universe 299
difference from vacuum 62
extension of 82, 112–140
indistinguishable from vacuum 50–51, 78–79
made of everything 392
made of nothing 392
mixes with vacuum 78, 79
mattress analogy of vacuum 34
maximons 76
maximum force
see force limit, maximum
maximum speed
see speed of light *c*
Maxwell's field equations 221, 227, 234
meaning in life 398
measurement
always electromagnetic 155
averaging in 83
classicality of 194
definition 386
from strands 195
none at Planck scales 71
precision *see* precision
problem in quantum theory 20
problem, quantum 20
mechanism for Feynman diagrams 217–270
membranes 136
Mende, Paul
on extension checks 134
mesons
charmed, illustration of 326
CP violation 329
excited 328
form factor 327
from tangles 323
heavy, illustration of 327
illustration of 324
knotted 335
mass sequences 328
pseudoscalar 323
Regge trajectories 328
shape 327
vector 323
metre rule
cosmic horizon and 95
Planck scales and 64
metric
Planck scales and 68
space 70
microstates of a black hole 279
millennium description of physics 16–19
millennium list
final summary 380, 381
not solved by superstring conjecture 139
of open issues 17, 18, 157
millennium problems
from the Clay Mathematics Institute 315
minimal coupling 191, 194, 229
minimal crossing number 224
minimization of change
see least action
minimum length 154
Minion Math font 436
mixed state 201
mixing
angle, weak 348
angles 360
matrices 360
quark 361
model
non-commutative 338
tangle, of particles 155
models, topological 337
modification of final theory 143
modified Newtonian dynamics 293
momentum 188
indeterminacy 28
quanton definition 188
upper limit for elementary particles 38
momentum flow
is force 16, 29
momentum indeterminacy 64
monad 105
Mongan, Tom
on particles as tangles 337
monism 393, 421
monopoles, magnetic, none 225
motion 168
as an illusion 402
continuity of 386
essence of 401
helical 348
limited in nature 25, 35
limits to 25
none at Planck scales 83
of particles through

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

M
MOTION

vacuum 341
predictability of 386
quantum 169
strand illustration of 340
translational 341
ultimate questions and 385
Motion Mountain 20
climbing 396
nature of 395
supporting the project 8
top of 385
move *see* Reidemeister move
multi-particle state
see many-particle state
multiplicity
approximate 127
multiverse nonsense 105, 108, 338, 392, 408
muon
g-factor 194, 231, 236
rare decays 318
tangle of 317

N

National Institute for Play 414
natural units *see also* Planck
limits, *see also* Planck
units, 36, 146
naturalness
none 358
of standard model 148
nature
and description, table of
difference 162
event symmetry 81
has no meaning 108
is indivisible 388
is not finite 388
limits motion 36
made of one strand 392
multiplicity of 125
no infinity in 386
no sets nor elements 51–52
non-locality of 72
not a computer 388
not a set 125
not discrete 388
table of properties 109
unity of 125
vs. people 403
whether deterministic 82, 396
whole in each of its parts 392
negative-energy regions 289
nematic world crystal 290
neurobiology 164
neutrino
magnetic moment 318
mass calculation 357
mixing 363
illustration of 363
tangle of 317
neutrinoless double beta
decay 318
neutron
decay and strand model 248
form factor 331
neutron–antineutron
oscillations 268
Newton's bucket 213
Newtonian physics
see Galilean physics
night sky 16
meaning of 393
nightmare scenario 343
no avail conjecture 292
no-hair theorem 129, 278
non-commutative model 338
non-locality 144
natural 164
solves contradictions 73
non-perturbative calculations 231
non-zero action 27
norm of quantum state 186
nothing
difference from universe 87
NSA dream 296
number of stars 99
numbers, no real 50, 71

O

object
motion and 57
observable
value definition 166
observable properties
unexplained, as
millennium issues 17
observables
basic 153
defined with crossing
switches 152
none at Planck scales 71
system-dependent limits 43
observer
definition 79
Occam's razor 124, 161
octonions 265
Olbers' paradox 41
operator
Hermitean 202
unitary 202
order out of chaos 390
origin
human 398
oscillator, harmonic 265
overcrossing 243, 244

P

pantheism 409
parity 235
none at Planck scales 75
violation 239–241
belt trick and 173
part of nature
lack of definition 124
particle
see also elementary
particle, *see also* matter, *see also* virtual particle
circular definition of
space-time and 57
common constituents with
vacuum 86
definition 57, 168, 303
electrically charged 223
exchange 71, 75, 129
in the millennium
description of physics 17
intrinsic property list 305
lower speed limit 49
made of one strand

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

P

PARTS

304–308
made of three strands 316
spin of 330
made of two strands 309
mass 344
mass, absolute value 353
motion 57
motion through vacuum 341
no exchange at horizon scales 101
no point 30, 37, 40, 56, 73–75
none at Planck scales 74–79, 86, 156
number in the universe 98–101, 104, 107, 109, 124–126
number that fits in vacuum 120
of four or more strands 331
pair creation 56, 58, 97
properties 303, 344
quantum 155, 170
spectrum, explanation 342
spectrum, prediction 342
spin 1 304–308
stable 169
table of correspondence with tangles 336
tangle as 156
translational motion 341
virtual 38, 149, 153, 167
parts
are approximate 124
in nature 124, 386
none in nature 388
pastime, unification as 20
path
helical 348
integral 194
integral formulation 181
Pauli equation 193, 207
from tangles 193
Pauli matrices 193
Pauli, Wolfgang
on gauge theory 241
Penrose conjecture 278, 294
pentaquarks 336
permutation symmetry
not valid 71, 101, 130
origin of 179
perturbation theory
convergence of 234
failure of 321
validity of 232
phase 168
average 183
CP-violating 360
quantum 183
tangle 221
Philippine wine dance 171
photography, limits of 115
photon 222
affected by quantum gravity 84
disappearance of 223
entangled
illustration of 200
model of 222
speed of 205
stability of 223
physical space differs from background space 275
physical system 26, 103
see also system-dependent limit
illustration of 150
physicists
conservative 53, 397
physics 163
approximations and the sky 393
beauty in 54
book, perfect 106
definition 16
Galilean 25, 57, 386, 400
gender and 133
golden age 21
in four steps 389
in limit statements 25
in the year 2000 17
map of 7
motion limits in 25, 35
progress of 389
simplicity in 394
simplicity of 25–35, 37
table of progress 389
the science of motion 16
unification in one statement 388
physics cube 7
Planck acceleration 35
Planck accelerator 80
Planck action $\hbar$
see action, quantum of
Planck angular frequency 35
Planck area 35
Planck constant $\hbar$
see action, quantum of
Planck curvature 35
Planck density 35, 76
Planck distance 35
Planck energy 39, 55, 80
see also Planck scales
definition 38
Planck entropy 146
Planck force $c^4/4G$
see force limit, maximum
Planck length 35, 146
see also Planck scales, Planck energy
antimatter and 51
as measurement limit 64–71
duality and 110
extremal identity and 110
mass limit and 76
shutters and 115
space-time lattices and 72
value of 58
Planck limits
see also Planck units, natural units
curiosities and challenges 39–43
definition 35
electromagnetic 42–43
Planck mass 76, 354
definition 38
does not exist as black hole 292, 354
does not exist as elementary particles 354
stand model 354
strand model of 354
Planck mass density 35

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

P

PLANCK

Planck momentum
definition 38
Planck scales
as domain of contradictions 57
definition 36
general relativity and quantum theory at 57–61
nature at 62–86
no dimensions at 69
no events at 67
no measurements at 71–72
no observables at 71–72
no space-time at 69
no supersymmetry at 75
no symmetries at 71–72
surprising behaviour at 62–86
vacuum and matter at 50–51, 78–79
Planck speed *c* *see* speed of light *c*
Planck time 146
age measurement and 90
as measurement limit 62–64, 90, 94, 111
shutters and 115
value of 58
Zeno effect and 118
Planck units 35–36, 144, 146, 154
as invariants 25, 36
as key to unification 140
as limits 25, 36, 65
as natural units 65
corrected, definition 36
definition 23
key to unification 53
Planck value 36
see natural units, *see* Planck units
Planck volume 35, 42, 65
number in the universe 47
plate trick 171
platelets 174
Plato
on love 403
on nature's unity 125
Platonic idea
of time 91
play 20
plural 386
and motion 402
Poincaré symmetry
of vacuum 206
point particles
do not exist 30, 37, 40, 56, 73–75
points
as clouds 116
as tubes 120
cross section of 120
do not exist 23, 30, 39, 51, 64–71
exchange 129
in vacuum 119
incompatible with unification 23, 61
shape of 112
size of 119, 120
poke *see also* Reidemeister move
basic
illustration of 240
gauge group
illustration of 238
transfer
illustration of 237
posets 103
position
from strands 168
indeterminacy 64
positron charge 331
potential
and strands 191
electric 225
indeterminacy 43
electromagnetic 227
magnetic 225
power
lower limit to 45
misuse of 20
surface and 30
upper limit 41
upper limit $c^5/4G$ 29–35
precession 173
precision
does not increase with energy 123
fun and 111
lack at Planck scales 68
lack of at Planck scales 66
limited by quantum theory 56
limits 74
limits to 50–52
maximum 91
of age measurements 90
of clocks 64, 90–95
of final theory 143
of length measurements 64
predictability
of motion 386
predictions
about axions 266
about cosmology 300
about dark matter 343
about general relativity 293
about grand unification 268
about mesons 327
about supersymmetry 268
about the number of interactions 267
about the strong interaction 266
of the strand model 381
on charge quantization 369
on coupling constants 368
on the weak interaction 248
preon models 419
pride 20
principle
fundamental 146
fundamental, illustration of 143
of least action 16, 25, 54, 202, 269
of least change 16, 25, 54
of maximum force *see* force limit, maximum
of non-zero action 27
quantum action 214
probability density 186
process
fundamental 148

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

P

PROJECTION

projection, minimal 369
propagator 211
properties
  intrinsic 83, 303
  unexplained, as millennium issues 17
proton
  charge 331
  decay 268
  form factor 331
  mass 331
  tangle of 331
puzzle about strands 315

Q

QCD 264–266
QED 221–236
  convergence of 234
quantities
  bare 232
quantum action principle 204, 214
quantum effects
  are due to extension 392
quantum field theory 212, 371
  as approximation of the strand model 267
  strand hopping and 341
quantum fluctuations 103
quantum foam *see* foam, space-time
quantum geometry 51, 73, 110
quantum gravity 288
  QED and 236
  definition of 287
  effects on photons 84
  entanglement and 292
  entropy and 280
  experiments in 84–86
  extension and 135, 280
  finite entropy 128
  from strands 301
  gravity waves and 85
  is unobservable 294
  large symmetry 122
  loop 290
  Lorentz symmetry and 85
  minimum distance and 36
  minimum power and 45
  non-locality 73
  Planck scales and 71
  predictions 294, 383
  predictions about 269
  strands and 284, 289
  topology and 300
quantum groups 382
quantum lattices 103
quantum measurement
  from tangles 194
quantum mechanics *see also* quantum theory, 212
quantum numbers
  all 305
  baryon number 305
  charge(s) 305
  flavour 305
  lepton number 305
  parity 305
  spin 305
quantum particle
  properties 303
quantum state 181
quantum theory
  and space-time curvature 79
  contradicts general relativity 55–61
  displacement limit 27, 28
  implied by quantum of action 17
  in one statement 27
  measurement problem 20
  millennium issues and 18, 157–158
  no infinity in 386
  non-zero action 27
  of matter 167
  space-time curvature and 55
  vacuum and 76
quark
  flavour change
  illustration of 312
  mixing
  illustration of 360
  Planck energy table 351
  ropelength table 351
quark model
  acceptance of 325
quarks
  are elementary 73
  fractional charge 43
  generations of 313
  mass ratios 349
  mesons and 323
  mixing 360, 361
  strand illustration of 311, 350
  tangles 310–314
quasars 226
quasi-quantization of writhe 374
quaternions 265
qubit 156

R

race, in quantum gravity 84
Raychaudhuri equation 33, 285
Raymer, Michael
  on the indeterminacy relation 62
real numbers, no 50, 71
reductionism 20
Regge slope
  illustration of 329
Regge trajectories 328
regions of negative energy 288
regularization
  non-local 320
  weak bosons and 321
Reidemeister move
  first or type I or twist 220–236
  illustration of types 220
  second or type II or poke 220, 237–249
  third or type III or slide 220, 250–266, 306
Reidemeister moves
  and gauge bosons 306
Reidemeister's theorem 267
Reidemeister, Kurt
  on knot deformations 219, 267
relativity
  as approximation of the

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

R

RENORMALIZATION

strand model 302
doubly special 420
general *see* general relativity
no infinity in 386
special *see* special relativity
summary on 301
renormalization
at Planck scales 71
of QCD 265
of QED 231
of gravity 294
requirements
for a final theory 143
resolution in measurements 115
Reynolds number 348
ribbon 375–376
ribbon model 424
ribbon models 136, 161, 337
ribbons and framings 404
Ricci scalar 286
Ricci tensor 33
Riemann, Bernhard
on geometry 36
ring chain trick 340
rope braiding 338
ropelength 347
measured in diameters 347
rotation
tethered 175
rotation curve
of stars in galaxies 293
rotation of tangle cores 217
rule, superselection 185
running
of coupling 233, 246, 265
of coupling constants 371
of coupling, data 370

S

S-duality 121
safety, asymptotic 293
Sakharov, Andrei 76
on matter constituents 118
on maximum particle mass 38
on minimum length 41
portrait 75
Salam, Abdus
on unification 21
scalar multiplication 183, 184
scalar product 186
scale
extremal, nature at 108
scales, cosmological 87
scattering
by vacuum 79
of longitudinal W and Z bosons 320, 321
to determine mass 78
to determine size 73, 114
Schrödinger equation 71, 187, 207
Schrödinger picture 181, 202
Schrödinger, Erwin
on thinking 113
Schwarzschild black hole 277
see black hole
Schwarzschild radius
see also black hole
as limit of general relativity 57
as measurement limit 65, 76, 77
definition 30
entropy and 128
extension and 112
lack of sets and 103
mass and vacuum 121
table with examples 58
science fiction, no 343
scissor trick 171
see-saw mechanism 352, 364
self-linking number 405
sets
not useful to describe nature 125
not useful to describe universe 51–52, 102–103
shape of points 112
sheet
and belt trick 172
shivering 147
and divergences 268
short-time average 181
shutter
limits of a 115
time table 115
SI units 146
simplicity
of physics 37
simplification
as guiding idea 395
single atom 81
singularities
horizon and 56
none in nature 81, 144
none in the strand model 283
none inside black holes 277
none predicted in nature 293
size
indeterminacy 34
system-dependent limits and 43
size limit
due to general relativity 34
due to quantum theory 28
due to special relativity 27
skew lines 336
sky, at night 16
slide *see* Reidemeister move
group 255
illustration of observable 256
illustration of unobservable 255
slide transfer
illustration of 250
slit
double, and gravity 290
double, and strands 194, 195
space *see also* background, *see also* vacuum
airless, breathing in 83
background 150, 162
border of 149
constituents of 119
curved 275
definition 386
in dreams 400
isotropy and strands 152, 153, 182, 204, 206
mathematical 70

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

S

SPACE-TIME

metric 70
no points in 119
none at Planck scales 86
not a manifold 69
physical 150, 277
physical, definition of 153
physical, differs from background space 277
physical, from strands 161
shivering 147, 150, 165, 339
topology change, not needed 177
space-time *see also* curvature
as statistical average 72
as thermodynamic limit 72
circular definition of particles and 57
continuity 37, 66–68, 83, 84, 122
curvature 33
curvature and quantum theory 55, 79
discrete and continuous 153
duality 110, 121, 219
elasticity 34
entropy of 46
foam 153, 287, 301
motion of 46
must be fluctuating 73
no dimensionality at Planck scales 69
non-commutative 268
not a lattice 72, 103
not a manifold 69
results from upper energy speed 26
shivering 147, 150, 165, 339
symmetries 219
topology change, not needed 177
spatial order 66
special relativity
double or deformed 293
doubly special 271
falsified by minimum length 68
implied by maximum speed 16
in one statement 26–27
massive tangles and 341
strands and 271
spectrum
of particles, explanation 342
speed
lower limit 44, 49
of energy 26
of light *c*
from strands 204–207
physics and 7
strands and 206
tangles and 339
special relativity implied by maximum 16, 26
unlimited for virtual particles 38
upper limit 26, 35
spin
and strand number 330
at Planck scales 75
belt trick and 131, 290
entangled
illustration of 200
extension and 131
foam 135, 290
from strands 169
from tangles 169
general relativity and 56
importance of 131
many-particle
illustration of 198
minimal action and 39
operator 193
orientation 168
superposition
illustration of 196
three-dimensionality and 201
without topology change 417
spin–statistics theorem 169
spinor 193, 210, 213
visualization 210
sponsor
this book 8
this free pdf 8
standard model
and the final theory 22
standard model of particle physics
millennium description of physics 17, 142
strands and 148
star
rotation curve in galaxies 293
Stark effect, gravitational 85
stars
in the universe 98
number of 99
state
in dreams 400
Stern–Gerlach experiment 194
stones 169
strand
as cloud 149
averaging 181
braiding and mass 341
definition 149
density 153, 164
diameter 146
diameter behaviour under boosts 150
diameter, issues 149
ends 165
evolution equation 182
fluctuations, conditions on 181, 285
hopping 341
illustration of fluctuations 180
impenetrability 147, 291
linear combination
illustration of 186
puzzle 315
scalar multiplication
illustration of 185
spacing 153
substance of a 155
translation in other languages 145
vs. superstring 337
strand model
anomalous magnetic moment and 233–234

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

S

STRANDS

basis of 142
beauty of 390
checking the 166
confirmation of 344
extension and 142
foundations 146
fundamental principle 146
generalizations of 159, 391
history of 396
illustration of fundamental event 143
illustration of fundamental principle 143
is natural 148
list of predictions 381
of Planck mass 354
of the cosmological constant 297
other research and the 397
simplicity of 161
slow acceptance 397
table of predictions 382
vs. superstrings 337
strands
and the cosmological constant 297
impenetrability of 214
stress-energy tensor 41
string nets 136
string trick 171
quantum theory and 212, 215
strings *see* superstrings
strong interaction
conservation properties 264
strong nuclear interaction 250–266
SU(2) 238, 366
SU(2) breaking 243
SU(2) field
classical waves 307
SU(3)
and slides 254–261
multiplication table 253
properties 251–254
SU(3) field
classical waves 307
supergravity
not correct 236, 248, 268
supermembranes 136
superparticles 268
superposition
from strands 183
gravitational field of 289
of clocks 56
principle 71
superselection rules 185
superstrings
basic principles of 139
black hole entropy and 281
conjecture 136
dimensionality and 83
joke 138
Lagrangian 137
not an explanation 160
overview 136–140
status 139
summary 139
vs. strands 337
supersymmetry
final theory and 140
not correct 71, 75, 130, 160, 236, 248, 268, 308, 342, 382
required 21
strings and 136
support
this book 8
this free pdf 8
surface
force and 30
gravity 30–32, 45, 281
physical 42
surprises in nature 82, 396
Susskind, Leonard
on Planck scale scattering 114
switch of crossing 146
symmetries
no higher 269
symmetry
at the horizon 101
beauty and 394
between large and small 121
breaking 243
event 81
none at Planck scales 72, 144
space-time 219
total 122
system, physical
table of correspondence with strands 151
table of correspondence with tangles 289
system-dependent limits
to all observables 43–48
Szilard, Leo
on minimum entropy 29

T

T-duality 121
T-shirt 396
first use 435
tachyons 26
tail
deformations 219
essential for spin 1/2 172
model 131
shifting 361
tail braiding 243
Tait number 405
tangle 152
alternating 370
as particle 155
blurred 180, 189
braided 330
chirality 369
coloured, illustration of 262
core 168
core deformation
illustration of 218
core rotation 217
illustration of 218
family 325
family of leptons 352
four-stranded 335
function 179, 180
functions are wave functions 182–189
ideal 346, 404
lepton 317
locally knotted 310
moving
illustration of 188, 205

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

T

TANGLE

of four or more strands 331
one-stranded 308
phase 221
prime 310
quark 310
rational 263, 310, 331
rational, as fermion 263
rational, of high complexity 313
table of properties 404
tails 168, 170
three-stranded 330
tight 346, 374
tight, illustration of 346
topological invariant 224
trivial 309
two-stranded 315
tangle classes
one strand, illustration of 304
three strands, illustration of 316
two strands, illustration of 309
tangle framing 375, 404
tangle model
of particles 155
tau
tangle of 317
technicolour 382
temperature
indeterminacy 29
lower limit 48
upper limit 39
vacuum 273
tetraquark
strand illustration of 334
tetraquarks 333
theorem
Banach–Tarski *see* Banach–Tarski paradox/theorem
Calugareanu 406
Coleman–Mandula 266
Fermat's last 395
Gödel's *see* incompleteness theorem, Gödel's
Kochen–Specker 197
no-hair 129, 278
Reidemeister's 267
spin–statistics 169
Weinberg–Witten 266
theory
final 413
final, not of everything 390
freedom of 393
of everything 126
of everything does not exist 390
physical, definition 19
thermodynamics in one statement 29
thinking
extreme 20
mechanism of 17
Thomson–Kelvin, William
on atoms as knotted vortices 336
thought experiment
constituents and 118
on extension 134
on force and power 30
on shape 117
on vacuum 77, 120
time 162
beginning of 89
coordinate 64
defined with strands 154
definition 57, 386
does not exist 91
in dreams 399
indeterminacy 43, 62
issue of 147
lower limit, or Planck 35
maximum 88
measurement 56
Platonic idea 91
proper, end of 64
time-like loops 288
tombstone 396
topological models 337
topological space 70
topological writhe 224
definition 369
topology change
of space-time, not needed 177
topology of the universe 300
toroidal black holes 288
torsion
in general relativity 290, 293
of curve 404
of tangles 375
total, of a curve 405
touching shapes 116
translation invariance 66
trick
belt 171
dirty Higgs 321
leather 350
plate 171
scissor 171
tubes in space 120
tuning, fine
none 358
Turing machines 103
twist *see* Reidemeister move, 306, 375, 405
and gauge
illustration of 228
generalized 229
random 377
twist transfer
illustration of 221
twisted loop 221

U

U(1) 221–230, 235, 366
U(1) invariance 191
U-duality 121
uncertainty *see* indeterminacy
uncertainty principle *see* indeterminacy relation
uncertainty relation *see* indeterminacy relation
unification *see also* final theory
arguments against 19–20
as lack of finitude 388
as pastime 20
as riddle 20, 23
beliefs and dogmas 21
difficulty of 290
disinformation 413
grand *see* grand

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

U

UNIFIED

unification
is possible 122
key to 53
millennium issues and 17
of interactions 267, 268, 368
quantum theory and relativity 54
reason for failure 248
requiring extreme thinking 20
simplicity of 21, 37
steps of the search for 23
unified models
assumptions of 161
complexity of 161
requirements of 142, 143
uniqueness 391
uniqueness
of the unified model 391
unitarity
violation in W and Z boson scattering 320
units
Planck's natural *see* Planck units, natural units
universal gravitation 33–34, 272
universe
age error of 90, 91
age of 88
as inverted black hole 296
definition of 108, 110
difference from nothing 87
essence of 107
fate of 95
finiteness of 295
has no meaning 108
horizon of 295
information and 104
initial conditions 98, 296
luminosity limit 41
mass of 99–101
matter density 299
no boundary 101–102
no information in 104
not a container 126
not a physical system 103
not a set 51–52, 102–103
oscillating 88
power limit 45
radius 97
sense of 107
size of 95
strand illustration of 295
strand model 295
system dependent limits and 43–50
table of properties 107
topology of 300
volume of 97
unmodifiability of final theory 159
Unruh effect *see* Fulling–Davies–Unruh effect
Unruh radiation *see* Fulling–Davies–Unruh effect

V

vacuum *see also* space
as a bath 151
breathing in 83
common constituents with particles 53, 59, 61, 79, 84, 86, 129
defects in 275, 276, 288
difference from matter 62
elasticity of 34
energy density 18, 55, 158, 204, 297
entropy bound 45–46
entropy of 46
illustration of schematic 152
indistinguishable from matter 50–51, 78–79
Lorentz invariance 204
mass error 76–78
mixes with matter 78
none at Planck scales 86
Poincaré symmetry 206
relativity vs. quantum theory 55–61
strand model 153, 167
tangle function 182
temperature 273
uniqueness of 153, 167, 204, 268, 276, 343
variables, hidden 197
vector
binormal 404
normal 404
Verlinde, Erik
on universal gravitation 273
violence and infinity 387
virtual particles 38, 149, 153, 167
at Planck scales 74
viscous fluids
tangles and 190, 348
volume 70
lower limit, or Planck 35
of the universe 97
vortices in the aether 336

W

W boson
mass 349
mass of 346
strand model 241
two mass values 320
W polarization
illustration of 320
walls
limitations to 114
water flow
upper limit 39
wave function 168, 181
and crossing size 183
as blurred tangles 212
as rotating cloud 182
collapse 196
collapse from tangles 194
definition 182
is a tangle function 182–189
visualizing the 210
wave, gravitational
emitted from atoms 292
waves
gluonic 307
weak bosons 241
weak charge 239–241
weak current

Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net

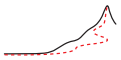
absence of
flavour-changing 336
weak gravity, conjecture 291
weak hypercharge 235, 366
weak interaction 237–249
weak mixing angle 348
Weinberg, Steven
on unification 21
Weinberg–Witten theorem 266
Wheeler, John A.
on mass without mass 155
on nature's principles 390
on space-time foam 153, 287
on topology change 56
on unification 21
Wheeler–DeWitt equation 71
wheels
none in nature 214
wholeness, Bohm's unbroken 103, 423
Wightman axioms 266
Wiles, Andrew
on research 395
Witten, Edward
on duality 134
on infinities 137
on unification 21
words and physics 394
world
crystal, nematic 290
of dreams 399
origin of 398
wormhole 287
wormholes 165, 288, 289, 294
writhe 375
2d 405
3d 373, 377, 406
quasi-quantization 374
topological 405
topological, definition 369
writhing number 406

Y

Yang–Mills theory *see* gauge theory, non-Abelian
Yukawa mechanism 352

Z

Z boson 244
mass 349
mass of 346
strand model 241
two mass values 320
Zeno effect, quantum 27, 118
Zeno of Elea
on motion as an illusion 402
on size 121
Zeno's argument against
motion 68, 116, 118
resolution 213
zero-point energy 55, 70
Zitterbewegung 211



Motion Mountain – The Adventure of Physics copyright © Christoph Schiller June 1990–December 2016 free pdf file available at www.motionmountain.net